

AN
EXPLICATION
OF THE
HVNDRETH AND
TENTH PSALME:

WHEREIN

The severall Heads of CHRISTIAN
Religion therein contained; touching the
Exaltation of Christ, the Scepter of his Kingdome,
the Character of his Subjects, His Priesthood, Victories,
Sufferings, and Resurrection, are largely
explained and applied.

Being the Substance of severall Sermons
preached at LINCOLNS
INNE;

By EDWARD REYNOLDS, sometimes
Fellow of *Merton* Colledge in *Oxford*, late Preacher to
the foresaid Honourable Societie, and Rector
of the Church of *Braunston* in *North-*
hampton shire.

The second edition, revised and corrected by the Author.



LONDON,

Imprinted by *Felix Kyngston*, for *Robert Bostocke*, and
are to be sold at his shop in *Pauls Church-yard* at
the signe of the Kings Head. 1635.

EXPERIMENTAL

HYDROLYSIS

OF STARCH

1. Object of the experiment is to determine the rate of hydrolysis of starch under various conditions of temperature, pH, and enzyme concentration.

Being the substance of several solutions prepared in the laboratory.

The following table shows the results of the experiment.

RESULTS

TABLE I

Rate of hydrolysis of starch at different temperatures.

Temperature (°C) Rate of hydrolysis (g/hr)



TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE THOMAS, LORD COVENTRY,
Baron of *Ailsborough*, and Lord Keeper of
the great Seale of England, &c.

Most Noble Lord,

IT was the devout profession which Saint *Austin* once made of himselfe, when speaking of the great delight which hee tooke in *Cicero's Hortensius* (as containing a most liberall exhortation to the love of wisdom, without any bias or partialty towards sects) hee affirmeth, that the heat of this his delight, was by this only reason abated, because there was not in that booke to be found the Name of *Christ*; without which Name, nothing, though otherwise never so polite and elaborate, could wholly possesse those affections, which had been trained to a nobler study. And *Gregory Nazianzen*, that famous Divine, setteth no other price upon all his Athenian learning (wherein hee greatly excelled) but only this, that he had something of worth, to esteeme as nothing in comparison of *Christ*; herein imitating the example of *S. Paul*, who though hee profited in the Iewish Religion above many others, yet when the Son of God was revealed in him, laid it all aside as losse and dung for the excellency of the knowledge of

Confess. li. 3. 4.

Orat. i.

Gal. i. 14, 16.

Phil. 3, 8.

The Epistle Dedicatory.

Christ Iesus his Lord. The consideration of which sacred affections in those Holy men, together with the many experiences of your Lordships abundant favour, hath put into me a boldnesse beyond my naturall disposition, to prefix so great a name before these poore pieces of my labours in Gods Church. Other argument in this book there is none to procure either your Lordships view or patronage, than this one, (which that good Father could not finde in all the writing of *Plato* or *Cicero*) that it hath that *High and Holy Person* for the Subject thereof, the knowledge of whom is not onely our greatest learning, but our Eternall Life. In this confidence I have presumed to present unto your Lordship this publike Testimony of my most humble duty, and deepe obligations for your many thoughts of favour and bounty towards mee, not in my selfe onely, but in others, unto whom your Lordships goodnesse hath vouchsafed under that respect to overflow. *The Lord Iesus, our eternall Melchisedec*, meete your Lordship in all those honourable affaires which he hath called you unto, with the constant *refreshment* and *benediction* of his holy Spirit, and long preserve you a faithfull Patrone of the Church which he hath purchased with his own blood; and a worthy instrument of the justice, honour and tranquillity of this kingdome.

Your Lordships most
humbly devoted,

EDWARD REYNOLDS.



To the Reader.



Christian Reader, when I was first perswaded to communicate some of my poore labours to the publike, my purpose was to have added unto those Treatises which were extant before so much of these which I now present unto thy view, as concerneth the Elogies of the Gospell of Christ, the instrument of begetting the *life of Christ in us*: for little reason had I, considering mine owne weaknesse, the frequent returns of that service wherein these pieces were delivered, and the groaning of the presse of late under writings of this nature, to trouble the world a second time with any more of my slender provisions towards the worke of the Sanctuary, in this abundance which is on every side brought in. But finding that worke grow up under mine hand into a just volume, and conceiving that it might bee both more acceptable and usefull to handle a whole Scripture together (especially being both of so noble a nature, and at first view of so difficult a sense, as this Psalme is) than to single out some verse and fragment by it selfe; I therefore resolved once more to put in my Mite into the Treasurie of the Temple, which (though for no other reason) may yet I hope be for this cause accepted, because it beareth the

To the Reader.

Image and Inscription of *Christ* upon it. Some passages therein are inserted which were delivered in another order, and on other Scriptures, and some likewise which were delivered in other places, and on other occasions; which yet being pertinent to the series of the discourse, I thought might justly seeme as naturall parts, and not as *Embellishments*, incoherent and unsuteable pieces. So submitting my poore labours to thy favourable Censure, and commending thee to the Blessing of God. I rest.

E. R.



A Table of the Contents.



<p><i>Hrist Iesus the summe of Holy Scriptures.</i></p> <p><i>The Ordination of Christ unto his Kingdome.</i></p> <p><i>The Qualification of Christ for his Kingdome.</i></p> <p><i>The Qualitie of Christs Kingdome.</i></p> <p><i>How the will is drawne unto Christ.</i></p> <p><i>Subjection unto the Kingdome of Christ.</i></p> <p><i>How Christ is a Lord to his people, and to his fore-fathers.</i></p> <p><i>The right hand of God.</i></p> <p><i>Christs sitting at Gods right hand noteth,</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>1 His glorious Exaltation.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 40px;"><i>All strength from his exciting and assisting Grace.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>2 His accomplishing all his workes on earth.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>3 The actuall Administration of his Kingdome.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>4 The giving of gifts unto men.</i></p> <p><i>The Arke how a Type of Christ.</i></p> <p><i>How the Spirit was given before Christ, and how after.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>The difference was in the</i> { <i>Manner of his Mission.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 40px;">{ <i>Subjects to whom he was sent.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 60px;">{ <i>Measure of his grace in regard of</i> { <i>knowledge.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 80px;">{ <i>strength.</i></p> <p><i>The Reason of the Spirits Mission.</i></p> <p><i>How the Spirit is a Comforter to the Church.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>1 By being our Advocate and how.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>2 By representing Christ absent to the soule.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>3 By a sweet and fruitfull illumination.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>4 By unspeakable and glorious joy.</i></p> <p><i>How the Spirit worketh this joy.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 40px;">{ <i>Humbling.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 40px;">{ <i>Healing.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 40px;">{ <i>Renewing.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 20px;"><i>By his Acts of</i> { <i>Preserving.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 40px;">{ <i>Fruetifying.</i></p> <p style="padding-left: 40px;">{ <i>Sealing.</i></p> <p><i>Enmitie against Christ in all his Offices.</i></p>	<p><i>Pag I</i></p> <p><i>6</i></p> <p><i>7</i></p> <p><i>9</i></p> <p><i>11</i></p> <p><i>12</i></p> <p><i>17</i></p> <p><i>22</i></p> <p><i>23</i></p> <p><i>25</i></p> <p><i>29</i></p> <p><i>33</i></p> <p><i>34</i></p> <p><i>35</i></p> <p><i>37</i></p> <p><i>39</i></p> <p><i>42</i></p> <p><i>43</i></p> <p><i>44</i></p> <p><i>47</i></p> <p><i>48</i></p> <p><i>49</i></p> <p><i>56</i></p> <p><i>58</i></p>
--	---

The Table.

Grounds of misperswasion touching our love to Christ:

- | | |
|---|----|
| 1 The countenance of Princes and publike Lawes. | 59 |
| 2 The Rules of tradition and education. | 60 |
| 3 Selfe-love, and furtherance of private ends. | 61 |
| 4 An Historicall assurance of his being now in glory. | 66 |
| 5 A false and erroneous love to his ordinances. | 68 |

True love unto Christ	{ Proportion that is in him to our soules.	} 69
is grounded on the	{ Propriety that our soules have unto him.	

This true love will manifest it selfe,

1 In an universall extent to any thing of Christ his	{ Spirits.	} 71
	{ Ordinances.	
	{ Members.	

2 In a right manner it is love	{ Incorrupt.	} 74
	{ Superlative.	
	{ Uncommunicated.	

3 In the genuine effects thereof	{ Universall obedience.	} 75
	{ Chearefull suffering.	
	{ Zeale of his Glorie.	
	{ Longing after his appearance.	76

The continuance and limitation of Christs Kingdome. 77

The stability of the Church grounded upon	{ An unalterable Decree.	} 79
	{ A free gift of God to Christ.	
	{ A growing nature of its own.	
		81

Papall Monarchy raised upon inevident presumptions. 82

The stability of the Church a ground of comfort against the violence of the enemy. 89

The present inconsummateness of Christs victories over his Enemies, with the reasons of it. 91

Gods patience hath fixed bounds. 93

The wicked shall be punished by Gods immediate power. 98

The easiness of Christs victorie over his Enemies. 108

The folly of nature to judge of God or our selves by things in the present. 110

The punishment of the wicked bringeth order and beauty on the face of the World. 113

What it is to be under Christs feet. 114

Christ suffereth in the sufferings of his Church. 115

Christs.

The Table.

<i>Christs Triumph over his enemies, and the comforts thereof to us.</i>	118
<i>Footstool noteth</i> { <i>Shame.</i>	122
{ <i>Burden.</i>	123
{ <i>Recompence.</i>	124
{ <i>Usefulness.</i>	126
<i>The Gospell with the Spirit is full of power and strength :</i>	135
<i>1 Towards those that are saved, in their</i> { <i>Conversion.</i>	137
{ <i>Iustification.</i>	140
{ <i>Sanctification.</i>	141
{ <i>Perseverance.</i>	142
{ <i>Comforts.</i>	143
{ <i>Temporall blessings.</i>	144
<i>2 Towards those that perish in</i> { <i>Convincing them.</i>	145
{ <i>Affrighting them.</i>	150
{ <i>Judging them.</i>	151
{ <i>Ripening their sinnes.</i>	153
{ <i>Enraging them.</i>	153
{ <i>Altering them.</i>	155
<i>The Gospell to be preached with authority.</i>	156
<i>The Gospell to be received in the power thereof.</i>	157
<i>The Gospell onely able to hold up in extremities.</i>	158
<i>No acquaintance with God but in the Gospell.</i>	159
<i>The Gospell is not sent in vaine.</i>	161
<i>The Gospell with the Spirit is full of glory.</i>	162
<i>1 In regard of the Author of it.</i>	165
<i>The Gospell a mystery unsearchable by humane reason.</i>	167
<i>Contempt of the Gospell preached is contempt of Christ in his glory.</i>	171
<i>Expect to heare Christ speaking from heaven in his Word.</i>	173
<i>2 In the promulgation thereof.</i>	176
<i>Evangelicall knowledge the measure of grace.</i>	179
<i>3 In the matters therein contained.</i>	180
<i>His Wisedome, Goodnesse, Power, Grace, Kingdome.</i>	182
<i>Gods glory can no where be looked on with comfort but in Christ.</i>	184
<i>4 In ends and purposes for which it serveth.</i>	186
<i>To illighten the conscience.</i>	187
<i>To be a ministration of righteousness.</i>	189
	To

The Table.

To be a ministration of life.	190
To be a spiritual Iudge in the heart.	191
To be an abiding ministration.	192
To enoble the heart,	195
{ Magnanimity.	196
With { Fortitude.	198
Lustre and majesty.	200
{ Liberty and joy.	201
The dispensers of the Gospell are therein to use { Liberty.	201
{ Sincerity.	205
The Gospell to be received with all honour and acception.	208
And to be adorned in a suteable conversation.	214
We adorne the Gospell of Christ.	
1 When we set it up in our hearts as our onely rule.	216
2 When we walke in fitting obedience thereunto.	219
3 When we continue therein.	219
4 When we hold it in the unitie of the Spirit.	221
5 When we seriously seeke the knowledge of Christ and heaven in it.	222
6 When we make it our onely Altar of refuge in trouble.	223
Christ in the ministry of his Gospell is full of care over his Church.	228
This care seene in his Love.	233
Studie and inquisitivenessse.	233
Constancie and continuance.	234
Emptying of himselfe.	235
Laying downe his life.	
Grace and Spirit.	236
Preparations for the future.	
{ Food.	237
The effects of his care { Guidance.	
{ Health.	238
{ Comfort.	239
{ Protection.	
The grounds of this care.	
He is our Kinsman.	240
He is our Companion.	241
H.	

The Table.

<i>He is our Head.</i>	
<i>He is our Advocate.</i>	242
<i>He is our Purchaser.</i>	244
<i>A right Iudgement of God in Christ doth much strengthen faith.</i>	245
<i>The Gospell is Christs owne strength.</i>	249
<i>Christ then is to be preached and not our selves,</i>	250
<i>With</i> <i>Authoritie.</i>	254
<i>Wisedome.</i>	254
<i>Meekenesse.</i>	256
<i>Faithfulnesse.</i>	256
<i>Christ preached is to be received,</i>	257
<i>With</i> <i>Faith.</i>	257
<i>Love.</i>	259
<i>Meeknesse.</i>	259
<i>Gods ordination gives life and majestic to his ordinances.</i>	260
<i>There is a naturall Theologie, no naturall Christianity.</i>	261
<i>Gods Iudgement unsearchable in hiding the Gospell from former ages.</i>	262
<i>The Gospell an heavenly invitation unto mercy.</i>	263
<i>The Gospell not to be preached but by those that are sent.</i>	264
<i>Three things requisite to an ordinary mission</i>	265
<i>Gods providence casting upon the meanes.</i>	265
<i>Meet qualification of the person sent</i>	265
<i>Ecclesiasticall ordination by imposition of hands.</i>	269
<i>Fidelity.</i>	265
<i>Ability.</i>	268
<i>The Church of the Jewes was the chiefe Metropolitan Church.</i>	269
<i>The calling of the Gentiles to be Daughters of that Mother Church.</i>	271
<i>The Church is the seat of saving Truth.</i>	273
<i>The office of the Church concerning Holy Scriptures.</i>	275
<i>The stabilitie of the Church, with the grounds thereof.</i>	278
<i>Whether the Church may faile.</i>	281
<i>Whether the Church be alwaies visible.</i>	282
<i>Christs Kingdome is a hated Kingdome.</i>	284
<i>Christ hath enemies there where his Kingdome is set up.</i>	286
<i>Christs Kingdome stronger than all adverse opposition.</i>	287
<i>Christs Kingdome quiet in the midst of enemies.</i>	290
<i>The</i>	

The Table.

<i>The faithfull are Christs owne people,</i>	296
<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between; align-items: center;"> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>By a right of</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;"> { </div> <div style="text-align: left;"> <i>Donation.</i> <i>Purchase.</i> <i>Conquest.</i> <i>Covenant.</i> <i>Communion.</i> </div> </div>	297
<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between; align-items: center;"> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>We may belong unto Christ by</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;"> { </div> <div style="text-align: left;"> <i>Externall profession.</i> <i>Reall Implantation.</i> </div> </div>	299
<i>Christ bringeth selfe-evidencing properties into the soule.</i>	300
<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between; align-items: center;"> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>Christs propriety to us.</i> <i>the ground of his</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;"> { </div> <div style="text-align: left;"> <i>Caring for us.</i> <i>Purging of us.</i> <i>Sparing of us.</i> <i>Praying of us.</i> <i>Teaching of us.</i> <i>Chastising us in mercy.</i> </div> </div>	305
<i>Christs people militarie men.</i>	306
<i>Satans wayes and Methods of assaulting the Church.</i>	307
<i>Christs people are willingly subject unto him.</i>	308
<i>By nature men are niterly unwilling.</i>	308
<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between; align-items: center;"> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>Apt to charge the wayes of God as</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;"> { </div> <div style="text-align: left;"> <i>Grievous.</i> <i>Unprofitable.</i> <i>Vnequall.</i> </div> </div>	309
<i>The Spirit of Bondage compelleth many to unwilling services.</i>	312
<i>The power of the word in naturall men worketh a velleitie or incomplete will.</i>	312
<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between; align-items: center;"> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>Willingnesse in</i> <i>Christs people</i> <i>wrought by the</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;"> { </div> <div style="text-align: left;"> <i>Evidence and sense of their naturall estate.</i> <i>Spirituall illumination of minde.</i> <i>Communion and adspiration of the Spirit.</i> <i>Apprehension of Gods deare Love.</i> <i>Beauty and pretiousnesse of heavenly promises.</i> <i>Experiences of peace, comfort, & security in Gods waies.</i> <i>Beauty of Holinesse.</i> </div> </div>	313
<i>Such as the will is such is the service.</i>	314
<i>Because the will is the first mover.</i>	315
<i>Because</i>	320
<i>Because</i>	321
<i>Because</i>	324
<i>Because</i>	325
<i>Because</i>	327
<i>Because</i>	328

The Table.

<i>Because God esteemeth himselfe most honoured thereby.</i>	330
<i>Whether those who are truly Christs people may not have feares and unwillingnesse in his service?</i>	330
1 <i>They may have a feare of</i> } Suffering Gods wrath. Of meddling with his service.	331
2 <i>They may have deadnesse, wearinesse, and a mixture of unwillingnesse in his service,</i>	332
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center; justify-content: center;"> <div style="margin-right: 10px;">From the</div> <div style="font-size: 3em; margin-right: 10px;">{</div> <div style="text-align: left; padding-left: 10px;"> <i>Strength of corruptions. Weakenesse of graces. Importunity of Temptations. Weight of some fresh sinne. Spiritual desertions.</i> </div> </div>	333-334
3 <i>Yet stil their wills are sincerely carried towards God.</i>	335
<i>Christs people are made willing to obey him by an act of power.</i>	337
<i>The ground hereof is the universall fleshlinesse and reluctancie of the will naturally against grace.</i>	344
<i>The more earnest should we be to serve Christ when we are his.</i>	347
<i>Holinesse a glorious and beautifull thing.</i>	349
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center; justify-content: center;"> <div style="margin-right: 10px;">In regard of the</div> <div style="font-size: 3em; margin-right: 10px;">{</div> <div style="text-align: left; padding-left: 10px;"> <i>Author of it. Nature of it.</i> </div> </div>	351
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center; justify-content: center;"> <div style="margin-right: 10px;"></div> <div style="font-size: 3em; margin-right: 10px;">{</div> <div style="text-align: left; padding-left: 10px;"> <i>Reclititude. Harmony. Maturity. Indeficiency.</i> </div> </div>	352
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center; justify-content: center;"> <div style="margin-right: 10px;"></div> <div style="font-size: 3em; margin-right: 10px;">{</div> <div style="text-align: left; padding-left: 10px;"> <i>Properties of it,</i> </div> </div>	354
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center; justify-content: center;"> <div style="margin-right: 10px;"></div> <div style="font-size: 3em; margin-right: 10px;">{</div> <div style="text-align: left; padding-left: 10px;"> <i>Operation of it.</i> </div> </div>	356
<i>All Christs people are Priests unto God.</i>	357
<i>Holinesse the character of Christs subjects.</i>	359
<i>None willing to come to Christ till they see beauty in his Service.</i>	363
<i>Multitudes borne unto Christ by the Gospell.</i>	365
<i>Whether universality and visible pompe be a note of the Church.</i>	369
<i>All Christs subjects are with all his Children.</i>	374
<i>And should expresse the affection of Children.</i>	376
<i>The Birth of a Christian is a Heavenly worke.</i>	377
<i>Therefore the seed must be received with heavenly affections.</i>	379
<i>Therefore we must looke unto God in his Ordinances.</i>	380
<i>The Birth of a Christian a secret and undiscerned worke.</i>	380
<i>The</i>	The

The Table.

<i>The Birth of a Christian is a sudden Birth.</i>	381												
<i>How the Lord sweareth.</i>	384												
<i>Why the Lord confirmed the Priesthood of Christ by an oath.</i>	385												
<i>Christ's solemn Ordination unto the office of a Priest.</i>	387												
<i>Which is the foundation of all the Churches Comfort,</i>	388												
in regard of Christ's	<table> <tr> <td>Fidelity.</td> <td>390</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Mercy.</td> <td>391</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Power.</td> <td>ibid.</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Propriety.</td> <td>ibid.</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Sympathy.</td> <td>393</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Consanguinity.</td> <td>ibid.</td> </tr> </table>	Fidelity.	390	Mercy.	391	Power.	ibid.	Propriety.	ibid.	Sympathy.	393	Consanguinity.	ibid.
Fidelity.	390												
Mercy.	391												
Power.	ibid.												
Propriety.	ibid.												
Sympathy.	393												
Consanguinity.	ibid.												
<i>How God is said to repent.</i>	393												
<i>Whether God hath repented him of the law.</i>	395												
<i>Why the Covenant of Grace is immutable.</i>	398												
<i>What a Priest is.</i>	402												
<i>Grounds tending to discover the necessity of a Priest for man.</i>	403												
<i>A discovery of that necessity,</i>	408												
<i>With the Application thereof.</i>	411												
<i>Qualifications of the person which was to be our Priest.</i>	416												
He was to be	<table> <tr> <td>a Mediator, 417.</td> <td rowspan="4">} all in the unity of one Person. 420</td> </tr> <tr> <td>a Surety, 418.</td> </tr> <tr> <td>a Sacrifice, ibid.</td> </tr> <tr> <td>an Altar. 419.</td> </tr> </table>	a Mediator, 417.	} all in the unity of one Person. 420	a Surety, 418.	a Sacrifice, ibid.	an Altar. 419.							
a Mediator, 417.	} all in the unity of one Person. 420												
a Surety, 418.													
a Sacrifice, ibid.													
an Altar. 419.													
<i>Wherein the Acts of Christ's Priesthood consisted,</i>													
namely,	<table> <tr> <td>Oblation.</td> <td rowspan="2">} 424</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Intercession.</td> </tr> </table>	Oblation.	} 424	Intercession.									
Oblation.	} 424												
Intercession.													
<i>Christ's will made his death a Sacrifice.</i>	425												
<i>Christ's Intercession or Appearing in Heaven for us.</i>	428												
<i>Christ's death did merit, and his life conferre Redemption.</i>	429												
<i>Wherein Christ's Intercession consisteth.</i>	431												
<i>No Mediators of Intercession.</i>	433												
<i>The great benefits which come to us by Christ's Intercession.</i>	434												
<i>What is the fruite and vertue of Christ's Priesthood,</i>													
namely,	<table> <tr> <td>Satisfaction for our debt,</td> <td rowspan="2">} 438</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Acquisition of our inheritance.</td> </tr> </table>	Satisfaction for our debt,	} 438	Acquisition of our inheritance.									
Satisfaction for our debt,	} 438												
Acquisition of our inheritance.													
	An												

The Table.

<i>An Explication of the Doctrine of Iustification by righteousness imputed.</i>	440
<i>How Christ being innocent, might justly suffer the punishment of our sinnes.</i>	444
1. <i>God may cast paines upon an innocent person.</i>	445
2. <i>It is not against generall Equity for one to suffer anothers sinne.</i>	446
3. <i>This Equitie in the present case is, that all parties</i> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between; align-items: center;"> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>are both</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;"> <i>{</i> </div> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>Willing and Glorified.</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;"> <i>}</i> </div> </div>	446
4. <i>In the innocent person thus suffering as a sacrifice for the no- cent is required,</i>	
1. <i>An intimate conjunction with him that is no- cent.</i>	447
2. <i>A full dominion over that from which in suffering hee parteth.</i>	448
3. <i>A strength to breake through the sufferings.</i>	449
<i>How sinne thus punished, may bee said to bee pardoned.</i>	449.
<i>A double use of the doctrine of Righteousnesse imputed,</i>	
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center;"> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">{</div> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>Selfe-deniall. Confidence.</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">}</div> </div>	450
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center;"> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">{</div> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>Selfe-deniall. Confidence.</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">}</div> </div>	452
<i>Redundancie of Christs merit,</i>	
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center;"> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">{</div> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>Immunity from evils. Priviledge of Union with him,</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">}</div> </div>	455
<i>purchasing for us</i>	
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center;"> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">{</div> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>whence our</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">}</div> </div>	
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center;"> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">{</div> <div style="text-align: center;"> <i>Union, Adoption, Exaltation.</i> </div> <div style="font-size: 2em; line-height: 1;">}</div> </div>	456
<i>Duties growing out of the consideration of Christs Priesthood.</i>	457
<i>Of Melchisedec his Person, Order, Bread and Wine, Benediction, Tithes, Genealogie.</i>	461
<i>Christ is a King of Righteousnesse.</i>	465
<i>Christ is a King of Canaanites.</i>	467
<i>Where Christ is a King of Righteousnesse, he is a King of Peace.</i>	469
<i>Christs forwardnesse to meete and to blesse his people.</i>	471
<i>Christ</i>	

The Table.

<i>Christ a Comforter and refresher of his People.</i>	472
<i>Christ a Receiver of Homage and Tribute.</i>	473
<i>Liberrall maintenance due unto the Ministers of the Gospell.</i>	475
<i>Christs Priesthood is everlasting.</i>	482
<i>Why the Lord is said to be at the right hand of his Church.</i>	485
<i>Christs enemies kings.</i>	487
<i>All praise and honour to bee given unto God for the Power and Office of Christ.</i>	489
<i>Christ is present and prepared to defend his People from their enemies.</i>	491
<i>Christ in his appointed time will utterly overthrow his greatest enemies.</i>	493
<i>Satans enmity in</i> { <i>Tempting.</i>	494
{ <i>Accusing.</i>	495
<i>How the Spirit of judgement overcommeth corruptions.</i>	495
<i>How Christ overcommeth his potent adversaries in the world.</i>	498
<i>There is a constituted time wherein Christ will bee avenged of his enemies.</i>	502
1. <i>When sinne is growne to its fulnesse,</i>	503
<i>which is knowne by its</i> { <i>Universality,</i>	504
{ <i>Impudence,</i>	
{ <i>Obstinacie.</i>	
2. <i>When the Church is thoroughly humbled and purged.</i>	506
3. <i>When all humane hopes and expectations are gone.</i>	506
<i>Christs victories are by way of pleading and disceptation.</i>	509
<i>A torrens of curses betweene man and Salvation.</i>	515
<i>The Necessity of Christs Sufferings.</i>	522
<i>The greatnesse and Nature of Christs Sufferings.</i>	521, 522.
<i>The Power and vertue of Christs Resurrection.</i>	524



AN
EXPOSITION
OF THE HUNDRETH AND TENTH
PSALME.

PSALME 110. vers. 1.

*The Lord said unto my Lord, sit thou
at my right hand; untill I make
thine enemies thy footstool.*



CHRIST JESUS the Lord,
is the Summe and Center of
all divine revealed truth, nei-
ther is any thing to bee prea-
ched unto men, as an object
of their faith, or necessarie
element of their salvation,
which doth not, some way
or other, either meete in him,
or refer unto him. All Truths, especially Divine, are of
a noble and pretious nature; and therefore whatsoever
mysteries of his Counsell God hath beene pleased in
his Word to reveale, the Church is bound in her mini-
stery to declare unto men. And Saint Paul professeth

B

his

I

VERSE. I.



Christ the Summe of the Scriptures.

VERSE I.

Act. 20. 27.

1 Cor. 2. 1, 2.

2 Cor. 4. 5.

1 Cor. 4. 1, 2.

Eph. 4. 20.

Totum Christiani
nominis pondus
& fructus Mors
Christi. Tertul.

2 Cor. 3. 6, 14.

Heb. 1. 1.

2 Quid est quod
dicitur Testa-
mentum vetus,
nisi occultatio no-
vi? & quid aliud
quod dicitur no-
vum nisi veteris
Revelatio. Aug.
De Civ. Dei. l. 16.
c. 26. hoc occulta-
batur in veteri
Testamento pro
temporū dispen-
satione iustissima
quod revelatur in
novo. Id. De pec-
merit. & remiss.

l. 1. c. 11. Et tom. 4.

de Catec. rud. c. 4.

ῥῆμα & ἰσχυρίων

αἰσθησῶμεν.

ἰσχυρίων ῥῆμα

παρακαλεῖται.

Iustin. Martyr.

Mat. 5. 17.

Mat. 7. 12.

Luk. 16. 16, 31.

Luk. 9. 28.

Hilar. can. 17. in

Math. 6. Amb.

li. 7. in Luc.

Iohn 1. 17.

his faithfulness therein, I have not shunned to declare un-
to you all the Counsell of God. But yet all this Counsell
(which else where hee calls *μάρτυριον τοῦ θεοῦ*, the testimony of
God) hee gathers together into this one conclusion, I
determined not to know any thing amongst you, that is, in
my preaching unto you to make discovery of any other
knowledge, as matter of consequence or faith, but onely
of Iesus Christ, and him crucified. And therefore preaching
of the Word is called preaching of Christ, and Ministers
of the Word, Ministers of Christ, and learning of the Word,
Learning of Christ, because our Faith, our Workes, and
our Worship (which are the three essentiall elements of a
Christian, the whole dutie of man, and the whole will
of God) have all their foundation, growth, end and ver-
tue, onely in and from Christ crucified. There is no fruit,
weight, nor value in a Christian title, but onely in and
from the death of Christ.

The Word in generall is divided into the Old and New
Testament, both which are the same in substance,
though different in the manner of their dispensations, as
Moses veild differ'd from himsele unveild. Now that
Christ is the substance of the whole New Testament,
containing the Historie, Doctrine, and Prophecies of him
in the administration of the latter ages of the Church, is
very manifest to all. The old Scriptures are againe divi-
ded into the Law and Prophets (for the Historicall parts
of them doe containe either typicall prefigurations of
the Evangelicall Church, or inductions and exemplary
demonstrations of the generall truth of Gods Justice and
promises, which are set forth by way of Doctrine and
Precept in the Law and Prophets.) Now Christ is the
summe of both these, they waited upon him in his trans-
figuration, to note that in him they had their accomplish-
ment. First, for the Law, hee is the substance of it, hee
brought Grace to fulfill the exactions, and Truth to make
good the prefigurations of the whole Law. The cere-

moniall

Christ the Summe of the Scriptures.

3

VERSE I.

moniall Law he fulfilled and abolished, the *morall Law* he fulfilled and established; that his obedience thereunto might be the ground of our *righteousnesse*, and his Spirit and Grace therewith might bee the ground of our *Obedience*. And therefore it is called *the Law of Christ*. 2. For *the Prophets*, hee is the Summe of them too, for to him they give all witnesse. Hee is the *Author* of their Prophecies, they spake by his Spirit; and he is the *Object* of their Prophecies, they spake of the Grace and Salvation which was to come by him. So that the whole Scriptures are nothing else but a testimony of *Christ*, and faith in him, of that absolute and universall necessity which is laid upon all the world to beleeve in his Name. It is not onely *necessitas precepti*, because we are thereunto commanded, but *necessitas medii* too, because he is the onely Ladder betweene Earth and Heaven, the alone Mediator betweene God and Man, in him there is a finall and unabolishable covenant established, and *there is no name but his under Heaven by which a man can be saved*.

In consideration of all which, and for that I have formerly discovered the *Insufficiency* of any either inward, or outward principle of mans happinesse, save onely the *Life of Christ*, I have chosen to speake upon this Psalm, and out of it to discover those waies, whereby the *Life of Christ* is dispenced and administred towards his Church. For this Psalm is one of the fullest and most compendious prophecies of the Person and Offices of *Christ* in the whole Old Testament, and so full of fundamentall truth, that I shall not shunne to call it *Symbolum Davidicum*, the Prophet *Dauids Creed*. And indeed there are very few, if any of the Articles of that Creed, which we all generally professe, which are not either plainly expressed, or by most evident implication couched in this little modell. First, the *Doctrine of the Trinitie* is in the first words; *The Lord said unto my Lord*. There is *Iehovah the Father*, and *My Lord*, the Sonne, and the

Gal. 6. 2.
Act. 10. 43.
1 Pet. 1. 10. 11.
Ioh. 5. 39.

1 Ioh. 3. 23.

Act. 4. 12.

VERSE I.

consecrating of him to be *Dauids* Lord, which was by the *Holy Ghost*; by whose fulnesse he was anointed unto the Offices of King and Priest, for so our Saviour himselfe expounds this word *Said*, by the sealing and sanctification of him to his office, *Ioh. 10. 34, 35, 36.* Then we have the *Incarnation of Christ*, in the word, *My Lord*, together with his dignity and honor above *David* (as our Saviour himselfe expounds it, *Matth. 22. 42, 45.*) *Mine*, that is, my Sonne by discent and Genealogy after the flesh, and yet my Lord too, in regard of a higher Son-ship. Wee have also the *Sufferings of Christ*, in that he was consecrated a *Priest*, v. 4. to offer up himselfe once for all, and so to drinke of the brooke in the way. We have his *Eluctation* and conquest over all his enemies, and sufferings, his *Resurrection*, he shall lift up his head, his *Ascension and Intercession*, sit thou on my right hand. And in that is comprised his *Descent* into Hell by *S. Pauls* way of arguing, *That he ascended, what is it but that hee descended first into the lower parts of the Earth?* *Eph. 4. 9.* We have a *Holy Catholicke Church*, gathered together by the Scepter of his Kingdome, and holding in the parts thereof a blessed, and beautifull *Communion of Saints*, *The Lord shall send forth the Rod of thy strength out of Sion; Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies. Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy Power in the beauties of holinesse, from the wombe of the morning, thou hast the dew of thy youth.* Wee have the last *Iudgement*, for all his enemies must bee put under his feete, (which is the *Apostles* argument to prove the end of all things, *1 Cor. 15. 25.*) and there is the *day of his wrath*, wherein he shall accomplish that judgement over the heathen; and that victory over the kings of the earth, (*who take counsell and bandy themselves against him,*) which he doth here in his Word beginne. Wee have the *Remission of sinnes*, comprised in his *Priesthood*, for hee was to offer *Sacrifice for the remission of sinnes, and to put away sinne by the Sacrifice of himselfe*, *Eph. 1. 7. Heb. 9. 26.*

We

The Analysis of the Psalme.

5

VERSE. I.

We have the *Resurrection of the Bodie*, because he must *subdue all his enemies under his feet*, and the last enemy to be subdued is death, as the Apostle argues out of this Psalme, *1 Cor. 15. 25, 26.* And lastly, wee have *life everlasting*, in the everlasting merit and vertue of his Priesthood, Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec, and in his sitting at the right hand of God, whither he is gone as our forerunner, and to prepare a place for us, *Heb. 6. 20. Iob. 14. 2.* and therefore the Apostle from his sitting there, and living ever inferreth the perfection and certainty of our salvation, *Rom. 6. 8. 11. Rom. 8. 17. Ephes. 2. 6. Col. 3. 1, 2, 3, 4. 1 Cor. 15. 49. Phil. 3. 20, 21. 1 Thess. 4. 14. Heb. 7. 25. 1 Iob. 3. 2.*

The Summe then of the whole Psalme, (without any curious or artificiall Analysis, wherein every man according to his owne conceit and method will varie from other) is this; *The Ordination of Christ unto his Kingdome*, together with the dignitie and vertue thereof, *vers. 1. The Scepter or Instrument of that Kingly power, vers. 2. The strength and successe of both*, in recovering, maugre all the malice of enemies, a Kingdome of willing subjects, and those in multitudes unto himselfe, *vers. 2. 3. The Consecration of him unto that everlasting Priesthood*, by the vertue and merit whereof hee purchased this Kingdome to himselfe, *vers. 4. The Conquest over all his strongest, and most numerous adversaries, vers. 5. 6. The prooffe of all*, and the way of effecting it, in his sufferings and exaltation. He shall gather a Church, and hee shall confound his enemies, because for that end hee hath finished, and broken through all the sufferings which he was to drinke of, and hath lifted up his head againe.

VERSE. I.

The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, untill I make thine enemies thy Footstoolc.

Here the Holy Ghost beginnes with the *Kingdome of Christ*, which hee describeth and magnifieth; By his

The Ordination of Christ

VERSE I.

unction and obsignation thereunto, The Word or Decree of his Father. The Lord said. 2 By the Greatnesse of his person in himselfe, and yet neereneffe in blood and nature unto us. My Lord. 3 By the Glorie, power, and heavenlineffe of this his Kingdome, for in the administration thereof he sitteth at the right hand of his Father. Sit thou at my right hand. 4 By the Continuance and Victories thereof. Untill I make thy foes thy footstool.

Ainsworth.

The Lord said. Some read it, certainly or assuredly said, by reason of the affinity which the originall word hath with Amen (from which it differs onely in the transposition of the same radicall letters.) Which would afford this observation by the way; *That all which God saies of or to his Sonne is very faithfull and true.* For which cause the Gospell is by speciall Emphasis called, *The Word of Truth*, Ephes. 1. 13. and πιστις ὁ λόγος, *A faithfull saying, worthy of all acceptation.* 1 Tim. 1. 15. *Or most worthy to be beleevd, and embraced.* (For so the word πίστις and λαμβάνω, being applied unto the Gospell, signifie, Ioh. 1. 12. Ioh. 3. 33. Act. 17. 11. Being opposite unto ἀποδοιδὶς ὁ λόγος, Act. 13. 46.)

But the principall thing here to bee noted is, *The Decree, appointment, Sanctification, and sealing of Christ vnto his Regall Office.* For the Word of God in the Scripture signifies his Blessing, Power, Pleasure, Ordination. *Man liveth not by bread alone but by every word which proceedeth out of the mouth of God,* Matth. 4. 4. That is, by that command which the creatures have received from God to nourish by, that Benediction and Sanctification which maketh every Creature of God good unto us, 1 Tim. 4. 5. Gods saying is ever doing something, his words are operative, and carry an unction and authoritie along with them.

Whence we may note, *That Christs Kingdome belongs to him not by usurpation, intrusion, or violence, but legally, by order, decree, investiture from his Father.* All Kings raigne

unto his Kingdome.

raigne by Gods providence, but not alwayes by his approbation. *They have set up Kings, but not by me; they have made Princes, and I knew it not, Amos 8.4.* But Christ is a King both by the providence, and by the Good will and immediate Consecration of his Father. *He loveth him and hath given all things into his hand, Ioh. 3.35.* He judgeth no man but hath committed all judgement to his Sonne, *Ioh. 5. 22.* That is, hath entrusted him with the oeconomie and actuall administration of that power in the Church, which originally belonged unto himselfe. *Hee hath made him to be Lord and Christ, Act. 2.36.* Hee hath ordained him to bee Iudge of quicke and dead, *Act. 10.42.* Hee hath appointed him over his owne house, *Heb. 3.2.6.* He hath crowned him and put all things in subjection under his feet, *Heb. 2.7,8.* He hath highly exalted him, and given him a name above every name, *Phil. 2.9.* Therefore he calleth him *My King*, set up by him upon his owne holy hill, and that in the vertue of a solemne decree, *Psal. 2.6,7.*

But we must here distinguish betweene *Regnum naturale*, Christs naturall Kingdome which belongeth unto him as God coessentiall, and coeternall with his Father: and *Regnum oeconomicum*, his Dispensatory Kingdome, as he is Christ the Mediator, which was his, not by Nature, but by *Donation* and unction from his Father, that he might be the Head of his Church, a Prince of Peace, and a King of Righteousnesse unto his people. In which respect he had conferr'd upon him all such meet qualifications as might fit him for the dispensation of this Kingdome. 1 God prepared him a *Body*, or a *Humane nature*, *Heb. 10.5.* and by the grace of personall and Hypostaticall union caused the Godhead to dwell bodily in him, *Col. 2.9.* 2 He anointed him with a *fulnesse of his Spirit*, not such a fulnesse as *Iohn Baptist* and *Stephen* had, *Luk. 1. 15.* *Act. 7.55.* which was still *τὸ μέτρον*, the fulnesse of a measure or vessel, a fulnesse for themselves only, *Eph. 4.7.*

71

V E R S E I.

Tertull. Apolog. cap. 30. & ad Scapulam, cap. 5. Dan. 7.14. Mat. 11.27. Ioh. 17.2.

VERSE I.

1 *Cor.* 12. 11. *Rom.* 12. 3. But a fulnesse without measure, like the fulnesse of light in the Sun, or water in the Sea, which hath an unsearchable sufficiencie and redundancie for the whole Church, *Ioh.* 3. 34. *Ephes.* 3. 8. *Mal.* 4. 2. So that as he was furnished with all Spirituall Endowments of Wisedome, judgement, power, love, holinesse, for the dispensation of his owne Office, *Esa.* 11. 2. 61. 1. So from his fulnesse did there runne over a share and portion of all his Graces unto his Church, *Iohn* 1. 16. *Col.* 2. 19. 3 He did by a solemne and *publike promulgation* proclaime the Kingdome of Christ unto the Church, and declare the decree, in that heavenly voice which came unto him from the excellent glorie, *This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased, heare ye him,* *Psal.* 2. 7. *Matth.* 3. 17. 17. 5. 2 *Pet.* 1. 17. 4 He hath given him a *Scepter of Righteousnesse*, and hath put a sword in his mouth and a rod of iron in his hand, made him a Preacher and an Apostle, to reveale the secrets of his bosome, and to testifie the things which hee hath seene and heard, *Heb.* 1. 8. *Revel.* 1. 16. 2. 16. *Psal.* 2. 9. *Esa.* 16. 1. *Heb.* 3. 1. *Ioh.* 1. 18. *Ioh.* 3. 11, 12. 32. 34. 5 He hath *honoured him* with many Ambassadors, and servants to negotiate the affaires of his Kingdome, *some Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Evangelists, and some Pastors and Teachers, for the perfecting of the Saints, for the worke of the Ministerie, and for the Edifying of his Bodie,* 2 *Cor.* 5. 20. *Ephes.* 4. 11. 12. 6 Hee hath given him the *soules and consciences* of men even to the uttermost parts of the earth for his possession, and for the territories of his Kingdome, *Psal.* 2. 8. *Ioh.* 17. 6. 7 He hath given him a *power* concerning the Lawes of his Church. A power to make Lawes, the *Law of Faith*, (as *S. Paul* calls it, *Rom.* 3. 27.) *Mark.* 16. 15, 16. A power to expound Lawes, as the *morall Law*, *Mat.* 5. A power to abrogate Lawes, as the *Law of Ordinances*, *Col.* 2. 14. 8 Hee hath given him a *power of judging* and *condem-*

The Qualitie of Christs Kingdome.

9

VERSE 1.

condemning enemies, *Ioh. 5. 27. Luk. 19. 27.* Lastly, hee hath given him a power of remitting sinnes, and sealing pardons, which is a roiall prerogative, *Matth. 9. 6. Ioh. 20. 23.* And these things belong unto him as hee is *Quidam* as well Man as God, *Iohn 5. 27.* For the workes of Christs mediation were of two sorts. *Opera Ministerii*, workes of service, and ministry, for he tooke upon himselfe the forme of a servant, and was a Minister of the Circumcision, *Phil. 2. 8. Rom. 15. 8.* and *Opera Potestatis*, workes of Authoritie and government in the Church. *All power is given unto me in heaven and earth, Matth. 28. 18.*

The Qualitie of this Kingdome is not Temporall or Secular, over the naturall lives or civill negotiations of men; He came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, his Kingdome was not of this World, he disclaimed any civill power in the distribution of lands and possessions, he withdrew himselfe from the people when by force they would have made him a King, and himselfe (that in this point hee might give none offence) payed tribute unto *Cesar*, *Matth. 20. 28. Ioh. 18. 36. Luk. 12. 13, 14. Ioh. 6. 15. Matth. 17. 27.* But his Kingdome is Spirituall, and heavenly over the soules of men, to binde and loose the conscience, to remit and retaine sinnes; to awe and over-rule the hearts, to captivate the affections, to bring into obedience the thoughts, to subdue and pull downe strong holds, to breake in pieces his enemies with an iron rod, to hew and slay them with the words of his mouth, to implant fearefulnesse and astonishment in the hearts of hypocrites, and to give peace, securitie, protection and assurance to his people.

The way whereby he enters upon his Kingdome is ever by way of Conquest. For though the Soules of the Elect are his, yet his enemies have the first possession, as *Canaan* was *Abrahams* by Promise, but his seeds by Victorie. Not but that Christ proclaimes peace first, but because

The Quality of Christs Kingdome.

VERSE I.

because men will not come over nor submit to him without warre. The strong man will not yeeld to be utterly spoiled and crucified upon termes of peace.

Hence then wee may first learne the great Authoritie and Power of this King, who holds his Crowne by immediate tenure from Heaven, and was after a more excellent manner than any other Kings therunto decreed and anointed by God himselfe. Much then are they to blame who finde out wayes to diminish the Kingdome of Christ, and boldly affirme, that though a King hee could not but bee, yet hee might have beene a King without a Kingdome, a King in personall right, without subjects or territories to exercise his regall power in; A King onely to punish enemies, but not a King to governe or to feed a people. But shall God give his Sonne the uttermost parts of the earth for his possession, and shall men withhold it? shall God give men unto Christ (*Thine they were and thou gavest them unto me. Ioh. 17.6.*) and shall they detaine themselves from him? what is it that he gives unto his Sonne but the soules, the hearts, the very thoughts of men to be made obedient unto his Scepter? *2 Cor. 10. 5.* and shall it then bee within the compasse of humane power to effect, as it is in their pride to maintaine, *fieri posse ut nulla sit Ecclesia?* We know one principall part of the Kingdome and power of Christ is to cast downe imaginations, and euery high thing that exalteth it selfe against the knowledge of God, and that not onely unto conviction, but unto obedience, as the Apostle shewes: to send such gifts of the Spirit unto men as should benefit the very Rebellious, that God might dwell amongst them, *Psal. 68. 18.* for in as much as Christ came to destroy the workes of the devill, that is, sinne, (as the Apostle shewes, *1 Ioh. 3. 8. Ioh. 8. 41, 44.*) and in their place to bring in the worke of God, which is Faith in him (for so that Grace is frequently stiled, *Ioh. 6. 29. Phil. 1. 29. Col. 2. 12.*) Therefore it is requisite

Christ compels not Mans Will.

quisite that none of Satans instruments, and confederates, such as the hearts of naturall men are, should be too strong for the grace of Christ.

But what then, doth Christ compell men against their wils to become subject unto him? No, in no wise. He hath ordered to bring them in by a way of voluntarinesse and obedience. And herein is the wisdom of his power seene that his grace shall mightily produce those effects in men, which their hearts shall most obediently and willingly consent unto; that hee is able to use the proper and genuine motions of second causes to the producing of his owne most holy, wise, and mercifull purposes. As wee see humane wisdom can so order, moderate, and make use of naturall motions, that by them artificiall effects shall be produced; as in a clocke the naturall motion of the weight or plummet causeth the artificiall distribution of houres, and minutes; and in a mill the naturall motion of the winde or water, causeth an artificiall effect in grinding the corne: How much more then shall the wisdom of Almighty God, whose weaknesse is stronger, and whose foolishnesse is wiser than men, be able so to use, incline and order the wils of men, without destroying either them or their liberty, as that thereby the Kingdome of his Sonne shall be set up amongst them? so that though there be still an habituall, radicall, fundamentall indetermination and indifferencie unto severall wayes (unto none of which there can bee a compulsion) yet by the *secret, ineffable*, and most *sweet operation* of the Spirit of Grace, opening the eyes, convincing the judgement, perswading the affections, inclining the heart, giving an understanding, quickning and knocking at the conscience, a man shall be swayed unto the *Obedience of Christ*, and shall come unto him so *certainely* as if he were *Drawne*, and yet so *freely* as if he were left unto himselfe. For in the calling of men by the word there is a *Trahere*, and a *Venire*. The Father
draw-

II

VERSE I.

*Illud nescio quo
modo dicatur
frustra Deum
misereri nisi vos
velimus: si enim
Deus miseretur
etiam volumus;
Ad eandem
quippe miseri-
cordiam pertinet
ut velimus.*

*Aug. Tom. 4.
Ad Simplicianũ.
Lib. I. qu. 2.
Agit omnipotens
in cordibus ho-
minum etiam
motum volunta-
tis eorum, ut per
eos agat, quod
per eos agere ipse
voluerit. Id. de
Grat. & lib.
Arb. c. 31.*

*2 Cor. 4. 6.
Ephes. 1. 17, 18.
Act. 26. 18.
1 Ioh. 2. 27.
Ioh. 16. 8.
Gen. 9. 17.
Act. 16. 14.
Ier. 31. 18. 33.
Ezek. 36. 26, 27.
1 Ioh. 5. 20.
Psal. 119. 34, 36.*

Subjection due unto Christ.

VERSE I.

*Nolite cogitare
inuitum trahi,
trahitur animus
& amore. Aug.
Tract. 26. in
Johan.*

draweth, and the man commeth, Ioh. 6. 44. That notes the efficacy of grace, and this the *sweetnesse* of grace. Grace worketh *strongly*, and therefore God is said *To Draw*, and it worketh *sweetly* too, and therefore man is said *to Come*.

Againe, from hence wee learne our *Dutie* unto this King, the honour and subjection which is due unto him. *The Father committeth all Iudgement to the Sonne*, that is, hath anointed him with the office, and abilities of a King (for iudgement stands for the whole dutie of a King. *Psal. 72. 1.* and is therefore frequently attributed unto the *Messias*, *Esa. 42. 1. 4.* *Ier. 23. 5.* *Ier. 33. 15.*) And from thence our Saviour inferres that *all men should honour the Sonne, even as they honour the Father, Ioh. 2. 22, 23.* with the same worship, reverence and subjection. For God hath highly exalted him, and given him a name above every name, *That at the name of Iesus*, that is, unto that holy thing, unto the Power and Scepter of that divine Person, which is unto us so comfortably manifested in a name of salvation, *Every knee should bow, &c. Phil. 2. 9, 10.* This Dutie the Psalmist expresseth by *kissing the Sonne*. Which denoteth unto us three things: *1 Love*. For a kisse is a symbole and expression of love, and therefore used by the Primitive Christians in their Feasts of Love, and after prayer unto God; and oftentimes enjoined by Saint *Paul* as an Expression of Christian Love. Inasmuch that it was a proverbiall speech amongst the Heathen, See how these Christians doe love one another. And this is a Dutie which the Apostle requires, under paine of the extreme curse that can light upon a man, *to love the Lord Iesus Christ, 1 Cor. 16. 22. Ephes. 6. 24.* And if any man, saith our Saviour, *Loveth Father or Mother more than me, he is not worthy of me, or Sonne or Daughter more than me, he is not worthy of me, Matth. 10. 37.* That is, he is utterly unqualified for the benefit of my mediation. For hee that hath good by me cannot

Psal. 2. 12.

Act. 3. 16.

*ἀνδρες φίλοι μου
ἀγαπήμεθα ἀλλήλους
ὡς ἡμεῖς ἀγαπήσαμεν
τὸν κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν.
Justin. Martyr.
Apol. 2.
Osculum pacis
orationis signa-
culum. quæ ora-
tio cum divortio
Sancti osculi in-
tegra? &c. Ter-
tull. de Orat.*

Honour and subjection due to Christ.

13

cannot choose but love me, *Luk. 7. 47.* 2 To kisse in the Scripture phrase noteth * *Worship* and *Service*. Let the men that sacrifice kis the Calves, *Hos. 13. 2. Iob. 31. 26, 27.* And thus wee finde the foure beasts, and the foure and twenty Elders, and every Creature in Heaven and on Earth, and under the Earth, worshipping the Lamb, and ascribing blessing, honour, glory and power unto him, *Revel. 5. 8. 13.* 3 To kisse is an expresseion of *Loyalty* and *Obedience*, thus *Samuel* kissed *Saul* when he had anointed him king over *Israel*, *1 Sam. 10. 1.* And therefore the * *Septuagint*, and *Hierom*, and from them our Translators, render the word which signifieth to kisse, by being obedient or ruled by the words of *Ioseph*, *Gen. 41. 40.* And this likewise is a duty which we owe unto Christ to bee obedient to him, to bee ruled by his mouth, and by the Scepter of his mouth, that is, by his Word, which is therefore called the *Law of Christ*, because it hath a binding power in it. Wee are commanded from Heaven to heare him, *Matth. 17. 5.* And that too under paine of a curse, every soule which will not heare that Prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people, *Act. 3. 23.*

Wee should learne therefore to take his Commands as from God, for he speaketh his Fathers Words, and in his Name, *Deut. 18. 19. Iob. 31. 34.* When *Ahasuerus* commanded *Haman* to put on the Crowne upon *Mordecai*, hee presently executed the kings pleasure, and honored his greatest enemy, because the king required it: Now God hath made Christ our King, and hath crowned him with Honour and Majestie (as the Apostle speakes) and requires of us to kisse this his Sonne, and to bow unto his Name; and therefore be we what wee will, Princes, or Judges, or great men of the World, (who rejoyce in nothing more than in the name of wisdom) this is our Wisdom, and duty, *Psal. 2. 10, 12.* It is too ordinary with great men to bee regardlesse of God and of his waies. Yet we see the wrath of God in

VERSE 1.

* *Affectatione caelestia adorandi ad solis ortum labia vibratis.* Tertull. Apolog. Cap. 16. *Cecilius simulacro Serapidis denotato, ut vulgus supersticiosus solet, manum ori ad-movens, osculum labiis preffit.* Minut. Felix, in Octavio In adorando dextram ad osculum referimus. Plin. lib. 28. cap. 2. *ἱεὶς ἀποστύχωνται τὸ ἵλιον ἔχοντες ἡμῖς τὴν χεῖρα χύσαντες.* Etc. Lucian. de Saltatione.

* *ὑπακούστω.* Ad tui oris imperium cunctus populus obedi-t. Hieron.

VERSE I.

in his Creatures, fire, tempest, pestilence, sword, sickness, makes no distinction betweene them and others, how much lesse will G O D himselfe make, when all Crownes, and Scepters, and Dignities shall bee resigned to him, and all men shall stand in an equall distance and condition before the Tribunall of *Christ*; when no titles of honor, no eminency of station, no treasures of wealth, no strength of dependencies, no retinue and traine of servants will accompany a man into the presence of the Lamb, or stand between him and the judgement of that great day. Wee know hee was a King that feared the presence of a persecuted Prophet, and hee was a Prince that trembled at the preaching of an Apostle in chaines. The word of God cannot be bound, nor limited, it is the Scepter which his Father hath given him, and we cannot without open contestation against God resist his government therein over vs. *He that despiseth you despiseth me, and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent mee*, saith our Saviour. It is Christ himselfe whose Ambassadors wee are, and with whom men have to doe in our Ministerie. And hee will have it so: First, *For our Peace*: If God should speake againe by the Ministry of Angels, in thunder, and fire (as hee did on mount Sina) wee would quickly call for *Moses* and Ministers againe, *Exod. 20. 19*. Secondly, *For his owne Glory*, that the Excellency may be of God and not of men, *2 Cor. 4. 7*. That it may not be in him that planteth, nor in him that watereth, but in God which giveth the blessing and increase, *1 Cor. 3. 7*. That it may not bee in him which willeth, nor in him which runneth, but in God which sheweth mercy, *Rom. 9. 16*. That the Service, Cooperation, and helpe of the Churches joy might bee ours, but the Dominion over mens faith, and the teaching of their inner man might be Christs, *1 Cor. 1. 14. Eph. 4. 20. 21*. Very bold therefore and desperate is the contumacy of those men who stand at defiance with the Power of Christ speaking in his

Subjection due unto Christ.

15

VERSE I.

his servants. The Apostle saith, there is no escape left for those who neglect so great salvation, *Heb. 2.3.* And yet this is the constant folly and cry of naturall men, *We will not have this man to reigne over us. Let us breake their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.*

But first, Every man must bee subject to some King, either Christ or sinne, (for they two divide the World) and their kingdomes will not consist: And the subjects of sinne are all slaves and servants, no liberty amongst them, *Iob. 8. 34.* Whereas Christ makes all his subjects Kings like himselfe, *Revel. 1.6.* and his is a Kingdome of Righteousnesse, Peace, and Joy, *Rom. 14.17.* Secondly, If men by being the subjects of sinne could keepe quite out from the judgement and Scepter of Christ, it were something: but all men must one way or other bee subdued unto him, either as sonnes or as captives, either under his grace, or under his wrath. *As I live saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, Rom. 14. 10, 11.* Hee must bee either a savor of life or of death, either for the rising or the fall of many in Israel, either for a sanctuary, or for a stumbling block; All must either bee saved by him, or judged by him. There is no refuge, nor shelter of escape in any Angle of the World, for his Kingdome reacheth to the uttermost corners of the Earth, and will finde out, and fetch in all his enemies. Thirdly, the matter were not great, if a man could hold out in the opposition. But can thine heart endure, or thine hands bee strong, saith the Lord, in the day that I shall deale with thee? *Ezek. 22. 14.* What will yee doe in the desolation which shall come from farre? when you are spoiled what will yee doe? where will you leave your glory? what will become of the King whom yee served before? It may bee thy money is thine idoll, and thou art held in thraldome under thine owne possessions. But what will remaine of a mans silver and gold to carry him through the wrath to come, but onely the rust thereof to joyne in

*Eris sub pedibus
aut adoptatus
aut victus; lo-
cum habebis vel
gratie vel poene.*
Aug.

*2 Cor. 2. 16.
Luk. 2. 34.
Esa. 8. 14.*

*Esa. 10. 3.
Iere. 4. 30.*

V E R S E T.

in judgement against him? It may bee thou servest the times, and fashions of the world, rejoycest in thy youth, in the waies of thy heart, and in the sight of thine eyes: But thou must not rise out of thy Grave in thy best cloaths, nor appeare before Christlike *Agag* gorgeously apparelled. Thou must not rise to play, but to be judged. It may bee thou servest thine owne lust, and anothers beauty; but what pleasure wilt there bee in the fire of lust when it shall be turned into the fire of Hell? or what beauty wilt thou finde on the left hand of Christ, where the Characters of every mans hellish conscience shall be written in his face? Thou servest thine owne vain-glory and affectations; but what good will it bee to bee admired by thy fellow prisoners, and condemned by thy Judge? In one word, thou servest any of thine owne evill desires; foolish man, here they command thee, and there they will condemne thee, they are here thy Gods, and they will be there thy Devils.

The Second particular in the description of Christs Kingdome is the greatnesse, and neereenesse of his Person unto *David*. *My Lord*. *David* calleth him *my Lord* upon a double reason, by a Spirit of *Prophecie*, as foreseeing his incarnation and nativity out of the Tribe of *Juda*, and stocke of *Iesse*; and so hee was *Dauids Sonne*: and by a Spirit of *Faith* as beleeving him to be his Redeemer, and Salvation: and so hee was *Dauids Lord*. A Virgin shall conceive and beare a Sonne, there wee see his incarnation and descent from *David*; and shall call his Name *Immanuel*, God with us, there wee see his Dominion over *David*. As man so he was his Sonne, and as Mediator so he was his Lord. As Man, so he was subject unto *Mary* his Mother; and as Mediator, so hee was the Lord and Savior of his Mother, *Luk. 2.51. Luk. 1.46, 47*. As Man, hee was made for a little while lower than the Angels, that he might suffer death, but as Mediator, God and Man in one person, so he was made much better than the Angels,

Christ how a Lord.

17

VERSE 1.

Angels, all the Angels of God were his subjects to worship him, and his Ministers to waite upon him, *Heb. 2. 7. 9. Heb. 1. 4. 6. 7.* So then the pronoun *Mine*, leads us to the consideration of Christ Consanguinity with *David*, as hee was his Sonne: and of his Dignity above *David*, as he was his Lord.

From hence we learne, That though Christ was Man, yet hee was more than a bare man. For *jure nature* no Sonne is Lord to his Father; Domination doth never ascend. There must bee something above nature in him to make him his Fathers Sovereigne, as our Saviour himselfe argueth from these words, *Matth. 22. 42. 45.* Christ then is a Lord to his people; hee had Dominion, and was the salvation of his owne fore-fathers.

A Lord.] First, by right of the *Creation*. For hee is before all things, and by him all things consist, *Col. 1. 17.* which the Apostle makes the argument of his Sovereignty. *To us there is but one Lord Iesus Christ, by whom are all things and we by him, 1 Cor. 8. 6.*

Secondly, By a right of *Sonneship* and *Primogeniture*, as the chiefe, the first borne, the Heire of all things. Hee is not in the House as *Moses* was, a Servant, but a Sonne over his owne House, *Heb. 3. 5, 6.* That is, hee was not a Servant but Lord in the Church, as the Apostle elsewhere gives us the same distinction. *We preach Christ Iesus the Lord, and ourselves Servants, 2 Cor. 4. 5.* For in the Scripture phrase the first borne notes Principality, Excellency, and Dominion. I will make him saith God, *my first born, higher than the kings of the Earth, Psal. 89. 27.* So in *Iob*, The first borne of death is the same with the King of terrors, *Iob 18. 13, 14.* and so the Apostle saith, That the Heire is the Lord of all, *Gal. 4. 1.* and therefore from his a *Primogeniture*, and designation to the inheritance of all things, hee inferreth his preeminence, and honour even

a Christus vocatur Primogenitus omnis creatura, hoc est, Dominus. Schindler in voce בְּרִיךְ. Solet in Scripturis Primogenitum vocari quodcumque in suo genere excellens

atque summum est — Ego Primogenitum constitui eum, hoc est, mirum in modum exaltabo & glorificabo eum. *Glossius* Ορισμολογία Messie, Clas. 8. Appel. 7. pag. 308.

C

above

VERSE I.

above the Angels, *Colossians* 1. 18. *Hebrewes*. 1. 2, 4.

Thirdly, By the right of his *Unction*, Office, and Mediatorship, unto which hee was designed by his Father. He was to have in all things the preeminence, *For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulnesse dwell*, *Col.* 1. 18. 19. Where by fulnesse either wee must understand fulnesse of the God-head bodily, as the Apostle speakes, *Col.* 2. 9. Or fulnesse of the Spirit of Grace, which *S. Iohn* speakes of *Ioh.* 1. 16. *Ioh.* 3. 34. And in both respects he is a Lord over all: in one, by the Dignity of his Hypostaticall union; in the other, by the grace of his Heavenly unction; and in both as Mediator, and head in the Church. Therefore the Apostle saith, *That God hath made him Lord and Christ*, *Act.* 2. 36. and by the accomplishment of his office, in dying, rising, and reviving he became Lord both of the dead and living, *Rom.* 14. 9. *Revel.* 5. 12.

And thus he is Lord in two respects: First, *A Lord in Power* and strength. Power to forgive sinnes; Power to quicken whom hee will; Power to cleanse, justifie, and sanctifie; Power to succour in temptations; Power to raise from the dead; Power to save to the uttermost all that come unto God by him; Power to hold fast his sheepe; Power to cast out the accuser of the brethren; Power to put downe all his enemies, and to subdue all things unto himselfe. Secondly, *A Lord in Authority*; To judge, to anoint, to imploy, to command whom and what he will. Hee onely is Lord over our persons, over our faith, over our consciences: To him onely we must say, *Lord*, save us lest we perish; to him onely we must say, *Lord*, what will thou have me to doe?

And such a Lord Christ was to his owne fore-fathers. They all did eate of the same Spirituall meate, and all dranke of the same Spirituall drinke, even of that rocke which was Christ, *1 Cor.* 10. 3. 4. He was the substance of the Ceremonies, the Doctrine of the Prophets, the accomplishment of the Promises, the joy and salvation of Patriarchs

Matth. 9. 6.
Iohn 5. 25, 26.
1 Cor. 6. 11.
Iohn 6. 40.
Heb. 1. 18.
Heb. 7. 25.
Iohn 6. 39.
& 10. 28.
Revel. 12. 10.
Phil. 3. 21.

Patriarchs and Princes, the desire and expectation of all flesh. The Gospell to us a *History*, and narration, and therefore delivered by the hand of *witnesses*; to them a *promise* and prediction, and therefore delivered by the hand of *Prophets*. The Apostles entred into the Prophets Labours, and were servants in the same common salvation, these as sowers, and they as reapers, these as preachers of the seed hoped, and they as preachers of the same seed exhibited. The ancient Jewes then were not saved by bare temporall promises, neither was their faith ultimately fixed upon Ceremonies or earthly things; but as their preachers had the same Spirit of Christ with ours, so the Doctrine which they preached, the faith and obedience which they required, the salvation which they foretold, was the same with ours. As the same Sunne illightens the Starres above, and the Earth beneath, so the same Christ was the Righteousnesse and salvation both of his fore-fathers, and of his seede. They without us could not bee made perfect, that is, (as I conceive) their faith had nothing actually extant amongst themselves to perfect it, but received all its forme and accomplishment from that better thing which was provided for, and exhibited unto us. For the Law, that is, the carnall Commandement, and outward Ceremonies therein prescribed, made nothing, no grace, no person perfect; but the bringing in of a better hope, that is, of Christ, (who as hee is unto us the hope of glory, so hee was unto them the hope of deliverance, for hee alone it is by whom we draw nigh unto God) doth perfect for ever those that are sanctified, *Heb. 7.19. Heb. 10.14.*

If Christ then bee our Lord we must trust in him, and depend upon him for all our present subsistence, and our future expectations. For he never faileth those that waite upon Him. Hee that beleeveth in him shall not be ashamed. And indeed faith is necessary to call Christ Lord. No man can call Jesus Lord but by the Spirit. Because

VERSE I.

Colof. 2. 17.
Luk. 1. 69. 70.
Act. 3. 18.
 & 20. 24.
2 Cor. 1. 20.
Iohn 8. 56.
Gen. 49. 18.
2 Sam. 23. 5.
Hag. 2. 7.
Act. 26. 16.
1 Iohn 1. 2. 3.
1 Pet. 1. 10, 11,
 12.
Iohn 4. 38.
Aug. de civ. Dei,
lib. 10. cap. 25.
& epist. 157. ad
Optat. Et Epist.
49. ad Deograt.
de Catech. Rud.
cap. 3. & c. 19.
de peccat. meris.
& remiss. lib. 2.
c. 29. de peccat.
Orig. c. 24. & 25.
de nupt. & con-
cupis. l. 2. c. 11.

VERSE I.

other Lords are present with us, they doe with their owne eye-oversee, and by their owne visible power order and direct us in their service. But Christ is absent from our senses; *Though I have knowne Christ after the flesh, yet henceforth (saith the Apostle) know I him no more.* Therefore to feare, and honour, and serve him with all fidelity, to yeeld more absolute and universall obedience to his commands, though absent, though tendered unto us by the Ministry of meane and despicable persons, than to the threats, and Scepters of the greatest Princes, to labour that not onely present, but absent we may bee accepted of him, to do his hardest works of selfe-denial, of overcoming, and rejecting the assaults of the world, of standing out against principalities, and powers, and spirituall wickednesse, of suffering and dying in his Service, there needes must bee faith in the heart to see him present by his Spirit, to set to our seale to the truth, Authority, and Majesty of all his commands, to heare the Lord speaking from Heaven, and to finde by the secret and powerfull revelations of his Spirit out of the Word to the soule, evident and invincible proofes of his living by the Power of God, and speaking mightily in the Ministry of his Word to our consciences. Therefore when the Apostle had said, *We are absent from the Lord*, hee presently addes, *We walke by faith*, That is, we labour to yeeld all service and obedience to this our Lord, though absent, because by faith (which giveth presence to things unscene, and subsistence to things that are yet but hoped) wee know that he is, and that hee is a rewarder of those that diligently seeke him.

And indeede though every man call him *Lord*, yet no man doth in truth and sincerity of heart so esteeme him, but those who doe in this manner serve him, and by faith walke after him. *If I be a Master saith the Lord, where is my feare? Malach. 1.6.* It is not every one that saith *Lord, Lord*, but hee that doth my will, that trembleth

Obedience due unto Christ onely.

21

VERSE I.

bleth at my word, that laboureth in my service, who declares himselfe to be mine indeed. For the heart of man cannot have two Masters, because which way ever it goes, it goes whole and undivided. Wee cannot serve Christ and any thing else which stands in Competition with him: First, because they are *Contrary Masters*, one cannot be pleased, or served, without the disallowance of the other. The Spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envie, that is, grudgeth, and cannot endure that any service should be done to the Lord. For the Friendship of the world is enmitie against God, *Iam. 4. 4, 5*. And therefore saith the Apostle, *If any man love the World, the love of the Father is not in him*; and the reason is, because they are contrarie principles, and have contrary Spirits, and lusts, and therefore must needs over-rule unto contrary services. Secondly, because both Masters have employments enough to take vp a whole man. Satan and the World have lusts to fill the whole head and heart of their most active and industrious servants; for the Apostle saith, that all which is in the World is lusts. And the heart of man is wholly, or most greedily set in him to doe that evill which it is tasked withall, *Eccle. 8. 11*. The (*all*) that is in man, all his faculties, all his affections, the whole Compasse of his created abilities, are all gone aside, or turned backward, there is no man, no part in man, that doth any good, no not one, *Psal. 14. 3. 53. 3*. Christ likewise is a great *Lord*, hath much more businesse than all the time, or strength of his Servants can bring about. Hee requireth the obedience of every thought of the heart, *2 Cor. 10. 5*. Grace and edification and profit in all the words that proceed out of our mouth, *Ephes. 4. 29*. a respect unto the glory of God in whatsoever workes wee goe about, *1 Cor. 10. 31*. The whole soule, body and Spirit should bee sanctified throughout, and that even till the comming of our Lord Jesus Christ, *1 Thess. 5. 23*. Christ hath service much

1 Ioh. 2. 15.

VERSE I.

more than enough to take up all the might, strength, studies, abilities, times, callings of all his servants. Businesse towards God and himselfe, worship, feare, Communion, love, prayer, obedience, service, subjection: businesse towards and for our selves, watchfulnesse, repentance, faith, sincerity, sobriety, growth in Grace: businesse towards other men as instruments and fellow members, exhortation, reproofe, direction, instruction, mourning, rejoicing, restoring, relieving, helping, Praying, Serving in all wayes of love. So much evill to be avoided, so many slips and errors to be lamented, so many earthly members to be crucified, so much knowledge and Mysteries to be learned, so many vaine Principles to be unlearned, so much good to bee done to my selfe, so much service to be done to my brother, so much glory to be brought to my Master; every Christian hath his hands full of worke. And therefore Christ expostulateth it as an absurd thing, to call him *Lord, Lord*, to profess and ingeminate a verball subjection, and yet not to doe the things which he requires, Luk. 6. 46.

The third thing observed touching the Kingdome of Christ is the *Glory and Power thereof*, intimated by his sitting at the *Lords* right hand. Gods right hand in the Scripture is a Metonymicall expression of the strength, power, majestie and glorie that belongs unto him. *This is mine infirmitie*, saith the Psalmist, *but I will remember the yeeres of the right hand of the most high*, *Psal. 77. 10.* Where wee finde Gods power under the Metonymie of a right hand, opposed to the infirmitie of his servant. My infirmitie, and weake faith made mee apt to sinke under the sense of Gods displeasure, but when I called to minde the experiences of Gods former power in alike distresses, I recollected my Spirits, and was refreshed againe. So the right hand of the *Lord* is said to spanne or extend the heavens, *Esai. 48. 13.* And the Psalmist expresseth the strength and salvation of the *Lord* by his right

διελθὼν τὸ πατρὶς
 λίγος μὲν τὴν διέξοδον
 καὶ τὴν πρὸς τὴν
 θεοπάτριον ἢ οὐ τῆς
 θεῆς ἢ τοῦ πατρὸς ἀφ' ὧ-
 νων ἐκέρχων, ὡς
 θεὸς καὶ τῷ πατρὶ
 ὁμοούσιος ἐκείνου ἐκέρ-
 χων παρεκθίς, καὶ
 σωματικῶς ἐκείνου
 συνδεδωμένος
 σαρκὶς αὐτοῦ.
 Damasc. lib. 4.
 de Orthodox.
 lib. cap. 2.

The Glory of Christs Kingdome.

23

VERSE I.

right hand, *Psal.* 118. 14, 15, 16. and his fury is the Cup of his right hand, *Hab.* 2. 16. And he strengthneth, and helpeth, and upholdeth his people by the right hand of his Righteousnesse, that is, by his Power, and faithfull promises, which in their weaknesse strengthens them, in their feare and flagging, helps them, in their sinking and falling upholds them, *Esa.* 41. 10. So the Psalmist saith of wicked men that their right hand is a right hand of falsehood, *Psal.* 144. 11. that is, either confidence in their owne power will deceive themselves, or they will deceive others to whom they promise succour and assistance. Therefore Gods right hand is call'd the right hand of Majesty, *Heb.* 1. 3. and the right hand of power, *Luk.* 22. 69. To sit then at Gods right hand noteth that great Honor, and Judicarie Office, and plenitude of power, which God the Father hath given to his Sonne; after his manifestation in the flesh, in his nativity; and justification by the Spirit, in his resurrection; he was then, amongst other dignities, received up into glory, *1 Tim.* 3. 16. This wee finde amongst those expressions of honor which *Salomon* shewed unto his Mother that shee sate at his right hand, *1 King.* 2. 19. And herein the Apostle puts a great difference betweene Christ and the Leviticall Priests, that they stood daily Ministering, but Christ after his Offering, *Sate downe on the right hand of God*, *Heb.* 10. 11, 12. noting two things: First, That Christ was the Lord, and they but Servants, for standing is the posture of a Servant or Minister, *Dent.* 10. 8. *17. 12. Ezek.* 44. 24. and not sitting, *Luk.* 17. 7. Secondly, that their worke was daily to be repeated, whereas Christs was consummate in one offering once for all, after which he rested or sate downe againe.

This sitting then of Christ at the right hand of Majesty and glory notes unto us first, *The great Exaltation of the Lord Christ*, whom God hath highly honored and advanced and given a name above every name.

Verbum sedere Regni significat potestatem. Hieron. in Eph. cap. 1. Sedere quod dicitur Deus non membrorum positionem sed judicariam significat potestatem. Aug. de Fide & Symbol. cap. 7. Ier. 52. 12. Luk. 1. 19. 2 Chron. 18. 18. 1 King. 17. 1.

C 4

First,

မိဂ္ဂါ နံ ကဇာဒ် တေစာ
မိသား ပေါဒ်ကုဆီအ-
တး ဒဲလ်ကီအဝါဒ် ဝဲ-
ခါးလုံ ဂွာရိယျ တီး
အိုဒ်အ် အိ သယဘျီ
မိလဲနံ တယ် မိဂ္ဂါ နံ
တာဝန် ဝဲကဏ္ဍာပေါဒ်,
ထဲ၌ တာကာဝါဒ်လူ
ကျိ ပံပုဒ်တော စံချ်
ဝဲကဏ္ဍာပေါဒ်

Ut sol cum in
nube tegitur cla-
ritas ejus com-
promittitur, non
cæcatur—sic
Homo ille, quem
Dominus salva-
torque noster, is
est, Deus, Dei Fi-
lius induit, Dei-
tatem in illo non
intercepit, sed
abscondit. Greg.
Nazian. Orat. 49.
de fide.

σου εν αὐτῷ τῷ
 ἀβυσσῷ πῶς φέρον
 ἐν τῇ θύρᾳ τῇ βα-
 σιλικῇ, καὶ ὁρῶν
 τοῦτο τὴν δόξαν πα-
 σης τῆς κτίσεως.

Acceptit ut homo
quæ habebat ut
Deus. Theodoret.
in Phil. 2.

First, his Divine nature, though it cannot possibly receive any intrinsecall improuement or glory (all fulnesse of glory essentially belonging thereunto) yet so farre forth as it was humbled, for the oeconomie and administration of his office, so farre it was readvanced againe; Now he emptied and humbled himselfe, not by putting off any of his diuine glory, but by suffering it to be overshadowed with the similitudes of sinfull flesh and to be humbled under the forme of a Servant, as the light of a candle is hidden in a darke and close Lanterne. So that *Declaratorily*, or by way of Manifestation, he is in that respect magnified at Gods right hand, or as the Apostle speakes, declared to be that Sonne of God by Power in rising from the dead, and returning to his glory againe, *Rom. 1.4.* Again, how ever in *Abstracto* wee cannot say that the Deitie or Divine nature was exalted in any other sense than by evident manifestation of it selfe in that man who was before despised, and accused as a blasphemers, for that he made himselfe equall with God: yet in *Concreto*, and by reason of the Communication of properties from one nature to another in the unitie of one person, it is true that as God saved the World by his blood, and as it was the Prince of life that was crucified, and the Lord that lay in the grave; so God likewise was in the forme of a servant humbled, and at the right hand of Majestie exalted againe.

Secondly, the humane nature of Christ is most highly exalted by sitting at Gods right hand; for in the right of his Hypostaticall union he hath an ample and immediate claime to all that glory which might in the humane nature be conferr'd upon him. So that though during the time of his conversation amongst men, the exigence and oeconomie of the Office which he had for us undertaken made him a man of sorrowes, and intercepted the beames of the Godhead and Divine glory from the other nature; yet having finished that dispensation, there

was

All Grace from Christ.

25

VERSE I.

was in the vertue of that most intimate association of the natures in one person, a communicating of all glory from the Deitie which the other nature was capable of. For as by the Spirit of Holinesse he was filled with treasures of Wisedome and Knowledge, and Grace, and thereby fitted for the Office of a Mediator, and made the first fruits, the first borne, the heire of all things, the head, and Captaine of the Church; furnished with a residue and redundancie of the Spirit to sanctifie his brethren, and to make them joynt heires, and first borne with himselfe; so by the Spirit of glory he is filled with unmatched perfectiones, beyond the capacitie or comprehension of all the Angels of Heaven; being not onely full of glory, but having in him all the fulnesse of glorie, which a created nature joynted to an infinitie and bottomlesse fountaine could receive.

From hence therefore wee should learne to let the same minde be in us which was in Christ, to humble our selves first that we may be exalted in due time, to finish our workes of selfe-deniall, and service which wee owe to God, that so wee may enter into our Masters glory. For hee himselfe entred not but by a way of blood. Wee learne likewise to have recourse and dependance on him for all supplies of the Spirit, for all strength of Grace, for all influences of life, for the measure of every joynt and member. He is our Treasure, our Fountaine, our Head; it is his free Grace, his voluntarie influence which habituath and fitteth all our faculties, which animateth us unto a heavenly being, which giveth us both the strength and *first act*, whereby wee are qualified to worke, and which concurrerth with us *in actu secundo* to all those workes which wee set our selves about. As an instrument, even when it hath an edge, cutteth nothing, till it be assisted and moved by the hand of the Artificer; so a Christian when he hath a will, and an habituall fitnessse to worke, yet is able to doe nothing without the constant

Phil. 1. 19.

Phil. 4. 13.

Ephes. 4. 16.

VERSE I.

Phil. 2. 13.
Esa. 26. 12.
Ioh. 15. 5.
2 Cor. 3. 5.

constant supply, assistance, and concomitancy of the grace of Christ, exciting, moving, and applying that habituall power unto particular actions. He it is that giveth us not only to will but to doe, that goeth through with us, and worketh all our workes for us by his grace. Without him we can doe nothing, all our sufficiencie is from him.

But it may bee objected, if we can doe nothing without a second grace, to what end is a former grace given? or what use is there of our exciting that grace and gift of God in us, which can doe nothing without a further concurrence of Christs Spirit? To this I answer, first, that as light is necessarie and requisite unto seeing, and yet there is no seeing without an eye: so without the assisting Grace of Christs Spirit concurring with us unto every holy Dutie, wee can doe nothing, and yet that grace doth ever presuppose an implanted, seminall, and habituall grace, fore-disposing the soule unto the said Duties. Secondly, as in the Course of naturall Effects, though God be a most voluntary Agent, yet in the ordinary Concurrence of a first Cause he worketh *ad modum nature*, measuring forth his assistance proportionably to the Condition and Preparation of the second Causes: so in supernaturall and holy operations (albeit not with a like certaine and unaltered constancie) though Christ be a most voluntarie head of his Church, yet usually he proportioneth his assisting & second grace, unto the growth, progresse and radication of those Spirituall habits which are in the soule before. From whence commeth the difference of holinesse, and profitablenesse amongst the Saints, that some are more active, and unwearied in all holy conversation than others, as in the naturall body some members are larger, and more full of life and motion than others, according to the different distribution of Spirits from the heart, and influences from the head.

This then affords matter enough both to humble us, and to comfort us. To humble us that we can doe nothing

All Grace from Christ.

27

VERSE 1.

thing of our selves, that wee have nothing in our selves, but sinne. All the fulnesse of grace is in him, and therefore whosoever hath any must have it from him; as in the Egyptian famine whosoever had any corne had it from *Ioseph*, to whom the granaries and treasures of Egypt were for that purpose committed. And this Lowliness of heart, and sense of our owne Emptinesse is that which makes us alwayes have recourse to our fountaine, and keepe in favor with our head, from whom wee must receive fresh supply of strength for doing any good, for bearing any evill, for resisting any temptation, for overcoming any enemy, for beginning, for continuing, and for perfecting any Dutie. For though it be mans heart that doth these things, yet it is by a forraigne and impressed strength; as it is iron that burnes, but not by its owne nature (which is cold) but by the heate which it hath received from the fire. *It was not I, saith the Apostle, but the grace of God which was with me.*

To comfort us likewise when we consider that all fulnesse and strength is in him as in an Officer, an *Adam*, a treasurer and dispencer of all needfull supplies to his people, according to the place they beare in his bodie, and to the exigence and measure of their condition, in themselves, or service in his Church. Sure wee are that what measure soever hee gives unto any, hee hath still a *residue of Spirit*, nay he still retaineth his owne *fulnesse*, hath still enough to carry us through any condition, and according to the difficulties of the service he puts us upon, hath still wisdom to understand, compassion to pitie, strength to supply all our needs. And that all this hee hath as a mercifull and faithfull depositarie, as a Guardian, and husband, and elder brother, to imploy for the good of his Church; that he is unto this office appointed by the will of him that sent him, to lose nothing of all that which is given him, but to keepe, and perfect it unto the resurrection at the last day. That God hath
planted

VERSE I.

planted in him a Spirit of faithfulness, and pittie for the cheerefull discharge of this great Office, given him a propriety unto us, made us as neere and deare unto him as the members of his sacred body are to one another; and therefore whosoever cometh to him, with emptinesse, and hunger, and faith, hee will in no wise cast them out; it is as possible for him to hew off, and to throw away the members of his naturall body, to have any of his bones broken, as to reject the humble and faithfull desires of those that duly waite upon him.

Againe, from this *Exaltation* of Christ in his humane nature we should learne to keepe our vessels in holinesse and in honour, as those who expect to bee fashioned at the last like unto him. For how can that man truly hope to bee like Christ hereafter, that labours to bee as unlike him here as he can? *Shall I take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot?* saith the Apostle. So may I say, Shall I take the nature of Christ, that nature which he in his person hath so highly glorified, and make it in my person the nature of a devill? If a Prince should marry a meane woman, would he endure to see those of her neere kindred, her brethren and sisters live like scullions or strumpets under his owne eye? Now Christ hath taken our nature into a neerer union with himselfe than marriage; for man and wife are still two persons, but God and man is but one Christ. Death it selfe was not able to dissolve this union; for when the soule was separated from the body, yet the Deitie was separated from neither: it was the Lord that lay in the grave, and he that ascended, was the same that descended into the lower part of the earth, *Matth. 28. 6. Eph. 4. 10.* and shall we then defile this nature by wantonnesse, intemperance, and vile affections, which is taken into so indissoluble an unitie with the Sonne of God? Christ tooke it to advance it, and it is still by his Spirit in us so much the more advanced, by how much the neerer it

comes

Consummation of Christs Offices.

29

VERSE I.

comes to that holinesse which it hath in him. We should therefore labor to walke as becommeth those that have so glorious a Head, to walke worthy of such a Lord unto all well pleasing, in fruitfulness and knowledge; to walke as those that have received Christ, and expect his appearing againe, *Phil. 1. 27. Col. 1. 10. 2. 5. 3. 4. 5.*

Secondly, the sitting of Christ on the right hand of God, notes unto us the *Consummation* of all those Offices which he was to performe here on the Earth for our redemption. For till they were all finished, he was not to returne to his Glory againe. *He that hath entred into his rest hath ceased from his owne workes*, saith the Apostle, *Heb. 4. 10.* first hee was to execute his Office before hee was to enter into his rest. Though he were a Sonne, and so *Iure naturali* the inheritance were his owne before, yet hee was to learne *Obedience* by the things which hee was to suffer before he was made perfect againe, *Heb. 5. 8, 9.* After he had offered once sacrifice for sinnes for ever, that is, after he had made such a compleate expiation as should never neede to be repeated, but was able for ever to perfect those that are sanctified, hee then sat downe on the right hand of God, expecting till his enemies bee made his footstool, *Heb. 10. 12, 13, 14.* This is the argument our Saviour useth when he prayeth to be glorified againe with his Father; *I have glorified thee on earth, or revealed the Glory of thy Truth and Mercy to thy Church, I have finished the worke which thou gavest mee to doe, and now O Father glorifie thou me with thine owne selfe. &c. Ioh. 17. 4, 5.* Hee humbled himselfe, saith the Apostle, and became obedient to death, even the death of the Crosse, wherefore God hath highly exalted him, &c. *Phil. 2. 8, 9.* Noting unto us the Order of the Dispensation of Christs Offices, some were workes of *Ministry* and Service in the Office of Obedience and suffering for his Church: Others were workes of Power and *Majesty* in the protection and exaltation of his Church, and those
necessa-

VERSE I.

necessarily to precede these. *Hee ought to suffer, and to enter into his Glory, Luk. 24. 26, 46.* Necessarily I say; First, by a *Necessity of Gods Decree*, who had so fore-appointed it, *Act. 2. 23, 24.* Secondly, by the *Necessity of Gods Justice*, which must first be satisfied by obedience, before it could bee appeased with man, or in the Person of their Head and Advocate exalt them to his Glory againe, *Rom. 3. 25. Rom. 5. 10. Rom. 6. 6, 11. Eph. 2. 5, 6.* Thirdly, by the *Necessity of Gods Word and Will*, signified in the predictions of the Prophets, *Luk. 24. 46. 1 Pet. 1. 10, 11.* Fourthly, by the *Necessity of Christs infinite Person*, which being equall with God, could not possibly be exalted without some preceding descent and humiliation. *That he ascended*, saith the Apostle, *what is it but that he descended first into the lower parts of the earth, Eph. 4. 9.* Therefore it is that our Saviour saith, *The Spirit should convince the World of Righteousnesse, because he was to go to the Father, and should be seen here no more, Ioh. 1. 6. 10.* The meaning of it is, that the Spirit shall in the Ministry of the Word reveale unto those who are fully convinced of their sinnefull condition, and humbled in the sense thereof, a treasure of full and sufficient Righteousnesse by his Obedience wrought for sinners. And the reason which is given of it stands thus. Our Righteousnesse consists in our being able to stand in Gods presence. Now Christ having done all as our *Suretie* here, went up unto Glory as our *Head* and Advocate, as the first fruites, the Captaine, the Prince of life, the Author of salvation, and the Forerunner of his people, so that his going thither is an argument of our justification by him. First, because it is a signe that he hath finished the worke of our Redemption on Earth, a signe that hee overcame Death, and was justified by the Spirit, from the wrongs of men, and from the curse of the Law. Therefore hee said to *Mary* after his resurrection, *Goe tell my Disciples, I ascend to my Father and your Father, to my God and your*

Use of Christs Exaltation.

31

VERSE I.

your God, Ioh. 20. 17. that is, by my death, and victory over it, you are made my brethren, and reconciled unto God againe. Secondly, because he hath Offices in Heaven to fulfill at the right hand of his Father in our behalfe, to intercede, and to prepare a place for us, to apply unto us the vertue of his Death and Merits. If hee had ascended without fulfilling all Righteousnesse for the Church, he should have beene sent downe, and scene againe, but now, saith hee, you see mee no more, for by once dying, and by once appearing in the end of the world, I have put away sin by the Sacrifice of my selfe, *Heb. 9. 26. 7. 27. Rom. 6. 9, 10.* He was taken, saith the Prophet, from Prison and judgement, to note that the whole debt is paid, and now who shall *declare his Generation?* That is, he now liveth unto numberlesse Generations, hee prolongeth his dayes, and hath already fulfilled Righteousnesse enough to justifie all those that know him or beleeve in him, *Esai. 53. 8, 10.* Thus wee see that Christs deliverance out of prison, and exaltation at the right hand of God is an evident argument, that hee is fully exonerated of the guilt of sinne, and curse of the Law, and hath accomplished all those workes which he had undertaken for our Righteousnesse.

And this likewise affords abundant matter both to *humble, and to comfort the Church of Christ.* To humble us in the evidence of our disabilities, for if we could have finished the works which were given us to doe, there would have beene no neede of Christ. It was weakenesse which made way for Christ. *Our weakenesse to fulfill obedience, and the weakenesse of the Law to justifie sinners, Rom. 5. 6. Rom. 8. 3. Heb. 7. 18, 19.* All the strength we have is by the power of his might, and by his grace, *Eph. 6. 10. 2 Tim. 2. 1* and even this God dispenceth unto us in measure, and by degrees, driving out our Corruptions as hee *did the Canaanites before his people, by little and little, Exod. 23. 30.* because while we are here hee will have us live by faith, and

VERSE I.

and fetch our strength as we use it, from Christ, and wait in hope of a better condition, and glorifie the patience and forbearance of God who is provoked every day.

To comfort us likewise ; First, *against all our unavoydable and invincible infirmities*; every good Christian desires to serve the Lord with all his strength, desires to be enriched, to bee stedfast, unmoveable, abundant in the worke of the Lord, *To doe his Will, as the Angels in Heaven doe it* : yet in many things they faile, and have dayly experience of their owne defects. But here is all the comfort, though I am not able to doe any of my duties as I should, yet Christ hath finished all his to the full, and therefore though I am compassed with infirmities, so that I cannot do the things which I would, yet I have a *compassionate Advocate with the Father*, who both giveth and craveth pardon for every one that prepareth his heart to seeke the Lord, *Though hee bee not perfectly cleansed*, 1 Ioh. 2. 2. 2 Chron. 30. 18, 19. Secondly, *Against the pertinacy, and close adberence of our corruptions*, which cleave as fast unto us as the very powers and faculties of our soule, as heat unto fire, or light unto the Sun. Yet sure we are that hee who forbad the fire to burne, and put blackenesse upon the face of the Sunne at midday, is able likewise to remoove our corruptions as farre from us, as he hath remooved them from his owne sight. And the ground of our expectation hereof is this, Christ when he was upon the earth, in the forme of a servant, accomplished *all the Offices* of suffering and obedience for us : *Therefore being now exalted farre above all Heavens*, at the right hand of Majestie and Glory, hee will much more fulfill those Offices of *Power* which hee hath there to do. Which are by the supplies of his Spirit to purge us from sinne, by the sufficiency of his Grace to strengthen us, by his Word to sanctifie and cleanse us, and to present us to himselfe a *Glorious Church without spot or wrinkle*. Hee that brought from the dead the Lord Iesus, and

Administration of Christs kingdome.

33

VERSE I.

and suffered not death to hold the head, is able by that power and for that reason, to *make us perfect in every good worke to doe his Will, and not to suffer corruption for ever to hold the members.* It is the frequent argument of the Scripture, *Heb. 13. 20, 21. Col. 2. 12. Eph. 1. 19, 20. Rom. 9. 5, 6, Rom. 8. 11.* Thirdly, against all those *fiery darts of Satan*, whereby he tempteth us to despaire, and to forsake our mercy. If he could have held Christ under when hee was in the Grave, *then indeed our faith would have beene vaine, we should be yet in our sinnes, 1 Cor. 15. 17.* But hee who himselfe suffered, being tempted, and overcame both the sufferings and the temptation, *is able to succour those that are tempted, and to shew them mercy and grace to helpe in time of need, Heb. 2. 17, 18. Heb. 4. 15, 16.* Lastly, against death it selfe. For the Accomplishment of Christs Office of redemption in his resurrection from the dead, was both the *Merit, the Scale,* and the *first fruits of ours, 1 Cor. 15. 20, 22.*

Thirdly, *The sitting of Christ on the right hand of his Father* noteth unto us the *actuell Administration of his Kingdome.* Therefore that which is here said *sit at my right hand untill I make thine enemies thy footstools,* the *Apostle* thus expoundeth, *Hee must raigne till he hath put all enemies under his feete, 1 Cor. 15. 25.* And hee therefore died, and rose, and revived, that hee might bee Lord both of dead and living, namely, by being exalted unto Gods right hand, *Rom. 14. 9.* Now this Administration of Christs Kingdome implies severall particulars: First, *republican, The publication of established Lawes.* For that which is in this Psalm called the *sending forth of the rod of Christs strength out of Sion,* is thus by the Prophets expounded, *Out of Sion shall goe forth the Law, and the Word of the Lord from Ierusalem, Esai. 2. 3. Mich. 4. 2.* Secondly, *The conquering and subduing of Subjects to himselfe,* by converting the hearts of men, and bringing their thoughts into the Obedience of his Kingdome.

D

Ministe-

VERSE I.

Ministerially, by the word of reconciliation, and *Effentially*, by the power of his Spirit, writing his Lawes in their hearts, and transforming them into the image of his Word from glory to glory. Thirdly, *Ruling*, and leading those whom he hath thus converted in his way, continuing unto their hearts his Heavenly voyce, never utterly depriving them of the exciting, assisting, cooperating grace of his holy Spirit, but by his Divine power giving unto them all things which pertain unto life and godlinesse, after hee had once called them by his Glorious Power, *Eesai. 2. 2. Iohn 10. 3, 4. 1 Cor. 1. 4, 8. Eesai. 30. 21. 1 Pet. 2. 9. 2 Pet. 1. 3.* Fourthly, *Protecting*, upholding, succouring them against all temptations and discouragements. By his compassion pitying them, by his power and promises helping them, by his care and wisdom proportioning their strength to their trialls, by his peace recompencing their conflicts, by patience and experience establishing their hearts in the hope of deliverance, *Heb. 2. 17. Iohn 16. 33. 1 Cor. 10. 13. 2 Cor. 1. 5. Phil. 4. 7, 19. Rom. 15. 4.* Fifthly, *Confoundning all his enemies.* First, *Their projects*, holding up his Kingdome in the midst of their malice, and making his Truth like a Tree, settle the faster, and like a torch, shine the brighter for the shaking. Secondly, *Their Persons.* Whom hee doth here gall and torment by the Scepter of his Word; constraining them by the evidence thereof to subscribe to the Justice of his wrath; and whom hee reserveth for the day of his appearing, till they shall bee put all under his feete. In which respect hee is said to *stand at the right hand of God*, as a man of warre ready armed for the defence of his Church, *Act. 7. 56.*

Fourthly, *the sitting of Christ on the right hand of God* noteth unto us his giving of gifts, and sending down of the Holy Ghost upon men. It hath been an universall custome both in the Church, and elsewhere, in dayes of great joy and solemnity to give gifts and send presents unto men.

Thus

The Arke a type of Christ.

35

VERSE 1.

Thus after the wall of Jerusalem was built, and the worship of God restored, and the Law read and expounded by *Ezra* to the people after their captivity, it is said, *that the people did eate and drinke and send portions, Nehem. 8. 10, 12.* The like forme was by the people of the Jewes observed in their feast of *Purim, Ester. 9, 22.* And the same custome hath beene observed amongst Heathen Princes upon solemne and great occasions to distribute donatives and congiaries amongst the people. Thus Christ in the day of his Majesty and Inauguration, in that great and solemne Triumph, *when he ascended up on high and led captivity captive, he did withall give gifts unto men. Eph. 4. 10.*

Christ was notably typified in the *Arke of the Testament*. In it were the *Tables of the Law*, to shew that the whole Law was in Christ fulfilled, and that he was the end of the Law for Righteousnesse to those that beleve in him. There was the golden pot which had *Manna*, to signifie that Heavenly, and abiding nourishment which from him the Church receiveth. There was the *Rod of Aaron which budded*. Signifying either the miraculous incarnation of Christ in a Virgin, or his sufferings which are expressed by stripes, *Esai. 53. 5.* and our resurrection with him, noted in the budding of a dry rod. Or lastly, noting the sanctifying and fruitfull vertue of his Word which is the rod of his strength. Vpon it also was the *Mercy seate*, to note that in Christ is the foundation of all that mercy and attonement which is preached unto men. But in *two things principally* did it signifie Christ unto our present purpose: First, it was overlaid within and without with gold, and had a Crowne of gold round about it, *Exod. 25. 11. 37. 2.* denoting the plentifull and glorious Kingdome of Christ, who was crowned with Glory and Honour, *Heb. 2. 7.* Secondly, it had rings by which it was carried up and downe, till at last it rested in *Salomons Temple*, with glorious and triumphall Solemnity,

Tiberius in triumpho Germanica congiarium tricenorum virorum dedit. Sueton. Divisit in populum congiarium, ut mos est Imperium suscipientibus. Herodian. lib. 5. & de Septimio Severo initio imperii magno congiario populum prosecutus est. Idem l. 3. vid. Sueton. Aug. cap. 41. & Alium Lamprid. in Antonino. Observatum fuit ut principes assumpto Imperio, ad conciliandum favorem, congiarium darent populo, &c. Alex. ab Alex. Genial. dier. l. 5. cap. 24.

VERSE I.

Psal. 132. 89. 2 *Chron.* 5. 13. So Christ while he was here upon earth, being anointed with the Holy Ghost and with Power, went about doing good, *Act.* 10. 38. and having ceased from his workes, did at last enter into his rest, *Heb.* 5. 10. which is the Heavenly Temple, *Revel.* 11. 19.

Now this carrying of the *Arke* into his resting place denotes two things: First, a finall conquest over the enemies of God. For as the moving of the *Arke* signified the acting and procuring of victory, *Iosh.* 6. 11, 20. So the Resting of the *Arke* noted the Consummation of Victorie. And therefore the temple was built, and the *Arke* set therein, in the dayes of *Salomon*, when there was not an emendicated or borrowed peace, depending upon the courtesie of the neighbour Nations, but a victorious and triumphall peace, after the great victories of *David*, and tributary subjection and homage of all the Canaanites which were left in the Land, 2 *Chro.* 8. 7, 8, 9, 26. 2 *Sam.* 7. 9, 12. *Psal.* 68. 29. Secondly, it notes the conferring of gifts, as wee see in that triumphall song at the removall of the *Arke*, being also a prediction both of that which literally hapned in the raigne of *Solomon*, and was mystically verified in Christ, *Psal.* 68. 18. Thus Christ our Prince of Peace, being now in the Temple of God in Heaven, hath bound Hell, Sinne and Death captive, and hath demolished the wals of *Iericho*, or the Kingdome of *Satan*, throwne him downe from Heaven like lightning, and passed a sentence of judgement upon him. And hath received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, and given gifts unto men, *Act.* 2. 32, 35. before his entring into his rest it was but a Promise, and they were to waite at *Ierusalem* for it, *Act.* 1. 4. but after his departure, and intercession at his Fathers right hand it was powred forth in abundance upon them, *Ioh.* 14. 16. 16. 7.

And wee are to note that as it began with his sitting there, so it continueth as long as hee shall there sit. It is true all Holy Scripture which God ordained for the gathering

gathering of his people, and for the guidance of them in the militant Church, is already long since by the Spirit dictated unto holy and selected instruments, for that purpose inspired with more abundance of Grace, and guided by a full, and infallible Spirit: but yet wee must note, that in those holy writings there is such a depth of heavenly wisdom, such a sea of mysteries, and such an unsearchable treasure of puritie and grace, that though a man should spend the longest life after the severest and most industrious manner to acquaint himselfe with God in the revelations of his Word, yet his knowledge would be but in part, and his holinesse after all that come short of maturity; as the enemies are not all presently under Christs feet, but are by degrees subdued: so the Spirit is not presently conferred in fulnesse unto the members of Christ, but by measure and degrees according to the voluntary influences of the head, and exigencies of the members. So much of the Spirit of grace and truth as we have here is but the earnest and hanfell of a greater summe, *Ephes. 1. 14.* The seed and first fruits of a fuller harvest, *1 Ioh. 2. 9.* *Rom. 8. 23.* Therefore the Apostle mentions *a growing change from glorie to glorie by the Spirit of God,* *2 Cor. 3. 18.* We must not expect a fulnesse till the time of the restitution of all things, till that day of redemption and adoption wherein the light, which is here but sowne for the Righteous, *shall grow up into a full harvest of holinesse and of glorie.*

But here ariseth a question out of the seeming contradiction of Holy Scripture. It is manifest that the Spirit of Christ was in the Church long before his Ascension. The Prophets spake by him, *1 Pet. 1. 11.* The ancient Jewes vexed him, *Esa. 63. 10.* *Iohn Baptist* was even filled with the Spirit, to note a plentiful measure for the discharge of his Office, *Luk. 1. 15.* and yet *St. Iohn* saith, *That the Holy Ghost was not yet given, because Christ was not yet glorified,* *Ioh. 7. 39.* To this I answer, that the

VERSE I.

Χειρῶν αὐτοῦ ἔργα ἐστὶν
καὶ μὴ ὁ λόγος αὐτοῦ.
Euseb. hist. lib. I.
cap. 5.

Fathers were sanctified by the same Spirit of Christ with us, difference there is none in the substance, but onely in the accidents and circumstances of effusion and manifestation. As light in the Sunne, and light in a starre, is in it selfe the same originall light, but very much varied in the dispensation. It was the same truth which was preached by the Prophets, and by Christ, but the Apostle observes in it a difference, *Sundry times, and in sundry manners, hath God spoken by the Prophets, but unto us by his Sonne*, that is, more plentifully, and more plainly unto us than unto the Fathers, *Heb. 1. 1. Job. 16. 25.* Therefore though it be true that *Abraham* saw Christs day, as all the Fathers did (though he being the Father of the faithfull more than others) in which respect *Eusebius* saith of them that they were Christians really and in effect though not in name: yet it is true likewise, that many Prophets and Righteous men did desire to see and heare the things which the Apostles saw and heard, but did not, *Matth. 13. 17.* namely, in such plaine and plentifull measure as the Apostles did. They saw in glimpses and morning starres, and prefigurations, but these, the things themselves. They saw onely the promises, and those too but as farre off, *Heb. 11. 13.* these the substance and Gospel it selfe, neere at hand, in their mouth, and before their eyes, and even amongst them, *Rom. 10. 8. Gal. 3. 1. Job. 1. 14. 1 Job. 1. 2, 3.* They by Prophets, who testified before-hand, these by eye-witnesses, who declared the things which they had seen and heard, *Act. 1. 8. 22. 10. 41.* Therefore it is said that Christ was a Lambe slaine from the beginning of the world, and yet in the end of the world that he appeared to take away sinne by the Sacrifice of himselfe, *Heb. 9. 26.* to note that the Fathers had the benefit, but not the perfection of the Promises, *Heb. 11. 40.* for the Apostle every where makes perfection the worke of the Gospel, *1 Cor. 2. 7. Eph. 4. 13. Heb. 6. 1.*

So then after Christs sitting on the right hand of power the

Spirit in the Fathers and in us.

39

V E R S E I.

the Holy Spirit was more compleatly sent both in regard of manifestation and efficacy, than ever before. The difference is chiefly in three things: First, In the *manner of his Mission*. To the old Church in *dreames and visions, in figures and latent wayes*: But to the Evangelicall Churches in *power, evidence and demonstration*, 1 Cor. 2. 4, 5. Therefore it is called the *Spirit of Revelation, and Knowledge*, which discovereth, and that unto principalities and powers by the Church, the manifold and mysterious wisdom of God in Christ, *Eph. 1. 17. 3. 10*. Therefore the Spirit was sent in the latter dayes in *wind, and fire, and tongues*, and earthquake, all which have in them a *self-discovering* propertie, which will not bee hidden. Whereas in the time of the Prophets God did not in any such things, save onely in a low and still voyce reveale himselfe, 1 King. 19. 11. 12.

Secondly, In the *subjects* unto whom he was sent. Before onely upon the inclosed garden of the Jewes did this winde blow, but now is the Spirit powred upon *all flesh*, and this heavenly dew falleth not upon the fleece, but upon the whole earth. And therefore our Saviour opposeth *Ierusalem* and the Spirit, *Ioh. 4. 21, 23*. Every beleever is of the Israel of God, every Christian a Temple of the Holy Ghost; no people of the earth secluded, *But in every nation hee that feareth God and worketh Righteousnesse is accepted*; no place uncleane, but every where pure hands may be lifted up.

Thirdly, In the *measure of his Grace*. At first he was sent onely in *drops and dew*, but after he was *powred out in showres and abundance*, *Tis. 3. 6*. and therefore (as I have before observed) the grace of the Gospell is frequently expressed by the name of *Riches*, to note not onely the *pretiousnesse*, but the *plentie* thereof in the Church. And it is here worth our observation that the Spirit under the Gospell is compared to things of a *spreading, multiplying, and operative nature*.

*Act. 2. 2, 3.
Act. 4. 31.*

Ioc. 2. 28.

Rom. 3. 29.

Gal. 6. 15, 16.

*Col. 2. 11.
Phil. 3. 3.
1 Cor. 6. 19.
Act. 10. 35.
1 Tim. 2. 8.*

*Ephes. 1. 7.
2. 7.
3. 8.*

VERSE I.

Col. 1. 27.

2 Cor. 6. 12.

First, *To Water*, and that not a little measure to *sprinkle* or *bedew*, but to *Baptize* the faithfull in, *Matth. 3. 11. Act. 1. 5.* and that not in a font or vessell, which growes lesse and lesse, but in a springing & living river, *Ioh. 7. 39.* Now Water besides its purging propertie, is first of a spreading nature: It hath no bounds nor limits to it selfe, as firme and solid bodies have, but receives its restraint by the vessell or continent which holds it: so the Spirit of the Lord is not straightned in himselfe, but onely by the narrow hearts of men into which he comes. *Ye are not straitned*, saith the Apostle, *in us*, that is, in that ministerie of Grace, and dispensation of the Spirit which is committed to us, *but in your owne bowels*, which are not in any proportion enlarged unto that abundance and fulnesse of heavenly grace, which in the Gospel of salvation is offered unto you. Secondly, Spring water is a growing and multiplying thing; which is the reason why rivers which rise from narrow fountaines, have yet by reason of a constant and regular supply a great breadth in remote channels, because the water lives. Whereas in pits and torrents it groweth lesse and lesse: so the Graces of the Spirit are living and springing things, the longer they continue, the larger they grow, (like the waters of the Sanctuary, *Ezek. 36. 25.*) and the reason is, because they come from a Fountaine which is all life, *Ioh. 4. 10. Ioh. 14. 6. Col. 3. 4.* Thirdly, as water multiplies in it selfe, so by insinuation and mollification it hath a fructifying vertue in other things. Fruitfull trees are planted by the waters side; so the Spirit searching and mollifying the heart, maketh it fruitfull in holy obedience, *Ezek. 11. 19, 20.* Fourthly, water is very strong in its owne streame: wee see what mighty engines it moveth, what huge vessels it rouleth like a ball, what wals and bulwarkes it overthrowes: so the Spirit of God is able to beat downe all strong holds, which the wit of man, or the malice of Satan, can erect against the Church.

The

a mightie Winde, and Fire.

41

VERSE I.

Zech. 4. 6.

The horses of Egypt are flesh, and not Spirit, saith the Lord, not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, noting that that which might and created power could not doe, the Spirit of the Lord was able to effect. And this strength of water serves to carry it as high as its owne spring and leuell: so the Spirit will never cease to raise the hearts of his people, till it carries them up to their fountaine and spring-head in heaven.

Secondly, The Spirit is compared to the *rushing of a mighty wind*. The learned observe that before Christs time God spake unto men in a soft still voyce, which they called *Bath Koll*; but after in the time of the Gospel by a *mightie winde*: noting thereby both the Abundance of his Spirit, which he would powre out in the latter dayes; and the strength thereof, as of a rushing winde. Though a man have wals of brasse, and barres of iron upon his conscience, though hee set up fortifications of fleshly reason, and the very gates of hell to shut out the Spirit of Grace, yet nothing is able to withstand the power of this mightie rushing winde. *Who art thou, O great mountaine? Before Zerubbabel thou shalt become a plaine, &c. Zech. 4. 7.* No mountaines, no difficulties can prevent the power of Gods Spirit. He hath strength to pull downe the strongest oppositions, and to enable the weakest condition unto the service which hee will have done. Though there be mountaines betweene Israel and their deliverance, yet the blinde, and the lame, and the woman with childe, and her that travellet with childe together, will he strengthen to climbe over the precipices of the highest mountaine, *Ier. 31. 8.*

Thirdly, The Spirit is compared to *Fire*, noting likewise both the multiplying or diffusive property thereof, turning every thing into its owne nature: and the mighty strength thereof, whereby it either cleanseth or consumeth any thing that it meets with. If thou art stubble it will devour thee, if stone it will breake, if gold it will

VERSE I.

will purge thee. The hard heart it can melt, and the foule heart it can purifie. Lay downe thine heart under the Word, and yeeld it to the Spirit, who is as it were the Artificer which doth manage the Word; he can frame it into a vessell of honour: but if thou resist and be stubborne against the Spirit in the Word, know that it is but the crackling of a leafe in the fire, if thou wilt not suffer it to purge thee, thou canst not hinder it to torment thee; nothing is more comfortable, nothing more consuming than fire; nothing more comfortable than the light, warmth, and witness of the Spirit, nothing more terrible than the conviction, condemnation, and bondage of the Spirit.

Now this difference in the measure of the Spirit, may be seene in *two things*. First, in a greater measure of knowledge; *They shall all know me from the least of them to the greatest of them*, saith the Lord, *Ier. 31. 34.* And the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea, *Esa. 11. 9.* Our Saviour told his Disciples that all things, which hee had heard of his Father he had made knowne unto them, *Ioh. 15. 15.* and yet a little after he telleth them that many other things he had to say unto them, which they could not beare, till the Spirit of truth came who should guide them into all truth, *Ioh. 16. 12, 13.* noting that the Spirit when hee came should enlarge their hearts to a capacity of more heavenly wisdom than they could comprehend before. For wee may observe before how ignorant they were of many things, though they conversed with Christ in the flesh. *Philip* ignorant of the Father, *Ioh. 14. 8.* *Thomas* of the way unto the Father, *Ioh. 14. 5.* *Peter* of the necessity of his sufferings, *Matth. 16. 22.* The two Disciples of his resurrection, *Luk. 24. 45.* all of them of the qualitie of his Kingdome, *Act. 1. 6.* Thus before the sending of the Holy Ghost, the Lord did not require so plentifull knowledge unto salvation, as after; as in the valuations of money.

The Spirit supplies Christs absence.

43

VERSE I.

money, that which was plentie two or three hundred yeeres since, is but penurie now. Secondly, in a greater measure of strength for Spirituall obedience. They who before fled from the company of Christ in his sufferings; did after rejoyce to be counted worthy of suffering shame for his Name, or as the elegancie of the originall words import, to be *dignified with the dishonour of Christians*, *Act. 5. 41.* For suffering of persecution for Christ, and the triall of faith by diverse temptations is in the Scriptures reckoned up amongst the gifts, and hundred fold compensations of God to his people, *Mark. 10. 30. Phil. 1. 29. Heb. 11. 26. Jam. 1. 2. 1 Pet. 1. 6, 7.* No man, saith our Saviour, *putteth new wine into old bottles*, that is, exacteth rigid and heauey services of weake and unqualified Disciples, and therefore my Disciples fast not while I am amongst them in the flesh: *But the dayes will come when I shall be taken from them in body*, and shall send them my holy Spirit to strengthen and prepare them for hard service, and then they shall fast, and performe those parts of more difficult obedience unto me, *Mat. 9. 15, 17.*

Now farther touching this *sending of the Holy Spirit*, (which together with Christs intercession was one of the principall ends of his ascending up unto the right hand of power) it may bee here demanded, *Why the Holy Spirit was not before this Exaltation of Christ sent forth in such abundance upon the Church?* The maine reason whereof, next unto the purpose and decree of God, into which all the acts of his will are to be resolv'd, *Eph. 1. 11.* is given by our Saviour, *Ioh. 14. 16. Ioh. 16. 7.* Because he was to supply the corporall absence of Christ, and to bee *another Comforter* to the Church. Of which Office of the Spirit, (because it was one of the maine ends of his Mission, and that one of the chiefe workes of Christs sitting at Gods right hand) I shall here, without any unprofitable, or impertinent digression, speake a little.

First, then the Spirit is a *Comforter*, because an *Advo-*

cate

VERSE I.

Interpellare dicitur pro nobis, quia nobis gemendi & interpellandi imponit affectum. Aug. Quod dicitur Spiritus Sanctus intercedere pro nobis, hoc non est ita intelligendum ac si ipsa persona spiritus immediate intercederet. Intercedit enim per gemitus: porro non gemit spiritus, sed nos gemimus; itaq; docendo hoc facit, efficiendo ut gemamus. Cameron. de Eccles. pag. 98.

cate to his people; for so much the word signifies, and is elsewhere rendered, 1 *Ioh. 2.1*. Now he is called *another Comforter or Advocate*, to note the difference betweene Christ and the Spirit in this particular. There is then an *Advocate by Office*, when one person takes upon himselfe the cause of another, and in his name pleads it. Thus Christ by the Office of his Mediation, and intercession is an Advocate for his Church, and doth in his owne person in heaven apply his merits, and further the cause of our salvation with his Father. There is likewise an Advocate by *energie and operation*, by instruction and assistance, which is, not when a worke is done by one person in the behalfe of another, but when one by his counsell, inspiration, and assistance enableeth another to manage his owne businesse, and to plead his owne cause. And such an Advocate the Spirit is, who doth not intercede, nor appeare before God in person for us, as Christ doth: but maketh interpellation for men in and by themselves, giving them an accessse unto the Father, emboldning them in their feares, and helping them in their infirmities, when they know not what to pray, *Eph. 2.18. Heb. 10.15.19. Rom. 8.26. Eph. 3.16*.

First then, the Spirit as our *Advocate* justifieth our persons, and pleadeth our causes against the accusations of our spirituall enemies. For as Christ is our Advocate at the tribunall of Gods justice to plead our cause against the severitie of his Law, and that most Righteous and undeniable charge of sinne which he layeth upon us: so the Holy Spirit is our Advocate at the tribunall of Gods mercie, enabling us there to cleere our selves against the temptations, and murtherous assaults of our Spirituall enemies. The world accuseth us by false and slanderous calumniation, laying to our charge things which wee never did; the Spirit in this case maketh us not only plead our innocencie, but to rejoyce in our fellowship with the Prophets which were before us, to esteeme the reproaches

The Spirit an Advocate.

45

VERSE I.

proaches of Christ greater riches than the treasures of the world, to count our selves happy in this, that it is not such low markes as wee are which the malice of the World aimeth at, but the Spirit of Glory and of God which resteth upon us, who is on their part evill spoken of, *1 Pet. 4. 14. Satan, that grand accuser of the brethren,* doth not onely load my sinnes upon my conscience, but further endeavoreth to exclude mee from the benefit of Christ by charging mee with impenitency and unbelieve. But here the Spirit enableth me to cleere my selfe against the father of lies. It is true indeed I have a naughty flesh, the seed of all mischief in my nature; but the first means which brought mee hereunto was the beleeving of thy lyes, and therefore I will no longer entertain thy hellish reasonings against mine owne peace. I have a Spirit which teacheth mee to bewaile the frowardnesse of mine owne heart, to deny mine owne will and workes, to long and aspire after perfection in Christ, to adhere with delight and purpose of heart unto his Law, to lay hold with all my strength upon that plancke of salvation, which in this shipwracke of my soule is cast out unto mee. These affections of my heart come not from the earthly *Adam*, for whatsoever is Earthly, is sensuall and Devillish too. And if they bee Holy and Heavenly, I will not beleeve that God will put any thing of Heaven, into a vessell of Hell. Sure I am, he that died for me when I did not desire him, will in no wise cast me away when I come unto him. Hee that hath given me a will to love his Service, and to leane upon his Promises, will in mercy accept the will for the deed, and in due time accomplish the worke of Holinesse which hee hath begun. Thus the Spirit like an Advocate secureth his Clients title, against the sophisticall exceptions of the Adversary, and when by temptations our eye is dimmed, or by the mixture of corruptions our evidences defaced, he by his skill helpeth our infirmities, and bringeth those things which are blotted out,
and

VERSE I.

and forgotten; into our remembrance again, *Ioh. 14. 26.*

Secondly, an Advocate admonisheth and directeth his Client how to order and sollicite his owne businesse, what evidences to produce, what witnesses to prepare, what offices to attend, what preparations to make against the time of his hearing: so the Spirit doth set the hearts of beleivers in a right way of negotiating their Spirituall affaires, maketh them to heare a voyce behinde them, furnishing them with wisdom and prudence in every condition. How to grapple with temptations, how to serve God in all estates, when to reprove, direct, counsell, comfort; when to speake and when to be silent, when to let out and when to chaine up a passion, when to use, and when to forbear liberty, how to prosecute occasions, and apply occurrences unto Spirituall ends, every where, and in all things strengthening and instructing us to mannage our hearts unto the best advantages of peace to our selves, and of Glory to our Master, *Eesai. 30. 21. Col. 1. 9, 10. Phil. 4. 12, 13. Eph. 4. 20, 21.*

Thirdly, an Advocate maketh up the failings of his Client, and by his wisdom, and observation of the case, picketh out advantages beyond the instructions, and gathereth arguments to further the suite which his Client himselfe observed not. So the Spirit, when we know not what to pray, when with *Iehoshaphat* we know not what to doe, when it may bee in our owne apprehension the whole businesse of our peace and comfort lieth a bleeding, doth then help our infirmities, and by dumbe cries, and secret intimations, and deepe, and unexpressible groanings, presenteth arguments unto him who is the searcher of hearts, and who knoweth the minde of the Spirit, which wee our selves cannot expresse. Thus as an Infant crieth and complaineth for want of sleepe, and yet knoweth not that it is sleepe which hee wanteth: as a sicke man goeth to the Physitian, and complaineth that some physicke hee wanteth, but knoweth not the thing which

The Spirit a Comforter.

47

VERSE I.

which hee asketh for: so the soule of a Christian by the assistance of the Spirit is enlarged to request things of God which yet of themselves doe passe the knowledge and understandings of those that aske them, *Rom. 8. 26, 27. Eph. 3. 19. Phil. 4. 7. 1 Cor. 14. 15.*

Secondly, the Spirit is a *Comforter* by applying and representing Christ absent unto the soule againe. For first, the Spirit carrieth a Christian heart up to Christ, in heavenly affections, and conversation, *Col. 3. 1. 3. Phil. 3. 20.* as a piece of earth when it is out of its place, doth ever move to the whole earth: so a sparkle of Christs Spirit will naturally move upward unto him who hath the fulnesse in him. A stone, though broken all to pieces in the motion, will yet through all that perill and violence move unto the center: so though the nature of man abhorre, and would of it selfe decline the passages of death, *2 Cor. 5. 4.* yet the Apostle desired to be dissolved, and to be taken asunder, that by any meanes he might be with Christ, who is the Center of every Christians desire, *Philip. 1. 23.* Secondly, the Spirit bringeth Christ downe to a Christian, formeth him in his heart, evidenceth him, and the vertue of his Passion, and Resurrection, unto the Conscience in the powerfull dispensation of his holy Ordinances. Therefore when our Saviour speakes of sending the Holy Spirit, hee addeth, I will not leave you comfortlesse, I will come to you, when the World seeth mee not, yet ye see mee. This noteth the presence of Christ by his Spirit with the Church: but there is more than a presence, there is an inhabitation, *At that time you shall know that I am in my Father, and you in mee, and I in you, John 14. 18, 20.*

Thirdly, the Spirit is a *Comforter* by a worke of sweet and fruitfull Illumination, not onely giving the knowledge, but the love and comfort of the truth unto a Christian, making him with open face behold as in a glasse the Glory of God, and thereby transforming him into the same

VERSE I.

same image from Glory to Glory. The light of other sciences is like the light of a candle, nothing but light: but the knowledge of Christ by the Spirit is like the light of the Sunne, which hath influences and vertue in it. And this is that which the *Apostle* calls the *Spirit of Revelation in the knowledge of God*, for though there bee no Propheticall, nor extraordinary revelations, by dreames, visions, extasies, or enthusiasmes; yet according to the measure of Spirituall perspicacie, and diligent observation of Holy Scriptures, there are still manifold revelations or manifestations of Christ unto the soule. The secret and intimate acquaintance of the soule with God, the heavings, aspirings, and harmony of the heart with Christ, the sweet illapses and flashes of Heavenly light upon the soule, the knowledge of the depths of God and of Satan, of the whole Armor of God and the strong man, of conflicts of Spirit, protection of Angels, experiences of mercy, issues of temptation, and the like, are Heavenly and constant revelations out of the Word manifested to the Soules of the faithfull by the Spirit.

Lastly and principally, the Spirit is a *Comforter in those effects of joy and peace* which hee worketh in the heart. For joy is ever the fruite, and Companion of the Spirit, *Gal. 5. 22. Act. 13. 52.* and the joy of the Spirit is like the intercession of the Spirit, unspeakable and glorious, *1 Pet. 1. 8.* not like the joy of the world, which is empty, false, and deceitfull, full of vanity, vexation, insufficiency, unsuteablenesse to the soule, mingled with feares of disappointment and miscarriage, with tremblings and guilt of conscience, with certainty of period and expiration: but cleere, holy, constant, unmixed, satisfactory, and proportionable to the compasse of the soule, more gladnesse than all the world can take in the increase of their corne and wine, *Psal. 4. 7.*

And this joy of the Spirit is grounded upon every passage of a Christian condition, from the entrance to the end.

First,

The Spirit a Comforter.

49

VERSE 1.

First, the Spirit worketh joy in discovering, and bending the heart to mourne for corruption. For it is the Spirit of grace and supplications which maketh sinners mourne, and loath themselves, *Zech. 12.10, 11, Ezek. 36.27.31.* and such a sorrow as this, is the seede and the matter of true joy; As *Iosephs* heart was full of joy, when his eyes powred out teares upon *Benjamins* necke. As in wicked laughter the heart may be sorrowfull, so in holy mourning the heart may rejoyce, for all Spirituall afflictions have a peaceable fruite. This was the first glimpse and beame of the Prodigals joy that hee resolv'd with teares and repentance to returne to his Father againe. For there is a sweete complacency in an humble and Spirituall heart to bee vile in its owne eyes, as to the hungry soule every bitter thing is sweet. Sacrifices wee know were to be offered up with joy, *Mal. 2.13.* and of all sacrifices a broken heart is that which God most delighteth in, *Psal. 51.16, 17.* There is joy in Heaven at the repentance of a sinner, and therefore there must needs bee joy in the heart it selfe which repenteth, in as much as it hath Heavenly affections begonne in it. Therefore as the *Apostle* saith, *Let a man become a foole, that hee may bee wise,* so may I truly say, let a man become a mourner, that hee may rejoyce.

If it bee objected how one contrary affection can bee the ground and inducement of another, and that he who feeleth the weight of sinne, and displeasure of God can have little reason to boast of much joy. To this I answer, First, that wee doe not speake of those extraordinary combates, and graplings with the sense of the wrath of God, breaking of bones, and burning of bowels, which some have felt, but of the ordinary humiliations and courses of repentance, which are common to all. Secondly, that such Spirituall mourning and joy are not contrary in regard of the Spirit, nor doe one extinguish or expell the other. As blacke and white are contrary in

E

the

in the wisdom of
 spiritus iustitiae
 ne iudic. Arist.
 Rhet.

VERSE I.

the wall, but meete without any repugnancy in the eye, because though as qualities they fight, yet as objects they agree *in communi conceptu visibilis*: so joy and mourning though contrary in regard of their immediate impressions upon the sense, doe not onely agree in the same principle the Grace of Christ, and in the same end the salvation of man, but may also be subordinated to each other as a darke and muddy colour is a fit ground to lay gold upon; so a tender and mourning heart is the best preparation unto spirituall joy. Therefore our Saviour compareth *Spirituall sorrow unto the paines of a woman in travell*; other paines growing out of sickenesse and distempers, have none but bitter ingredients, and anguish in them; but that paine groweth out of the matter of joy, and leadeth unto joy: so though godly sorrow have some paine in it, yet that paine hath ever joy both for the roote, and fruit of it, *Iohn 16. 21.* and though for the present it may haply intercept the exercise, yet it doth strengthen the habit and ground of joy: as those flowers in the Spring rise highest and with greatest beauty, which in winter shrinke lowest into the earth. *I trembled, saith the Prophet, in my selfe, that I might rest in the day of trouble, Hab. 3. 16.*

Secondly, the Spirit doth not only Discover, but heale the corruptions of the Soule, and there is no joy to the joy of a saved and cured man. The lame man when hee was restored by Peter, expressed the abundant exultation of his heart, *by leaping and praying God, Act. 3. 8.* for this cause therefore amongst others the Spirit is called *the oile of gladnesse*, because by that healing vertue which is in him, he maketh glad the hearts of men. *The Spirit of the Lord, saith Christ, is upon mee, because the Lord anointed mee so preach good tidings to the meeke, hee hath sent me to binde the broken hearted, Esai. 61. 6.* and againe, *I will binde that which was broken; and will strengthen that which was sicke, Ezek. 34. 16.* Now this healing vertue of Christ

The Spirit a Comforter.

51

VERSE I.

Christ is in the dispensation of his Word and Spirit; and therefore the Prophet saith, *the Sunne of Righteousnesse shall arise with healing in his wings*, Mal. 4. 2. where the Spirit in the Word, by the which he commeth, and preacheth unto men, Eph. 2. 17. 1 Pet. 3. 19. is called the *wing of the Sunne*, because hee proceedeth from him, and was sent to supply his absence, as the beame doth the Sunnes; and this Spirit the Apostle calleth *the strengthner of the inner man*, Eph. 3. 16.

Thirdly, the Spirit doth not onely *heale*, but *renew*, and *revive againe*: when an eye is smitten with a sword there is a double mischiefe, a wound made, and a faculty perished; and here though a Chirurgicalian can heale the wound, yet hee can never restore the faculty, because totall privations admit no regresse or recovery: but the Spirit doth not onely *heale*, and repaire, but *renew*, and reedifie the spirits of men. As he healeth that which was torne, and bindeth up that which was smitten, so hee reviveth and raiseth up that which was dead before, Hos. 6. 1, 2. and this the Apostle calls *the Renovation of the Spirit*, Tit. 3. 5. whereby old things are not mended and put together againe, (*for our fall made us all over unprofitable, and litle worth*, Rom. 3. 12. Prov. 10. 20.) but are done quite away, and all things made new againe, 2 Cor. 5. 17. The heart, minde, affections, judgement, conscience, members, changed from stone to flesh, from earthly to Heavenly, from the image of *Adam* to the image of *Christ*, Ezek. 11. 19. 1 Cor. 15. 49. Now this renovation must needs be matter of great joy. For so the Lord comforteth his afflicted people, *Esa. 54. 11, 12, 13.*

Fourthly, the Spirit doth not renew and set the frame of the heart right, and then leave it to its owne care and hazards againe; but being thus restored, *hee abideth with it to preserve and support it* against all Tempests and batteries. And this further multiplieth the joy and comfort of the Church that it is *established in Righteousnesse*, so that

VERSE I.

ἡδὺ τὸ πνεῦμα.

Arist.

α ἡδὺ ὃ φιλαυτοῖς
πάντες, καὶ τὰ αὐ-
τῶν ἀνάγκη ἡδὺ α
ἡδὺ παρὸν, καὶ
ἡδὺ, λόγος δὲ καὶ
φιλόστονος αὐτῶν
ἡδὺ ἡδὺ τὰ εἶναι.
Arist.

b 1 Iohn 3. 8, 9.

c Matth. 7. 23.

Luk. 13. 27.

The whole
phrase ἀμύλλαι
ποιῶν is as much
as the Latine
Operarius In-
iquitatis, one
that maketh a
trade of sinne,
or professeth
iniquity, whose
Service is also

together incompatible with the profession or hope of a Christian. Doctor Jackson of
Justif. faith. sect. 2. c. 2. d Iohn 4. 26. 1 Iohn 2. 20. Esai. 54. 13. Ier. 31. 33. 2 Cor. 3. 2.
To μενοειμένους. Arist. e Kid. 8. 2. Annotat. in Rom. 6. 17. Ier. 31. 39, 40. Ezek. 36. 27.
Rom. 8. 14. Ephes. 4. 30. Gal. 4. 5, 6. Ephes. 1. 14. 1 Pet. 1. 3.

that no weapon which is formed against it can prosper, Esai. 54. 14. 17. Victory is ever the ground of joy, Esai. 9. 3. And the Spirit of God is a victorious Spirit. His judgement in the heart is sent forth unto victory, Matth. 12. 20. and before him Mountaines shall be made a plaine, and every high thing shall bee pulled downe, till hee bring forth the head stone with shoutings, Zach. 4. 6, 7. To Stephen hee was a Spirit of victory against the disputers of the world, Act. 6. 10. To the Apostles a Spirit of liberty in the prison, Act. 16. 25, 26. To all the faithfull a Spirit of joy and glory in the midst of persecutions, 1 Pet. 4. 13, 14.

Fifthly, the Spirit doth not onely preserve the heart which hee hath renewed, but maketh it fruitfull and abundant in the workes of the Lord, Gal. 5. 22. Rom. 7. 4.

And a fruitfulness is a ground of rejoycing, Esai. 54. 1.

b Therefore they which are borne of God, cannot commit sinne, that is, they are not c ἑργα τῆς ἀνομίας, workers or artificers or finishers of iniquity, because they have the seed of God, that is, his Spirit in them, which fitteth them (as seed doth the wombe or the earth) to bring forth fruite unto God. Partly, by d teaching the heart, and e casting it as it were in the mould of the Word, fashioning such thoughts, apprehensions, affections, judgements in the soule as are answerable to the Will and Spirit of God in the Word, so that a man cannot but see his seale, and say Amen to the written Law: partly by moving animating, applying, and most sweetly leading the heart unto the Obedience of that Law which is thus written therein.

Lastly, those whom hee thus fitteth, hee sealeth up unto a small and full redemption by the testimony of their adoption, which is the hantsell and earnest of their

Inheri-

The Spirit a Comforter.

53

inheritance; and thereby begetteth a lively hope, an earnest expectation, a confident attendance upon the promises, and an unspeakable peace and security thereupon; by which fruits of faith and hope there is a glorious joy shed abroad into the soule, so full, and so intimately mingled with the same, that it is as possible for man to annihilate the one, as to take away the other. For according to the evidence of hope, and excellencie of the thing hoped, must needs the joy there-from resulting receive its sweetnesse and stability.

By all this which hath been spoken of the *Mission of the Spirit in such abundance after Christs sitting at the right hand of God*, wee should learne with what affections to receive the Gospell of Salvation, for the teaching whereof this Holy Spirit was shed abroad abundantly on the Embassadors of Christ; and with what heavenly conversations to expresse the power which our hearts have felt therein, to walke as children of the light, and as becommeth the Gospell of Christ, to adorne our high profession, and not to receive the grace of God in vaine. Consider first, that the word thus quickned will have an operation, either to convice unto Righteousnesse, or to scale unto condemnation; as the Sunne, either to melt, or to harden; as the raine, either to ripen come, or weeds; as the Scepter of a King, either to rule subjects, or to subdue enemies; as the fire of a Gold-smith, either to purge gold, or devoure dross; as the waters of the Sanctuary, either to heale places, or to turne them into salt pits, *Exek. 47. 11*. Secondly, according to the proportion of the Spirit of Christ in his Word revealed shall be the proportion of their judgement who despise it. The contempt of a great Salvation, and glorious Ministry shall bring a sorer condemnation, *Heb. 2. 2. 4*. *If I had not come and spoken unto them (saith our Saviour) they had not had sinne,* *Ioh. 15. 22*. Sinnes against the light of nature are no sinnes in comparison of those against the Gospell. *The earth which*

V E R S E S.

Rom. 8. 19, 23.
Rom. 9. 23.
2 Cor. 5. 4.
Phil. 4. 7.
1 Pet. 1. 8.
Ioh. 16. 22, 24.
Ελπίς οὐκ
ἐστίν, ἄλυστος.

*The Spirit the Churches Comforter.***VERSE I.**

which drinketh in the raine that falls often on it, and yet beareth nothing but thornes and briars, is rejected, and nigh unto cursing, Heb. 6. 7, 8. Thirdly, even here God will not alwayes suffer his Spirit to strive with flesh, there is a *Day of Peace*, which he calleth *our day*, a day wherein he entreateth and beseecheth us to bee reconciled: but if we therein judge our selves unworthy of eternall life, and goe obstinately on till there be no remedie, he can easily draw in his Spirit, and give us over to the infatuation of our owne hearts, that wee may not bee cleansed any more till he have caused his fury to rest upon us, *Ezek. 24. 13.*

We see likewise by this *Doctrine* whereupon the *comforts of the Church* are founded; namely, upon *Christ* as the first comforter, by working our *Reconciliation* with God: and upon the *Spirit* as *another comforter*, testifying and applying the same unto our soules. And the continuall supply and assistance of this Spirit is the onely comfort the Church hath against the dominion and growth of sinne. For though the motions of lust which are in our members, are so close, so working, so full of vigor and life, that we can see no power nor probabilities of prevailing against them; yet we know *Christ* hath a greater fulnesse of Spirit than we can have of sinne, and it is the great promise of the new covenant, *that God will put his Spirit into us, and thereby save us from all our uncleannesses, Ezek. 36. 27, 29.* for though we be full of sin, and have but a seed, a sparkle of the Spirit put into us, and upheld and fed by further, though small supplies, yet that little is stronger than legions of lust; as a little salt or leaven seasoneth a great lump, or a few drops of Spirits strengthen a whole glasse full of water. Therefore the Spirit is called a *Spirit of judgement and of burning*, because as one Judge is able to condemne a thousand prisoners, and a little fire to consume abundance of drasse: so the Spirit of God in and present with us, though received

Continuance of Christs Kingdome.

55

VERSE 1.

ceived and supplied but in measure, though but a smoaking and suppressed fire, shall yet breake forth in victory and judgement against all that resist it. In us indeed there is nothing that feedes, but onely that which resists and quencheth it. But this is the wonderfull vertue of the Spirit of Christ in his members, that it nourisheth it selfe. Therefore sometimes the Spirit is called *Fire*, *Esai. 4. 4.* *Matt. 3. 11.* and sometimes *Oyle*, *Heb. 1. 9.* & *Ioh. 2. 27.* to note that the Spirit is nutriment unto it selfe, that that grace which we have received already, is preserved and excited by new supplies of the same grace. Which supplies we are sure shall be given to all that aske them, by the vertue of Christs Prayer, *Ioh. 14. 16.* by the vertue of his and his Fathers promise, *Ioh. 16. 7.* *Act. 1. 4.* and by the vertue of that Office which he still beares, which is to bee the head, or vitall principle of all holinesse and grace unto the Church. And all these are permanent things, and therefore the vertue of them abideth, their effects are never totally interrupted.

Fifthly and lastly, this sitting of Christ at the right hand of God noteth his intercession in the behalfe of the whole Church, and each member thereof. Who is he that condemneth? saith the Apostle, it is Christ that is dead, yea rather that is risen againe, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us, *Rom. 8. 34.* But of this Doctrine I shall speake more fully in the fourth verse, it being a great part of the Priesthood of Christ.

I now proceed to the last thing in this first verse, the continuance and *Victories of Christs Kingdome*, in these words, *Untill I make thy foes thy footstool.* Wherein every word is full of weight. For though ordinarily subdivisions of holy Scripture, and crumblings of the bread of life, be rather a loosing than an expounding of it; yet in such parts of it as were of purpose intended for models and summaries of fundamentall Doctrine, (of which sort this Psalm is one of the fullest and briefest in the whole

VERSE I.

Scriptures,) as in little maps of large countries, there is no word whereupon some point of weightie consequence may not depend. Here then is considerable the *term* of *duration* or *measure* of *Christs Kingdome*; *Untill*. The *Author* of subduing Christs enemies under him; *I, the Lord*. The *manner* thereof, *ponam*, and *ponam scabellum*; Put thy foes as a stoole under thy feet. Victory is a relative word, and presupposeth enemies, and they are expressed in the text. I will but touch that particular because I have handled it more largely upon another Scripture, and their enmitie is here not described, but onely presupposed. It shewes it selfe against Christ in all the Offices of his Mediation. There is *enmity* against him as a *Prophet*. *Enmity* against his *Truth*. *In opinion*, by adulterating it with humane mixtures and superinducements, teaching for Doctrines the traditions of men: *In affection*, by wishing many divine truths were razed out of the Scriptures, as being manifestly contrary to those pleasures which they love rather than God. *In conversation*, by keeping down the truth in unrighteousnesse, and in those things which they know, as brute beasts, corrupting themselves. *Enmity* against his *Teaching*, by quenching the motions, and resisting the evidence of his Spirit in the Word, refusing to heare his voyce, and rejecting the counsell of God against themselves. There is *Enmitie* against him as a *Priest*, by undervaluing his Person, Sufferings, Righteousnesse, or Merits. And as a *King*; *Enmity* to his *Worship*, by profanesse neglecting it, by idolatry communicating it, by superstition corrupting it. *Enmity* to his wayes and service, by ungrounded prejudices, misjudging them as grievous, unprofitable, or unequall wayes; and by willfull disobedience forsaking them to walke in the wayes of our owne heart.

And this is a point which men should labour to try themselves in, for the enemies of Christ are not onely out of the Church, but in the midst where his kingdome

Enmitie against Christ.

57

VERSE I.

is set up, *vers. 2. Esai. 8. 14.* And indeed by how much the more dangerous it is, by so much the more subtile will Satan and a sinfull heart be to deceive it selfe therein; for this is a certaine truth, that men may professe and falsly beleve *that they love the Lord Iesus*, and yet be as reall enemies unto his Person and Kingdome, as the *Jewes* that accused, and the *Heathen* that crucified him: *Hee was set up for a signe to be spoken against, for a rocke of offence, and a stone of stumbling, which the very builders themselves would reject.* False brethren amongst the *Philippians* there were, who professed the name of *Christians*, and yet by their sensuall walking and worldly mindednesse, declared themselves to bee enemies to the crosse of *Christ*, *Phil. 3. 18, 19.* To honour the bodies of the *Saints* departed with beautifull sepulchres, is in it selfe a testimoniall of sincere love and inward estimation of their persons and graces; and therefore the Holy Ghost hath recorded it for the perpetuall honour of *Ioseph of Arimathea* and *Nicodemus*, *that they embalmed the body of Iesus, and laid it in a new sepulcher, Ioh. 19. 38, 41.* yet our Saviour pronounceth a *woe* against the *Scribes* and *Pharisees*, *because they built the tombes of the Prophets, and garnished the sepulchres of the righteous, Matth. 23. 29.* The fault was not in the fact it selfe, but in the hypocrisie of the heart, in the incongruitie of their other practices, and in that damned protection, which by this plausible pretext of honour to the *Prophets*, they laboured to gaine to their persons, and approbation to their attempts against *Christ*, in the mindes of the people, who yet ordinarily esteemed *Christ* (whom they persecuted) a *Prophet* sent from *God*. They professe, If we had beene in the dayes of our *Fathers*, *we would not have done as they did:* But our Saviour reproves this hypocriticall perswasion, by shewing first, that it was no strange thing with them to persecute *Prophets*, but a nationall and hereditary sinne, and therefore they had

no

VERSE I.

no reason to boast of their descent (as their manner was, *Luk. 3. 8. Ioh. 8. 39.*) or to thinke that Gods mercies were entail'd unto them, since, by their owne confession, they were the posteritie of those that had killed the Prophets. And secondly, that they did fulfill the measure of their Fathers, that is, that which their Fathers had beene long and leasurely a doing, they now did altogether in one blow; for it was the same Christ whom they persecuted in his person, and their fathers in his Prophets. And therefore though they seemed to honour and revive the memory of those holy martyrs, yet upon them should light the guilt of all the righteous blood which had ever beene shed in the Land, inasmuch as their malice was directed against that fulnesse, of which all the Prophets had but a measure. If by severall enemies a man be severally mangled, one cuts off a foot, another an hand, another an arme, and after all this, there come one who cuts off the head, and yet bestowes some honourable ceremonies upon those members which the rest had abused, he shall justly suffer as if he had slaine a whole man, inasmuch as his malice did eminently containe in it the degrees of all the rest, and that pretended honour shall be so farre from compensating the injury, that it shal adde thereunto an aggravation of base hypocrisie. Thus, as the *Jewes*, when they thought they did honour and admire the Prophets, did yet harbour in their breasts that very root of fury, and had that selfe-same constitution of soule, which was in their fore-fathers who shed their blood: so in our dayes, men may say and thinke that they love Christ, and court him with much out-side and emptie service, may boast that if they had lived in the dayes of those unthankfull *Jewes*, they would not have partaked with them in so execrable a murder, and yet interpretatively and at second hand shew the very same root of bitternesse, and rancorous constitution of heart against him in his Spirit and Ordinances, which was in those

Grounds of our false love to Christ.

59

those men when they cryed, *Away with him, crucifie him, crucifie him.*

VERSE 1.

Many grounds there are of this grand mispersuasion of the heart in its love to Christ, which I will but touch upon. The first is the *generall acceptation and countenance which the Gospel of Christ receiveth amongst the Princes of this world*, who in Christian Commonwealths doe both by their owne voluntary and professed subjection, and by the vigour of their publike lawes establish the same. Now this is most certain, that as in all other sciences there cannot be *transitus a genere in genus*, the principles of one will not serve to beget the conclusions of another: so here especially, if a spirituall assent and affection be grounded upon no other than humane inducements, it is most undoubtedly spurious and illegitimate. That reason which the Pharisees used to dissuade men from beleeving in Christ, *Have any of the Rulers or the Pharisees believed on him? Joh. 7. 48.* is one of the principall arguments which many men have now why they doe beleeve him, because the Rulers, whose examples and lawes they observe more upon trust than triall, doe lead them thereunto: and therefore wee finde amongst the *Jews*, that those very men, who when the Government of the whole twelve Tribes was one, did all consent in an unity of religion; upon the distraction of the kingdome under *Ieroboam*, were presently likewise divided in their observance of Gods worship; and they who before were zealous for the Temple at *Ierusalem*, were after as superstitious for *Dan* and *Bethel*. The Prophet giveth the reason of it, *They willingly walked after the commandment*, namely, of *Ieroboam*, *Hos. 4. 11.* no sooner did the Prince interpose his authoritie, but the people were willing to pin their opinions and practises upon his word: *If Omri make statues, and Abab confirm idolatrous customs by his owne practises*; the Prophet shewes how forward the people are to walke in them,

VERSE 1.

them, *Micb. 6. 16.* Therefore it is that our Saviour faith of the best sort of wicked men, *Those who with gladnesse (and that is ever a symptome of love) received the Gospell, that yet in time of persecution they were offended and fell away. Matth. 13. 21.* To note unto us that when Christ is forsaken because of persecution, the imaginary love which was bestowed upon him before was certainly supported by no other ground than that which is contrary to persecution, namely, the countenance and protection of publike power.

Secondly, a great part of men professe faith and love to Christ meetely upon the rules of their Education. The maine reason into which their religion is resolv'd, is not any evidence of excellencie in it-selfe, but onely the customes and traditions of their fore-fathers, which is to build a divine faith upon an humane authoritie, and to set man in the place of God. Certaine it is that contrary religions can never be originally grounded upon the same reason. That which is a true and adequate principle of faith or love to Christ, can never be suitable to the conclusions of *Mahometisme* or *idolatry*. Now then when a professed Christian can give no other account of his love to Christ, than a *Turke* of his love to *Mahomet*; when that which moveth an Idolater to hate Christ, is all that one of us hath to say why he beleeveth in him, certainly that love and faith is but an empty presumption, which dishonoureth the Spirit of Christ, and deludeth our owne soules. There is a naturall instinct in the mind of man to reverence and vindicate the traditions of their progenitors, and at first view to detest any novell opinions which seeme to thwart the received doctrine wherein they had beene bred. And this affection is ever so much the stronger, by how much the tradition received is about the nobler and more necessary things. And therefore it discovereth it selfe with most violence and impatience, in matters of Religion, wherein the eternall welfare of

Grounds of our false love to Christ.

61

of the soule is made the issue of the contention. We finde with what heate of zeale the *Jewes* contended for the Temple at *Ierusalem*, and with how equall and confident emulation the *Samaritans* ventured their lives for the precedency of their Temple on mount *Gerazim*; and took an oath to produce proofes for the authority thereof, and yet all the ground of this will-worship was the tradition of their fathers. For our Saviour assures us *that they worshipped they knew not what*, and onely tooke things upon trust from their Predecessours. The *Satyr*ist hath made himsele merry with describing the combate of two neighbour townes amongst the *Egyptians* in the opposite defence of those ridiculous idols, the severall worship of which they had beene differently bred up unto: And surely, if a *prophane Christian*, and a *zealous Mahometan* should joyne in the like contention. notwithstanding the subject it selfe, on the one side defended, were a sacred and precious truth, yet I doubt not but the selfe same reasons might bee the sole motive of the Christian to vindicate the honour of Christ, and of the other to maintaine the worship of *Mahomet*. I meane a blinde and pertinacious adhering to that religion in which they had been bred, a naturall inclination to favor domestickall opinions, a high estimation of the persons of men from whom by succession they have thus beene instructed, without any Spirituall conviction of the Truth, or experience of the good which the true members of Christ resolve their love unto him into. And this wee finde was ever the reasons of the *Jewes* obstinacy against the Prophets, they answered all their arguments, with the practice and traditions they had received from their Fathers, *Ier. 9. 14. 11. 10. 44. 17. Act. 7. 51.*

Thirdly, the heart may bee mispersuaded of its love to Christ, by judging that an affection unto him, which is indeed nothing but a selfe love and a desire of advancing private ends. The rule whereby Christ at the last day will

VERSE I.

*Joseph. Antiq.
lib. 13. cap. 6.*

Ioh. 4. 20. 22.

*Immortale Odi-
um, & nun-
quam sanabile
vulnus; Ardet
adhuc combos &
lentura; sum-
mus utrinq; In-
desuror vulgo,
quod numina vi-
cinarum Odit u-
terq; locus, cum
sola credat ba-
bendos esse Deos,
quos ipsa colit.
Jovenal. Satyr.
15.*

VERB. I.

*Auro parietes,
auro laquearia,
auro fulgent ca-
pita columnarum,
& nudus
atque esuriens
ante fores no-
stras Christus in
paupere mori-
tur. Hieron. ad
Gaudentium.*

ὁ δ' αὖ μὴ διε-
σπασσάμενος
ἰδοὺς, ὡς
ἔστιν ὁ μὴ
χρῆσται, καὶ ἡ-
γῶν δὴ γλῶσσαι
τῶν χρῆσται
δύναται. *Iust.
Martyr. Apol. 2.
Qui Christiano
vocabuloglori-
antur & perdi-
te vivunt, non
absurde possunt
videri medio
Noe filio figura-
ri; passionem
quippe Christi,
que illius homi-
nis nuditate fig-
nificata est, &
annunciant pro-
fitendo, & male
agendo exbono-
rant. August. de
Civit. Dei, lib.
16. cap. 2.
ὁ χρῆσταις ὁ δὲ
χρῆσιμονος, &c.
*Ignat. Epist. ad
Tral.**

will measure the love or hatred of men unto him, is their love or hatred of his brethren and members here, *Mat. 25. 40, 45.* for in all their afflictions Christ himselfe is afflicted. *Peter lovest thou me? feed my sheepe;* make prooffe of thy love to mee by thy service and compassion to my people. And how many are there every where to bee found, whose love unto themselves hath devoured all brotherly love? who take no pity either upon the soules, or temporall necessities of those with whom they yet pretend a fellowship in Christs owne body? who spend more upon their owne pride and luxury, upon their backs and bellies, their pleasures and excesses, yea bury more of their substance in the mawes of Hawkes and Dogs, than they can ever perswade themselves to put into the bowels of the poore Saints? Surely at the day of Judgement, how ever such men here professe to love Christ, and would spit in the face of him with *Iustin Martyr* should say, they were not Christians, it will appeare that such men did as formally and as properly deny Christ, as if with *Peter* they had publikely sworne, *I know not the man.* The Apostle plainly intimates thus much, when hee sheweth that the experiment of the *Corinthians* ministration to the necessity of the Saints was an inducement unto the Churches to praise God for their professed subjection to the Gospell of Christ, *2 Cor. 9. 13.* Againe, as Christ is present with us in his poore members, so likewise in the power of his Ordinances, and in the light and evidence of his Spirit shining forth in the lives of holy men; If then wee are as impatient of the edge of his Word, when it divides betweene the bone and the marrow, when it discerneth and discovereth our secret thoughts, our bosome sinnes, our ambitions, uncleane, and hypocriticall intents: if the lives and Communion of the Saints bee in like manner an eye-fore unto us in shaming and reprovving our formall and fruitlesse profession of the same Truth, as Christs was unto the Jewes certainly

Grounds of our false love to Christ.

63

VERSE I.

certainly the same affections of hatred, reproach, and dis-
 estimation which we shew unto them, wee would with
 so much the more bitterneſſe haue expreſſed unto Chriſt
 himſelfe, if we had lived in his dayes, by how much that
 Spirit of Grace, againſt which the Spirit which is in us
 envieth, was above meaſure more abundantly in him
 than in the Holieſt of his members. *If you were of the
 world* (ſaith our Saviour) *the world would love their own,*
but now I have called you out of the world, I have given
 to you a Spirit which is contrary to the Spirit of the
 World, *therefore the world hateth you.* And this is evident
 when men hate another meerely for that diſtinction
 which differenceth him from them, they much more
 hate him from whom the difference it ſelfe originally
 proceedeth. We ſee then that they who openly profeſſe
 Chriſt, may yet inwardly hate him, becauſe the ground
 of their profeſſion is not any experimentall goodneſſe
 which they have taſted in him (for by nature men have
 no reliſh of Chriſt at all) but onely ſelfe-love and private
 ends, ^a whereby Chriſt is ſubordinated to their owne
 commodities. Men are herein juſt like the ^b Samaritans,
 of whom *Iosephus* reports that when *Antiochus* perſe-
 cuted the *Iewes*, they then utterly diſavowed any con-
 ſanguinity with them, denied their *Temple on Mount*
Gerifim to bee dedicated to the great God, and declared
 their lineage from the *Medes* and *Persians*; but when be-
 fore that, *Alexander* had ſhewed favour unto the *Iewes*,
 and remitted the tribute of every ſeventh yeer, they then
 claimed kindred with that people, and counterfeited a

^a Si quis Chriſto
 temporalia pre-
 ponat, non eſt in
 eo fundamentum
 Chriſtus. Aug.
 de civit. Dei,
 lib. 21. cap. 26.
 Multi amiſſa
 charitate prop-
 terea non exeunt
 foras, quia ſe-
 cularibus emolu-
 mentis tenen-

tur, & ſua quærentes, non quæ Jeſu Chriſti, non à Chriſti unitate, ſed à ſuis commodis
 nolunt recedere. Aug. de Baptiſmo contr. Donat. lib. 4. cap. 10. ^b Ταῦτα ὁ βλάπτειν οἱ
 Σαμαριτῶν παρὰ τὰς τῶν Ἰουδαίων, οὐκ ἔδ' ὁμολογῶν αὐτοὺς ἐν τῇ συλλειτουργίᾳ αὐτῶν, οὐδ' ἂν ἐν γα-
 λελίᾳ τῶν τῶν μεγάλων θύων, &c. Joſ. Antiq. lib. 12. cap. 7. ἰδοὺς δὲ πῶς οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι Ἀλεξάνδρῳ
 ὡς τὸ λαμπρὸς τετίμωνται, ἐκ τούτων αὐτοὺς Ἰουδαίους ὁμολογεῖν. ἡσυχάζει οἱ Σαμαριτῶν τοῦ τοῦ τῶν φέ-
 ρον, ἐν μὲν ταῖς συμφοραῖς ὄντας τῶν Ἰουδαίων ἀρῶν τὴν συλλειτουργίαν ἔχον. ὅταν δὲ πάλιν αὐτοὺς λαμ-
 βάνει ἰδῶσι, ἐκ τούτων, ἐκ τούτων ἐκ τούτων αὐτοὺς τῇ κατανότητι, &c. Joſeph. Antiq. lib. 11.
 cap. 8.

deſcent

VERSE 1.

*c Quos vides
petulanter &
procaciter insultare
servis Christi, sunt in eis
plurimi qui illum
interitum clademque non
evassissent, nisi
servos Christi se
esse finxissent, &
nunc ingrati a superbia,
atq; impiissima insania
eius nomini resistunt
corde perverso ut sempiternis
tenebris puniantur, ad
quod nomen, ore vel
subdolo confugerunt, ut
temporalis luce fruere-
ntur. Aug. de civ. Dei, lib.
1. cap. 1.*

descent from the Tribes of *Ephraim* and *Manasseh*, that thereby they might enjoy the ^cpriviledges of those people whom otherwise they mortally hated. And so wee finde that in the vastation of the City of *Rome* by the *Goths* and *Barbarians*, when there was but one onely refuge allowed the *Romanes* for the safety of their lives, namely to fly unto the *Christians Churches*, those very enemies of Christ and his profession, who before had persecuted him, and after returned to their malice againe, were yet then as hasty to fly unto his Temples, and to assume the title of his servants, as they were after ungratefully malicious in reproaching Christian Religion as if that had beene the provocation of those calamities. And may wee not still observe amongst Christians at this day many men who contrary to the evidence of their judgement and peace of their consciences, conforme themselves unto the vanities, courtesies and companies of this evill world, and like cowards are affraid to adventure on a rigorous and universall subjection to the Truth of Christ, dare not keepe themselves close to those narrow rules of *Saint Paul*, to abstaine from jesting which is not seemely, to avoid all appearances of evill, to reprove the unfruitfull works of darknesse, to speak unto Edification that their words may minister grace unto the hearers, to rejoyce alwaies in the Lord, to give place unto wrath, to recompence evill with good, not to be circumspet and exact in their walking before God, and all this meerely out of suspicion of some disrespect & disadvantages which may hereupon meete them in the world, of some remoraes, and stoppage in the order of those projects which they have contrived for their private ends? Now if such purposes as these doe startle men from a punctuall and rigorous profession of the Gospell of Christ and his most Holy wayes (notwithstanding our vow in Baptisme doth as strictly binde us thereunto, as unto the externall title of Christianity) suppose wee that the same or greater disadvantages

disadvantages should now (as in the Primitive times) attend the naked and outward profession of Christ; would not such men as these fall into downright apostacie, and deny the Lord that bought them? Certainly our Saviour hath so resolved that case in the very best sort of unregenerate men, noted in the stony ground; when times of persecution happen, that they are brought to the tryall who it was whom in their profession they loved, Christ or themselves, the excellency of the knowledge of him, or the secure enjoyment of secular contentments, *They will then certainly fall away, and bee offended, Matth. 13.21.* so profound and unsearchable is the deceitfull heart of man, that by that very reason for which men contend for the outward face and profession of Religion, because they love their pleasures and profits which without such a profession they cannot peaceably enjoy, they are deterred from a close, spirituall, and universall obedience to the power thereof, because thereby likewise those pleasures and profits are kept within such rules of moderation as the nature of a boundlesse and unsatisfiable lust will not admit. This is a certaine rule in love, that the motions and desires thereof are strong, and therefore in any thing which the soule loves, it therein strives for excellency and perfection; and this rule holds most true in religion, because when the soule loves that, it loves it under the apprehension of the greatest good, and therefore by consequence sets the strongest and most industrious desires of the soule upon it. Therefore the Apostle saith, that *the Love of Christ*, namely that love of him which is by the Holy Ghost *shed abroad in our hearts*, constraineth us to live unto him, and to aspire after him *who died for us and rose againe*. Love is as strong as death, it will take no deniall. It is the wing, and weight of the soule, which fixeth all the thoughts, and carrieth all the desires unto an intimate unity with the thing it loves, stirreth up a zeale to remove all ob-

VERSE I.

Amor concupiscentie non requiescit in quacunque extrinseca aut superficiali adeptione amati, sed querit amatum perfectè habere, quasi ad intimam illius perveniens, &c. Aquin. 12a. qu. 28. art. 2. vid. ibid. art. 4. & 5. Cant. 2. 5. Psal. 119. 20. Elai. 26. 8. Psal. 43. 2. Rom. 8. 23. Psal. 119. 5. 10. 31. 47. 54. 81. &c.

Quodlibet agens propter amorem agit quodcunque agit. Aquin. 12a. qu. 28. art. 6.

stacles which stand betwene it, worketh a languor or failing of nature in the want of it, a liquefaction and softnesse of nature to receive the impression of it, an egressse of the Spirits, and as it were an haste of the soule to meet and entertaine it. Whence those expressions of the Saints in Holy Scripture, *Comfort mee with apples, stay mee with flagons, for I am sicke of love, my soule breaketh for the longing which it hath unto thy judgements at all times. The desire of our soule is to thy Name, and to the remembrance of thee. My soule thirsteth for God, yea for the living God, when shall I come and appeare before God? Wee that have the first fruit of the Spirit groane within our selves, waiting for the adoption, even the redemption of our Bodies. O that my waies were directed that I might keepe thy Commandements, with my whole heart have I sought thee, I have stucke unto thy Testimonies, I will delight my selfe in thy Commandements, thy Statutes have bene my songs; my soule fainteth for thy salvation, &c.* By all which wee see that a true love of Christ doth excite strong desires, and an earnest aspiring and ambition of the soule to walke in all well-pleasing, and to bee in all things conformable unto him. What the Apostle saith of Spirituall hope, we may truly say of love, (which is the fundamentall affection, and roote of all the rest) *He that hath it indeed in him, purgeth himselfe even as Christ is pure.* The love of the World, and the things and lusts of the World may indeed consist with the formall profession, but no way with the truth or power of a true love to Christ or his governement. For love is ever the principle and measure of all our actions, such as it is, such likewise will they bee too.

Fourthly, something like love there may be in natural men unto Christ, grounded upon the Historicall assurance and perswasion of his being now in Glory, attended by mighty Angels, filled with all the treasures of Wisdom, Knowledge, Grace, Power, and other excellent attributes,

Misperwasion in our love to Christ.

67

VERSE I.

attributes, which can attract love even from an enemy; and that hee hath and still doth procure such good things for Mankinde, in their deliverance from the guilt of sinne, and from the wrath to come, as of which, might they but have an exemption from his Spirituall government, and a dispensation to live according to their owne lusts still, no man should bee more greedily desirous. As *Sampson* met the Lion as an enemy, when hee was alive, but after he was slaine, he went unto him as to a table; there was onely terror while he lived, but hony when he was dead: so doubtlesse many men, to whom the Bodily presence of Christ, and the mighty Power and Penetration of his Heavenly preaching, whereby hee smote sinners unto the ground, and *spake with such authority as never man spake*, would have beene unsufferably irksome, and full of terror (as it was unto the *Scribes* and *Pharisees*, can yet, now that hee is out of their sight, and doth not in person, but onely by those who are his witnesses torment the inhabitants of the earth, pretend much admiration, and thankfull remembrance of that death of his, which was so full of hony for all that come unto him. For as particular dependencies and expectations may make a man flatter and adore the greatnesse of some living Potentate, whose very image notwithstanding the same man doth professedly abominate in other Tyrants of the world who are dead, or upon whom he hath not the same ends: so the selfe-same reason may make men in hypocriticall expressions flatter and fawn upon Christ himselfe who is absent, and yet hate with a perfect hatred the very Image of his Spirit, in the power of his Word, and in the lives of his People. The very Scribes and Pharisees, who blasphemed his Spirit, and contrived his death, could yet bee contented to bee gainers thereby; for so they confesse, *It is expedient for us that one die for the people.*

Lastly, a false love to Christ may be grounded upon a

F. 2

false

*Securus licet
Aeneam Rutiumque ferocem
Committas, nulli gravis est percussus Achilles.
Quid refert dictis ignoscat
Mutius, annon?
Pone Tigillinum, tædâ lucebis in illâ
Quæ stantes ardent qui fixo
gutturæ fumant,
Etc. Juvenal.
Satyr. I.*

VERSE I.

false conceit of love to his Ordinances: For as it is certaine that he who loves the Word and Worship of Christ, as his, doth love him too who is the Author of them; so it is certaine likewise that that love which is sometimes pretended unto them, may indeed in them fixe upon nothing but accidentall and by-respects. *This people saith the Lord to his Prophet, come, and sit before thee as my people, and they heare thy words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they shew much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousnesse.* Here is love in pretence, but falshood in the heart. What then was it which in the Prophet they did thus love? That presently followes, *Thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument, Ezek. 33. 31, 32.* that is, it is not my will which in thy Ministry they at all regard, but onely those circumstantiall ornaments of gracefull action and elocution which they attend with just alike proportion of sensuall delight, as an eare doth the harmony of a well tuned instrument. For as a man may bee much affected with the picture of his enemy, if drawne by a skilfull hand, and yet therein love nothing of the person, but only the cunning of the workman who drew the peece: So a man who hates the life and Spirit of the Word of God it selfe, as being diametrically contrary to that spirit of lust, and of the world, which rules in him? may yet bee so wonderfully taken with that dexterity of wit, or delicacie of expression, or variety of learning, or sweetnesse of speech, and action, or whatsoever other perfection of nature or industry in the dispensers of that word are most suteable to his naturall affections, as that hee may from thence easily cheat his owne conscience, and ground a misperwasion of his love to Gods Word, which yet indeed admireth nothing but the perfections of a man. Nay suppose he meet not with such *lenocinia* to entice his affection, yet the very pacification of the Conscience, which by a notorious neglect

Grounds of our true love to Christ.

69

VERSE I.

neglect of Gods Ordinances would haply be disquieted, or the credit of bearing conformity to Ecclesiasticall orders, and the established service of God in his Church, or some other the like sinister respect may hold a man to such an externall faire correspondence, as by a deceitfull heart may easily bee misconstrued a love of Gods Ordinances. Nay further, a man may externally glory in the priviledge of Gods Oracles, he may distinctly beleeve, and subscribe to the truth of them, he may therein heare many things gladly, and escape many pollutions of the world, and yet here hence conclude no cleerer evidence of his love to Christ in his Word, than the unbeleeving Jewes, or *Herod*, or *Ahab*, or *Simon Magus*, or the foolish Virgins and apostates (all which have attained to some of these degrees) could have done.

For the cleering then of this great case touching the evidence of a mans love to Christ, wee must first know that this is not a flower of our owne garden, for every man by nature is an enemy to Christ and his Kingdome, of the Jewes minde, *wee will not have this man to raigne over us*. And the reason is, because the image of the *old Adam* which we beare, is extremely contrary to the heavenly image of the *second Adam*, unto which we are not borne, but must be renewed. And this is certaine, our love is according to our likenesse, he who hath not the nature and Spirit of Christ, can never love him or move towards him. For love is like fire, *congregat homogenea*, it carrieth things of a nature to one another. Our love then unto Christ must be of a spirituall generation; and it is grounded upon two causes; First, upon the *Proportion* which is in him unto all our desires or capacities, upon the evidence of that unsearchable and bottomlesse goodness which is in him, which makes him the *fairest of ten thousand*, even *altogether lovely*. For that heart which hath a spirituall view of Christ, will be able by faith to observe more dimensions of love, and sweetness in him

Ier. 7.4.

Rom. 2.17, 20.

Hos. 2.2, 3.

Mark. 6.20.

2 King. 21.27.

29.

Act. 2.13.

2 Pet. 2.20.

Ephes. 3.18, 19.

VERSE I.

Psal. 14. 3.

*Amor meus pon-
dit meum, et se-
ror quocumq; fe-
ror. Aug.*

than the knowledge of any creature is able to measure. In all worldly things though of never so curious and delicate an extraction, yet still even those hearts which swimme in them, and glut upon them, can easily discover more dregs than Spirits; nothing was ever so exactly fitted to the soule of man, wherein there was not some defect, or excesse, something which the heart could wish were away, or something which it could desire were tempered with it. But in Christ and his kingdome there is nothing unlovely. For as in man the *all* that is, is full of corruption, so in Christ the *all* that hee is, is nothing but perfection. His fulnesse is the center and treasure of the soule of man; and therefore that love which is thereupon grounded must needs be in the soule as an universall habit and principle, to facilitate every service whereby wee move unto this center. For love is the weight or spring of the soule, which sets every faculty on worke, neither are any of those commandements grievous which are obeyed in *Love*. And therefore it is called *the fulfilling of the Law*. True love unto Christ keepes the whole heart together, and carries it all one way, and so makes it universall, uniforme, and constant in all its affections unto God (for unstedfastnesse of life proceeds from a divided or double heart, *Iam. 1. 8.*) As in the motions of the heavens, there is one common circumvolution which *ex aqua* carrieth the whole frame dayly unto one poinr from east to west though each severall spheare hath a severall crosse way, of its owne, wherein some move with a swifter, and others with a slower motion: So though severall Saints may have their severall corruptious, and those likewise in some stronger than in others, yet being all animated by one and the same Spirit, they all agree in a steddy and uniforme motion unto Christ. If a stone were placed under the concave of the Moone, though there be fire, and aire, and water betweene, yet through them all it would hasten to its owne place; so bee the obstacles never so many,

Grounds of our true love to Christ.

71

VERSE I.

many, or the conditions never so various through which a man must passe, through evill report and good report, through terrors and temptations, through a sea and a wilderness, through firy Serpents and sonnes of *Anak*, yet if the heart love Christ indeed, and conclude that heaven is its home, nothing shall bee able totally to discourage it from hastning thither, whither Christ the fore-runner is gone before.

Secondly, the true *Love* of Christ is grounded upon the evidence of that *Propriety* which the soule hath unto him. And of that mutuall inhabitation and possession which is betweene them. So that our love unto him in this regard is a kinde of selfe love (and therefore very strong) because Christ and a Christian are but one. And the more perswasion the soule hath of this unity, the more must it needs love Christ. For *we love him, because he loved us first*, 1 *Ioh. 4. 16. 19*. And therefore our Saviour, from the womans apprehension of Gods more abundant love in the remission of her many and great sinnes, concludeth the measure and proportion of her love to him. But saith he, *To whom little is forgiven the same loveth little*, *Luk. 7. 47*.

Now *True Love* of Christ and his Kingdome thus grounded will undoubtedly manifest it selfe, first in an *universall extent*, unto any thing wherein Christ is present unto his Church. First, the soule in this case will abundantly love and cherish *the Spirit of Christ*. Entertaine with dearest embraces, as worthy of all acceptation, the motions, and dictates, and secret illapses of him into the soule; will be carefull to heare his voice alwayes behind him, prompting and directing him in the way he should walke, will endeavour with all readinesse and pliability of heart to receive the impression of his seale, and the testimonie which hee giveth in the inner man unto all Gods promises; will feare and suspect nothing more than the frowardnesse of his owne nature, which daily en-

Cant. 2. 16.
Ioh. 14. 23.
Ioh. 17. 21, 23.

*Evidences of our true love to Christ.***VERSE I.**

devoureth to quench, grieve, resist, rebell against this Holy Spirit, and to sling off from his conduct againe. Secondly, the soule in this case will abundantly love the *Ordinances of God* (in which by his Spirit hee is still walking in the midst of the Churches) for the Law is written in it by the finger of God, so that there is a suitability and coincidentie betweene the Law of God and the heart of such a man. He will receive the Word in the *puritie* thereof, and not give way to those humane inventions which adulterate it, to that spirituall treason of wit and fancie, or of heresie and contradiction, which would stampe the private image and superscription of a man upon Gods owne coine, and torture the Scriptures to confesse that which was never in them. He will receive the Word in the *Power, Majestie, and Authoritie* thereof, suffering it like thunder to discover the Forrest, and to drive out all those secret corruptions which shelter'd themselves in the corners, or deceit of his heart. He will delight to have his imaginations humbled, and his fleshly reasonings non-plus'd, and all his thoughts subdued unto the obedience of Christ. He will receive the Word as a *wholsome potion*, to that very end that it may search his secret places, and purge out those tough and incorporated lusts which hitherto hee had not prevailed against. He will take heed of hardning his heart that hee may not heare, of rejecting the counsell of God against himselfe, of thrusting away the word from him, of setting up a resolved will of his owne against the call of Christ, as of most dangerous down-falls to the soule. Lastly, hee will receive the word in the *spirituallnesse* thereof, subscribing to the closest precepts of the Law, suffering it to cleanse his heart unto the bottome, he will let the consideration of Gods command preponderate and over-rule all respects of feare, love, profit, pleasure, credit, compliencie, or any other charme to disobedience; he will bee contented to bee led in the narrowest way, to have his se-
creteft

Evidences of our true love to Christ.

73

VERSE I.

cretest corruption reveal'd and remov'd, to expose his conscience with patience under the saving, though severest blowes of this spirituall sword. In one word hee will deny the pride of his owne wit, and if it be the evident truth of God which is taught him, though it come naked, and without any dressings, or contributions of humane fancie, he will distinguish betweene the author and the instrument, betweene the treasure and the vessel in which it comes, and from any hand receive it with such awefull submission of heart, as becommeth Gods owne word. Thirdly, the soule in this case will most dearly love every member of Christ. For these two, the love of Christ, and of his members, doe infallibly accompany one another. For though there bee a farre higher proportion of love due unto Christ than unto men, yet our love to our brethren is *quoad nos* and *a posteriori*, not onely the evidence, but even the measure of our love to Christ. *He that loveth not his brother whom hee hath seene, how can he love God whom he hath not seene?* (saith the Apostle) 1 Joh. 4. 20. hee that hath not love enough in him for a man like himselfe, how can hee love God whose goodnesse being above our knowledge requireth a transcendencie in our love? This then is a sure rule; He that loveth not a member of Christ, loveth not him, and hee who groweth in his love to his brethren, groweth likewise in his love to Christ. For as there is the same proportion of one to five as there is of twenty to an hundred, though the numbers be farre lesse: as the motion of the shadow upon the diall, answereth exactly to that proportion of motion and distance which the Sunne hath in the firmament, though the Sunne goeth many millions of miles when the shadow, it may bee, moveth not the breadth of a hand: so though our love to Christ ought to be a farre more abundant love, than to any of his members, yet certaine it is that the measure of our progresse in brotherly love is punctually answerable

V E R S E S.

swerable to the growth of our love to Christ.

Secondly, a true grounded *love unto Christ* will shew it selfe in the *right manner* or conditions of it. Which are principally these three: First, it must bee an *incorrupt and sincere love*. *Grace bee upon all those that love the Lord Iesus in sincerity, in incorruption or sincerity*, saith the Apostle, *Ephes. 6. 24.* that is, on those who love not in word or outward profession and stipulation onely, but in deed and truth, or in the permanent constitution of the inner man; which moveth them to love him alwayes and in all things, to hate every false way, to set the whole heart, the studie, purpose, prayer and all the activity of our Spirits against every corruption in us which standeth at enmity with him and his Kingdome. Secondly, it must be a *principall and superlative love*, grounded upon the experience of the soule in it selfe, that there is ten thousand times more beautie and amiableness in him, than in all the honours, pleasures, profits, satisfactions which the world can afford; that in comparison or competition with him, the dearest things of this world, the parents of our body, the children of our flesh, the wife of our bosome, the blood in our veines, the heart in our brest, must not onely be laid downe and lost as *sacrifices*, but hated as *snarres* when they draw us away from him. Thirdly, it must bee an *unshared and uncommunicable love*, without any corrivalls; for Christ as he is unto us all in all, so he requireth to have all our affections fixed upon him: As the rising of the Sunne drowneth all those innumerable Starres which did shine in the firmament before; so must the beauty of this Sunne of righteousness blot out, or else gather together unto it selfe all those scattered affections of the soule, which were before cast away upon meaner objects.

Lastly, true love unto Christ will shew it selfe in the naturall and genuine effects of so strong and spirituall a grace: some of the principall I before named, unto which we

Evidences of our true love to Christ.

75

VERSE I.

we may adde, First, *An universall, cheerefull, and constant obedience* to his holy Commandements: *If a man, saith Christ, love me, hee will keepe my Commandements; and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him, Ioh. 14. 24.* There is a twofold love, a love which descends, and a love which ascends, a love of Bounty and beneficence, and a love of Dutie and service: so then, as a father doth then only in truth love his childe, when with all care he provideth for his present education and future subsistence; so a childe doth then truly love his father, when with all reverence and submission of heart hee studieth to please and to doe him service. And this love if it be free and ingenuous, by how much the more not only pure and equall in it selfe, but also profitable unto him the commandement is, by so much the more carefully will it endeavour the observation thereof. And therefore since the soule of a Christian knowes that as God himselfe is good, and doth good, so his Law (which is nothing but a ray and glimpse of his owne holinesse) is likewise good in it selfe, and doth good unto those which walke uprightly, it is hereby enflamed to a more sweet and serious obedience thereunto, in the keeping whereof, there is for the present so much sweetnesse, and in the future so great a reward: *Thy Word, saith the Psalmist, is very pure, therefore thy servant loveth it.*

Secondly, *A free, willing, and cheerefull suffering for him and his Gospell.* Unto you, saith the Apostle, it is given in the behalfe of Christ, not onely to beleieve on him, but also to suffer for his sake, *Phil. 1. 29.* We see how farre a humane love either of their country, or of vaine-glory hath transported some heathen men to the devoting and casting away their owne lives: How much more should a spirituall love of Christ put courage into us to beare all things, and to endure all things as the Apostle speakes, *1 Cor. 13. 7.* for him, who bare our sinnes, and our

*Psalm. 119. 68.
Psalm. 119. 7, 11.
Mic. 3. 7.
Isai. 45. 19.
Psalm. 119. 140.*

*Tertull. Apolog.
cap. ult.*

VERSE 1.

α' Ο γ' ἡλικία καὶ ἡ
ἐν δουλείᾳ αὐτοῦ,
καὶ ἐστὶ μὴ ἡλικία
καὶ πῶς δυνάμει
βλασφημίας ἢ
βασίλειά μου ἢ σω-
σῶτά μου. Euseb.
hist. Eccl. l. 4. c. 14

b nδρ, καὶ σωθῆ-
ναι τὸ σῶσαι-
σθαι, ἀνθρώποι, δι-
ακρίσεις, κατασκευαί
ἐστίν, οὐκ ἀπο-
μολῶν, ἀλλ' ἀπομολῶν
τῷ σῶματι. καὶ ἡ
λαοὶ τῷ διακρί-
σθαι καὶ ἡλικίᾳ,
μύστον ἵνα λαὸς
χρῆται. Ignat. ep. ad Rom.
ζ' καὶ γ' καὶ α' ὁμοίως,
ἐστὶ τῷ διακρίσθαι
κατασκευαί. ὁμοίως
λεγοί. Euseb. p. 7.
C. Ibid.
c Psal. 69. 1, 2.
Esa. 124. 4, 5.
Esa. 8. 7.

our stripes, and our burdens for us, which were heavier than all the world could lay on? And this was the inducement of that holy martyr ^a Polycarp, to die for Christ, notwithstanding all the persuasions of the persecutors, who by his apostacie would faine have cast the more dishonour upon Christian Religion, and as it were by sparing him, have the more cunningly persecuted that; *This eightie six yeares, saith he, I have served him, and bee never in all that time hath done me any hurt, why should I be so ungratesfull as not to trust him in death, who in so long a life hath never forsaken me? I am perswaded,* saith the Apostle, *that* ^b *neither death, nor life, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Iesus our Lord, Rom. 8. 38; 39.* Nothing able to turne away his love from us, and therefore nothing shall bee able to quench our love to him. *Many waters,* that is, by the usuall expression of the holy Scriptures, many afflictions, persecutions, temptations, cannot quench love, neither can the floods drowne it, Cant. 8. 7.

Thirdly, *A zeale and jealous contention for the glorie, truth, worship and wayes of Christ:* wicked men pretend much love to Christ, but they indeed serve onely their owne turnes; as Ivie, which claspes an Oake very close, but only to sucke out sap for its owne leaves and berries. But a true love is full of care to advance the glory of Christs Kingdome, and to promote his truth and worship, feares lest Satan and his Instruments should by any meanes corrupt his truth, or violate his Church, as the Apostle to the Galatians professeth, the feare which his love wrought in him towards them; *I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vaine, Gal. 4. 11, 16.* So wee finde what contention, and disputation, and strife of spirit the Apostles and others in their ministe-
ric used, when Christ and his holy Gospell was any
way

The Stability of Christs Kingdome.

77

VERSE 1.

way either injured by false brethren, or kept out by the idolatry of the places to which they came, *Act. 15. 2. Act. 17. 16. Act. 18. 25. & 19. 8. Gal. 2. 4, 5. Iude v. 2.*

Lastly, *Alonging after his presence, a love of his appearing, a desire to bee with him which is best of all, a seeking after him, and grieving for him, when for any while he departs from the soule, a waiting for his Salvation, a delight in his Communion, and in his Spirituall refreshments, a communing with him in his secret chamber, in his houses of wine, and in his galleries of love. By which lovely expressions the Wise-man hath described the fellowship with the Church desireth to have with Christ, and that abiding and supping of Christ with his Church, feasting the soule with the manifestations of himselfe and his Graces unto it, Psal. 42. 3. & 105. 4. 2 Cor. 5. 2. 2 Tim. 4. 8. Phil. 1. 23. Cant. 3. 1, 2. Cant. 5. 6, 8. Gen. 49. 18. Psal. 119. 131. Cant. 1. 4. & 2. 4. Cant. 7. 5. Ion. 1. 4. 21, 23. Revel. 3. 20.*

Having thus by occasion of the enemies of Christ, spoken something of the true and false Love which is in the world towards him: we now proceed to the particulars mentioned before. And the first is the *terme of Duration*, or measure of time in the Text; *Untill*. It hath a *double relation* in the words, unto Christs Kingdome, and unto his *Enemies*. As it looks to the Kingdome of Christ, it denotes both the *Continuance* and the *Limitation* of his Kingdome. The continuance of it in his owne Person, for it is there fixed and intransient. Hee is a King without successours, as being subject to no mortality, nor defect which might bee by them supplied. The Kingdome of Christ (as I observed) is either *Naturall*, as he is God, or *Dispensatory*, and by *Donation* from the Father, as he is Mediator, and not onely of the former, but even of this likewise the Scripture affirms that it is *Eternall*. It is a Kingdome set up by the God of Heaven, and yet it shall never be destroyed, but *stand for ever*, *Dan. 2. 44.* I have set

VERSE I.

set my King upon my Holy hill of Sion, that notes the unction and donation, *Psalms. 2. 6.* and in mount Sion where God hath set him, he shall raigne from henceforth even for ever, *Mic. 4. 7.* Though hee be a Childe borne, and a Sonne given, yet *of the encrease of his Government and Peace there shall be no end*; upon the Throne of David, and upon his Kingdome, to order it, and to establish it with judgement and justice, from henceforth for ever and ever, *Esai. 9. 6, 7.* unto the Sonne hee saith, *Thy Throne, O God, is for ever and ever, Heb. 1. 8.* And here wee must distinguish betweene the *substance* of Christs Kingdome, and the *forme or manner of administering* and dispensing it. In the former respect it is *absolutely Eternall*, Christ shall bee a Head and rewarder of his members, an everlasting Father, a Prince of peace unto them for ever. In the latter respect it shall bee *Eternall according to some acception*, that is, it shall remaine untill the consummation of all things, as long as there is a Church of God upon the Earth, there shall bee no new way of Spirituall and Essentiall government prescribed unto it, no other Vicar, Successour, Monarch, or Viurper upon his Office by God allowed, but he onely by his Spirit in the dispensation of his Ordinances shall order and overrule the consciences of his people, and subdue their enemies. Yet hee shall so reigne till then, as that hee shall then cease to rule in *such manner* as now hee doth, when the end comes *Hee shall deliver up the Kingdome to God the Father, and when all things shall be subdued unto him, he also himselfe shall be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may bee all in all, 1 Cor. 15. 24, 28.* Hee shall so returne it unto God, as God did conferre, and as it were, appropriate it unto him, namely, in regard of judiciary dispensation and execution, in which respect our Saviour saith, that as touching the present administration of the Church, *The Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgement, and hath given authority*

The Stability of Christs Kingdome.

79

VERSE 1.

ity to execute it unto his Sonne, Iohn 4. 22, 27. Now Christ governeth his Church by the Ministry of his Word and Sacraments, and by the effusion of his Spirit in measure and degrees upon his members; by his mightie, though secret, power hee fighteth with his enemies, and so shall doe till the resurrection of the dead, when death, the last enemy shall bee overcome, and then in these respects his Kingdome shall cease, for hee shall no more exercise the Offices of a Mediator in compassionating, defending, interceding for his Church; but yet he shall still sit and reigne for ever as God, coequall with his Father, and shall ever bee the Head of the Church his Body. Thus we see though Christs Kingdome in regard of the *manner of dispensation*, and present execution thereof, it bee *limited* by the consummation of all things; yet in it selfe it is a Kingdome which hath neither *within* the seeds of mortality, nor *without* the danger of a concussion, but in the substance is immortall, though in regard of the Commission and Power which Christ had as Mediator to administer it alone by himselfe, and by the fullnesse of his Spirit, it bee at last voluntarily resigned into the hands of the Father, and Christ as a part of that great Church become subject to the Father, that God may be all in all.

Now the grounds of the *Constancy of Christs government* over his Church, and by consequence of the Church it selfe which is his Kingdome, are amongst others these: First, the *Decree and promise of God* sealed by an Oath, which made it an adamantine and unbended purpose, which the Lord would never repent of nor reverse. All Gods Counsels are immutable (though he may alter his workes, yet hee doth never change his Will,) but when he sealeth his Decree with an Oath, that makes there immutability past question or suspition. In that case it is impossible for God to change, because it is impossible for God to lye, or deny himselfe, *Hebr. 6. 18.* Now upon such

Iam. 1. 17.
Non mutat voluntatem, sed vult mutationem, Aqu. part. 1. qu. 19. art. 7.
Aug. Confess. lib. 12. c. 15. de civ. Dei, lib. 14. c. 11.
lib. 22. cap. 1. de Trin. lib. 5. c. 16.

VERSE 1.

such a Decree is the Kingdome of Heaven established. *Once have I sworne by my Holinesse that I will not lie unto David*, saith the Lord, *Psal. 89. 35.* *Once*, that notes the constancy and fixednesse of Gods promise; *By my Holinesse*, that notes the inviolablenesse of his Promise; as if he should have said, Let me no longer bee esteemed an Holy God than I keepe immutably that Covenant which I have sworne unto *David* in my truth.

Secondly, the *free gift of God* unto his Sonne Christ, whereby hee committed all power and judgement unto him. And Power is a strong argument to prove the Stability of a Kingdome, especially if it bee on either side supported with wisdom and righteousness, as the Power of Christ is. And therefore from his Power hee argues for the perpetuity of his Church to the end of the World, *All power is given mee in Heaven and Earth; Goe yee therefore and preach the Gospell to all Nations; and loe I am with you alwaies to the end of the World, Matthew 28. 18, 20.* And the argument is very strong and emphaticall, for though kingdomes of great power have beene and may bee subdued, yet the reason is, because much power hath still remained in the adverse side; or if they have beene too vast for any smaller people to roote out, yet having not either wisdom enough to actuate so huge a frame, or righteousness to prevent or purge out those vitious humours of emulation, sedition, luxury, injustice, violence and impiety, which like strong diseases in a body, are in states the preparations and seminaries of mortalitie; they have sunke under their owne weight, and beene inwardly corrupted by their owne vices. But now first, the Power of Christ in his Church is universall, there is in him *All Power* and no weakness, no Power without him or against him; and therefore no wonder if from a fulnesse of Power in him, and an emptinesse in his enemies, the argument of continuance in his Kingdome doth infallibly follow: for
what

*Vid. Arist. Polit.
lib. 5.*

*In se magna vult,
letis hunc
numinarebus
Crescendi posue-
re modum.
Lucan.*

The Stability of Christs Kingdome.

81

VERSE I.

what man, if hee were furnished with all sufficiencie, would suffer himselfe to bee mutilated and dismembred, as Christ should, if any thing should prevaile against the Church, which is his fulnesse. Againe, this power of Christ is supported with *wisedome*, it can never miscarry for any inward defect, for the wisedome is proportionable to the power; this, *All power*, and that, *All the treasures of wisedome*. Power able by weaknesse to confound the things which are mighty, and wisedome able by foolishnesse to bring to nought the understanding of the prudent. And both these are upheld by righteousness, which is indeed the very soule and sinewes of a kingdome, upon which the Thrones of Princes are established, and which the Apostle makes the ground of the perpetuities of Christs Kingdome, *Thy Throne, O God, is for ever and ever, a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of thy kingdome, Hebr. 1.8.*

Thirdly, the quality of Christs Kingdome is to bee a *Growing kingdome*, though the originals thereof bee but like a graine of mustard-seed, or like *Eliabs* cloud to a humane view despicable, and almost below the probabilities of subsistence, the object rather of derision than of terrour to the world; yet at last it groweth into a widenesse, which maketh it as catholike as the world. And therefore that which the Prophet *David* speakes of the Sunne, the Apostle applies to the Gospell, *Rom. 10. 18.* to note that the Circle of the Gospell is like that of the Sunne, universall to the whole world. It is such a kingdome as groweth into other kingdomes, and eats them out. The little stone in *Nebuchadnezzars* vision (which was the Kingdome of Christ, for so Jerusalem is called a stone, *Zech. 12. 3.*) brake in peeces the great Monarchies of the earth, and grew up into a great mountaine which filled the world, *Dan. 2. 34, 35.* for the kingdomes of the earth must become the kingdomes of the Lord, and of his Christ, *Revel. 11. 15.* Therefore

G

the

VERSE I.

the Prophets expresse Christ and his Kingdome by the name of a *Branch*, which groweth up for a standard and ensigne of the people, *Esai.* 11. 1. 10. *Zech.* 3. 8. A branch which growes, but never withers. It hath no principles of death in it selfe; and though it be for a while subject to the assaults of adversaries, and forren violence, yet that serves onely to try it, and to settle it, but not to weaken or overturne it. The gates of Hell, all the powers policies and lawes of darknesse, shall never prevaile against the Church of Christ: hee hath bruized, and judged, and trodden downe Satan under our feete. He hath overcome the world; he hath subdued iniquity, hee hath turned persecutions into seminaries and resurrections of the Church; hee hath turned afflictions into matters of glory and of rejoycing; so that in all the violence which the Church can suffer, it doth more than conquer, because it conquers not by repelling but by suffering.

And this shewes the sacrilege and sawcinesse of the Church of Rome, which in this point doth with a double impiety therefore pervert the Scriptures, that it may derogate from the honour of Christ and his Kingdome: And those things which are spoken of the infallibility, authority, and fulnesse of Power which Christ hath in his body, of the stability, constancy, and universality of his Church upon Earth, doth arrogate onely to the Pope and his See at Rome. As the Donatists in Saint *Augustines* time from that place of the Spouse in the *Canticles*, Tell mee, O thou whom my soule loveth, where thou feedest, where thou makest thy flocke to rest in *Meridie*, excluded all the world from being a Church, save onely a corner of Africa, which was at that time the nest of those hornets: So because Christ sayes, his Church is *builde upon a rocke, and the gates of hell shall not prevaile against it*; therefore the Romanists from hence conclude all these priviledges to belong to them, and ex-
clude

*Aug. Epist. 43.
& tom. 7. de uni-
tat. Ecclesie. 16.*

The Stability of Christs Kingdome.

83

clude all the famous Churches of the world besides from having any communion with Christ the Head. That scornfull expostulation which *Harding* makes with that renowned and incomparable Bishop (under whose hand hee was no more able to stand, than a whelpe under the paw of a Lion) shall wee now change the song of *Micheas* the Prophet, Out of Sion shall come the Law, and the Word of the Lord from Ierusalem; and sing a new song, out of Wittenberg is come the Gospell, and the Word of the Lord from Zurich and Geneva? may most truely and pertinently bee retorted upon himselfe and his faction, who boldly curse and exclude all those Christian Churches from the Body of Christ, and the hope of salvation, who will not receive lawes from Rome, nor esteeme the Cathedrall determinations of that Bishop (though haply in himselfe an impure, diabolicall and intollerable beast, as by their owne confessions many of them have beene) to bee notwithstanding the infallible Edicts of the Spirit of God, and as undoubtedly the Word of Christ, as if *S. Peter* or *Saint Paul* had spoken it. An arrogancy than which there is scarce any more expresse and characteristick note to discern Antichrist by. It is true that Christs regall power doth alwaies shew forth it selfe in upholding his Catholike Church, and in revealing unto it out of his sacred Word such necessary truths as are absolutely requisite unto its being and salvation; but to binde this power of Christ to one man, and to one See, (as if like the Pope hee were infallible onely in *S. Peters* chaire) is the meere figment of pride and ambition without any ground at all, raised out of a heap & aggregation of monstrous presumptions, of humane, and some most disputable, others most false conceits, of which though there bee not the least *vestigia* in sacred Scriptures, yet must they bee all first rested in for indubitate principles, and laid for sure foundations before the first stone of Papall authoritie

VERSE I.

B. *Jewells* Defence of the Apologie, part. 4. page 360.
Idem d. Romano pontifice dividi, quod ab universa Ecclesia separari, Baron. 10. 2. A. 254. S. 100.
b Crantzius in Metropol. l. 5. c. 1 in Bonifacio 6. Stephano 6. Theodoro Christophoro, Joanne 12. Sylvestro 2. Sigon. de Regno Italia lib. 7. Anno 964. Guicciard. de Alex. 6. lib. Hist. 1. pag. 3. 4. Pet. Bemus de eodem in Hist. Venet. lib. 6. Platina in Christophoro 1. Ioan. 13. Sylvestro 2. &c.
Vid. Morneum de Ecclesia, ca. 9. Reynol. Confer. c. 7. divis. 1. & 5. B. Carletuo of Iurisdic. cap. 7. B. Usher de statu Ecclesie, cap. 3. 4, 5.

VERSE I.

c Bellarm. lib. I.
de Pontif. Rom.
cap. 9.

can bee raised. As first, that the externall and visible regiment of the whole Church is Monarchicall, and that there must bee a predominant Mistresse Church set over all the rest, to which in all points they must have recourse, and to whose decisions they must conforme without any hesitancy, or suspicion at all; whereas the Apostle tels us that the unity of the Church is gathered by many Pastors and Teachers, *Eph. 4. 11, 12, 13.* for as if severall needles bee touched by so many severall Load-stones (all which have the selfe-same specificall vertue in them) they doe all as exactly bend to one and the same point of Heaven, as if they had beene thereunto qualified by but one: so in as much as Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, Teachers, come all instructed with one and the same Spirituall truth and power towards the Church, therefore all the faithfull, who are any where by these multitudes of Preachers taught what the truth is in Jesus, doe all by the secret sway and conduct of the same Spirit of Grace (whose peculiar Office it is to guide his Church in all necessary and saving truth) with an admirable consent of heart, and unity of judgement incline to the same end, and walke in the same way, acknowledging no Monarch over their consciences but CHRIST, nor any other Ministeriall application of his Regall power in the Catholike Church, but onely by severall Bishops and Pastors, who in their severall particular compasses are endowed with as plenary and ample Ministeriall power, as the Pope and his Consistory within the See of Rome.

Secondly, that *Peter* was Prince and Monarch, Rocke and Head in this Vniversall Church, and that hee alone was *custos clavium*, and all this in the vertue of Christs promise and commission granted unto him. Thou art *Peter*, and upon this Rock will I build my Church, feed my sheepe, feed my lambs, unto thee will I give the keyes of the kingdome of Heaven: In which respect *Baronius* calleth

Baron. An. 33.
sect. 17.
Bellarm. de Pontif.
Rom. lib. I. c. 10.

lech him * *Lapidem primum*, the chiefe stone; and againe, though Christ, saith he, be the Author and moderator of his Church, yet the Princesdome and Monarchie he hath confer'd upon *Peter*; and therefore as no man can lay any other foundation than that which is layd, namely, Christ, so no man can lay any other than that which Christ hath layd, namely, *Peter*. And it is wonderfull to consider what twigs and rushes they catch at to hold up this their monarchy. ^b Because *Peter* did preach first, therefore he is Monarch of the Church. By which reason his Monarchie is long since expir'd, for his pretended successors scarce preach at all. And yet if that may be drawne to any argument, it proves only that hee was *Lapis primus*, the first in order and in forwardnesse to preach Christ (as it became him who had three times denied him) but not *Lapis primarius*, the chiefe in dignity, and jurisdiction over the rest: and why should it not be as good an argument to say that *Iames* had the dignity of precedence before *Peter*, because *Paul* first names *Iames*, and then *Cephas*, and that in a place where he particularly singles them out as pillars and principall men in the Church, as to say that *Peter* hath jurisdiction over *Iames* and the rest, because in their Synods and assemblies hee was the chiefe speaker? ^c Because *Peter* cured the lame man that sate at the gate of the Temple, therefore hee is universall Monarch. By which reason likewise *Paul* who in the selfe same manner cured a creeple at Lystra, should fall into competition with *Peter* for his share in the Monarchie. But the people there were not so acute disputants as these of Rome, for though they saw what *Paul* had done, yet they concluded the dignity and precedence for *Barnabas*, they called him *Iupiter*, and *Paul Mercury*. Againe, because *Peter* ^d pronounced sentence upon *Ananias*, therefore he is Monarch of the universall Church: and why *Paul* should not here likewise come in for his share, I know not, for hee

VERSE I.

* *Quod non audeat Boetius. Præter Christum (inquit) non potest aliud fundamentum poni, quod sit item primum. De sign. Ecclesie, lib. 1. c. 1. ob. 5.*

^a *Sicut (quod certum est) nemo potest aliud ponere fundamentum, præter id quod positum est, quod est Christus; ita etiam nec aliud quispiam ponet, quam quod posuit Christus, neque convellat quod ipse firmavit, dicens, Tu es Petrus, &c. Baron. An. 33. §. 20. b Baron. An. 34. §. 247. Boetius de signis Ecclesie, lib. 18. c. 1. 3. Bellarm. de Roman. Pontifice, lib. 1. cap. 17. 28. c Baron. An. 34. §. 264.*

^d Baron. Ibid. §. 269.

VERSE I.

Baron. *Ibid.*
S. 274.

Ibid. S. 275.
An. 35. S. 25.

also passed judgement upon *Elimas* the forcerer (and we no where finde that hee derived his authority, or had any commission from *Peter* to doe so.) And surely if by the same Apostolicall and infallible Spirit of Christ, (which they both immediatly received from Christ himselfe) Saint *Paul* did adjudge *Elimas* to blindnesse, by the which Saint *Peter* adjudged *Ananias* to death, I see not how any logick from a parity of actions can conclude a disparity of persons, except they will say that it is more monarchicall to adjudge one to death, than another to blindnesse. Againe, because *Peter* healed the sicke by his shaddow, therefore *Peter* is Monarch of the universall Church: and even in this point *Paul* likewise may hold on his competition, for why is not the argument as good that *Paul* is Monarch of the Church, because the handkerchiefs and aprons which came from his body did cure diseases, and cast out Divels, as that *Peter* is therefore Monarch, because by the overshaddowing of his body the sicke were healed? But the truth is there is no more substance in this argument for *Peters* principality, than there is for their supposed miraculous vertue of images and relicks of Saints, because the shaddow, (which was the image of *Peter*) did heale the sicke, for that also is the Cardinals great argument. Againe, because *Peter* was sent to *Samarina* to confirme them in the faith, and to lay hands on them that they might receive the holy Ghost, and to confound *Simon Magus* the forcerer, therefore he is primate of the Catholike Church, and hath Monarchicall jurisdiction. And yet the Pope is by this time something more Monarchicall than *Peter*, for he would thinke scorne to bee sent as an Ambassadour of the Churches from Rome to the Indians, amongst whom his Gospell hath been in these latter ages preached; and doublelesse they would bee something more confirmed than they are by the soveraigne vertue of his prayers and presence. But alas, what argument is it of Monarchie

to

to be sent by others in a message, and that too not without an associate, who joyned with him in the confirmation of that Church? and if the confuting, or cursing of *Simon Magus* were an argument of primacy, why should not Saint *Pauls* cursing of *Elimas*, and *Hymeneus*, and *Alexander*, and Saint *Iohns* of *Cerintus* bee arguments of their primacie likewise? Again, because *Paul* went up to *Ierusalem* to see *Peter*, therefore *Peter* was Monarch of the Catholike Church. And why should not by this argument *Elizabeth* bee concluded a greater woman than the Virgin *Marie*, and indeed the Lady of all woman, because the blessed Virgin went up into the hill countrie of *Judea*, and entred into the house of *Zacharias* and saluted *Elizabeth*? but wee finde no argument but of equality in the Text, for hee went to see him as a brother, but not to doe homage to him, or receive authority from him as a Monarch, else why went he not up immediately to *Ierusalem*, but staid three yeeres, and preached the Gospell by the commission he had received from Christ alone? and how came Saint *Paul* to bee so free, or Saint *Peter* to bee so much more humble than any of his pretended successors as the one to give with boldnesse, the other with silence and meeknesse to receive so sore a reproofe in the face of all the brethren as many yeeres after that did passe betweene them. Certainly Saint *Paul* in so long time could not but learne to know his distance, and in what maner to speak to his Monarch and Primate. By these particulars wee see upon what sandy foundation this vast and formidable Babel of *Papall* usurpation and power over the Catholike Church is erected (which yet upon the matter is the sole principle of Romish religion, upon which all their faith, worship and obedience dependeth.) But we say that as *Peter* was a foundation, so were all the other Apostles likewise, *Eph. 2. 20. Revel. 21. 14.* and that upon the same reason. For the Apostles were not foundations of

Baron. An. 39.
§. 6.

VERSE I.

the Church by any dignity of their persons, as Christ the chiefe corner stone was, but by the vertue of their *Apostolicall* office, which was *universall jurisdiction* in governing the people of Christ; *universall commission* in instructing them, and a Spirit of *infallibility* in revealing Gods will unto them throughout the whole world. And therefore as *Peter* had the keyes of the Kingdome of heaven to remit or retaine the sinnes of men; so likewise had the other Apostles, *Ioh. 20. 23*. That Christs charge to *Peter*, *Feed my sheepe, feed my lambes*, is no other in substance than his commission to them all, *Goe teach all nations baptizing them in the name of the Father, the Sonne, and the Holy Ghost*. And that the particular directing of it unto *Peter*, and praying for him, was with respect unto his particular onely by way of comfort and confirmation, as being then a weake member, not by way of dignity, or deputation of Christs owne regall power to him in the visible Church. For all the offices of Christ are intransient and uncommunicable to any other, in as much as the administration and execution of them dependeth upon the dignity of his person, and upon the fulnesse of his Spirit, which no mortall man or immortall Angell is capable of. But all this is not enough to bee granted them for the raising their authority. But then thirdly, we must grant them too that *Peter*, thus qualified, was Bishop of Rome, for prooofe whereof they have no Testimonie of Holy Scriptures, but onely humane tradition, *Cui impossibile non est subesse falsum*. So that in this which is one of the maine principles they build upon, their faith cannot bee resolved into the Word of God, and therefore is no divine faith. Fourthly, that he did appoint that Church to bee the Monarchicall and fundamentall See to all other Churches; for hee was Bishop as well of Antioch as of Rome, by their owne confession. And I wonder why some of his personall vertue should not cleave to his chaire at Antioch, but

*Bellarmin. de Rom.
Pontif. li. 2. c. 12.
Baron. An. 39.
S. 16. 16.*

but all passe over with him to another place. Fifthly, that hee did transmit all his prerogatives to his successours in that chaire. By which assertion they may as well prove that they all (though some of them have been forcerers, others murderers, others blasphemous Atheists) were inheritors of Saint *Peters* love to Christ, for from thence our Saviour inferres, feede my sheepe, to note that none feede his sheeps, but those that love his Person. Lastly, that that long succession from Saint *Peter* untill now hath ever since beene legall, and uninterrupted. Or else the Church must sometimes have beene a monster without a head. Wee grant that some of the Ancients argue from succession in the Church; but it was while it was yet pure, and while they could by reason of the litle space of time betweene them and the Apostles, with evidence resolve their doctrine through every *medium* into the preaching of the Apostles themselves. But even in their personall succession who knoweth not what *Simonies* and *Sorceries* have raised divers of them unto that degree? And who is able to resolve, that every Episcopall ordination of every Bishop there hath been valid, since thereunto is requisite both the intention and Orders of that Bishop that ordained him. These and a world of the like uncertainties must the faith of these men depend upon, who dare arrogate to themselves the prerogatives of Christ, and of his Catholike Kingdome. But I have beene too long upon this argument.

Againe, this point of the stability of Christs Kingdome is a ground of strong confidence and comfort to the whole Church of Christ, against all the violence of any outward enemies wherewith sometimes they may seeme to bee swallowed up. Though they associate themselves, and gird to the battle, though they take counsell and make decrees against the Lords anointed and against his spouse, yet it shall all come to nought, and be broken in pieces, all the smoake of hell shall not bee able to extinguish,

*Tertull. de præscript. ca. 19. 21.
Aug. Epist. 165.
De diffidio
Donatist.*

VERSE I.

tinguish, nor all the power of hell to overturn the Church of God, and the reason is, *Immanuel*, God is with us, *Eesai. 8. 9, 10.* That *anointing* which the Church hath received shall deliver it at last from the yoke of the enemy, *Eesai. 10. 27.* Though it seeme for the time in as desperate a condition as a dry stick in the fire, or a dead body in the grave, yet this is not indeed a sepulture, but a semination. Though it seeme to be cast away for a season, yet in due time it will come up and flourish againe, *Zech. 3. 2. Ezek. 37. 11.* And this is the assurance that the Church may have, that the Lord can save and deliver a *second time*, *Eesai. 11. 11.* that hee is the *same God yesterday, and to day, and for ever*; and therefore such a God as the Church hath found him heretofore, such a God it shall finde him to day, and for ever, in the returns and manifestations of his mercy. Which discovers the folly, and foretels the confusion of the enemies of Christs Kingdome, they conceive mischief, but they bring forth nothing but vanity, *Ioh. 15. 35.* They conceive chaffe, & bring forth stubble, *Eesai. 33. 11.* They imagine nothing but a vaine thing, their malice is but like the fighting of briars and thornes with the fire, *Eesai. 27. 4. Nahum 1. 10.* like the dashing of waves against a rocke, like a mad man shooting arrowes against the Sunne, which at last returne upon his owne head; like the puffing of the fanne against the corne, which driveth away nothing but the chaffe, like the beating of the winde against the saile, or the foming and raging of the water against a mill, which by the wisdom of the artificers are all ordered unto usefull and excellent ends. And surely when the Lord shall have accomplished his worke on mount Sion, when he shall by the adversary, as by a fanne have purged away the iniquity of *Iacob*, and taken away his sinne, hee will then returne in peace and beautie unto his people againe. Looke on the preparation of some large building, in one place

The Intranquillity of the Church.

91

VERSE 1.

place you shall see heapes of lime, and morter, in another piles of timber, every where rude, and indigested materials, and a tumultuary noise of axes and hammers, but at length the artificer sets every thing in order, and raiseth up a beautifull structure: such is the proceeding of the Lord in the afflictions and vastations of his Church, though the enemy intend to ruine it, yet God intends onely to repaire it. Thus farre as *Donec* respects Christs Kingdome in it selfe.

Now as it respecteth the enemies of Christ, it notes, First, *The present inconsummateness of the victories*, and by consequence the *intranquillity of Christs Kingdome* here upon the earth. All his enemies are not yet under his feet; Satan is not yet shut up, the rage of hell, the persecutions and policies of wicked men, the present immunity of desperate sinners, are evidences that Christ hath yet much worke to doe in his Church. But doth not the Apostle say; that *all things are put under his feet?* *Eph. 1. 22.* It is true *quoad iudiciariam potestatem*, but not *quoad exercitium potestatis*. He shall not receive any new power to subdue his enemies, which hee hath not already; but yet he can execute that power when and how he will. And he is pleased to suffer his enemies in this respite of their reprivall, to rage, and revile, and persecute him in his members. Every wicked man is *condemned already*, and hath the wrath of God *abiding upon him*, *Ioh. 3. 18. 36.* Onely Christ doth suspend the execution of them for many weightie reasons. As first, to shew his patience and long suffering towards the vessels of wrath, for he ever comes first with an offer of peace, before hee drawes the sword, *Rom. 2. 4. Rom. 9. 22. Dent. 20. 10, 13. Luk. 10. 5, 11.* Secondly, to magnifie the power of his protection and providence over the Church in the midst of their enemies, for if the Lord were not on the Churches side when man riseth up against it, if hee did not rebuke the proud waves, and set them

VERSE I.

* Ier. 5. 22.

*Agyptus mari
concauitate de-
pressor, & tamen
praecepto creato-
ris tanquam
compedibus coer-
cetur mare Ru-
brum ne in A-
gyptum irrum-
pat. Basil. Mag.
Hexamer.
Homil. 4.*

them their bounds how farre they should goe, there could bee no more power in the Church to withstand them, than in a leuell * of sand to resist an inundation of the Sea, *Psalm. 124. 1, 5.* Thirdly, to reserve wicked men unto the great day of his appearing, and of the declaration of his power and righteousness, wherein all the world shall bee the spectators and witnesses of his just and victorious proceedings against them, *Acts. 17. 31.* Fourthly, to shew forth his mighty power in destroying the wicked all together. They who here carried themselves with that insolence as if every particular man meant to have plucked Christ out of his Throne, shall there *all together* bee brought forth before him. That as the righteous are reserved to have their full Salvation *together*, *1 Thess. 4. 17.* so the wicked may bee bound up in bundles, and destroyed *together*, *Psalm. 37. 38. Esai. 1. 28.* Fifthly, to fill up the measure, and to ripen the finnes of wicked men: for the Lord puts the wickednesse of men into an Epha, and when they have filled up their measure, he then scaleth them up unto the execution of his righteous judgements. And hence it is that the Scripture calleth wicked men *Vessels fitted for destruction*, for they first fill themselves with sin, and then God filleth them up with wrath and shame. Sixthly, to fill up the number of his Elect, for hee hath many sheepe which are not yet within his fold, and they many of them the posterity of wicked men, *Iob. 10. 16.* Seventhly, to fill up the measure of his owne sufferings in his members, that they may follow him unto his Kingdome through the same way of afflictions as hee went before them, *Col. 1. 24. Revel. 6. 11.* Eighthly, to exercise the faith of his Church, to drive the faithfull with the Prophet *Habakuk* into their watch-tower, and with *David* into the Sanctuary of the Lord, there to wait upon him in the way of his judgements, to consider that the end of the righteous man is peace, and that the pride and prosperitie of the

Gods Patience hath fixed bounds.

93

VERSE 1.

the wicked is but as the fat of lambs, and as the beauty of grasse; that God hath set them in slippery places, and will cast them downe at the last, *Hab. 2. 1, 3. Psal. 37. 2. 10. 20. Psal. 73. 18.* Lastly, to weane the faithfull from earthly affections, and to kindle in them the desires of the Saints under the Altar, *How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? Revel. 6. 10.*

Secondly, as *donec* notes the Patience of CHRIST towards his enemies, so it notes likewise that there are *fixed bounds and limits unto that patience*, beyond which hee will no longer forbear them. There is an *appointed day, wherein hee will judge the world with Righteousnesse, A. 17. 31.* There is a *yeere of vengeance*, and of recompences for the controversies of Sion, *Esai. 34. 8.* The wilde Ass that sucketh up the wind at her pleasure may bee found in her *moneth, Ier. 2. 24.* The Lord seeth that *the day of the wicked* is comming. It is an appointed time, though it tarry, yet if we waite for it, It will surely come, it will not tarry, *Psal. 37. 13. Hab. 2. 3.* Well then let men goe on with all the fiercenesse and excesse of riot they will, let them walke in the way of their heart, and in the sight of their eyes, yet all this while they are in a chaine, they have but a compasse to goe, and God will bring them to judgement at the last. When the day of a drunkard and riotous person is come, when he hath taken so many hellish swallows, and hath filled up the measure of his lusts, his marrow must then lie downe in the dust, though the cuppe were at his mouth, yet from thence it shall bee snatch'd away, and for everlasting hee shall never taste a drop of sweetnesse, nor have the least desire of his wicked heart satisfied any more. A wicked mans sinnes will not follow him to Hell to please him, but onely the memory of them to bee an everlasting scourge, and flame upon his Conscience. O then take heed of ripening sinne, by custome, by security, by insensibility, by impudence

V E R S E I.

pudence and stoutnesse of heart, by making it a mocke, a matter of glory and of boasting, by stopping the eare against the voyce of the Charmer, and turning the backe upon the invitations unto mercy, by resisting the Evidence of the Spirit in the Word, and committing sinne in the light of the Sunne: for as the heate of the Sunne doth wither the fruit which falls off, and ripen that which hangs on the tree; so the Word doth weaken those lusts which a man is desirous to shake off, and doth ripen those which the heart holds fast and will not part with. When was Israel overthrowne, but when they mocked the Messengers of God, and despised his Word, and misused his Prophets, and rejected the remedy of their sinne? and when was Juda destroyed, but when they hardened themselves against the Word, and would not take notice of the day of their peace? Alas, what haste doe men make to promote their owne damnation, and to goe quickly to Hell, when they will breake through the very Law of God, and through all his Holy Ordinances, that they may come thither the sooner, as if the Gate would bee shut against them, or as if it were a place of some great preferment; as if they had to doe with a blinde God which could not see, or with an impotent God which could not revenge their impieties. Well, for all this, the Wise mans speech will proove true at the last, *Know, that God will bring thee unto judgement.*

Thirdly, *donec* notes the infallible accomplishment of Christs victories and triumph over his enemies at the last, when the day is come wherein hee will bee patient towards them no longer. The Prophet giveth three excellent reasons hereof in one verse, *Esai. 33. 22.* The Lord is our Judge, the Lord is our Lawgiver, the Lord is our King, hee will save us. Hee is our Judge, and therefore certainly when the day of triall is come hee will plead our cause against our adversaries, and will condemne them,

them, *Micb. 7. 9.* But a Judge cannot doe what pleaseth himselfe, but is bound to his rule, and proceedeth according to establiſh'd Lawes. Therefore he is our Lawgiver likewise, and therefore hee may himselfe appoint Lawes according to his owne will, but when the Will of the Judge, and the Rule of the Law doe both consent in the punishing of offenders, yet then still the King hath a liberty of mercy, and hee may pardon those whom the Law and the Judge have condemned. But Christ who shall judge the enemies of his Church according to the Law which himselfe hath made, is himselfe the King, and therefore when hee revengeth, there is none besides nor above him to pardon. So at that day there shall bee a full manifestation of the Kingdome of Christ, none of his enemies shall move the wing, or open the mouth, or peepe against him.

The second thing formerly proposed in this latter part of the verse was, *The Author* of subduing Christs enemies under his feet [*I the Lord.*] Wicked men will never submit themselves to Christs Kingdome, but stand out in opposition against him in his Word and waies. When Gods hand is lifted up in the dispensation of his Word and threatnings against sin, men will not see, *Esa. 26. 11.* And therefore he saith, *My spirit shall not alwaies strive with men*, to note that men would of themselves alwaies strive with the spirit, and never yeeld nor submit to Christ. Though the patience and goodnesse of God should lead them to repentance, and forewarne them to flie from the wrath to come, yet they after their hardnesse and impenitent heart doe hereby treasure up against themselves the more wrath, and because judgement is not speedily executed, their heart is wholly set in them to doe mischief. *Let favour* saith the Prophet, *be shewed unto a wicked man*, yet will hee not learne righteousness, in the land of uprightness he will deal unjustly, and will not behold the Majesty of the Lord, Certainly if a wicked man

Oportet eum ad tantam evidenciam regnum suum perducere, donec inimici ejus nullo modo audeant negare quod regnat, Aug.

Rom. 2. 4, 5.

Eccles. 8. 11.

Esa. 26. 10.

man

V E R S E S.

Exod. 9. 27, 28,
34, 35.

Hol. 7. 13, 14.

Esa. 9. 13.

Amos 4. 6, 8, 9,
10, 11.

man could bee rescued out of hell it selfe, and brought backe into the possibilitie of mercie againe, yet would he in a second life flie out against God, and while he had time take his fill of lusts againe. Wee see Clay will but grow harder by the fire, and that metall which melted in the Fornace, being taken thence will returne to its wonted solidity. When *Pharaoh* saw that the raine, and the haile, and the thunders were ceased (though in the time of them he was like melted metall, and did acknowledge the righteousness of God and his owne sinne, and make strong promises that Israel should goe) yet then he sinned more, and hardened his heart, he and his servants, and would not let the children of Israel goe. Doe wee not see men sometimes cast on a bed of sicknesse, brought to the very brinke of hell, and to the smell of that sulphurie lake, when by Gods wonderfull patience they are snatch'd like a brand out of the fire, and have recover'd a little strength to provoke the Lord againe, when they should now set themselves to make good those hypocriticall resolutions of amendment of life, wherewith in their extremity they flattered God, and deceived themselves, suddenly breake forth into more filthinesse than before, as if they meant now to be revenged of God, and to fetch backe that time which sicknesse tooke from them by an extremity of sinning, as if they had made a Covenant with hell to doe it more service, if they might then be spared? All the favours and methods which God useth are not enough to bring wicked men home unto him of their owne wils. *Though I redeemed them, saith the Lord, yet have they spoken lyes against me, they have not cryed unto me with their heart, when they howled upon their beds. The people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither doe they seek the Lord of hosts.* So many judgements did the Lord send upon Israel in the necke of one another, and yet still the burden of the Prophet is, *Yet have you not returned unto me, saith the*

The Obstinacie of Sinne.

97

VERSE 1.

the Lord. Dammie up the passage of a river, and use all the Art that may bee to over-rule it, yet you can never carry it backward in its owne channell; you may cut it out into other courses and diverticles, but no Art can drive it unto a contrary motion, and make it retire into its owne fountaine: So though wicked men may haply by divers reasons which their lusts will admit, be so farre wrought upon as to change their courses, yet it is impossible to change themselves, or to turne them quite out of their owne way into the way of Christ. There is but a *bivium* in the world, a way of life, and a way of death, and the Lord in the Ministry of the Word gives us our option, *I have set before you this day life and death, blessing and cursing, and hee that beleeueth shall be saved, hee that beleeueth not shall be damned.* To the former he invites, beseecheth, enticeth us with promises, with oathes, with engagements, with prevention of any just objection which might be made; *We beseech you,* saith the Apostle, *in Christs stead that you be reconciled unto God.* From the other he deterrres us by forewarning us of the wrath to come, and of the period which death will put to our lusts with our lives. And as *Tertullian* once spake of the Oath of God, so may I of his entreaties, and threatnings. O blessed men whom the Lord himselfe is pleased to sollicite and entice unto happinesse, but, O miserable men they who will not beleeve nor accept of Gods owne entreaties: And yet thus miserable are wee all by nature. There is in men so much Atheisme, infidelity and distrust of Gods Word, so close an adherencie of lust unto the soule, that it rather chooseth to runne the hazard, and to goe to hell entire, than to goe halt and maimed unto Heaven; yea, to make God a liar, to blesse themselves in their finnes, when he curseth, and to judge of him by themselves, as if hee tooke no notice of their wayes. It is not therefore without just cause that God so often threatneth to remember all the finnes of wicked

H

men,

Deut. 29. 19.
Psal. 50. 21.

VERSE I.

Hof. 5. 2. 3.

Hof. 7. 2. 12.

Amos 8. 7.

Deut. 32. 34. 35.

Psal. 50. 21.

Jer. 17. 1.

men, and to do against them whatsoever he hath spoken. Wee see then that men will never submit themselves unto the Scepter of Christ, nor prevent the wrath to come by a *voluntary subjection*. It remaines therefore that God take the worke into his owne hands, and put them perforce under Christs feete. They will not submit to his Kingdome of Grace and Mercy, they will not beleeve his Kingdome of Glory and Salvation, but they shall bee made subject to the sword of his wrath, and that without any hope of escape, or power of opposition, for God himselfe shall doe it immediately by his owne mighty Power. He will interpose his owne hand, and magnifie the Glory of his owne strength in the just confusion of wicked men. So the Apostle saith, that *The Lord will shew his wrath, and make his power knowne in the vessels fitted for destruction*, Rom. 9. 22. Two meanes the Apostle sheweth shall bee used in the destruction of the wicked, to effect it. *The presence* or countenance, and the glorious *Power* of the Lord, 2 *Thes.* 1. 9. The very terrour of his face, and the dreadfull Majesty of his presence shall slay the wicked. The kings of the Earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captains, and the mighty men, those who all their life time were themselves terrible, and had beene acquainted with terrours, shall then begge of the Mountaines and Rockes to fall upon them and to hide them from the *Face* of him that sitteth upon the Throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe, *Revel.* 6. 15, 16. *Esa.* 2. 10. whence that usuall expression of Gods resolution to destroy a people, *I will set my face against them*. O then how sore shall the condemnation of the wicked men bee, when therein the Lord purposeth to declare *his digne & iustitiam*, the glorious strength of his owne Almighty arme. Here when the Lord punisheth a people, he onely sheweth how much strength and edge hee can put into the Creatures to execute his displeasure. But the extreme terrour of the last day

God immediatly punishes the wicked

99

VERSE.

day shall be this, that men shall fall immediatly into the hands of God himselfe, who hath said, *Vengeance belongeth unto me, and I will recompence*, Heb. 10. 30, 31. And therefore the Apostle useth this expostulation against Idolaters, *Doe we provoke the Lord to jealousy? Are we stronger than he?* 1 Cor. 10. 22. Dare we meet the Lord in his fury, doe wee provoke him to powre out *All his wrath?* Psal. 78. 38. He will at last stirre up *all his wrath* against the vessels that are fitted for it. And for that cause hee will punish them himselfe. For there is no Creature able to bring *all Gods wrath* unto another, there is no vessell able to hold *all Gods displeasure*. The Apostle telleth us that wee have to doe with God in his Word, Heb. 4. 13. but herein hee useth the Ministry of weak men, so that his Majesty is covered, and wicked men, have a yeile upon their hearts, that they cannot see God in his Word. *When thy hand is lifted up*, namely in the threatnings and predictions of wrath out of the Word, *they will not see*: for it is a worke of faith to receive the word as Gods Word, and therein before-hand to see his Power, and to heare his Rod, Mich. 6. 9. Other men *believe the Lord, and say it is not he*. But though they will not acknowledge that they have to doe with God in his Word, though they will not see when his hand is lifted up in the preparations of his wrath, yet they shall see and know that they have to doe with him in his judgements, when his hand falleth downe againe in the execution of his wrath. So the Lord expostulateth with them, Ezek. 22. 14. *Can thine heart endure or thine hands bee strong in the dayes that I shall deale with thee?* The Prophet Esay resolves that question, *The sinners in Sion are affraid, fearefulnesse hath surprised the hypocrites*, (namely a fearefull looking for of judgement and fiery indignation, as the Apostle speaks, Hebrewes 10. 27.) *Who amongst us shall dwell with the devouring fire, who amongst us shall dwell with everlasting burnings?*

The wicked shall be punished

VERSE 1.

Levit. 26. 25.

Hof. 12. 2.

Pfal. 2. 2.

Esaï. 65. 3.

Esaï. 33. 14. that is, in the words of another Prophet, Who can stand before his indignation? and who can abide in the fiercenesse of his anger. His fury is poured out like fire, and the rockes are throwne downe by him, Nahum. 1. 6.

Confirmations of this point wee may take from these considerations: First, the quarrell with sinners is Gods owne, the controversie his owne, the injuries and indignities have beene done to himselfe and his owne Sonne, the challenges have beene sent unto himselfe and his own Spirit: And therefore no marvell if hee take the matter into his owne hands, and the quarrell so immediatly reflecting upon him, if hee bee provoked to revenge it by his owne immediate power.

Secondly, revenge is his royaltie and peculiar prerogative, *Deut. 32. 35. 41.* from whence the Apostle inferres, *That it is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the living God, Heb. 10. 30. 31.* And there are these arguments of fearefulnesse in it; First, it shall be *in Judgement without mercy, Iam. 2. 13.* there shall bee no mixture of any sweetnesse in the cup of Gods displeasure, but all poyson and bitternesse; there shall not bee afforded a drop of water to a lake of fire, a minute of ease to an eternity of torment. Secondly, it shall be *in fury without compassion*: In humane judgements where the law of the state will not suffer a Judge to acquit or shew mercy, yet the law of nature will force him to compassionate and grieve for the malefactor whom he must cōdemne. There is no Judge so senselesse of anothers misery, nor so destitute of humane affections as to pronounce a sentence of condemnation with laughter. But the Lord will cōdemne his enemies in vengeance without any pittie. *I will laugh, saith the Lord, at your calamity, I will mocke when your feare cometh, Prov. 1. 26.* Thirdly, it shall be *in revenge and recompence*, in reward and proportion, that is, in a full and everlasting desolation of wicked men, the

Gods immediate power.

101

VERSE I.

the weight whereof shall peradventure lye heavier upon them, than all the other torments which they are to suffer, when they shall looke on themselves as scorned and abhorred exiles from the favour and presence of him that made them. For as the wicked did here hate God, and set their hearts and their courses against him *in suo aeterno* in all that time which God permitted them to sinne in: so God will hate wicked men, and set his face and fury against them *in suo aeterno* too, as long as he shall be Judge of the world.

Thirdly, this may be scene in the inchoations of hell in wicked men upon the earth. When the doore of the conscience is opened and that sinne, which lay there asleepe before, riseth up like an enraged Lion to flie upon the soule, when the Lord suffers some flashes of his glittering sword to breake in like lightening upon the Spirit, and to amaze a sinner with the pledges and first fruits of hell, when he melteth the stout hearts of men, and grindeth them unto powder, what is all this but the secret touch of Gods owne finger upon the conscience? For there is no creature in the world whose ministerie the heart doth discern, in the estuations and invisible workings of a guilty and unquiet spirit.

Fourthly, the torments of wicked angels whence can they come? There is no Creature strong enough to lay upon them a sufficient recompence of paine for their sinne against the Majestie of God. And for the disputes of Schoole-men touching corporall fire in hell, and the manner of elevating and applying corporall agents to worke upon spirituall substances, they are but the intemperate nicities of men ignorant of the Scriptures, and of the terror of the Lord, who is himselfe a consuming fire. The devils acknowledge Christ their Tormentor, and that when he did nothing but rebuke them: there was no fire, nor any other creature by him applied, but onely the Majesty of his owne word, power, and person, which

VERSE I.

Matth. 26.37.

Luk. 22.44.

Ioh. 12.27.

Mark. 14. 33,

34.

wrung from them that hideous cry, *Art thou come to torment us before the time? Matth. 8.29.*

Lastly, consider the heaviness of Christs owne soule, his agony and sense of the curse due unto our sinne when hee was in the garden, the trouble, astonishment, and extreme anguish of his soule, which wrought out of his sacred body that woefull and wonderfull sweate. Whence came it all? wee reade never of any divells let loose to torment him, they were ever tormented at his presence. Wee reade of no other Angels that had commission to afflict him, wee reade of an Angell which was sent to strengthen him, *Luk. 22.43.* There is no reason to thinke that the feare of a bodily death, which was the onely thing that men could inflict upon him, was that which squeezed out those drops of bloud, and extorted those bitter and strong cries from him. There were not in his innocent soule, in his most pure and sacred bodie anie seeds or principles of such tormenting distempers; his compassion towards the misery of sinners, his knowledge of the guilt and cursednesse of sinne, was as great at other times as now: What then could it else be, but the weight of his Fathers justice, the conflict with his Fathers wrath against the sinnes of men, which wrought such extremity of heaviness in his soule? And hee was our security, he stood in our stead, that which was done to the greene tree, should much more have beene done to the dry; If God laid upon him the strokes which were due unto our sinne, how much more heavie shall his hand be upon those whom he thoroughly hateth?

But shall not the Angels then be executioners of the sentence of Gods wrath upon wicked men? I answer, The Angels shall have their service in the comming of the Lord. First, *as Attendants*, to shew forth the majestic and glory of Christ to the world, *2 Thes. 1. 7. Matth. 24. 31.* Secondly, *as executioners of his will*, which is to gather together the Elect and the reprobate, to binde

Gods immediate power.

103

VERSE 1.

up the wicked as sheaves or faggots for the fire, *Matth.* 13. 30. 24. 31. But yet still the Lord interposeth his owne power. As a Schoolemaster setteth one scholar to bring forth another unto punishment, but then hee layeth on the stripes himselfe.

But why is it said that the Father shall put Christs enemies under his feet? doth not Christ himselfe doe it as well as the Father? yes doubtlesse. *God hath given the Sonne authority to execute Iudgement also*, and put into his hands a rod of iron, to dash his enemies to peeces like a potters vessell; for *whatsoever things the father doth, these also doth the Sonne likewise*, *Ioh.* 5. 19. 27. *Psal.* 2. 9. But we are to note that the subjecting of Christs enemies under his feet is *a worke of divine power*. And therefore though it be attributed to Christ as an *Officer*, yet it belongeth to the *Father, as the fountaine of all divine operations*. So God is said to have set forth his Sonne as a propitiation, *Rom.* 3. 25. and yet the Sonne came downe and manifested himselfe, *Phil.* 2. 7, 8. *Heb.* 9. 26. The Father is said to have raised him from the dead, *Act.* 2. 32. *Rom.* 6. 4. and yet the Sonne raised himselfe by his owne power, *Ioh.* 10. 18. the Father is said to have set Christ at his owne right hand in heavenly places, *Ephes.* 1. 20. and Christ is said to have sate downe himselfe on the right hand of the Majesty on high, *Heb.* 1. 3. 10. 12. The Father is said to give the holy Ghost, *Ioh.* 14. 16. and yet the Sonne promiseth to send him himselfe, *Ioh.* 16. 7. so here, though the Sonne have received power sufficient to subdue all his enemies under his feet (for he is able to subdue all things unto himselfe, *Phil.* 3. 21.) yet the Father to shew his hatred against the enemies of Christ, and his consent to the victories of his Sonne, will likewise subdue all things unto him, *1 Cor.* 15. 27, 28.

O then that men would be by the terrour of the Lord perswaded to fly from the wrath to come, to consider the weight of Gods heavy hand, and when they see such a

VERSE I.

storme comming to hide themselves in the holes of that Rocke of mercy. It is nothing but Atheisme and infidelity which bewitcheth men with desperate senselesnesse against the vengeance of God. And therefore as the Lord hath seconded his Word of Promise with an oath, that they might have strong consolation who flie for refuge to lay hold on the hope which is set before them, *Heb. 6. 17, 18.* So hath hee confirmed the Word of his threatnings with an oath too. *If I lift up my hand to heaven and say, I live for ever --- I will render vengeance to mine enemies, I will reward them that hate me, Deut. 32. 40, 41.* and againe, *The Lord hath sworne by the excellency of Iacob, surely I will never forget any of their workes, Amos 8. 7.* and againe, *I have sworne by my selfe, that unto me every knee shall bow, Esa. 45. 23.* and this he doth that secure and obdurate sinners might have the stronger reasons to flie from the wrath which is set before them. *O nos miseros, quinec juranti Deo credimus!* How wonderfull is the stupidity of men, that will neither believe the words, nor tremble at the oath of God? He warneth us to fly from the wrath to come, and we make haste to meete it the rather: we fill up our measure, and commit sinne *with both hands greedily*, with uncleane and intemperate courses, we bring immature deaths upon our selves, that so we may hasten to hell the sooner, and make triall whether God be a liar or no. For this indeed is the very direct issue of every profane exorbitancy which men rush into. Every man hath much Atheisme in his heart by nature, but such desperate stupidity doth wonderfully improove it, and bring men by degrees to the hellish presumption of those in the Prophets, *The Lord will not doe good, neither will he doe evil; It is not the Lord, neither shall evil come upon us, the Prophets shall become winde, and the word is not in them. The dayes are prolonged and the vision shall faile; this man prophesieth of things as farre off, of doomes day, of things which shall*

Ier. 5. 11, 12.

Ezek. 12. 22.

Gods immediate power.

105

V E R S E 1.

shall be long after our time. Vnto these men, I say, in the words of the Apostle, though they sleepe, and see nothing, and mocke at the promise of Christs comming, yet *their damnation sleepeth not*, but shall come upon them soone enough, even like an armed man. *Be not ye mockers*, saith the Prophet, *lest your bands be made strong*. Atheisme, and scorne of Gods judgements will make him binde them the faster upon us, he will get the better of the proudest of his enemies. Wee may mocke, but *God will not bee mocked*. He that shooteth arrowes against the Sunne, shall never reach high enough to violate it, but the arrowes shall returne upon his own head. Contempt of God, and his threatnings doth but tye our damnation the faster upon us, and make our condition the more remediless. The rage and wrestling of a beast with the rope which bindes him, doth make the knot the faster. Nay, there is no Atheist in the world, but some time or other feeleth by the horrors of his owne bosome, and by the records of his owne conscience, that there is a consumption decreed, and a day of slaughter comming for the buls of Bashan.

Againe, others I have knowne acknowledge indeede the terror of the Lord, but yet goe desperately on in their presumptions, and that upon two other dangerous downefalls: First, they thus argue, peradventure I belong to Gods Election of Grace, and then he will fetch me in, in his time, and in the meane time his mercy is above my sinnes, and it is not for me to hasten his worke till he will himselfe. O what a perversenesse is this for the wickednesse of man to perturb the Order of God? His Rule is, that we should argue from a holy conversation to our Election, and by our diligence in adding one grace unto another to make it sure unto our selves; not to argue from our Election to our calling, nor to neglect all diligence till our Election appeare. It is true, the mercy of Christ is infinitely wider than the very rebellions of men,
and

2 Pet. 2.3.

Esa. 28. 22.

Gal. 6. 7, 8.

2 Chron. 36. 16.

VERSE I.

*Medium inter-
rim furantur
tempus & com-
meatum faciunt
delinquendi.
Tertull.*

Ion. 3. 8, 9.

Isa. 1. 12, 14.

Zeph. 2. 3.

1 Cor. 15. 32.

and it may be hee will snatch such a wicked disputer as this like a brand out of the fire. But then know with-
all, that every desperate sin thou dost now wilfully runne into, will at last cost thee such bitter throwes, such bloudy teares, as thou wouldest not be willing with the least of them to purchase the most sweet and constant pleasure which thy heart can now delight in. And in the meane time it is a bloody adventure upon the patience of God, for any man upon expectation of Gods favour to steale time from his service, and to turne the possibilitie of the mercy of God into an occasion of sinning. The Ninivites gathered another conclusion from those premises; *Let man and beast be covered with sackcloth and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turne everyone from their evill way, and from the violence which is in their hands:* and the ground of this resolution was this, *Who can tell if God will? turne and repent, and turne away from his fierce anger that we perish not?* And the Prophets teach us to make another use of the possibility of Gods mercy; *Rent your hearts and not your garments, and turne unto the Lord your God, for hee is gracious and mercifull, slow to anger, and of great kindenesse, and repenteth him of the evill. Who knoweth if hee will returne and repent, and leave a blessing behinde him, &c.* and againe, *Seeke ye the Lord all ye meeke of the earth, seeke righteonsnesse, seeke meekenesse, it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the Lords anger.*

But then secondly, there are not wanting desperate wretches who will thus hellishly argue against the service of God. It may be the decree is gone forth, and I am rejected by God, and why should I labour in vaine, and goe about to repeale his will, and not rather, since I shall have no heaven hereafter, take the fill of mine owne wayes and lusts here? Thus wee finde the wicked Epicures conclude, *Wee shall dye to morrow, and therefore let us eate and drinke to day.* Nay, but who art thou, O man,

man, who disputest against God? who rather choosest to abuse the secrets of God, that thou maiest dishonour him, than to be ruled by his revealed will, that thou maiest obey him? *Let the potshards strive with the potshards of the earth*, but let not the Clay dash it selfe against him that made it. Remember and tremble at the difference which our Saviour makes even amongst the wicked in hell. *It shall be easier for Sodome and Gomorrah, and for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgement*, than for those cities which have heard and despised him. Wicked men are treasuring up of wrath, and hoording up of destruction against their owne soules, every new oath or blasphemie heapes a new mountaine upon their conscience; every renewed act of any uncleannesse plungeth a man deeper into hell, giveth the divell more holdfast of him, adds more fuell unto his Tophet, squeezeth in more dregges and woefull ingredients into the cup of astonishment which hee must swallow. Doubtlesse a sinner in hell would account himselfe a blessed creature if hee did not feele there the weight and worime of such and such particular sinnes, which with much easinesse hee might have forborne, nay which without paine and labour hee could not commit. We see *Dives* in hell begg'd for but a drop of water to coole his tongue in that mighty flame. Now suppose a man to lye in a burning fornace; what great comfort could he receive from but a drop of water against a fornace of fire? Certainly the abatement of so much paine as the constant continuance of one drop of water would remove, coulde in no proportion amount to the taking away the punishment of the smallest sinne, of the least idle word, or unprofitable thought; and yet in that extremity there shall not bee allowed a drop of refreshment against a lake of fire. O that men would therefore in time consider what a woefull thing it is to fall into the hands, and to rowze up the jealousie of the living God: that because hee will doe thus and thus unto
obdurate

VERSE I.

obdurate sinners, they would therefore in time humble themselves under his mighty hand, and prepare to meete him in the way of his judgements. For certainly no sooner doth the heart of a Sinner yeeld to God, but he meeteth him in his returne and preventeth him with goodnesse, his heart likewise is turned within him, and his repentings are kindled together. With much more delight will he put a man into the armes of Christ, than force him under his feet. *He doth not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men; he taketh no pleasure in the death of a sinner, but he delighteth in mercy.*

The last thing observed was the *Manner of this victory*, expressed in those words, *Ponam, and ponam scabellum*. To put, and to put as a stoole under Christs feet. Now this expression, that the conquest of Christs enemies shall be but as the remooving of a stoole into his place, noteth unto us two things:

First, *the easinesse of Gods victory* over the enemies of Christ. They are before him as nothing, lesse than nothing, the drop of a bucket, the dust of a ballance, a very little thing. What thing is heavier than a mountaine, what thing easier than a touch, what lighter than chaffe, or softer than wax? and yet they who in the eyes of men are as strong and immoveable as mountaines, if God but touch them they shall be turned into chaffe, and flow at his presence. If a man had a deadly pestilence and of infallible infection, how easily might that man be avenged on his enemy with but breathing in his face? Now the breath of the Lord is like a streame of brimstone to devoure the wicked. As easily as fire consumeth flax or stubble, as easily as poyson invadeth the spirits of the body, as easily as a rod of iron breaketh in peeces a potters vessell, as easily as a burdensome stone bruizeth that which it fals upon; so, and much more irresistibly doth the wrath of the Lord consume his enemies.

Esa. 41. 15.

Esa. 64. 3.

Esa. 30. 33.

Esa. 27. 4.

Esa. 47. 14.

Zech. 12. 3, 6.

Psal. 29.

No

God can easily destroy the wicked.

109

Not to insist long on so certaine and obvious a truth. Farre easier wee know it is to destroy than to build up, there is no such Art required in demolishing, as there is in erecting of an edifice, those things which are long and difficultly growing up, are suddenly extinguished. Since therefore God had power and wisdom to make the Creature, no wonder if hee can most easily destroy it.

Againe, Gods power is as it were set on by his *jealousie* and fury against sinners. Anger we know is the whetstone of strength, in an equality of other termes, it will make a man prevaile. Nothing is able to stand before a fire which is once enrag'd. Now Gods displeasure is kindled, and breaketh forth into a flame against the sins of men, *Deut. 29. 20.* like a devouring Lion, or a bereaved Beare, like the implacable rage of a jealous man, so doth the fire of the Lords revenge breake forth upon the enemies of his Sonne.

Adde hereunto our *disposition* and preparednesse for the wrath of God. Strength it selfe may bee tired out in vaine upon a subject which is incapable of any injurie therefrom. But if the paw of a Beare meet with so thinne a substance as the kall of a mans heart, how easily is it torne to pieces? Every action is then most speedily finished when the subject on which it workes is thereunto prepared. Farre easier is it to make a print in waxe than in Adamant, to kindle a fire in dry stubble, than in green wood. Now wicked men have fitted themselves for wrath, and are the procurers, and artificers of their owne destruction. They are vessels, and God is never without treasures of wrath, so that the confusion of a wicked man is but like the drawing of water out of a Fountaine, or the filling of a bagge out of a heape of treasure.

Lastly, adde hereunto our *desistment* of all help and succor. Even fire amongst pitch might be quenched, if a man could powre downe water in abundance upon it.

VERSE I.

*Corpora tarde
augeſcunt cito
extinguuntur.
Tac.*

*Hof. 13. 7, 8.
Prov. 6. 34.
Cant. 8. 6.
Ezek. 36. 5.*

*Rom. 9. 22.
Eſai. 3. 9.
Ier. 2. 17.
Ier. 4. 18.
Hof. 13. 9.*

Bu

NO

God can easily destroy the wicked.

VERSE 1.

But the wicked shall have no strength either in or about them to prevent or remoove the wrath to come. Here indeed they have some helps (such as they are) to stand out against God in his Word. Wealth and greatnesse to bee the provisions of their lusts, the countenance of the wicked world to encourage them in their wayes; Satan and the wisdom of the flesh to furnish them with arguments, and to cast a varnish upon uncleannesse: but when the Lion comes the sheeheard can doe the sheepe no good, when the fire comes, the rotten post shall perish with the varnish which covered it. Hee that was here strong enough to provoke God, shall at last bee bound hand and foote, and so have no faculty left either to resist him, or to runne from him.

There is a foolish disposition in the hearts of men to thinke that they shall ever continue in that estate which they are once in. The proud and wicked man hath said in his heart, *I shall never be moved, I shall never be in adversity, God hath forgotten, he hideth his face, he will never see it.* And the Prophet David was overtaken with this grosse error, *I said in my prosperity I shall never be moved.* This was the vaine conceit of the foole in the Gospell, thou hast much laid up for many years, take thine ease, eate, drinke, and bee merry. This ever hath beene the language of secure and wicked men, *No evil shall come upon us, I shall have peace though I walke in the imagination of mine heart. To morrow shall bee as this day and much more abundant.* And so also in afflictions; *Hath the Lord forgotten to bee gracious and store up his loving kindnesse in displeasure? from day even to night wilt thou make an end of mee. I said my hope is lost and I am cut off for my part.* I shall never overcome such an affliction; I shall never breake through such a pressure. And both these come for want of faith touching the power of God to subdue all enemies under Christs feete. If men would but consider how easily God can breake downe all

Psal. 10. 6, 11.

Luk. 12. 19.

Mic. 3. 11.

Deut. 19. 19.

Esa. 56. 12.

Esa. 38. 12.

Ezek. 37. 11.

God can easily destroy the wicked.

III

VERSE I.

all their cob-webs, and sweepe away their refuge of lies, how easily hee can spoile them of all the provisions of their lusts, and leave them like a Lambe in a large place, they would be more fearefull of him, and lesse dote upon things which will not profit; they would take heed how they abuse their youth, strength, time, abilities, as if they had a Spring of them all within themselves, and consider that their good is not in their owne hand, that the scithe can get as well through the Greene Grasse as the dry stubble, that consuming fire can as well melt the hardest metall as the softest waxe. What is the reason why men in fore extremities make strong resolutions, and vow much repentance and amendment of life, and yet as soone as they are off from the racke returne againe to their vomit, and wallow in their wonted lusts, but because their sense made them feeble that then, which if they had faith they might still perceive, and so still continue in the same good resolutions, namely that Gods hand was neere unto them? But what, *is not God a God as farre off, as well as neere at hand?* doth hee not say of wicked men, that in *the fulnesse of their sufficiency they shall bee in straites*? Cannot hee blast the Corne in the Blade, in the Haruest, in the Barne, in the very mouth of the wicked? Did hee not cut off *Belshazzar* in his cups, and *Herod* in his robes, and *Babylon* and *Tyrus* in their pride, and *Haman* in his favour, and *Iezabel* in her paint? Have but faith enough to say I am a man, and therefore no humane events should bee strange unto mee, and even that one consideration may keepe a man from outrage of sinning. It may bee I have abundance of earthly things, yet am I still but a gilded potsheard: It may bee I have excellent endowments, but I have them all in an earthen vessell. And shall the potsheard strive with the potter, and provoke him that made it? This would teach us to feare and tremble at Gods Power. Though wee looke upon death and judgement as a farre off, yet God
can

Iob. 20. 22.
Amos 4. 7.
Hos. 13. 9.
Hag. 1. 9.
Hos. 9. 2.
Psal. 78. 30, 31.

God can easily destroy the wicked.

VERSE 1.

2 Pet. 2. 1.
 Heb. 6. 8.
 Hos. 8. 1.
 Zech. 5. 1.
 Hos. 5. 7.
 Hos. 10. 15.
 Esai. 47. 9.
 Eccle. 8. 13, 13.

can make them neere when hee will, for he hath said that the damnation of wicked men is *swift*, and that they are *neere unto cursing*. His judgements are like *lightning*, and have *wings* suddenly to overtake a sinner. Hee requires but a *moneth*, nay but a *morning*, nay but a *moment* to consume his enemies, and bring desolation upon those who said they should sit as a Lady for ever, and did never remember the latter end. *Though a sinner doe evil an hundred times, and his dayes be prolonged*, namely by the patience and permission of God, in whose hands his dayes are, yet it shall goe well at last *onely with those that feare God*; The wicked are not able to prolong their owne dayes.

Againe, for Afflictions and Temptations, it is a great fruit of the infidelity of mens hearts, and a foolish charging and chiding of our Maker, to accompt our selves swallowed up of any present pressure. If we did but consider that it is as easie with God to subdue our enemies, and to rebuke our afflictions as it is with us to put a stoole under our feete, wee would then learne to waite on him in all our distresses, and when we cannot answer difficulties, nor extricate our selves out of our owne doubts or feares, to conclude that his thoughts are above our thoughts, and his wayes above our wayes, and so to cast our selves wholly upon his power. Tis an argument which the Lord every where useth to establish his Church withall: *Feare not the feare of men, nor bee afraid; but sanctifie the Lord of hosts himselfe, and let him be your feare. Who art thou that thou shouldest bee affraid of a man that shall dye, and of the Sonne of Man which shall be made as grasse; and forgetst the Lord thy maker, and hast feared every day because of the fury of the oppressor? And where is the fury of the oppressor? If it bee marvellous in the eyes of the remnant of this people, should it bee marvellous in mine eyes saith the Lord of Hosts? Behold, I am the Lord the God of all flesh, is there*

Esai. 55. 8, 9.

Esai. 8. 18, 13.

Esai. 51. 12, 13.

Zech. 8. 6, 7.

any

The wickeds fall a beautifull thing.

113

VERSE I.

Ier. 32. 27.
Gen. 18. 14.
Ier. 17. 7, 8.
Esa. 41. 17, 18.
Hab. 3. 17, 19.

anything too hard for me? Blessed is the man that trusteth in the Lord, and whose hope the Lord is. Hee shall be as a tree planted by the waters, which shall not bee carefull in the yeere of drought. When the poore and needy seeke water and there is none, and their tongue faileth for thirst, I the Lord will heare them, I the God of Israel will not forsake them. Though the fig-tree shall not blossome, neither shall fruite be in the vines, the labor of the Olive shall faile, and the field shall yeeld no meat, the flocke shall bee cut off from the fould, and there shall bee no heerd in the stals: yet I will rejoyce in the Lord, I will joy in the God of my salvation. Hee is able to doe abundantly above all that wee can aske or thinke. God would never so frequently carry men to the dependance upon his Power, if they were not apt in extremities to judge of God by themselves, and to suspect his Power.

Secondly, as this Putting of Christs enemies like a stoole under his feete noteth *Easinesse*, so also it noteth *Order or Beauty too*. When Christs enemies shall be under his foote, then there shall be a right Order in things, then it shall indeed appeare that God is a *God of Order*, and therefore the day wherein that shall bee done, is called the *Time of the Restitution of all things*, *Act. 3. 21*. The putting of Christs enemies under his feete is an *Act of Iustice*, and of all other, Iustice is the most orderly vertue, that which keepeth beauty upon the face of a people, as consisteth it selfe in a symmetry, and proportion. Againe, every thing out of its owne place is out of order, but when things are all in their proper places and due proportions, then there results a beauty and comeliness from them. In a great house there are many vessels, some of wood and brasse, others of gold and silver; some for honourable, others for base and sordid uses; Now if all these were confusedly together in one roome a man would conclude that things were out of order, but when the plate is in one place, the brasse and wood in another,

τὸ δὲ ἵνα μὴ οὐκ ὁμοιοῦται
τῷ κόσμῳ, τὸ δὲ ἀδ-
κοῦν παρανομίαν καὶ
ἀνομίαν.
Arist. Ethic. lib.
5. cap. I.

*The wickeds fall a beautifull thing.***VERSE 1.**

wee acknowledge a decency and cleanlinesse in such a house. Let a body be of never so exact temperature and delicate complexion, yet if any member therein bee misplaced, the eye in the roome of the eare, or the cheeke of the forehead, there can be no beauty in such a body: So in the Church, till God set every one in his right place, the order thereof is but imperfect. Therefore when *Indas* was put under Christs feete, he is said to have gone *in idus rōmō*, unto his owne place, *Act. 1. 25.*

Ezek. 18. 25.
Mal. 3. 14, 15.

Why then should any man murmur at the prosperity of wicked men, or conceive of Gods proceedings as if they were irregular and unequall, as if there were no profit for those who walke mournfully, but the proud, and wicked workers were set up? This is to revile the workeman while hee is yet in the fitting of his worke. The pieces are not yet put together in their proper joints, and therefore no marvell if the evennesse and beauty of Gods workes be not so plainly discovered. For every thing is *beautifull in its time*; what though the corne in the field hang downe the head, and the weeds seeme to flourish and over-top it; stay but till the Harvest, and it will then appeare which was for the Garner, and which for the fire. Goe into the Sanctuary of the Lord, and by faith looke unto the day of the Revelation of Gods righteous judgements, and it will appeare *that the waies of the Lord are right, though the transgressors stumble in them, or be offended at them.*

Hos. 14. 9.

Secondly, from hence every man may learne how to bring beauty and order into himselfe, namely by subduing those enemies of Christ, those lusts and evill affections which dwell within him. Lawes wee know are the ligaments and sinewes of a State, the strings as it were which being touched and animated by skilfull governors doe yeeld that excellent harmony which is to bee seene in well constituted common wealths; the more they prevaile so much the more unity is preserved and faction abated,

What is to be under Christs feete.

115

VERSE I.

abated, and community cherished in the minds of men: Even so where the Scepter of Christ, the Law of the minde, the royall Law of Liberty and Grace doe more prevaile over the lusts of the heart, by so much the more excellent is the harmony and complexion of such a soule.

Now the last thing in this verse is, *Scabellum pedibus tuis. A stoole under thy feete.* Things are under Christs feete two manner of waies: Either by way of subjection as *Servants* unto him, and so hee hath dominion over all the workes of Gods hands, and hath *all things put under his feete.* So the Apostle saith that God hath set him at his owne right hand in Heavenly places, farre above all principality and power, and might and dominion and every name that is named, not onely in this world but also in that which is to come; *And hath put all things under his feete,* and gave him to bee the Head over all things to the Church. Which Saint *Peter* expresseth in a like manner: He is gone into Heaven, and is on the right hand of God, *Angels and authorities and powers being made subject to him:* Or secondly by way of victory and insultation, and also Christs *enemies* are put under his feete. Which is the most proper way. For the members of Christ are indeed under the Head. So wee finde that the sheepe of Christ are *in his hands.* *No man shall plucke them out of my hand.* And the Lambes of Christ are in his *armes and bosome.* *Hee shall gather the Lambes with his arme, and carry them in his bosome.* But the enemies of Christ are under his feete to bee trampled upon, till their blood bee squeezed out, and his garments stained with it. All the multiplied multitudes of the wicked in the world shall bee but as so many clusters of ripe grapes to bee cast into the great wine-presse of the wrath of God, and to bee trodden by him who went forth on a white horse conquering and to conquer, till the blood come out of the wine-presse even unto the horse bridles.

Psal. 8. 6.

Eph. 1. 21, 22.

1 Pet. 3. 21.

Ioh. 10. 28.

Esai. 40. 11.

Esai. 63. 1, 3.

Ioel 3. 13, 14.

Revel. 14. 20.

VERSE I.

Gen. 3. 14.
Luk. 10. 19.
Rom. 16. 20.
Psal. 68. 23.

2 Sam. 12. 31.
2 Kings 9. 33.
Lam. 1. 15.

Heb. 5. 8.
Heb. 2. 17, 18.

And this is an usuall expression of a totall victory in holy Scripture, the laying of an adversary even with the ground, that hee may bee crushed and trampled upon. This was the curse of the Serpent that hee should crawl with his belly upon the dust of the Earth, and that the seed of the woman should bruiſe his head. And it is the curse of Gods enemies, that they should licke the dust, and that the feete of the Church and the tongue of her dogges should bee dipped in the blood of her enemies. Thus *David* put the people of *Rabbah* under harrowes; and *Iehu* trod *Iezabel* under his horses feete. And therefore the Church chooseth that phrase to expresse the greatnesse of her calamity by. The Lord hath trodden under foote all my mighty men in the midst of mee; hee hath called an assembly against mee to crush my yong men. The Lord hath trodden the Virgin, the Daughter of Juda as in a wine-presse.

Now this putting of Christs enemies as a stoole under his feete, notes unto us in regard of Christ two things: First, his *Rest*; and secondly, his *Triumph*. To stand, in the Scripture phrase (as I have before observed) denoteth *Ministry*, and to *Sit, Rest*; and there is no posture more easie than to sit with a stoole under ones feete. Till Christs enemies then be all under his feet, hee is not fully in his Rest. It is true, in his owne Person he is in Rest, he hath finished the worke which was given him to doe, and therefore is entred into his rest. Hee hath already ascended up on high, and led captivity captive; yet in his members hee still suffers, though not by way of paine or passion, yet by way of *Sympathy* or compassion, he is *touched with a feeling of our infirmities*, Heb. 4. 15. As by the things which he suffered, he *learned obedience* towards God, so by the same sufferings hee learned compassion, and thereupon mercy and fidelity towards his members; for no man can bee more tenderly faithfull in the businesse of another, than hee who by his owne experience

Christs enemies his foot-stoole.

117

VERSE I.

Esa. 63. 9.

Col. 1. 24.

perience knoweth the consequence and necessity of it. And therefore he is said to be *afflicted* in all the *afflictions* of his people; and the Apostle tels us that the afflictions of the Saints fill up the remainders, or that which is behinde, of the sufferings of Christ; for as the Church is called the *fulnesse of Christ*, who yet of himselfe is so full, as that he filleth all in all (neither doth the Church serve to supply his defects, but to magnifie his mercy:) so the Churches sufferings are esteemed the fulnesse of the sufferings of Christ, although his were of themselves so full before, as that they had a *consummation est* to seale up both their measure and their merit. And therefore our sufferings are called his, not by way of addition, or improvement unto those, but by way of honour and dignitie unto us, they shew Christs compassion towards us, and our union and conformitie to him; but no way either any defect of vertue in his, or any value of merit in ours, or any ecclesiasticall treasure or redundancie out of a mixture of both: very profitable they are for the edification of the Church, but very base and unworthy for the expiation of sinne: very profitable for the comfort of men, but very unprofitable to the justice of God. So then, though Christ rest from suffering in himselfe, yet not in his Saints; though the Serpent cannot come to the head, yet it is still bruizing of his heele. Here then the Apostles inference is good, there remaineth therefore *rest* unto the people of God, and that such a glorious rest as must arise out of the ruine of their enemies. When the wicked perish they shall see it and rejoyce, and shall wash their feet in the bloud of their adversaries. The revenge of God against his enemies is such, as shall bring an ease with it: *Ab*, saith the Lord, *I will ease mee of mine adversaries, I will avenge mee of mine enemies; Esai. 1. 24.* This is the comfort which the Lord giveth his people, that they shall bee full when their enemies shall bee hungry, and that hee

Esa. 65. 13.

Esa. 66. 5.

VERSE 1.

will appeare to their joy, when their enemies shall bee ashamed.

This must teach wicked men to take heed of persecuting the members of Christ, for they therein are professed enemies to him whom yet they would seeme to worship. This is certaine, that all the counsels and resolutions which are made against the Subjects or Lawes of Christs Kingdome, are but *vaine imaginations* which shall never be executed. He will at last avenge the quarrell of his people, and in spight of all the power or malice of hell, make them to sit *actually* in heavenly places with him, whom he hath *virtually* and representatively carried thither already. And it should comfort the faithfull in all their sufferings for Christs sake: Because hereby they are, first, *Conformable* unto him: Secondly, they are *Associates* with him: Thirdly, they are assured that they are in a way to rest: for, saith the Apostle, it is just with God to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you, and *to you who are troubled rest, when the Lord Iesus shall be revealed from heaven.* And in as much, saith Saint Peter, as you are partakers of Christs sufferings, when his glory shall be revealed, *ye shall be glad also with exceeding joy:* And this joy shall be so much the greater, because it shall grow out of the everlasting subjection of the enemy under Christs feet, and those whom here they persecuted and despised, shall there with Christ be their Judges.

2 Thess. 1. 6, 7.

1 Pet. 4. 13.

1 Cor. 6. 2, 3.

Alex. ab Alex.

Gen. dier. lib. 6.

cap. 8.

Rosin. Antiq.

Rom. 10. 6. 29.

Secondly, as it noteth the Rest, so likewise the *Triumph of Christ*, when hee shall set his feet on the necke of his enemies. The Apostle saith, that hee *triumphed over them in his Crosse, Coloss. 2. 15.* And there are two words which have an allusion unto the formes of Triumph, *Expbiation* and *Publication*, or representation of the pompe unto the world of the faithfull. Hee *spoiled principalities and powers*, that is, Hee tooke from them all their armour wherein they trusted, and *divided the spoiles, Luk. 11. 22.* The armour of Satan was principally

pally the hand-writing of the Law which was against us, or contrary unto us, so long as wee were under the full force and rigour of that, so long wee were under the possession and tyranny of Satan. But when Christ nailed that unto the Crosse, and tooke it out of the way, then all the other panoply of Satan was easily taken from him: he was then spoiled of all his weapons and provisions of lust, for the world, and therewithall the things which are in the world, were unto us crucified in the Crosse of Christ. So that now by faith in him we are able to overcome the world, to value it aright, to esteeme the promises thereof thinne and emptie, and the threatnings thereof vaine and false; the treasures thereof baser than the very reproaches of Christ, and the afflictions thereof not worthy to bee compared with the glory which shall bee revealed in us, as being in their measure but light, and but momentary in their duration. The power and wisdome of Satan was likewise in the Crosse of Christ most notably befooled and disappointed; for when hee thought that hee had now swallowed up Christ, he found a hooke under that bait, he found that which neither himselfe, nor any of his instruments could have suspected, that Christ crucified was indeed the wisdome of God, and the power of God, and that through death hee chose to destroy him who had the power of death; *1 Cor. 1. 24. Heb. 2. 14.* Againe, he made a *show, or publike representation* of this his victory, and of these his spoiles openly unto the world. As the Crosse was his triumphall chariot, so was it likewise *ferculum pompe*, the pageant, as it were, and table of his spoiles. For though to a carnall eye there was nothing but ignominie and dishonour in it, yet to those that are called, there is an eye of faith given to see in the Crosse of Christ Hell disappointed, Satan confounded, his kingdom demolished, the earthly members of the old man crucified, affections and lusts abated, and captivity al-

Gal. 6. 14.

1 Ioh. 5. 4, 5.

Heb. 11. 16.

Rom. 8. 18.

2 Cor. 17.

VERSE I.

readie led captive. And indeed what triumph of any the most glorious Conquerour was ever honoured with the opening of graves, the resurrection of the dead, the conversion of enemies, the acclamation of mute and inanimate creatures, the darknesse of the Sunne, the trembling of the earth, the compassion of the rockes, the amazement of the world, the admiration of the Angels of heaven, but onely this triumph of Christ upon the Crosse? And if he did so triumph there, how much more at the right hand of the Majestie on high, where he is crowned with glory and honour; and at that great day, which is therefore called the Day of the Lord Jesus, because hee will therein consummate his triumph over all his enemies, when hee shall come with the attendance of Angels, in a chariot of fire, with all the unbelievers of the world bound before his Throne, and with the clamor, applause, and admiration of all the Saints.

And this is a plentiful ground of comfort to the faithfull in all their conflicts with Satan, sinne, temptations, or corruptions, they fight under his protection, and with his Spirit who hath himselfe already triumphed, who accounteth our temptations his, and his victories ours; who turned the worst perplexities which the world shall ever see, into a Doctrine of comfort unto his Disciples, *Luk. 21. 25, 28.* When ever then wee are assaulted with any heavie temptation to discomforts, feares, fainting, wearinesse, despaire, sinfull conformities, or the like; let us not roffe over our owne store, nor depend upon any strength or principles of our owne, but looke onely by faith unto the victories of Christ, and to this great Promise which is here made unto him, as Head and Capitaine of the Church, by whom wee shall be able to doe all things; and though wee were surrounded with enemies, to escape, as he did, thorow the midst of them all. Wee know the Cat *numm magnus*, in the fable, was more worth than the Foxes thousand shifts, notwithstanding

Christs enemies his foot-stoole.

121

VERSE I.

ding all the which hee was caught at the last. Our enemies come against us in armies, with infinite methods and stratagems to circumvent us, this onely is our comfort, that we have *unum magnum*, one refuge which is above all the wisdom of the enemy, to climb up unto the Crosse of Christ, and to commit the keeping of our soules unto him, out of whose hands no man can take them. When *David* went forth against *Goliath*, hee did not grapple with him by his owne strength, but with his Sling and his stone at a distance overthrew him. It is not good to let Satan come too close unto the soule, to let in his temptations, or to enter into any private and intimate combat with him (this was for our Captaine onely to doe, who we know entred into the field with him, as being certaine of his owne strength) but our onely way to prevaile against him, is to take faith as a sling, and Christ as a stone, hee will undoubtedly finde out a place to enter in and to sinke the proudest enemy. We are beset with enemies, yea, we are enemies unto our selves, the burden of the flesh, the assaults of the world, the fierie darts of Satan, treason within, and warres without, swarmes of Midianites, troopes of Amalekites, the Sea before us, the Egyptian behinde us, sinne before, Satan and the world behinde, either I must runne on and bee drowned in sinne, or I must stand still and bee hewed in peeces with the persecutions of wicked men, or I must revolt and turne backe to Egypt, and so be devoured in her plagues. In these extremities the Apostle hath given us our *Unum magnum*, *Looke upon Iesus*, hee that is the Author, will be the finisher of our faith: It is yet but a little while, hee will come and will not tarry, he is within the view of our faith, hee is within the cry of our Prayers, hee *sitteth at the right hand of power*, nay, hee there *standeth*, and is risen up already in the quarrell of his Saints, *Act. 7. 56*. The neerer the Egyptian is to Israel, the neerer hee is to ruine, and the neerer Israel is to deliverance.

Heb. 12. 1, 2.
Heb. 10. 36, 37.

VERSE I.

Esa. 11. 1.

Zech. 3. 8.

Exod. 33. 14, 16.

Mic. 7. 19, 20.

Psal. 65. 3.

Quod in profundum maris abjicitur penitus non extat. Theodoret.

Psal. 103. 12.

Esa. 43. 25.

Esa. 44. 22.

Mal. 3. 6.

Esa. 2. 11.

deliverance. Though *Moses* have not Chariots, nor multitudes of weapons, yet he hath a *Rod*, a Branch, an Angel of Gods presence, which can open the Sea, and give an issue to the greatest dangers, which can turne the enemies rage into his owne ruine. There is no enemy so close, so dangerous, so unavoideable as our owne lusts. Now the Lord promiseth to deale with the sinnes of his people, as hee did with the Egyptians; wee know their tyranny he subdued with many plagues, their first-borne, the strength and flower of the Land, he slew before, and those who afterwards joyned themselves against his people, he drowned in the bottome of the Sea; so saith the Prophet, *Hee will subdue our iniquities*, he will purge them away, the power and strength of them hee will abate by his Spirit; and as for those remainders thereof, which are yet behinde, and rebell against his Grace, hee will *cast all of them into the depths of the Sea*, that is, he will remove them utterly away from us, he will drowne them in everlasting forgetfulnesse, he will not onely blot them out that they may not be, but he will not remember them neither, which is in some sort to make them even not to have beene. And, which yet makes the assurance of all this the stronger, the ground of it all is onely in God himselfe, his Covenant and mercy. Now though our condition alters, yet his mercy is still the same: If the root of the Covenant were in us, then as we change, that also would vary too, but the root is in Gods owne grace, whose mercy is therefore without repentance in himselfe, because it is without reason, or merit in us.

Now lastly, this *Foot-stoole* under Christs feet, in regard of his enemies, noteth unto us foure things: First, *The extreme shame and confusion* which they shall everlastingly suffer, the utter abasing and bringing downe of all that exalteth it selfe against Christ. In victories amongst men, the part conquered goes many times off upon some honorable termes; at the very worst when they

they are led captives, yet they goe like men still; but to be made a stoole for the Conquerour to insule over, to licke the dust like a serpent, and move out of holes like the wormes of the earth, to be so low, as not to have any further degree of calamity or dishonour left unto which a man may be debased; this is the *extremitie of shame*. It is noted for the greatest indignity which *Bajazet* the grand Signior ever suffered, when *Tamerlane* his adversarie trampled upon his necke; and of * *Valerian*, that cruell persecutor of the Church, that hee was trod under foot by *Sapores* the Persian King, and after flayed like a beast. It notes the extremest degree of revenge, which hath no mixture of mercy or compassion in it: So that by this we see the enemies of Christ and his Kingdome shall be put to utter and everlasting shame: That as the faithfull in that great day of their Redemption shall lift up their heads, and have boldnesse in the presence of the Lambe; so the wicked shall fall flat upon their faces, and cleave unto the dust; when the bookes shall be unsealed, and the consciences of men opened, and the witnessess produced, and the secrets of uncleannesse reveal'd on the house-top, and the mouthes of the wicked, who here for a little while dispute against the wayes of Christ, and cavill at his commands, shall bee everlastingly stopped, when men shall bee like a dephehended theefe: (as the Prophet speaks) then shall their faces be as a flame, full of trembling, confusion and astonishment. The very best that are finde shame enough in sinne, how much they who give themselves over unto vile and dishonourable affections?

Secondly; hereby is noted the *Burden* which wicked men must beare: The foot-stoole beareth the weight of the body, so must the enemies of Christ beare the weight of his heavie and everlasting wrath upon their soules. Sin in the committing seemes very light, no bigger than the cloud which the Prophet shewed his servant, but at last

VERSE 1.

Psal. 72. 9.

Mic. 7. 17.

Esa. 49. 23.

*Qui Constantini
toties perterruit
urbem,*

*Sub Tamberlano
fella canisq; fuit.*

* *Aurel. Victor
& Eutropius.*

Ier. 2. 26.

Ezra 9. 6.

Dan. 9. 7, 8.

Rom. 6. 21.

VERSE I.

Icr. 2. 24.

Matth. 31. 44.

Revel. 6. 16.

last it gathers into such a tempest, as, if the soule make not haste, it will be swept away and overwhelmed by it. Weighty bodies do with much difference affect the sense according to the difference of places wherein they are. That vessell or peece of Timber, which when it is on the water, may be easily drawne with the hand of man, on the land cannot bee stirred with much greater strength: So it is with sin upon the conscience, in the time of committing it, nothing more easie, but in the time of judging it, nothing more unsupportable. A wilde Asse in the time of her lusting traverseth her wayes with much petulancie, and snuffeth up the wind at her pleasure, no man can turne her; but *in her moneth*, that is, when she is burdened with her foale, shee then feeleth the event of her former lustfulnesse, and will easily be overtaken: so the wicked in sinne, however for the time they may beare it out with much mirth, and cheere up their hearts in the dayes of their pleasure, yet when sin is come to the birth, and so fully finished, that it is now ready to bring forth death unto the soule, they shall then finde that it is but like the roll which the Prophet swallowed, sweet to the palate, but bitter in the belly, like a cup of deadly poison, pleasant in the mouth, but torment in the bowels. On whomsoever the Sonne of man shall fall with the weight of his heavie displeasure hee will grinde him to powder. That must needes be a heavie burden which men would most joyfully exchange for the weight of rockes and mountaines to lye everlastingly upon their backes: And yet the wicked at that great day shall all in vaine begge of the mountaines and rockes to fall upon them, and to hide them from the wrath of the Lambe, shall rather choose to live eternally under the weight of the heaviest creature in the world, than under the fury of him that sitteth upon the Throne.

Thirdly, herein likewise is noted the relation of a just and equall *Recompence* unto ungodly men. The Lord useth

useth often to fit punishments to the quality and measure of the sinnes committed. Hee that on earth denied a crumme of bread, in Hell was denied a drop of water. Man who being in honor would needs affect to bee as God, was thereby debased to become like the beasts that perish. *Nadab* and *Abihu* offered strange fire and perished by strange fire from the Lord. ^a *Sodom* and *Gomorrah* burnt in unnaturall lusts, and they were drowned in an unnaturall tempest of fire. ^b That Apostate in Saint *Cyprian*, who opened his mouth against Christ in blasphemy, was immediatly smitten with dumbnesse that he could not open it unto Christ for mercy. ^c *Eutropius* the Eunuch when he perswaded the Emperour to take from malefactors the benefit of refuge at their Altars, did therein prevent his owne mercy, and beg away the advantage of an escape from himselfe, the priviledge whereof he did afterwards in vaine lay hold on. And thus will Christ deale with his enemies at the last day. Here they trample upon Christ in his Word, in his Wayes, in his Members. They make the Saints ^d bow downe for them to goe over, and make them as the pavements on the ground. They tread under foote the blood of the Covenant, and the Sanctuary of the Lord, and put Christ to shame here: and there their owne measure shall be returned into their owne bosome, they shall be constrained to confesse as *Adonibezek*, as *I have done, so God hath requited me*. Yea, this they shall suffer from the meanest of Christs members, whom they here insulted over. They shall then as witnesses, and as it were co-assessors with Christ, judge the very wicked Angels, and tread them under their feet. *They shall take them captives whose captives they were, and shall rule over their oppressors. All they that despised them shall bow themselves at the soles of their feet. They who gathered themselves against Sion, and said, let her be defiled, and let our eye see it: shall themselves be gathered as sheaves into the floore, and the Daughter* of

^a ὁ τῆς κολάσεως
πρὸς τῆς
ἀμαρτίας μίμνη-
ται Chrysost.
Hom. 20. ad pop.
Antioch.
^b Inde panace
pit unde caput
Cyprin. Cy-
prian. de lapsis.
^c Socrat. Histor.
lib. 6. cap. 5. &
Socrat. lib. 8.
cap. 7.

^d Esai. 51. 23.
Heb. 10. 19.
Esai. 63. 18.
Revel. 11. 2.
Heb. 6. 6.
Iudg. 1. 7.
1 Cor. 6. 2. 3.
Rom. 16. 20.
Esai. 14. 3.
Mic. 4. 11, 12, 13.
Mich. 7. 10.

VERSE 1.

of Sion shall arise and thresh them with hornes of iron, and with hooves of brasse. Then (saith the Church) She that is mine enemy shall see it, and shame shall cover her which said unto mee, Where is the Lord thy God? Mine eyes shall behold her; Now shall shee bee troden downe as the mire of the streets. Even so let all thine enemies perish O Lord; but let them which love thee be as the Sunne when he goeth forth in his might.

Lastly, herein we may note the great Power and wisdom of Christ in turning the malice and mischief of his enemies into his owne use and advantage; and in so^a ordering wicked men that though they intend nothing but extirpation and ruine to his Kingdome, yet they shall be usefull unto him, and against their owne wills, serviceable to those glorious ends, in the accomplishing whereof he shall bee admired by all those that beleve. As in a great house there is necessary use of vessels of dishonor, destinated unto sordid and meane, but yet dayly services: so in^b the great House of God, wicked men are his utensils and household instruments, as foot-stooles, and staves, and vessels wherein there is no pleasure, though of them there may be good use. The^c Assyrian was the Rod of his anger, his Axe where with he pruned, and his Saw wherewith hee threatned his people. ^d Pharaoh was a vessell fitted to shew the Glory and Power of his Name. ^e It is necessary saith our Saviour, that offences come, and there^f must be heresies, saith the Apostle. Because as a skilfull Physitian ordereth poysonfull and destructive ingredients unto usefull services: So the Lord by his wisdom doth make use of wicked mens persons and purposes to his owne most righteous and wonderful ends, & secretly and mightily directing their wicked designs, to the magnifying of his owne power and providence, and to the furthering of his people in faith and godlinesse.

a Voluntas Humana, perverse utendo bonis, fit mala: ille Ordinate etiam malis utendo, permanet bonus. Aug. Epist. 120. Sicut ergo ipsi benigne, & patientia, id est, Bonis Dei male utuntur, dum non corriguntur, sic contra Deus etiam malis eorum bene utitur non solum ad iustitiam suam, quae eis digna in fine retribuatur, sed etiam ad exercitationem & profectum sanctorum suorum, ut ex ipsa etiam malorum perversitate, boni proficiant, & probentur, & manifestentur. Idem, epist. 141.

b 2 Tim. 2. 20. c Esai. 10. 5, 6, 7. d Rom. 9. 17. e Matth. 18. 7. f 1 Cor. 11. 19. g Esai. 37. 28, 29.

VERSE 2.

VERSE 2.

*The Lord shall send the Rod
of thy strength out of Sion : Rule
thou in the midst of thine enemies.*



His Verse is a continuation of the former touching the Kingdom of Christ; and it contains the forme of its Spirituall Administration. Wherein is secretly couch'd another of the Offices of Christ, namely his Prophetick Office. For that is as it were the dispensation and execution of his regall Office in the militant Church. The summe of this Administration consists in two principal things: First, in matters military, for the subduing of enemies, and for the defence & protection of his people. Secondly, in matters civil and judicial for the government, preservation and honor of his Kingdome. And both these are in this *Psalm*, the former in the latter part of the verse, *Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies.* The other in the third verse, *Thy people shall be willing, &c.* and the way of compassing & effecting in the former words of this verse, *The Lord shall send forth the Rod of thy strength out of Sion.*

Every King hath his *jura Regalia*, certain roiall prerogatives and peculiar honours proper to his owne Person, which no man can use but with subordination unto him. And if we observe them, we shall find as many of them as exactly belong unto Christ in his kingdom, as to any secular prince in his. First, unto kings do belong *Armamenta-*
ria

Greg. Tholos. de
Repub. lib. 9. c.
cap. 1.

127

VERSE 2.

Rom. 13. 4.
1 Sam. 10. 16,
17.

Gal. 6. 2.
Iam. 2. 8.
Iam. 1. 25.
Pfal. 91. 11.
Prov. 10. 29.

Esa. 26. 13.

Rom. 13. 6, 7.

Pfal. 56. 8.

via publica, the Magazins for military provision, and the power and disposition of publik armes. Therefore he is said by the Apostle to *beare the sword*, because armes properly belong unto him, & unto others under his allowance and protection. So to Christ alone doth belong, & in him only is to be found the publik armory of a Christian man. The weapons of our warfare are mighty onely through him. Nay, he is himselfe the armor and panoply of a Christian, and therefore we are comanded to *put on the Lord Iesus*. Againe, *via publica* is *via regia*; the high way is the Kings way, wherein every man walketh freely under the protection of his Sovereign. So that Law of faith & obedience under which we are to walke, which S. Paul calleth the Law of Christ, is by S. James call'd *lex regia*, a royal Law, and a *Law of liberty*, in which while any man continueth he is under the protection of the promises and of the Angels of Christ. Againe, *Bona a despotis seu incerti Domini*, Lands that are conceal'd and under the evident claime of no other person or lord, do belong unto the Prince, as he that hath the supreme & universall dominion in his countries. And this is most certainly true of Christ in his Kingdome, if any man can once truly say, Lord I am not the servant of any other Master, no other King hath the rightfull dominion, or peaceable possession of my heart, hee may most truly from thence inferre; Therefore Lord I am thy servant, and therefore Lord my heart is thine. True it is Lord our God, that other lords besides thee have had dominion over us: but now by thee only will we make mention of thy Name. Againe, *Vestigalia*, and *Consus*, Tributes, and Customes, and Testifications of Homage and Fidelity are personall prerogatives belonging unto Princes, and as the Apostle saith, *Due unto them*, for that Ministry and Office which under God they attend upon. So in Christs Kingdome there is a Worship which the Psalmist saith is *Due unto his Name*. They which came unto the Temple, which was a Type of Christ, were not

to come empty handed, but to bring Testimonies of their reverence, and willing subjection unto that worship. When *Abraham* met *Melchisedec*, a figure of Christ, as from him hee received a blessing, so unto him he gave an expression of a loyall heart, the tenth of the spoiles.

* When the people of Israel entred into the land of Canaan (which was a type of Christs Church which he should conquer unto himselfe) if any people excepted of the peace which they were first to proclaime, they were to become tributaries and servants unto Israel. So it is said of *Salomon* (whose peaceable kingdome was a type of Christs after his many victories) that he ^a *Levied a tribute of bond-service* upon all the nations about Israel; and ^b that those Princes with whom he held correspondence brought unto him presents, as testimonies of his greatnes and wisdom. So ^c when the wise men, (the first fruits of the Gentiles, after Christ exhibited) came to submit unto his Kingdome, they opened their treasure and presented him with gifts, gold, frankincense and myrrh. Againe, *Monetarum leges & valores*, the authorizing and valuations of publike coines belonging unto the Prince onely, it is his image and inscription alone which maketh them currant. Even so unto Christ only doth belong the power of stamping and creating as it were new ordinances in his Church, nothing is with God, nor should be currant with us which hath not his image or expresse authority upon it. Neither can any man falsify or corrupt any constitution of his without notable contempt against his roiall prerogative. Againe, *Iudicium* or *potestas iudiciaria*, a power of judging the persons and causes of men is a peculiar royalty, the administration whereof is from the prince as

* *Josh. 11. 19* for though there bee an exception made of the Canaanites, *Deut. 20. v. 16*, 17. yet I conceive the equitie of that Law did even amongst them pertaine to all those, who did not out of hardnesse of heart stand out against Israel, but relinquishing their owne idolatries, and abominations, did willingly yeeld up their land to the possession, and their hearts to the religion of Gods People. *vid. Theodoret. qu. 15. in Josh. Aug. qu. 13. 14. in Josh. hic. se-*

rar: in Josh. cap. 6. quest. 43. Et cap. 9. quest. 8. Masium in Josh. cap. 6. p. 117. Hug. Grotium de Jure Belli lib. 2. cap. 13. § 4. Pet. Cuneum de Repub. Heb. lib. 2. cap. 20. weemse of the Iudiciall Lawes. cap. 9. out of Grotius. Jun. in Deut. 20. 16. Deut. 20. 11. a 1 King 4. 21. b 1 King 9. 21. 10. 10. c Matth. 2. 11. Primitie Gentium sacramentalia munera proferunt de Thesauris, &c. Cyprian. serm. de stell. & Magis Briffon. De Reg. Persarum. l. 1. 26.

VERSE 2.

Ioh. 5. 22, 27.

2 King. 11. 12.
1 King. 10. 18.Liv. lib. 30.
Tacit. Ann. l. 4.
Dionys. Hallicar.
lib. 3.Heb. 2. 9.
Psal. 45. 6, 8.

Insigne majestatis regie. Hieron.

the fountain of all humane equity (under God) deposited in the hands of inferiour officers, who are as it were the mouth of the Prince to publish the lawes, and to execute those acts of Justice and Peace, which principally belong to his owne sacred breast. And so Christ saith of himselfe, *The Father hath committed all judgement unto the Sonne, and hath given him authority to execute judgement.* Again *Ius vite & necis.* A power to pardon condemned persons, and deliver them from the terror of the Lawes sentence, is a transcendent mercy, a gem which can shine only from the diadems of Princes. Now unto Christ likewise belongeth in his Church a power to forgive sinnes, it is the most sacred royalty of this prince of peace, not onely to suspend, but for ever to revoke, and as it were, annihilate the sentence of malediction under which every man is borne. There are likewise *Ornamenta Regia*, regall Ornaments, a Crowne, a Throne, a Scepter, and the like. Thus we finde the Romanes were wont to send to those forrain kings with whom they were in league, as testimonies and confirmations of their dignity, *scipionem choroneum, togam pictam, sellam curulem*, an ivory scepter, a royall robe, and a chaire of state. And the like honors we finde in the Scriptures belonging unto Christ, that hee was *crowned with Glory and Honour*, and that hee had a *Throne* and *righteous Scepter* belonging to his Kingdome. Thus wee have seene in severall particulars how Christ hath his Royalties belonging to his Kingdome. Some principall of them we finde in this place; A *Throne*, a *Scepter*, *Ambassadors*, *Armies* for the right dispensing of his sacred power. Wee will first consider the words, and then raise such observations as shall offer themselves.

First, what is meant by the *Rod of Christs strength*, or his *Strong Rod*? It notes a thing which a man may leane upon, or lay the whole weight of his body on in his wearinesse. But being spoken of Christs Kingdome we take it for a scepter or rod of Majesty. I will not hold you with the

The Rod of Christ out of Sion.

131

the variety of acceptions in Expositors. Some take it for the branch that groweth out of that roote of *Iesse*. Some for the wood of the Crosse. Some for the body of Christ borne of a Virgin. Some, for the Kingdome of Christs Power, taking the signe for the thing signified. Some for the power of his mighty workes and preaching. That of the Body, and of the Crosse of Christ, except by them we understand the vertue of Christ crucified, I conceive to be not so pertinent to the purpose of the Prophet. The rest agree in one. But for the more distinct understanding of the words, wee may consider out of the holy Scriptures what things were sent out of *Sion*. And we finde there two things: First, the Word of the Lord, or his holy Gospell. The Law shall proceed out of *Sion*, and the Word of the Lord from *Ierusalem*, *Mis. 4. 2*. Secondly, the spirit of the Lord, which was first sent unto *Sion*; for at *Ierusalem* the Apostles were to wait for the promise of the Father, *Act. 1. 4*. and from thence was shed abroad into the world upon all flesh, *Act. 2. 17*. and both these are the power or strength of Christ. His Word, a Gospell of Power unto salvation, and his Spirit, a Spirit of Power, which is therefore called the finger and the arme of the Lord, *Luk. 11. 20. Matt. 12. 28. Esai. 53. 1*. so by the Rod is meant the Gospell and the Spirit of Christ.

Secondly, what is meant by Gods sending this Rod of Christs strength? It notes, the manifestation of the Gospell, we knew it not before it was sent. The donation of the Gospell, we had it not before it was sent; the invitations of the Gospell, wee were without God in the world, and strangers from the Covenant of promise, before it was sent. The Commission of the Dispensers of the Gospell, they have their patent from Heaven, they are not to speake untill they be sent.

Thirdly, what is meant by sending it out of *Sion*? It is put in Opposition to mount *Sina*, from whence the Law was sometimes sent with thunders and fire, and much

VERSE 2.

Theodoret.
Arnobius.
Aug. & Prosp.
Euthymius.

*I will begin in
this Place &
the Lord Bless
it to my Soul*

Rom. 1. 16.
2 Cor. 4. 7.
10. 4.
1 Cor. 2. 4.
2 Tim. 1. 7.

VERSE 2.

terror unto the people of Israel. *Ye are not come*, saith the Apostle, *unto the mount that burned with fire, nor unto blacknesse and darknesse, and tempest, &c. but ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the City of the living God, the Heavenly Ierusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels, and to Iesus the Mediator of the new Covenant. &c.* Heb. 12. 18. 24. and the Apostle elsewhere sheweth us the meaning of this Allegoricall opposition betweene *Sina* and *Sion*, betweene *Sarah* and *Hagar*, namely the two covenants of the Law and of Grace, or of bondage and liberty, Gal. 4. 24, 25. *Sion* was the place whither the Tribes resorted to worship the Lord, the place towards which that people prayed, the place of Gods mercifull residence amongst them, the beauty of holinesse, the place upon which first the gift of the holy Ghost was powred forth, and in which the Gospell was first of all preached after Christs Ascension. Wee may take it by a *Synechdoche* for the whole Church of the Jewes, unto whom the Lord first revealed his Covenant of Grace in Christ.

Rule Thou] that is, *Thou shalt rule*, which is a usuall forme to put the Imperative for the future Indicative. It is not a command, which hath relation unto any service: but it is a promise, a commission, a dignity conferred upon Christ.

In the midst of thine enemies.] Some understand it of changing the hearts of his enemies, and converting them as captives unto his obedience. Other understand the wonderfull effects of the Power of Christs Kingdome, that he can by his Word and Spirit hold up his Church in despite of all the enemies thereof round about. The Church ever was and will be pester'd with divers kindes of adversaries; Heretikes and Hypocrites, and false brethren, with profanenesse, temptations, persecutions, spirituall wickednesse; and in the midst of all these the Church of CHRIST groweth as a Lilly amongst the Thornes. Now this *In medio*, noteth two things; *Domi-*

AA. 3. 16.

Act. 13. 4, 6.

Rom. 2. 10.

*Qui alieni erant,
tuis esse incipient.
Dignare esse Do-
minus inimico-
rum tuorum. Hi-
eron.*

The Rod of Christ out of Sion.

133

VERSE 2.

nium plenum, and dominium securum, A perfect and full government, without mutilation, without impediment, the Church being amongst the wicked as a rocke in the midst of the sea, or as a garrison in an enemies towne. Media dominantur in urbe, is an expression of such a rule as can no way be hindered or removed. The Church of God is a burdensome stone, they who goe about to remove it out of that place where Christ will plant it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth should gather together against it, Zech. 12. 3. A secure and confident government, so in the Scripture phrase, In the midst notes confidence and security. When the Prophet asked the Shunamite, would'st thou be spoken for to the King, or to the Captaine of the host? she answered, I dwell amongst mine owne people, that is, I am safe and have enough already, 2 King. 4. 13. When they of the Synagogue would have cast Christ downe head-long from the brow of a hill, it is said, that he passed through the midst of them and went his way, that is, with much confidence, safety, and assurance hee withdrew himselfe, Luk. 4. 29, 30. As the Prophet was full of security and quietnesse in the midst of the Syrian siege, 2 King. 6. 14. 16.

The words being thus unfolded, wee may observe in them *Three of Christs principall Regalities, Sceptrum, Solium, and Imperium.* The Scepter, the Throne, and the Power or government of his Kingdome. His Scepter is the Word of his Gospell animated by the Power of his holy Spirit, and accompanied with the blessing and authority of God the Father, who sendeth it abroad into the world. His Throne, from whence this his Scepter is extended, Sion, the Church of the Jewes; His victorious, plenarie, and secure government, *Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies.*

First, the Scepter here is the Gospell and the Spirit of Christ, Christ is a Shepherd towards his Flocke the Church,

VERSE 2.

Church, *Esai. 40. 11. A great Shepherd, Heb. 13. 20.* that notes his *Power and Majesty* over them: and a *good Shepherd, Ioh. 10. 14.* that notes his care and tenderneſſe towards his Sheepe. Kings in the Scripture are called *Shepherds* to lead and to feed, and to governe the people. So *David* is ſaid to have beene taken from the ſheepfolds, *to feed Iacob & Iſrael, Pſa. 78. 71. 2 Sam. 5. 2.* and thus *Chriſt is a Shepherd and a King. I will ſet up one Shepherd over them,* and he ſhall feede them, *Even my ſervant David* — I the Lord will be their God, and *my ſervant David a Prince among them, Ezek. 34. 23, 24.* Prophets and Teachers are in the Scripture likewiſe called *Shepherds, Ier. 23. 1, 4.* and ſo *Chriſt is a Shepherd and a Biſhop.* Ye were as ſheepe going aſtray, but now ye are returned unto the *Shepherd and Biſhop of your ſoules, 1 Pet. 2. 25.* And therefore we finde in the Scripture that Chriſt hath *two paſtorall ſtaves,* to note his great care and double office in his Church. *The Lord is my Shepherd, I ſhall not want. — I will feare no evil, for thou art with me, thy Rod and thy Staffe they comfort me, Pſal. 23. 4. I tooke unto mee two ſtaves, the one I called Beauty, and the other I called Bands, and I fed the ſlocke, Zech. 11. 7.* So then the *Rod of Chriſts ſtrength* or his ſtrong ſtaffe doth in theſe ſeverall relations note unto us three things: As it is a *ſtaffe of ſtrength,* ſo it notes the *power* of Chriſt. As it is the *Scepter of a King,* ſo it notes the *majeſtie* of Chriſt. As it is the *ſtaffe of a Biſhop* or Prophet, ſo it notes the *care* and *ſuperintendencie* of Chriſt over his Church. So then this firſt particular of the Rod of Chriſts Kingdome affords unto us three obſervations: Firſt, that Chriſt in his Goſpell and Spirit is full of power and ſtrength towards the Church. Secondly, that Chriſt in his Goſpell and Spirit is full of Glory and Majeſtie towards his Church. Thirdly, that Chriſt in his Goſpell and Spirit is full of care and of tenderneſſe towards his Church.

Firſt,

The Power of the Gospell.

135

VERSE 2.

First, *The word of the Gospell with the spirit is full of power and strength.* No man will denie that Christ in his owne person is full of power. And as the power of a Prince is principally seene in his lawes, edicts, pardons, and gracious patents: so is the power of Christ wonderfully magnified towards the Church in his Gospell, which unto us is both a Covenant of mercy, and a Law of obedience. We may observe how Christ is frequently pleased to honour his Gospell with his owne Titles and Attributes. And therefore the Apostle speakes of him and his word, as of one and the same thing. *The word of God is quicke and powerfull*—a discerners of the thoughts and intents of the heart, neither is there any Creature which is not manifest *in his sight*, but all things are naked and open *unto the eyes of him with whom we haue to doe.* That which is the word in one verse is Christ himselfe in another, which hath given occasion to some learned men (without any constraining reason (as I conceive) to take the Word there for the essentiall Word of God, or the person of Christ himselfe, to whom I thinke that appellation is not given by any of the sacred Writers, but only by his beloved Disciple Saint *Iohn*. We know that Christ was crucified at Jerusalem, and yet the Apostle saith, that hee was crucified amongst the *Galatians*. Certainly, in that he died *he died but once unto sinne*. Saint *Paul* could not doe that himselfe, which he curseth others for doing, Crucifie againe the Lord of Glory. So then at Jerusalem hee was crucified in his person, and at Galatia in the Ministry of his Word. One and the same crucifying was as lively set forth in Saint *Pauls* preaching, as it was really acted upon Christs person; for Christ is as really present to his Church now in the spirituall dispensation of his ordinances, as hee was corporally present with the Jewes in the dayes of his flesh. And therefore I say it is that we finde the same attributes given to both.

^a *Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God; and*

Heb. 4. 12, 13.

Gal. 3. 1.

^a 1 Cor. 1. 24.

VERSE 2.

b Rom. I. 16.

c I Cor. 3. 6, 7.

d I Cor. 1. 8.

e I Tim. I. 11.

f Act. 3. 15.

g I Joh. I. 1.

h Phil. 2. 16.

i Ioh. 5. 27.

k Iob. 12. 48.

l Luk. I. 69, 77.

Luk. 2. 30.

Esa. 62. 11.

Gen. 49. 18.

m Ioh. 4. 22.

n Heb. 2. 2, 3.

2 Cor. 3. 9.

o Act. 18. 28.

p Act. 13. 46.

q Iam. I. 21.

r 2 Cor. 4. 6.

the Gospell else-where the ^b Power of God and the ^c wisdom of God in a mystery to them that are perfect. Againe, ^d Christ the Lord of glory, and the Gospell the ^e Gospell of glory, or the glorious Gospell. ^f Christ the Prince of life, yea the ^g Word of life, and the ^h Gospell the Word of life too. ⁱ Christ a Iudge, and the ^k Word of Christ a Iudge too. The word which I have spoken the same shall iudge you at the last day. ^l Christ a Saviour and Salvation unto men, *Mine eyes have seene thy Salvation:* And the ^m Gospell of Christ a Salvation too; we know, saith Christ to the woman of Samaria, what wee worship, *for salvation is of the Iewes.* The force of the reason leads us to understand by Salvation the Oracles of God which were committed unto that people, for out of them only it is, that we know what and how to worship, and this is not unusuall in holy Scriptures. ⁿ *If the Word, saith the Apostle, spoken by Angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward: How shall we escape if we neglect so great Salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, &c?* Where wee finde Salvation set in opposition to the Word spoken by Angels, which was the Law of God, or the ministerie of condemnation, and therefore it must needes signifie the Gospell of Christ. ^o *Be it knowne unto you,* saith the Apostle to the unbelieving Iewes, *that the salvation of God, that is, the Gospell of God (as appeareth plainly by the like paralell speech in p another place) is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will heare it.* So the Apostle saith that ^q *the engrafted Word is able to save the soules of men.* All which and many other the like particulars note unto us, That as Christ is the Power and Image of his Father, so the Gospell is in some sort of Christ: For which reason the Apostle, as I conceive, calleth the Gospell ^r *the Face of Iesus Christ: God, who commanded the light to shine out of darknesse, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the*

The Power of the Gospell.

137

the glory of God in the face of Iesus Christ. Where is it that we behold the glorie of God but ^f in a glasse? and what is that glasse? but the word of God as *S. Iames* calls it? *Iam. 1. 23.* Christ is not pleased any other wayes ordinarily to exercise his power, or to reveale his glory, but in these ordinances of his which wee dispense. Therefore he walketh in his Church with a ^a *sword in his mouth*, and with a ^b *Rod in his mouth*, to note that hee giveth no greater testification of his strength than in the Ministerie of his Gospell; which is therefore sometimes called a ^c *sword*, a ^d *hammer*, a *fire*, sometimes onely a ^e *savor of life and death*, to note the mighty working thereof, that can kill as well by a sent as by a wound, as well by a breath as by a blow.

To consider this point a little more distinctly. This Power of the Gospell of Christ appeares in both those regards, as it is a savor of life unto life, and as it is a savor of death unto death. Towards his Church who shall bee saved, and towards his enemies who shall perish. Many wayes is the Gospell of Christ and his Spirit a Rod of strength unto his Church.

First, in their *Calling and Conversion* from the power of Satan unto God. Satan is a strong man, and hee is armed, hath a whole panoply and full provision of militarie instruments, and (which is a great advantage) hath both the first possession, and the full love of the hearts of men before Christ attempts any thing upon them. And therefore that which pulleth a man from under the paw of such a Lion, and forceth him away from his owne palace, must needs bee much stronger than hee. And therefore the Apostle commendeth the power of the word by this argument that it is a sword fit to overcome principalities and powers and rulers of the darkenesse of this world, and spirituall wickednesses in heavenly places. Againe, the old Man in our nature is a strong man too, a Raigning King, which setteth himselfe mightily against the

VERSE 2^o

^f 2 Cor. 3. 18.

^a Revel. 1. 16.

^b Esai. 11. 4.

^c Eph. 6. 17.

^d Ier. 23. 29.

Ier. 5. 16.

^e 2 Cor. 2. 16.

Luk. 11. 20, 21.

Eph. 2. 2.

2 Tim. 2. 26.

Eph. 6. 12, 17.

VERSE 2.

αἰσθητοὶ ἰσχυρῶς
καὶ αὐτῶν καὶ
τῆς ὑπερίαις ἡμῶν
ἐκείνης. Greg.
Nax. Orat. 1.
Mark. 4. 39, 41.

Esaï. 57. 20.

Psal. 114. 5, 6.

the Word and will of Christ, and cherisheth the disease against the remedie. And by that likewise the Apostle commendeth the power of the Gospell, that it is mighty through God to the pulling downe of strong holds, and imaginations or fleshly reasonings. When Christ still'd the windes and the Sea with but two words, *Peace, bee still*, they were exceedingly amazed at his power, and said one to another, *what manner of man is this, that even the windes and the Sea obey him?* The conversion of a man is a farre greater worke than the stilling of the Sea, that will be sometimes calme of it selfe when the furie of the winde ceaseth. The wicked indeed are like the Sea, but not at any time, but *like a troubled Sea when it cannot rest*. The Sea wee know is subject unto severall motions. An inward boyling and unquietnesse from it selfe, its ordinary fluxes and refluxes from the influence of the Moone, many casuall agitations from the violence of the windes, and from its owne wayes, one wave precipitating, impelling, and repelling another: So are the hearts of wicked men by the foaming, estuations, and excesses of naturall concupiscence, by the provisions and materials of sinfull pleasures, by the courses of the world, by the solicitations and impulsions of Satan, by a world of hopelesse casualties and provocations so tempestuous that they alwayes cast out upon the words and actions of men mire and dirt. Now in the dispensation of the word by the ministry of a weake man Christ stillerth the raging of this Sea, quells the lusts, correcteth the distempers, scattereth the temptations, worketh a smoothnesse and tranquillitie of Spirit in the soule of a man. Surely when this is done the soule cannot but stand amazed at its owne recovery, and admire that wonderfull and invisable power which could so suddenly rebuke such raging affections and reduce them unto calmenesse and beautie againe. *What ailed thee, O thou Sea, that thou fleddest, and thou Iordan that thou wert driven backe? ye mountaines that*

The Power of the Gospell.

139

VERSE 2.

that ye skipped like Rammes, and ye little hils like Lambes?
It is an expresseion of Gods power towards his people in their triumphall entrance into the Land of Canaan. Wee may apply it to the conquest and possession which the word takes of the soules of men. What ailed a man that hee was driven backe from his owne channell, and made suddenly to forget his wonted course? what ailed those strong and mountainous lusts, which were as immoveably settled upon the soule as a hill upon his base, to flie away at the voice of a man like a frightened sheepe? what ailed those smaller corruptions and intemperancies, which haply had before lost their names, and were rather customes, and infirmities, than sinnes, to flie away like lambes from the word of Christ? A man went into the Church with a full tide and streame of lusts, every thicker in his heart, every reasoning and imagination of his soule did before shelter whole flockes of evill affections: when hee came out the tide was driven backe, the streame turned, the center of his heart altered, his Forrest discovered, his lusts scattered and subdued. What ailes this man? Hee hath but heard an houres discourse, the same which others heare and their tide riseth the higher by it. Certainly these Divels were not cast out, these streames were not turned backe but by the finger of God himselfe. When the minister of Christ shall whisper in the eares of a dead man, whom no thunder could have awakened, and hee shall immediately rise up and give glory to God, when Christ shall call men to denie themselves, to get aboute themselves, to hate Father and Mother, and Wife and Children, and their owne life, to sell all that they have, to crucifie, and be cruell to their owne members, to pull out their right eyes, to cut off their right hands, to part from those sinnes which before they esteemed their choicest ornaments, and from those too which before they made their chiefe support and subsistence; to stand at defiance with the allurements or discourages

*Any by prediand
loaithe y
y of my d Sawyn
Psonil*

AC. 17. 33. 34.

VERSE 2.

couragements of the world, to bee set up for signes and wonders, for very proverbes of scorne, and objects of hatred to those of their owne house; to receive persecutions as rewards, and entertaine them not with patience onely but with thankfulness and rejoycing; to be all their life long in the midst of enemies, put to tedious conflicts with the powers of the world and of darkenesse; to beleeve things which they have not seene, and to hope for things which they doe not know; and yet maugre all this to refuse to consult with flesh and blood, to stand still more in awe of Gods word, than of any other thing: certainly that which with the voice of a weake man bringeth such great things to passe, must needs bee *Virga virtutis, a Rod of strength*. A Rod like the Rod of *Moses* which can lead us through such seas as these, to one whom wee have never seene nor knowne before, *Esa. 55. 5.*

Secondly, the Gospell of Christ is a *Rod of strength* in the *justification of men*, as it is *Sceptum iustitie*, a *Scepter of Righteousnesse*, a *b* word of Reconciliation, *c* a Gospell of Salvation, *d* a Law of the Spirit of life, *e* a ministratiō of the Spirit, of life, and of Righteousnesse, an *f* opening of prisons and a proclaiming of liberty unto captives, in these respects likewise it is full of power. There was a mighty power in the Law of God typified in those thundrings and terrors with which it was administered upon mount *Sina*; the Apostle calleth it a *g* *School-master* to scourge and drive us unto Christ, and the Psalmist an *h* *iron Rod* able to breake in pieces all the potsherds of the earth. And we know boyes in a Schoole doe not apprehend so much terror in the King as in their Master. Yet in comparison of the Power of the Gospell, the Law it selfe was very *i* *weake and unprofitable*, able to make nothing perfect. The Power of the Law was onely to destruction, the Power of the Gospell for edification. The Law could onely hold under him that was
downe

a Heb. 1. 8.

b 2 Cor. 5. 19.

c Eph. 1. 13.

d Rom. 8. 2. 3.

e 2 Cor. 3. 6. 8. 9.

f Esai. 61. 1.

g Gal. 3. 24.

h Psal. 2. 9.

i Rom. 8. 3.

Heb. 7. 18, 19.

The Power of the Gospell.

141

V E R S E 2.

downe before, it could never raise him up againe. Now the power is farre greater to raise than to kill, to forgive sinnes, than to bind them. Herein is the mighty *strength of Gods mercy* *seene that it can passe by iniquities, transgressions and sinnes.* To ¹ preach the Gospell of Christ in his Name and Authority is an evident argument of that plenary power which is given unto him both in Heaven and Earth. And the very dispensing of this word of reconciliation which is committed unto the Ministers of the Gospell (how basely soever the ungratefull world may esteeme of them) hath honoured them with a title of as great power as a man is capable of, to be called *Saviors*, to have the custody of the keyes of Heaven, ministerially and instrumentally under Christ and his Spirit *to save the soules, and to cover the sinnes of men.* Now then that word which from the mouth of a weake man is able to reconcile a childe of wrath unto God, and by the words of one houre to cover and wipe out the sinnes of many yeeres, which were scattered as thicke in the soules of men as the starres of the firmament, must needs be *virga virtutis, a Rod of strength.*

Thirdly, the Gospell of Christ is a *Rod of strength in the sanctification of men*, as it is *Sceptrum cum unctione*, a Scepter which hath ever an unction accompanying it. As it is a Sanctifying Truth, an Heavenly teaching, a forming of Christ in the soule, a making of the heart as it were his Epistle by writing the Law therein, and manifesting of the power and image of Christ in the conscience. If a man should touch a marble or adamant stone with a seale, and taking it off should see the print of it left behinde, hee could not but conceive some wonderfull and seeret vertue to have wrought so strange an effect. Now our hearts are of themselves as hard as the nether milstone; when then a holy word, so meekely and gently laid on upon them, shall leave there an impression of its owne purity, when so small a thing as a grain of mustard-seed

* Exod. 34. 5,
6, 7.
Mich. 7. 18, 19.
Matth. 9. 6.
1 Matth. 28. 18,
19.

Obed. v. 21.
Iohn 20. 23.
1 Tim. 4. 16.
Iam. 5. 20.

Iohn 17. 17.
Esai. 54. 13.
Gal. 4. 19.
2 Cor. 3. 2.

VERSE 2.

seede shall transforme an earthly soule into its owne nature, when the eyes and hands, and mouth of Christ being in the ministry of his Word spread upon the eyes and hands and mouth of a Childe shall revive the same from death, when by looking into a glasse we shall not onely have a view of our owne faces, but shall see them changed into the image of another face which from thence shineth upon us, how can we but conclude that certainly that word by which such wonders as these are effected is indeed *virga virtutis, a Rod of strength*?

Fourthly, the Gospell of Christ is a *Rod of strength*, in the *Preservation and Perseverance of the Saints*, as it is *Virga germinans*, a Rod like *Aarons Rod*, which blossomed and the blossomes perished not, but remained in the Arke for a Testimony of Gods power. For as those buds, or the *Manna* in the Arke did not perish, so neither doth the Word of the Gospell in the hearts of the faithfull. The Apostle saith, that wee are *kept by the power of God unto salvation*, and S. Iude that *Gods power keepeth the Saints from falling, and presenteth them faultlesse before the presence of his Glory*; and what is this power of God whereby hee doth it, but the Gospell of Christ, which S. Peter calleth *semen incorruptibile*, uncorruptible seed; and the Spirit of Christ, which S. Iohn calleth *semen manens*, an abiding seed? If I should see a tree with perpetuall fruite, without any variation from the difference of seasons, a tree like that in Saint Iohns Paradise which every moneth did bring forth fruite of twelve severall kindes, I should conclude that it had an extraordinary vitall power in it: so when I finde Christ in his Word promising, and by the planting and watering of his Laborers in the vineyard, making good that promise unto his Church; That every branch bringing forth fruite in him, shall not onely bee as *Aarons Rod*, have his fruite preserved upon him, but *shall bring forth more fruite* and shall have *life more abundantly*, how can I but conclude, that

1 Pet. 1. 5.
Iud. v. 24.

1 Pet. 1. 24.
1 Iohn 3. 9.

Iohn 15. 2.
Iohn 10. 10.

The Power of the Gospell.

143

VERSE 2.

that that Word which is the Instrument of so unperishable a condition, is indeede *Virga virtutis* a Rod of strength, a Rod cut out of the Tree of life it selfe?

Fifthly, the Gospell of Christ is a *Rod of strength in comforting and supporting of the faithfull*, as it is *Virga pulchritudinis & colligationis*, a Rod of beauty and of Binding, as it is a word which doth binde that which was broken, and give unto them which mourne in *Sion* beauty for ashes, and the garment of praise for the Spirit of heaviness: as it quencheth all the fiery darts, and answereth all the bloody reasonings of Satan against the soule, as it is a staffe which giveth *comfort, and subsistence in the very vallis of the shadow of death*. The shadow of death is an usuall expression in the Scripture for all feares, terrors, affrightments, or any dreadfull calamities either of soule or body. The whole misery of our naturall condition is thereby signified, *Luk. 1. 79*. Many wayes doth the Prophet *David* set forth the extremities he had been driven unto, my bones are vexed, and dried like a pot-sheard, and turned into the drought of Summer; my couch swimmeth with teares, mine eye is consumed and waxen old with griefe. I am powred out like water, all my bones are out of joint, my heart is like melted wax in the midst of my bowels. Thine arrowes sticke fast in me, thine hand presseth me sore, there is no soundnesse in my flesh, my wounds stinke and are corrupt, I am feeble and sore broken, I have roared by reason of the disquietnesse of my heart. Innumerable evils compasse mee about, I am not able to looke up. Fearefulnesse and trembling are come upon me and horror hath overwhelmed mee. My soule is among Lions, I lie amongst them that are set on fire. The waters are come in unto my soule. I sinke in deepe mire; the floods overflow me, &c. These all, and the like are comprehended in that one word, *The shadow of death*. And in that it was onely the Word, and the Spirit of God which did support him; *This is my comfort*

Esa. 61. 1, 3.

Psal. 23. 4.

Psal. 119. 50, 92.

VERSE 2.

2 Chron. 32. 8.

Matth. 4. 4.

1 Tim. 4. 5.

Rom. 1. 3. 14.

1 John 2. 16.

in my affliction, saith he, for thy Word hath quickned mee. When my afflictions had brought me to the very brinke and darknesse of the grave, thy Word revived me againe, and made mee flourish. *Unlesse thy Law had bene my delights, I should have perished in mine affliction.* Now then when I see a man upon whom so many heavy pressures doe meete, the weight of sinne, the weight of Gods heavy displeasure, the weight of a wounded Spirit, the weight of a decayed body, the weight of skorne and temptation from Satan and the World, in the middest of all this not to turne unto lying vanities, not to consult with flesh and blood, nor to rely on the wisdom or helpe of man, but *to leave onely on this word*, to trust in it at all times, and to cast all his expectations upon it, to make it his onely Rod and Staffe to comfort him in such sore extremities, how can I but confesse that this Word is indeede *Virga virtutis*, a Rod of strength?

Lastly, the Gospell of Christ is a *Rod of strength* in *sanctifying* and blessing of *our Temporall things*. As it is *Baculus Panis*, A staffe of bread; *Man liveth not by bread alone, but by the Word which proceedeth out of Gods mouth*, not by the creature, but by the blessing which prepareth the creature for our use. Now it is the Word of God, namely his promises in Christ of things concerning this life as well as that which is to come, that doth sanctifie the creatures of God to those who with thankfulness receive them. The fall of man brought a pollution upon the creatures, a curse upon the stone and timber of a mans house, a snare upon his table a poison and bitterness upon his meat, distractions and terrors upon his bed, emptinesse and vexation upon all his estate; which cleaves as fast thereunto as blacknesse to the skinne of an Ethiopian, or sinne to the soule of man. For all the creatures of God are by sinne mischievously converted into the instruments and provisions of lust. The Sunne, and
all

The Power of the Gospell.

145

VERSE 2.

all the glorious lights of nature but instruments to serve the pride, covetousnesse, adultery, vanity of a lustfull eye. All the delicacies which the Earth Aire or Sea can afford but materialls to feed the luxury and intemperance of a lustfull body. All the honours and promotions of the world but fuell to satisfie the haughtinesse and ambition of a lustfull heart. That Word then which can fetch out this leprosie from the creatures, and put life, strength, and comfort into them againe must needs be *Virga virtutis, a Rod of strength.*

Secondly, the Gospell and Spirit of Christ is a rod of strength, in regard of his and his Churches enemies. Able both to repell, and to revenge all their injuries: to disappoint the ends and machinations of Satan, to triumph and get above the persecutions of men, to get a treasure which no malice nor fury of the enemy can take away, a noblenesse of minde which no insultation of the adversary can abate, a security of condition, and calmenesse of spirit, which no worldly tempests can any more extinguish than the darknesse of a cloud, or the boisterousnesse of a winde can blot out the lustre, or perturb the order of celestially bodies; a Heavenly wisdom able to prevaile against the gates of Hell, and to stop the mouthes of every gain-sayer. The Word hath ever a *Readinesse to revenge disobedience*, as the Apostle speakes; it hardens the faces of men, and armes them, that they may breake all those who fall upon them.

This power of the Word towards wicked men, sheweth it selfe in many particulars: First, in a mighty worke of *Conviction*. The Spirit was therefore sent into the World to convince it by the Ministry of the Gospell, which one word containeth the ground of the whole strength here spoken of; for all, which the Word bringeth to passe, it doth it by the conviction of the Spirit. This *Conviction* is two-fold: A *Conviction unto conversion*, whereby the hearts of men are wonderfully over-

L

ruled

2 Cor. 10. 6.
Ier. 1. 8, 9.
Ier. 6. 27.
Ezek. 3. 8, 9.
Matth. 21. 44.

VERSE 2.

ruled by that invincible evidence of the Spirit of truth, to feele and acknowledge their wofull condition by reason of sinne, so long as they continue in unbeleeefe, to take unto themselves the iust shame and confusion of face which belongs unto them, to give unto God the Glory of his righteous and iust severity if hee should destroy them, and hereupon to be secondly by the terrour of the Lord perswaded to count worthy of all acceptation any deliverance out of that estate which shall bee tendered unto them: To admire, adore, and greedily embrace any termes of peace and reconciliation which shall be offered them. To submit unto the righteousness, and with all willing and meeke affection to bend the heart to the Scepter of Christ, and to whatsoever forme of iudicature and spirituall government he shall please to erect therein. And this magnifies the strength of this Rod of Christs Kingdome, that it maketh men yeeld upon any termes: when wee see the little stone grow into a mighty mountaine, and eate into all the kingdomes of the World; when we see Emperours and Princes submit their neckes and scepters to a doctrine at first every where spoken against, and that upon the words of a few despicable persons, and that such a doctrine too, as is diametrally contrary to the naturall constitution of the hearts of men, and teacheth nothing but selfe-deniall, and this for hope of reward from one whom they never saw, and whom if they had seene, they should have found by a naturall eye no beauty in him for which hee should bee desired; and this reward too, what-ever it bee, deferred for a long time, and in the interim no ground of assurance to expect it, but onely faith in himselfe that promiseth it, and in the meane time a world of afflictions for his names sake; How can wee thinke that a world of wise and of great men, should give care most willingly unto such termes as these, if there were not a demonstrative and constraining evidence of truth and goodnesse therein,

The Power of the Gospell.

147

VERSE 2.

in, able to stop the mouths, and to answer the objections of all gain-sayers? Of this point I have spoken more copiously upon another Scripture. Secondly, there is a *Conviction unto condemnation* of those who stand out against this saving power of the Gospell and Spirit of Grace, driving them from all their strong holds, and constraining them perforce to acknowledge the Truth which they doe not love. Thus wee finde our Saviour disputing with the Jewes, till no man was able to answer him a word; and as he did so himselfe, so he promised that his messengers should doe so too, *I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not bee able to gain-say, nor resist*: And this promise wee finde made good; the enemies of Steven were not able to resist the Spirit by which hee spake: And Apollos mightily convinced the Jewes, shewing by the Scriptures that Jesus was Christ: And this the Apostle numbred amongst the qualifications of a Bishop, that hee should bee able by sound doctrine *to convince the gaine-sayers, and to stoppe the mouthes of those unruly deceivers*, whose businesse it is to subvert men, for this is the excellent vertue of Gods Word, that it *concludeth or shutteth men in* and leaveth not any gappe or evasion of corrupted reason unanswered, or unpresented. Thus wee finde how the Prophets in their ministry did still drive the Jewes from their shifts, and presse them with *Dilemma's*, the inconveniences whereof they could on no side escape: either there must bee a fault in you, or else in God who rebuketh you; but now *what iniquity*, saith the Lord, *have your fathers found in mee, that they are gone farre from mee? Have I bene a wildernesse unto Israel, or a land of darkenesse, wherefore say my people we are lords, we will come no more unto thee? O my people, what have I done unto thee, and wherein have I wearied thee? testifie against me. I raised up of your sonnes for Prophets, and of your young men for Nazarites: Is it not even thus, O yee children of Israel?*

Matth. 22. 46.

Luk. 21. 15.

Act. 6. 10.

Act. 18. 28.

Tit. 1. 9, 11.

Gal. 3. 23.

Ier. 2. 5. 31.

Mic. 6. 3, 4.

Amos 2. 11.

L 2

Here

VERSE 2.

Ier. 5. 7.

Ier. 9. 7.

Esaï. 5. 3.

Ioh. 18. 6.

*Quid iudicatu-
rus faciet qui ju-
dicandus hoc fe-
cit? quid regna-
turus poterit,
qui moriturus
hoc petiuit? Aug.*

Ioh. 14. 12.

Tit. 3. 11.

Wisd. 17. 11, 16.

Luk. 19. 22.

Here the Scripture useth that figure which is called by the Rhetoricians *Communicatio*, a debating and deliberating with the adverse party, an evidencing of a cause so cleerely, as that at last a man can challenge the adversary himselfe to make such a determination, as himselfe shall in reason judge the merits of the cause to require: *How shall I pardon thee for this? and how shall I doe for the daughters of my people?* Set mee in a way, determine the controversie your selves, and I will stand to the issue which your owne consciences shall make. *O inhabitants of Ierusalem, and men of Iudah, judge I pray you betweene me and my Vineyard*, that is, doe you your selves undertake the deciding of your owne cause. When a band of armed men came against Christ to attach him, and at the pronouncing but of two words, *I am he*, fell all down backward to the Earth; wee must needs confesse that there was some mighty power and evidence of Majesty in him that uttered them: what thinke wee can hee doe when hee raigneth and judgeth the world, who did let out so much power when he was to die and to be judged by the world? Now Christ raigneth and judgeth the world by his Word, and that more mightily after his ascending up on high, and therefore hee promiseth his Apostles that they should doe greater workes than himselfe had done. When I shall see a man armed with scorne against Christ in his Word, standing proudly upon the defence of his owne waies by his owne wisdom, and wrapping up himselfe in the mud of his owne carnall reasonings, by a few *postulata*, and deductions from Gods Word, to be enforced to stoppe his owne mouth, to bee condemned by his owne witnesse, to betray his owne succours, and to bee shut up in a prison without barres; when I shall force such a man by the mighty penetration and invincible evidence of Gods V Word, to see in his owne conscience a hand subscribing to the Truth which condemnes him, and belying all those delusions

The Power of the Gospel.

149

VERSE 2.

delusions which he had fram'd to deceive himselfe with-
all; who can deny but that the rod of Gods mouth is
indeed *Virga virtutis*, a rod of strength, an iron rod, able
to deale with all humane reasonings, as a hammer with
a potsherd, which though to the hand of a man it may
feele as hard as a rocke, yet is too brittle to endure the
blow of an iron rod? Strange it is to observe how boldly
men venture on sinnes under the names of custome,
or fashions, or some other pretences of corrupted reason,
contrary to the cleere and literall evidence of holy Scrip-
tures (* the most immediate and grammaticall sense
whereof, is ever soundest, where there doth not some
apparent and unavoidable error in doctrine, or mis-
chiefe in manners, follow thereupon.) Men will justifie
the cause of the wicked for reward, and by dexteritie of
wit put a better colour upon a worser businesse, (as hath
beene observed of *Protagoras* and *Carneades*) and yet
the Lord saith expressely, *Thou shalt not speake in a cause
to wrest judgement, thou shalt keepe thee farre from a false
matter*, for God whom thou oughtest to imitate) will
not justifie the wicked. Men will follow the sinfull fa-
shions of the world, in strange apparell, in prodigious
haire, in lustfull and unprofitable expence of that preci-
ous moment of time, upon the abuse or right improve-
ment whereof dependeth the severall issues of their eter-
nall condition: though the Lord say expressely, *Be not
conformed to this world*; they that walke according to the
course of the world, walke according to the Prince of the
power of the ayre. The Lord will punishe all such as are
clothed with strange apparell, who take up the fashions of
idolaters, or other nations, or other sexes (as that place
is differently expounded.) ^a Nature it selfe teacheth that
it is a shame for a man to weare long haire; nay Nature
it selfe taught that honest Meathen to stand at defiance
with the sinnes of his age, and not comply with the
course of the world, upon that slight apologic, as if the

Ier. 19. 11.

* *Aquin. part 1.
qu. 1. 10. ad
primum.*

*Alphon. a Castro
contra Heref.*

lib. 1. cap. 3.

Gloss. Philolog.

Sacra. l. 2. p. 338.

Hooker l. 5. S. 19.

Tōi hōiō dōyōr

*κρίσις πινύς A.
Gell.*

Esa. 5. 23.

Exod. 23. 2. 7.

Rom. 12. 2.

Ephes. 3. 3.

Zeph. 1. 8.

Hieron.

Theodoret.

Ribera.

a I Cor. 11. 14.

VERSE 2.

b *Neo virtutem aut vitium seculum vocavit. Tacit. in Agric. Homicidium cum admittunt singuli crimen est, virtus vocatur cum publice geritur. Cypri. l. 2. epist. 2. c 1 Cor. 6. 9. Esai. 47. 21. Esai. 28. 17.*

2 Cor. 2. 16.

Levit. 26. 36.

1 King. 22. 27, 28.

Ier. 37. 16, 17. Act. 24. 25.

b *commonnesse* had taken away the *illnesse*; and that which committed by one would have been a sin, being imitated after a multitude were but a fashion. To conclude this particular: The Apostle is peremptory, c *Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor effeminate, nor covetous, nor thieves, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the Kingdome of God*: and the consciences of many men, who yet will never yeeld to the conclusion, cannot choose but subsume, as the Apostle goes on, *such are some of we*, nay, and such we will be too. But now if we should bespeake these men in the word of the Prophet, *Produce your cause, saith the Lord, bring forth your strong reasons, saith the King of Iacob*, they should finde at the last their reasons to be like themselves, vanity and lighter than nothing, that the Word of the Lord will at last prevaile, and sweepe away all their refuge of lyes.

Secondly, the power of the Word towards wicked men is seene in *Affrighting of them*; there is a spirit of bondage, and a savour of death, as well as a spirit of life and libertie which goeth along with the Word. Guilt is an inseparable consequent of sinne, and feare of the manifestation of guilt: If the heart be once convinced of this, it will presently faint and tremble, even at the shaking of a leafe, at the wagging of a mans owne conscience; how much more at the voice of the Lord, which shaketh mountaines, and maketh the strong foundations of the earth to tremble? If I should see a prisoner at the barre passe sentence upon his Judge; and the Judge thereupon surpriz'd with trembling, and forced to subscribe and acknowledge the doome, I could not but stand amaz'd at so inverted a proceeding; yet in the Scripture we finde presidents for it, *Michaiab*, a prisoner, pronouncing death unto *Ahab*, a King: *Jeremie*, a prisoner, pronouncing captivitie unto *Zedekiah*, a King: *Paul* in his chain preaching of judgement unto *Felix* in his robes, and making his owne judge to tremble. It is not for

want

The Power of the Gospell.

151

VERSE 2.

want of strength in the Word, or because there is stoutnesse in the hearts of men to stand out against it, that all the wicked of the world doe not tremble at it, but meerly their ignorance of the power and evidence thereof. The Devils are stronger and more stubborn creatures than any man can be, yet because of their full illumination, and that invincible conviction of their consciences from the power of the Word, they beleeeve and tremble at it. Though men were as hard as rockes, the Word is a hammer which can breake them; though as sharp as thornes and briars, the Word is a fire which can devoure and torment them, though as strong as kingdomes and nations, the Word is able to root them up, and to pull them down, though as fierce as Dragons and Lions, the Word is able to trample upon them, and to chaine them up.

Thirdly, the power of the Word is scene towards wicked men, in that it doth judge them. *Some of man, wilt thou judge, wilt thou judge the bloodie Citie, saith the Lord? yea, thou shalt shew them their abominations.* To note that when wicked men are made to see their filthinesse in the Word, they have thereby the wrath of God, as it were seal'd upon them. *Hee that rejecteth mee, the Word which I have spoken the same shall judge him at the last day,* saith our Saviour: And if all prophecie, saith the Apostle, and there come in one that beleeveth nor, or one unlearned, *he is convinced of all, hee is judged of all,* and the secrets of his heart are made manifest. Nay, the Word doth in some sort execute death and judgement upon wicked men. Therefore it is said that the Lord would *smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips would slay the wicked:* And againe, *I have hewed them by the Prophets, I have slaine them by the words of my mouth.* And therefore the Word of the Lord is called fury by the Prophet, to note that when wrath and fury is powred out upon a land, they are the effects of Gods Word. If a pestilence devoure a city,

James 2. 19.

Ier. 23. 29.

Ier. 5. 14.

Ezek. 2. 6.

Deut. 33. 2.

Ier. 1. 10.

Psal. 91. 13.

Ezek. 22. 27.

Ioh. 12. 48.

1 Cor. 14. 24.

Esai. 11. 8.

Hos. 6. 5.

Ier. 6. 11.

VERSE 2.

Mich. 6. 9.

Ioh. 9. 39.

Luk. 9. 56.

and a sword come and gleane after it, it is the Word only which slayes, they are but the instruments, which are as it were actuated and applied by the Word of God to their severall services. Therefore it is that the Prophet saith, that wise men *see the voice of God, and heare his rod.* A rod is properly to be scene, and a voice to bee heard, but here is a transposition, and as it were, a communication of properties betweene the Word of God, and his punishments, to note that towards wicked men there is a judging and tormenting vertue in the Word; *For judgement, saith our Saviour, am I come into this world, that they which see not might see, and that they which see might be made blinde.* If it bee here objected that Christ saith of himselfe, *The Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them, and that he came not to condemne the world, but that the world through him might be saved;* I answered, that there are two events of Christs comming, and by consequence of his Gospell. The one principall, and by him intended, the other *accidental and occasionall*, growing out of the ill disposition of the subject unto whom hee was sent. The maine and essentiall businesse of the Gospell is to declare salvation, and to set open unto men a doore of escape from the wrath to come; but when men wilfully stand out, and neglect so great salvation, then secondarily doth Christ prove unto those men a stone of offence, and the Gospell a favour of death unto death, as that potion which was intended for a cure by the Physitian, may upon occasion of the indisposednesse of the body, and stubborne radiation of the disease, hasten a mans end sooner than the disease it selfe would have done: So that to the wicked the Word of God is a two-edged sword indeed, an edge in the Law, and an edge in the Gospell, they are on every side beset with condemnation, if they goe to the Law, that cannot save them, because they have broken it, if they goe to the Gospell, that will not save them,

The Power of the Gospell.

153

VERSE 2.

them, because they have contemned it.

Fourthly, the Power of the Word towards wicked men is scene in this, that it doth *ripen their sinne*, and make them so much the more sinfull, and so much the sooner fill up their measure. *If I had not come, saith Christ, and spoken unto them, they had had no sinne, but now they have no cloke for their sinnes.* A tree which is fastned unto a wall, in which the heat of the Sunne is more permanent and united, will bring forth ripe fruit before the ordinary season: so a people upon whom the light of the Gospell hath constantly shined, and which doth often drinke in the raine which falleth upon it, must needs bring forth *Summer-fruit*, sinnes speedily ripe, and therefore bee so much the neerer unto cursing. There is but a yeere betweene such a tree and the fire: we shall never finde that the sinnes of Israel, and of Judah (for which they were at any time plagued with captivity) were so long in ripening as the sinnes of the Canaanites, upon whom there did no light shine. The Land had rest sometimes fortie yeeres, and sometimes fourescore yeeres, but wee never finde that they were suffered to provoke the Lord to his face foure hundred yeeres together: Wee finde when to Ninive hee sent a Prophet to reveale unto them the guilt and merit of their sinnes, he then set them a very short time, in which they should either forsake or ripen them, *Yet fortie dayes and Ninive shall be destroyed.*

Fifthly, the power of the Word towards wicked men is scene even in the *rage and madnesse which it excites in them.* It is a signe that a man hath to doe with a strong enimie when he buckleth on all his harnesse, and calleth together all his strength for opposition. When I see a river without any sensible noise or motion, I am ready to esteeme it a standing poole, but when I looke further and there observe what huge engines it carrieth about, and what weighty bodies it rouleth before it, I then be-
leeve.

Ioh. 15. 22.

Heb. 6. 8.

Amos 8. 1.

Luk. 13. 8, 9.

VERSE 2.

Luk. 4. 28.

Luk. 6. 11.

Act. 5. 17.

Act. 13. 45.

Act. 7. 54.

Ioh. 8. 59.

Act. 6. 10, 11.

Act. 7. 57, 58.

leeve a strength in it which I did not see: so when I see the Word of Christ rouse up the rage and lusts of men, and force them to set up against it strong holds, and high imaginations, even the wisdom and strength of the gates of hell to keepe it out, I must needs then conclude that it is indeed *Virga virtutis*, *A Rod of strength*. The most calme and devout hypocrites in the world have by the power of this word beene put out of their demure temper, and mightily transported with outrage and bitterness against the majesty thereof. One time filled with wrath; another time filled with madness; another time filled with envie and indignation; another time filled with contradiction and blasphemie; another time cut to the heart, and like reprobates in hell, gnashing with their teeth. Such a searching power, and such an extreme contrarietie there is in the Gospell to the lusts of men, that if it doe not subdue, it will wonderfully swell them up, till it distemper even the grave, prudent men of the world with those brutish and uncomely affections of rage and fury, and drive disputers from their arguments unto stones. Sin cannot endure to bee disquieted, much lesse to be shut in and encompassed with the curses of Gods word. Therefore as a hunted beast, in an extremitie of distresse will turne backe, and put to its utmost strength to be revenged on the pursuers, and to save its life: so wicked men to save their lusts will let out all their rage, and open all their sluices of pride and malice to withstand that holy truth which doth so closely pursue them. Thus as beggarly masters deale with their servants, or bankrupts with their creditors, when they should pay them their money (which they are unable to doe) they then picke quarrels, and create pretences to with-hold it; or as froward men in suits of Law, when their cause failes, endeavour to piece it out with rage and passion; so doe wicked men deale with God in his word, when they should pay him that service which he there-
in

The Power of the Gospell.

155

VERSE 2.

in requireth of them, and which they have neither will nor power to doe, when he produceth his cause, and entreteth into controversie with them, convincing them in the court of their owne consciences, so that they are not able to stand out, they have then no other refuge left, but either to submit (which they will in no wise endure) or to flie into the face of the word, and withstand it with malice when they cannot with reason. Till men can bee perswaded to lay apart all filthinesse and superfluitie of naughtinesse, they will never receive the engrafted word with meeknesse. For till then it is a binding word, which scaleth their guilt and condemnation upon them.

Lastly, the mighty power of the word towards wicked men is seene in *altering them*: in their semiperswasions and semiconversions unto goodnesse, in restraining them from those lusts which they dearly love, and in forcing them to those externall conformities which have no inward principles to support them. The humiliation of *Ahab*, the observation of *Herod*, the incomplete perswasion of *Agrippa*, the fore'd obedience and flatteries of the dissembling Jewes, the essayes and offers of hypocrites towards religion, the velleities and hankerings of unresolved wills after Christ, are notable evidences of the Power and Majesty which is in the Gospell. If I should see a mil-stone in the aire not falling constantly and swiftly downe, but swag, and waver, and floate about in a kinde of unresolved motion, as if it were in a deliberation which way to goe, one while yeelding to its owne weight, another while lingering, and by fits attempting to ascend, how could I insufficiently wonder at that secret vertue, and those strange impressions which did retardate the naturall descent of so weightie a body? so when I see men, who still retaine the principles of their owne corrupt nature, which carry them with as strong an impulsion to sinne and hell, as a mil-stone is moved unto its Center, hanker notwithstanding after goodnesse,

Iam. 1. 21.
Mat. 18. 18.
Mark. 16. 16.

1 King. 21. 27.
Mark. 6. 10.
Act. 26. 28.
Psal. 78. 34, 36.
Luk. 9. 57, 61.

The Power of the Gospell.

VERSE 2.

ness, and when they yeeld unto their hulls, doe it not without much hesitancie and conflict of a naturall conscience, I must needs acknowledge a mightie strength in that word which setteth bounds to the raging of so proud a sea.

From hence then the Messengers of Christ who are entrusted with the dispensation of this *Rod of strength*, may be instructed how to behave themselves in that ministry. Few men will lose any thing of that power which is given them, for every thing in its kinde doth affect power. Now Christ hath committed unto us the custody of his owne power, and therefore wee ought to manage it as a *word of power*, able alone by it selfe without the contemperations of humane fancies, or the superstruction of humane opinions to worke mightily to the Salvation of those that beleeeve, and to the conviction of gaine-sayers. Our Commission is to charge even the great men of the world. It is true the Ministers of the Gospell are *Servants to the Church*; In *compassion* to pittie the diseases, the infirmities, the temptations of Gods people: in *Ministerie*, to assist them with all needfull supplies of comfort, or instruction, or exhortation in righteousness; in *humilitie*, to waite upon men of lowest degree, and to condescend unto men of weakest capacitie. And thus the very Angels in heaven are servants to the Church of Christ. But yet we are servants onely for the Churches good, to serve their soules, not to serve their humours. And therefore we are such servants as may *command too*. *These things command and teach, Let no man despise thy youth*. And againe, *These things speake, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority, Let no man despise thee*. No ministers are more despicable than those who by ignorance, or flattery, or any base and ambitious affections betray the power & majesticall simplicity of the Gospell of Christ. When we deliver Gods message we must not then be the servants of men; If I yet please men,

1 Tim. 6. 17.

2 Cor. 4. 5.

1 Tim. 4. 11, 12.

Tit. 2. 15.

1 Cor. 7. 23.

The Power of the Gospell.

157

VERSE 2.

men, I were not then the servant of Christ, saith the Apostle. To captivate the Truth of God unto the humours of men, and to make the Spirit of Christ in his Gospell to bend, comply and complement with humane lusts, is with *Jonah* to play the runnagates from our office, and to prostrate the Scepter of Christ unto the insultation of men. There is a wonderfull majesty and authority in the word when it is set on with Christs Spirit. He taught men *ὡς ἐξουσιάζων*, as one who had power and authority, or priviledge to speake, as one that cared not for the persons of men, and therefore where ever his Spirit is, there will this power and liberty of Christ appeare, for he hath given it to his Ministers, that they may commend themselves in the consciences of those that heare them, that they may harden their faces against the pride and scorne of men, that they may goe out in armies against the enemies of his Kingdome, that they may speake boldly as they ought to speake, that they may not suffer his Word to be bound, or his Spirit to be straitned by the humors of men.

Againe, wee should all labour *to receive the Word in the power thereof*, and to expose our tender parts vnto it. A Cocke is in comparison but a weake Creature, and yet the crowing of a Cocke will cause the trembling of a Lion. What is a Bee to a Beare, or a Mouse to an Elephant? and yet if a Bee fasten his sting in the nose of a Beare, or a Mouse creepe up and gnaw the Trunke of an Elephant, how easily doe so little Creatures upon such an advantage torment the greatest? Certainly, the proudest of men have some tender part into which a sting may enter. The conscience is as sensible of Gods displeasure, as obnoxious to his wrath, as subject to his Word in a Prince as in a beggar. If the Word like *Dauids* stone finde that open and get into it, it is able to sinke the greatest *Goliath*. Therefore we should open our consciences unto that Word, and expect his Spirit to come

Matth. 7. 29.
Matth. 22. 16.
1 Cor. 2. 4.
2 Cor. 3. 17.
2 Cor. 13. 10.
2 Cor. 4. 2.
1er. 1. 6, 7, 8.
Ezek. 3. 8, 9.
Psal. 110. 3.
Eph. 6. 10.

VERSE 2.

Ier. 5. 22.

Psal. 19. 7.
2 Pet. 1. 19.
Act. 13. 34.

1 Tim. 6. 17.

2 Chro. 16. 8, 9.

2 Chr. 17. 9, 10.

come along with it, and receive it as *Iosiah* did with humility and trembling. Wee should learne to feare the Lord in his Word, and when his voice crieth in the city, to see his Name and his Power therein. *Will yee not feare me*, saith the Lord, *will ye not tremble at my presence, who make the sand abound to the sea*. No Creature so swelling and of it selfe so strong and inroaching as the Sea, nothing so small, weake, smooth, and passable as the sand, and yet the sand (a Creature so easily removed, and swept away) decreed to hold in so raging an Element. What in appearance weaker than words spoken by a despised man? and what in the experience of all the world stronger than the raging of an army of lusts? and yet that hath the Lord appointed to tame and subdue these, that men might learne to feare his Power.

Againe, it should teach us to *Rest upon God in all things*, as being unto us all-sufficient, a sunne, a shield, an exceeding great reward in the truth and promises of his Gospell. The word of God is a *sure thing*, that which a man may cast his whole weight upon, and leane confidently on in any extremity. All the Creatures in the world are full of vanity, uncertainties and disappointments, and then usually doe deceive a man most when hee most of all relies upon them; and therefore the Apostle chargeth us *not to trust in them*. But the Word of the Lord is an *abiding Word*, as being founded upon the Immutability of Gods owne Truth, hee that maketh it his refuge, relieth on Gods omnipotency, and hath all the strength of the Almighty engaged to helpe him. *Asa* was safe, while hee depended on the Lord in his promises against the hugest host of men that was ever read of, but when he turned aside to collaterall aides, hee purchased to himselfe nothing but perpetuall warres. And this was that which established the throne of *Iehoshaphat*, and caused the feare of the Lord to fall upon the kingdomes of the lands which were round about him, because hee hono-

red

The Power of the Gospell.

159

VERSE 2.

red the Word of God, and caused it to bee taught unto his people. Whensoever Israel and Judah did forget to leane upon Gods Word, and betooke themselves to humane confederacies, to correspondence with Idolatrous people, to facility in superstitious compliances, and the like fleshly counsels, they found them alwaies to bee but very lies, like waxen and wooden feastes, made specious of purpose to delude ignorant commers; things of so thinne and unsolid a consistence as were ever broken with the weight of those who did leane upon them. Let us not therefore rest upon our owne wisdom, nor build our hopes or securities upon humane foundations, but let us in all conditions *take hold of Gods Covenant*, of this staffe of his strength, which is able to stay us up in any extremities.

Esaï. 56. 2, 4, 6.

Againe, since the Gospell is a Word of such sovereign power, as to strengthen us against all enemies and temptations, to uphold us in all our wayes and callings, to make us strong in the Grace of Christ, (for ever a Christian mans knowledge of the Word is the measure of his strength and comfort) wee should therefore *labour to acquaint our selves with God in his Word*, to hide it in our hearts, and grow rich in the knowledge of it. In Heaven our blessednesse shall consist in the knowledge and communion with the Father and with his Sonne Jesus Christ. So that the Gospell and the Spirit, are to us upon Earth, the preludes and supplies of Heaven, for by them onely is this knowledge and communion begunne. And that man doth but delude himselfe and lye to the world who professeth his desire to goe to Heaven, and doth not here desire to know so much of God as he is pleased to afford to men on the Earth. The Gospell is the *Patent and Charter of a Christian*, all that hee hath to shew for his Salvation; the *treasure* of his wealth and priviledges, all that hee hath to boast in either for this life or another; the *armory* of a Christian, all that hee hath to hold up
against

VERSE 2.

1cr. 10. 25.

Eph. 4. 17, 20.

Rom. 2. 28, 29.

Col. 2. 11.

Philip. 3. 3.

against the temptations and conflicts of his worst enemies; the onely tooke and instrument of a Christian, all that he hath to doe, any action of piety, charity, loyalty, or sobriety withall; the onely glasse of a Christian wherein he may see his owne face, and so learne to deny himselfe, and wherein hee may see the face of God in Christ, and so learne to desire and to follow him. So that upon the matter for any man to bee ignorant of the Gospel is to unchristian himselfe againe, and to degenerate into a Heathen. *Powre out thine indignation upon the heathen that know thee not.* Ignorance makes a man a very Heathen. *This I say and testifie,* saith the Apostle, *that you henceforth walke not as other Gentiles walke in the vanity of their minde: for you have not so learned Christ.* It is not the title, nor the profession which maketh a man a reall Christian, and distinguisheth him from other Heathen men, but the *learning of Christ* in his Spirit and Gospel. For as he who was onely outwardly and in the flesh a Jew, might bee uncircumcised in his heart: so hee who is onely in title and name a Christian, may be a Heathen in his heart; and that more fearefully than Sodome and Gomorah, or Tyre and Sydon, because hee hath put from himselfe the salvation of the Lord, and judged himselfe unworthy of eternall life.

Lastly, if there bee indeede such Power in the Gospel, wee should *labour to beare witnesse unto the testimony which God giveth of his Word in a holy conversation.* It is a reproach cast upon the Ordinances of God when men doe in their lives deny that vertue which God testifieth to bee in them. Wicked men are said to crucifie Christ againe, to put him to shame, to make God a lyar; not that these things can so really bee, but because men in their evill lives carry themselves, as if indeed they were so. And in this sense the Gospel may bee said to bee weake too, because the pride of men holds out against the saving power thereof.

The Power of the Gospell.

161

VERSE 2.

thereof. But these men must know that the word returneth not empty unto God, but accomplisheth some worke or other, either it ripeneth weeds or corne. There is thunder and lightning both in the word, if the one breake not a heart, the other will blast it, if it bee not humbled by the word, it will certainly bee withered, and made fruitlesse. Shall the clay boast it selfe against the fire, because, though it have power to melt waxe, yet it hath not power to melt clay? It is not one and the same power which hardnieth the one and which softneth the other? Is not the word of a sweete savor unto God as well in those that perish as in those that are saved? Certainly there is as wonderfull a power in adding another death to him who was dead before (which upon the matter is to kill a dead man) as in multiplying and enlarging life. And the Gospell is to those that perish a *Savor of death unto death*, such a word as doth cumulate the damnation of wicked men, and treasure up wrath upon wrath. If it doe not convert it will certainly harden, if it doe not save, it will undoubtedly judge and condemne. The Lord doth never cast away his Gospell, he that gave charge to gather up the broken meate of loaves and fishes that nothing might bee lost, will not suffer any crumme of his Spirituall Manna to come to nothing. Yet wee finde the Lord giveth a charge to his Prophets to preach even there where hee foretold them that their words would not bee heard. *Thou shalt speake all these words unto them, but they will not hearken to thee; thou shalt also call unto them, but they will not answer thee.* Sonne of Man, I send thee to the Children of Israel, *to a rebellious Nation, they are impudent Children and stiffe hearted. Yet thou shalt speake my Words unto them*, whether they will heare, or whether they will forbear, for they are rebellion it selfe. *They will not hearken unto thee, for they will not hearken unto mee:* For all the house of Israell are impudent and hard hearted. Certainly when the Lord

M

taketh

Ier. 7. 27.

Ezek. 2. 3, 4, 7.

Ezek. 3. 7.

VERSE 2.

Ezek. 3. 3. 2. 10.

Ier. 17. 16. 28. 6.

Ier. 15. 16.

taketh paines by his Prophets to call those who will not heare, he doth it not in vaine, they shall know at length that a Prophet hath beene amongst them. Therefore as the Apostle saith that the Gospell is a sweet Saviour even in those that perish. So wee finde those messages which have contained nothing but curses against an obstinate people have yet beene as honey for sweetnesse in the mouth of those that preached them. I did eate theroule saith the Prophet, and *it was in my mouth as honey for sweetnesse*, and yet there was nothing in it written but lamentations, and mourning, and woe. *Jeremie* did not desire the woefull day, but did heartily say Amen to the false Prophets, in their predictions of safety; yet in regard of his ready service unto God, and of that Glory which God would worke out unto himselfe in the punishment of that sinnefull people, the word of Prophecie which was committed unto him was the joy and rejoycing of his heart; so that in all respects the Gospell of Christ is a Word of power, and therein wee doe and must rejoyce.

We observed before that this Rod of strength is both *Sceptrum Majestatis*, and *Pedum Pastorale*. Both the Scepter of Christ as he is a King, and his Pastorall staffe as hee is a Bishop. It denoteth the Administration of Christs Kingdome, which consisteth in the dispensing of his Gospell, as it is a word of Majesty, and of care. So then here are (as I before observed) two observations yet remaining to be noted out of these words, *Virga Virtutis*, the Rod of thy strength.

The first, that *the Gospell of Christ accompanied with his Spirit is a word of great Glory and Majesty*. For wee must ever make these concomitants, *we preach the Gospell* saith Saint Peter, *with the Holy Ghost sent downe from Heaven*, 1 Pet. 1. 12. And indeed the Spirit is peculiar to the Gospell, and not belonging to the Law at all, if we consider it alone by it selfe, under the relation of a distinct covenant.

The Glorie of the Gospell.

163

covenant. For though as it proceedeth out of *Sion*, that is, as it is an appendix and additament unto the Gospell, it tends unto liberty, and so commeth not without the Spirit; yet by it selfe alone it gendreth nothing but bondage. And therefore when the Apostle sheweth the excellency of the Gospell above the Law, hee calleth one a Ministration of death and of the letter, the other a Ministration of the Spirit and Life. To shew that properly the Spirit belongeth unto the Gospell of grace. Now then this Spirituall Gospell of Christ is the Scepter of his Kingdome, and therefore as it is *insigne regium*, an ensigne of royalty, it importeth Glory and Majesty. It is a *Gospell full of Glory*. Wee may observe that the very *Typicall prefigurations* of that mercy, which is the sole businesse of the Gospell of Christ are in the Scriptures honoured with the name of *Glory*. *The garments of the Priests*, being Types of the Evangelicall ^a Righteousnesse of the Saints, were ^b made for glory and beauty. The Tabernacle, which was ordained for an evidence and seale of Gods Evangelicall presence with that people, is called by the Prophet *Dauid* ^c *Tabernacle of honor*, the place which God did use to fill with his owne Glory. The Ark of God, which was nothing else but *Evangelium sub velo*, the Gospell under veiles and shaddowes, is called by an excellency ^d *The Glory of Israel*, which is the attribute of Christ, ^e *All kings shall see thy Glory*. The Temple at *Ierusalem* was the place of Gods Rest, ^f *This is my Rest for ever, here will I dwell*. Arise O Lord God into thy Resting place, thou and the Arke of thy strength. It was so called to note, first the ^g *stabilitie* of Gods Evangelicall covenant in Christ, it was not to be changed, nor to bee repented of; but to bee sure and fixed in Christ for ever. His Kingdome, ^h a Kingdome which was not to bee shaken, his Priesthood ⁱ a Priesthood which was not to passe away, his teaching ^k a teaching which was to continue to the worlds end. And secondly, to note the ^l *de-*

VERSE 2.

Mic. 4. 2.
Rom. 8. 3.
Iam. 1. 25.
Gal. 4. 24.
2 Cor. 3. 6, 7.

a Revel. 6. 11.
7. 14. 19. 8.
b Exod. 28. 2.
40.
c Psal. 26. 8.
Exod. 40. 34.

d 1 Sam. 4. 22.
e Esai. 62. 2.
f Psal. 132. 8. 14.
2 Chro. 6. 41.

g Esai. 55. 3. 54.
9. 10.
Heb. 3. 6. 13.

h Heb. 12. 28.
i Heb. 7. 24.

k Math. 28. 20.
l Math. 3. 17.

VERSE 2.

Jer. 9. 24.
Mic. 7. 18.
m Esai. 11. 10.
Jer. 17. 13.
Esai. 60. 7.
Esai. 64. 11.
1 King. 8. 11.

n Mal. 4. 2.

o Hag. 2. 7. 9.

p Heb. 9. 13, 14.

q Esai. 40. 5.
Esai. 66. 18.
Luk. 2. 32.
r Col. 1. 27.
Iam. 2. 8.
2 Cor. 3. 8, 9.
1 Thef. 2. 12.

f 1 Pet. 1. 12.

light of God in Christ, and in the mercy which through him was unto the world revealed; Therein the Lord resteth and repositeth himselfe, as in the crowne and accomplishment of all his workes. And this ^m Temple is called a *glorious Rest*, a *glorious high Throne*, a *house of Glory*, of beauty and of holinesse. It is said at the first Dedication thereof, that the *Glory of the Lord filled it*. It was not the gold or silver (wherewith before that Dedication it was beautified) wherein the glory thereof did consist, but in the evidence of Gods presence; which at that time was but a cloud, whereas the true glory thereof himselfe was ⁿ a *Sunne* as the Prophet calls him. And with this did the Lord fill the second Temple, which for this cause is said to have beene ^o more glorious than the former, though in the magnificence of the structure farre inferiour. Now then as the Apostle in a case of just alike proportion, useth a *ὑπερβαλον*, a terme of excessse, when hee speaketh of the substance in comparison of the Type p If the blood of bulls and goats did Sanctifie to the purifying of the flesh, *How much more* shall the blood of Christ? So may wee in this case. If the Types of Evangelicall things were thus glorious, how much more glorious must the Gospell it selfe needs bee? And therefore, as I before observed in other things, so in this is it true likewise, that Christ and his Gospell have the same attribute of Glory frequently given unto them. q *Christ is called the Glory of the Lord, and of his people Israel*: And the r *Gospell a Glorious Mystery, a Royall Law, Ministration of Glory*; Nay *Glory it selfe*, for so I understand that place of the Apostle, that yee would walke worthy of God, who hath called you unto his Kingdome and Glory, that is, unto the knowledge of his Gospell, for of that in all the antedecedent parts and in the verse immediatly following doth the Apostle speake. A ^f *Glory* which draweth the study and amazement of the most glorious creatures of God unto it.

The Glorie of the Gospell.

165

VERSE 2.

To consider this point more particularly: The glory and Majestie of the Gospell of Christ appeareth principally in foure things: in the *Authour* of it: in the *Promulgation* and publishing of it: in the *Matter* which it containes: and in the *Ends*, purposes, or uses for which it serves.

First, in the *Authour* of it: Many things of small worth have yet growne famous by the Authours of them, and like the unprofitable children of renowned Progenitors, hold their estimation and nobilitie from the parents which begate them. And yet from men who are uncleane, there will ever descend some uncleannesse upon the workes which they doe. But the Gospell is therefore indeed a glorious Gospell, because it is the *Gospell of the blessed God*. There is glory in all the workes of God, because they are his, for it is impossible that so great a workman should ever put his hand to an ignoble worke: And therefore the Prophet *David* useth his *glory and his handy worke* promiscuously for the same thing; *The heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament sheweth his handy worke*: to note that there is an evidence of glory in any thing which hee puts his hand unto: And yet the Prophet there sheweth that there is more glory in the law of his mouth, than in the workes of his hands. The Lord is better known by Sion, and his name greater in Israel, than in al the world besides: the more God doth communicate himselfe unto any of his workes, the more glorious it is. Now there is nothing wherein God hath so much put himselfe, wherein he may be so fully known, communicated with, depended upon, and praised, as in his Gospell. This is a glasse in which the blessed Angels doe see and admire that unsearchable riches of his mercy to the Church, which they had not by their owne observation found out from the immediate view of his glorious presence. In the Creatures we have him a God of power and wisdome, working all things in number,

M 3 weight,

VERSE 2.

weight, and measure, by the secret vigour of his providence upholding that being which he gave them, and ordering them to those glorious ends for which he gave it. In the law we have him a God of vengeance and of recompence, in the publication thereof threatening, and in the execution thereof inflicting wrath upon those that transgresse it. But in the Gospell, we have him a God of bountie and endlesse compassion, humbling himselfe that he might be mercifull to his enemies, that he might himselfe beare the punishments of those injuries which had beene done unto himselfe, that he might not offer onely but beseech his owne prisoners to bee pardoned and reconciled againe. In the Creature he is a God above us, in the Law he is a God against us; onely in the Gospell hee is *Immanuel*, a *God with us*, a God like us, a God for us.

There is nothing doth declare God so much to bee God as his mercy in the Gospell. He is invisible in himselfe, we cannot see him but in his Sonne. Hee is unapproachable in himselfe: wee cannot come unto him but by the Sonne. Therefore, when hee maketh himselfe knowne in his glory to *Moses*, hee sendeth him not to the Creation, nor to mount Sinai, but putteth him into a *rocke* (being a resemblance of Christ) and then maketh a proclamation of the Gospell unto him. *Moses* his prayer was, *I beseech thee shew me thy glory*. How doth the Lord grant this Prayer? *I will make all my goodnesse to passe before thee*, and then revealeth himselfe unto him almost all by mercy. *The Lord, the Lord God, mercifull and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodnesse and truth, keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity, transgression and sinne*, to note unto us that the glory of God is in nothing so much revealed as in his goodnesse. *Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his people?*

Besides, though the Law be indeed from God, as from the

Exod. 33. 18, 19.

Exod. 34. 6, 7.

Mich. 7. 18.

The Glory of the Gospell.

167

VERSE 2.

the Authour of it, so that in that respect there may seeme to bee no difference of excellencie betweene that and the Gospell, yet wee must observe that by the remainders of Creation, though God should not have revealed his Law againe unto *Moses* in the mount, much of the Law, and by consequence of God himselfe might have beene discover'd by humane industry, as wee see by notable examples of the philosophers and grave heathen. But the Gospell is such a mystery as was for ever hidden from the reach and very suspicion of nature, and wholly of divine revelation. *Eye hath not seene, nor eare heard, neither have entred into the hearts of men the things which God hath prepared for them that love him;* the Apostle speaketh it of the mystery of the Gospell; noting that it is above the observation, or learning, or comprehension of nature, so much as to suspect it; nay, the naturall inquirie of the Angels themselves could never have discovered it, even unto them it is *made knowne by the Church*; that is, if it had not beene for the Churches sake that God would reveale so glorious a myserie, the Angels in heaven must have been for ever ignorant of it. So extremely desperate was the fall of man, that it wanted the infinite and unsearchable wisdom of God himselfe to finde out a remedie against it. If the Lord should have proceeded thus farre in mercy towards man and no farther; Thou art a wretched Creature, and I am a righteous God; yea, so heavie is my wrath, and so wooll thy condition, that I cannot choose but take compassion upon thee; and therefore I will put the matter into thine owne hands; requisite it is that my pittie towards thee should not swallow up the respects to mine owne justice and honour, that my mercy should bee a righteous and a wise mercy. Consult therefore together all ye children of men, and invent a way to reconcile my justice and mercy to one another, set mee in a course to shew you mercy, without parting from mine

Rom. 16. 25.

1 Cor. 2. 7, 9.

Ephes. 3. 9, 10.

VERSE 2.

owne right, and denying the righteous demands of mine offended justice, and I will promise you to observe it; I say, if the mercy of the Lord should have confin'd it selfe within these bounds, and referr'd the method of our redemption unto humane discoverie, we should for ever have continued in a desperate estate, everlastingly unable to conceive, or so much as in fancy to frame unto our selves a way of escape. As the Creatures before their being could have no thought or notion of their being educ'd out of that nothing which they were before. So man fallen could not have the smallest conjecture or suspicion of any feaseable way to deliver himselfe out of that misery into which he fell. If all the learning in the world were gather'd into one man, and that man should imploy all his time and studie to frame unto himselfe the notions of a sixth or seventh sense, which yet are as expressly fashion'd amongst those infinite *Idea's* of Gods power and omniscience, as these five which are already created, he would be as totally ignorant of the conclusion he sought at last as hee was at first. For all humane knowledge of naturall things is wrought by a reflexion upon those Phantasmes or *Idea's*, which are impressions made from those senses wee already use, and are indeed nothing else but a kinde of nottionall existence of things in the memory of man wrought by an externall and sensible preception of that reall existence which they have in themselves. And yet in this case a sixth or a seventh sense would agree *in genere proximo*, and so have some kinde of Cognation with those wee already enjoy. But a new Covenant, a new life, a new faith, a new salvation are things *oto genere*, beyond the straine and sphere of nature. That two should become one, and yet remaine two still, as God and man doe in one Christ, that hee who maketh should bee One with the thing which himselfe hath made; that hee who is above all should humble himselfe, that hee who

filleth

The Glorie of the Gospell.

169

VERSE 2.

fillet all should emptie himselfe; that hee who blesseth all should be himselfe a curse; that hee who ruleth all should be himselfe a seryant, that he who was the prince of life, and by whom all things in the world doe consist, should himselfe be dissolved and dye, that mercy and justice should meet together, and kisse each other, that the debt should be payed & yet pardoned, that the fault should bee punished and yet remitted, that death like *Sampsons* Lion should have life and sweetnesse in it, and be used as an instrument to destroy it selfe; these and the like Evangelicall truths are mysteries which surpasse the reach of all the princes of learning in the world. ^a It is to be beleaved by a spirituall light, which was not so much as possible to a humane reason. Wee may observe that every person in the Trinitie setteth himselfe to teach the mystery of the Gospell. The ^b Father revealeth it unto men, *Flesh and blond hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. It is written in the Prophets, They shall be all taught of God, Every man therefore that hath heard and learned of the Father, cometh unto me.* The Son likewise teacheth it unto men, therefore hee is called the ^c *Angell of Gods Covenant and Counsell*, that is, the Revealer thereof, because unto the world he made knowne that deepe project of his Fathers counsell touching the restoring of mankind. ^d *No man hath seen God at any time, the onely begotten Sonne which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him.* He only it is who openeth the bosome of his Father, that is, who revealeth the secret and mysterious counsels, and the tender and compassionate affections (for the bosome is the seat of secrets and of Love) of his Father unto the world. And therefore he is said to be a ^e *Teacher sent from God*, and to be ^f *the Lord which speaketh from heaven* in the ministry of his Gospell; and the doctrine which he teacheth is called a ^g *heavenly doctrine*, and a ^h *heavenly calling*, and a ⁱ *high calling*, and oft by the Apostle to the Hebrewes ^k *in heavenly things*;

^a Non humana ratione possibile, sed spiritus efficaciacredibile.

Ambros.

Ideocertumquia impossibile. Tert.

^b Mat. 16. 17.

Ioh. 6. 45.

^c Officii non natura vocabula quia magnum cogitatum patris super hominis restitutione annunciat seculo. Tertull.

^d *Ioh. 1. 18.*

^e *Ioh. 3. 2.*

^f *Heb. 12. 25.*

^g *Ioh. 3. 12.*

^h *Heb. 3. 1.*

ⁱ *Phil. 3. 14.*

^k *Heb. 8. 5.*

Heb. 9. 23.

VERSE 2.

1 Iam. 3. 17.

m Ioh. 16. 8, 11.

n 1 Cor. 2. 10,

11, 12.

o Rom. 8. 2.

p 2 Cor. 3. 8.

q Ephes. 1. 17.

Eph. 3. 16, 19.

r 1 Pet. 1. 11, 12.

r 1 Cor. 12. 3.

r Mat. 12. 14.

Joh. 8. 48.

r 1 Cor. 1. 24.

u 2 Thes. 2. 13, 14

Act. 16. 14.

*Deus nos adjū-
vat & ut scia-
mus, & ut ame-
mus, Aug.
Epist. 143.*

things, to note that they are not of a naturall or earthly condition, and therefore not within the comprehension of an earthly understanding. ¹ It is a *wisedome which is from above*. The holy Ghost likewise is a Revealer of the Gospell unto the faithfull. He was sent that hee might ^m *Convince the world not onely of sinne, but of righteousnesse and judgement too*, which are Evangelicall things. ⁿ *The spirit searcheth all things, even the deepe things of God*, that is, his unsearchable love; wisedome and counsell in the Gospell. Therefore the Gospell is called ^o *The Law of the spirit of life*, and the ^p *ministration of the spirit*, and the ^q *Revelation of the spirit*, and ^r *No man can call Iesus Lord but by the holy Spirit*, that is, though men may out of externall conformity to the discipline and profession under which they live, with their mouthes acknowledge him to be the Lord; yet their hearts will never tremble, nor willingly submit themselves to his obedience, their conscience will never set to its seale to the spirituall power of Christ over the thoughts, desires, and secrets of the soule, but by the over-ruling direction of the holy Ghost. Nature taught the Pharises to call him ^r *Beelzebub* and Samaritan, but it is the Spirit onely which teacheth men to acknowledge him a Lord. ^r *Christ is not the power nor the wisedome of God to any, but to those who are called*, that is, to those unto whose consciences the Spirit witnesseth the Righteousnesse which is to be found in him. So then the Publication of the Gospell belongeth unto men, ^u *but the effectuall teaching and revelation thereof unto the soule is the joynt worke of the holy Trinitie*, opening the heart to attend, and perswading the heart to beleve the Gospell, as a thing worthy of all acceptation. Thus the Gospell is a Glorious thing in regard of the Originall and Authour of it.

From whence wee may inferre, that what-ever men thinke of the ministerie and dispensation of the Word, yet

The Glory of the Gospell.

171

VERSE 2.

yet undoubtedly the neglect and scorne which is shewed unto it, is done unto Christ himselfe, and that in his glory: hee that receiveth not his Word, rejecteth his person; and the sinne of a man against the words which we speake in the name and authoritie of Christ, and in the dispensation of that office wherewith hee hath entrusted us, is the same with the sinnes of those men who despised him in his owne person. You will say Christ is in heaven, how can any injuries of ours reach unto him? Surely though he be in heaven, (which is now the Court of his royall residence) yet hee hath to doe upon earth, as one of the chiefe territories of his dominion, and, in the ministerie of his Word, hee speaketh from heaven still. Hee it was, who, by his Ambassadour Saint *Paul*, came and preached Peace to the Ephesians, who were as farre off. *His spirit it was which in the Prophets did testifie of his sufferings and glory.* Hee it was who gave manifest prooffe of his owne power, speaking in his Apostles. He then who refuseth to obeye the words of a Minister in the execution of his office, when hee forewarneth him of the wrath to come, and doth not discern the Lords voyce therein, but in despite of this ministeriall citation unto the tribunall of Christ, will still persist in the way of his owne heart, and as he hath beene, so resolveth to continue, a swearing, blasphemous, luxurious, proud, revengefull, and riotous person, thinking it basenesse to mourne for sinne, and unnecessary strictnesse to humble himselfe to walke with God; and yet, because all men else doe so, will professe his faith in the Lord Jesus; that man is a notorious lier, yea (as the Apostle speaketh) *he maketh God a lier too*, in not beleeving the record which he giveth of his Sonne, which is, that hee should *wash away the filth, and purge out the blond of his people with a spirit of judgement, and a spirit of burning*: that he should *sit as a refiner and purifier of silver, purging his priests, that they might offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness.*

Hee

Ioh. 1. 2. 48.

Heb. 12. 25.

Eph. 2. 17.

1 Pet. 1. 11.

2 Cor. 13. 3.

1 Ioh. 5. 10.

Esa. 4. 4.

Mal. 3. 3.

VERSE 2.

Ezek. 36. 25, 27.

Psal. 19. 9.

Heb. 9. 14.

Esa. 32. 15.

Act. 15. 9.

1 Tim. 1. 5.

Hee walketh *contrary to that Covenant of mercy* which he professeth to lay hold on; for this is one of the great promises of the Covenant, *I will sprinkle cleane water upon you, and you shall be cleane from all your filthinesse, and from all your idols will I cleanse you. I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walke in my statutes.* Hee walketh *contrary to the quality of that feare of God*, which yet he professeth to feele as well as others: *For the feare of the Lord is a cleane thing.* Hee walketh *contrary to the vertue of that bloud*, with which notwithstanding hee professeth to bee sprinkled: *for the bloud of Christ cleanseth not onely the lives, but the very consciences of men from dead workes*: that is, makes them so inwardly labour for purity of heart, as that they may not be conscious to themselves of any, though the most secret allowed sinne. Hee walketh *contrary to the fruitfulnessse of that grace* which alone he professeth to boast in: for the Spirit of grace which is powred from on high, maketh *the very wildernesse a fruitfull field.* He walketh *contrary to the properties of that faith*, by which alone hee hopeth to be saved. *For true faith purifieth the heart*; and therefore *a pure heart and a good conscience* are the inseparable companions of an *unfained faith*. And therefore what-ever verball and ceremonious homage hee may tender unto Christ, yet in good earnest he is ashamed of him, and dares not preferre the yoke of Christ before the lusts of the world, or the reproaches of Christ before the treasures of the world.

Why should it be treason to kill a Judge in his ministerie on the bench? or esteemed an injurie to the state to doe any indignitie to the Ambassadour of a great prince? but because in such relations they are persons publike and representative, *ut eorum bona malaque ad Rempublicam pertineant*? why should the supreme officer of the kingdome write *Teste meipso* in the name and power of his Prince, but because he hath a more immediate

The Glory of the Gospell.

173

VERSE 2.

diate representation of his sacred Person, and commission thereunto? Surely the case is the same betweene Christ and his Ministers in their holy function. And therefore we finde the expressions promiscuous: sometimes εὐαγγέλιον τοῦ Χριστοῦ, *the Gospell of Christ*; and sometimes εὐαγγέλιον μου, *My Gospell*; sometimes τὸ κήρυγμα ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, *The Preaching of Iesus Christ*; and sometimes τὸ κήρυγμα μου, *My preaching*; in the vertue of which *synergie* and *co-partnership* with Christ and with God, as hee saveth, so we *save*; as he forgiveth sinnes, so we *forgive them*; as he judgeth wicked men, so we *judge them*; as hee beseecheth, so wee *also beseech*, saith the Apostle, *that you bee reconciled, and receive not the grace of God in vaine*. Wee by his Grace, and * he by our Ministry. Hee therefore that despiseth any conviction out of the Booke of God (and he that obeyeth not doth despise, for the Lord calleth disobedience, rebellion, stubbornnesse, and a rejecting of his Word, 1 Sam. 15. 22, 23.) He that persisteth in any knowne sinne, or in the constant omission of any evident duty, fighteth against Christ himselfe, throweth away his owne mercy, stoppeth his eares at the entreaties of the Lord, and committeth a sinne directly against Heaven. And if hee so persist God will make him know that there is flaming fire prepared for those that obey not the Gospell of our Lord Iesus Christ, 2 Thes. 1. 8.

Therefore whensoever wee come unto the Word read or preached, wee should come with an expectation to heare Christ himselfe speaking from Heaven unto us, and bring such affections of submission and obedience as becommeth his presence. *Let him that hath an eare heare what the spirit saith unto the Churches. I will beare what God the Lord will speake, for hee will speake peace unto his people. Christs sheepe discern his voice* in the dispensation of the Gospell, and will not know the voice of strangers. And this was the honour of the Thessalonians and the men of Berea, that in the preaching of the Word they

Rom. 15. 19.

Rom. 2. 16.

Rom. 16. 25.

1 Cor. 2. 4.

1 Cor. 3. 9.

2 Cor. 6. 1.

1 Tim. 5. 20.

1 John 20. 23.

Ezek. 20. 4.

2 Cor. 5. 20.

* δι' ἡμῶν ὅτι τὸ
ἐκείνου ἀναδείξαι
τοῦ ἑρμηνεύ
Chrysost.

Revel. 2. 7.

Psal. 85. 8.

1 John 10. 4, 5.

1 Thes. 2. 13.

Act. 17. 11.

VERSE 2.

Ier. 13. 15, 17.

Iam. 1. 21.

Mal. 1. 13.

Mal. 3. 13.

מלך מלך מלך מלך

מלך מלך מלך מלך

Act. 7. 51.

Iam. 1. 19, 20.

they did set themselves as in Gods presence, expecting in it his authority, and receiving it in his Name. Dareth any man to rush with a naked weapon into the presence of his Prince, and with scorne to throw backe his owne personall commands into his face againe? And shall wee dare to come armed with high thoughts, and proud reasonings, and stubborne resolutions against the Majesty of the Lord himselfe, who speaketh from Heaven unto us? *Receive with meekenesse*, saith the Apostle, *the ingrafted Word, which is able to save your soules.* The Word doth not mingle nor incorporate, and by consequence doth not change nor save the soule, but when it is received *with meekenesse*, that is when a man commeth with a resolution to lay downe his weapons, to fall downe on his face, and give glory to God; he that is *swift to wrath*, that is, to set up stout and fretfull affections against the purity and power of the Word, to snuffe against it, and to fall backward like pettish children which will not beeeled, *will bee very slow to heare or to obey it, for the wrath of man doth not worke the righteousness of God.* A proud hearer will be an unprofitable liver. Ever therefore come unto the Word with this conclusion; It may be this day will God strike me in my master veine, I am an usuall profaner of his glorious Name; a Name which I should feare for the greatnesse, and love for the goodnesse, and adore for the Holinesse of it; hee will peradventure lay close to my conscience that guilt which himselfe hath declared to be in this great sinne; that whatsoever is more than yea and nay is sinne unto me, and whatsoever is sin, is Hell to my soule. I am a vaine person, a companion of loose and riotous men; It may bee the Lord will urge upon my conscience the charge of his owne Word, not to company with fornicators, to have no fellowship with the unfruitfull works of darkenesse, not to follow a multitude to doe evill, and that though hand joyne in hand, yet sinne shall not goe unpunished. I am unprofitable, loose,

The Glorie of the Gospell.

175

VERSE 2.

loose, and rotten in my discourse, and hee will ply mee with his owne authority, that for every idle word I must render an account. I am full of oppression and unjust gain, and the Lord will now urge the instructions of *Nehemiah*, and the restitution of *Zacharias* upon me. In these or any other the like cases, if a man can come with *S. Pauls* temper of heart, *not to consult with flesh and blood*, but *Lord what wilt thou have me to doe?* or with the answer of *Samuel*, *Speake Lord for thy servant heareth*; or with the resolution of *Cornelius*, *I am here present before God to heare all things that shall be commanded of God*. I am come with a purpose of heart to cleave unto thy Holy Will in all things. Here I am in my sinnes, strike where thou wilt, cut off which of mine earthly members thou wilt, I will not arme it, I will not extenuate it, I will not dispute with thee, I will not rebell against thee, I will second thee in it, I will praise thee for it; This is to give God the glory of his owne Gospell. It is not to part from a little mony towards the maintenance of the Word, or to vouchsafe a little countenance to the dispencers of it (and yet alas how few are there who repay unto the Ministers of the Gospell that double honour which God and not they hath given unto them)? but to part from our lusts, and to suffer our old man to be crucified, which giveth honour to the Word. If a man had thousands of Rammes, and tenne thousand rivers of Oile, and would bee content to part from them all for Gods worship: If a man had children enough, and in a famine of the word, would buy every Sermon which hee heareth with the sacrifice of a sonne: yet all this would not give glory enough to the ordinance of God. Men naturally love their lusts, the issue of their evill hearts, better than their lands, or the children of their body (if *Herods* sonne stand in the way of his ambitious security, it were better to bee his Hog than his Childe. The losse of cattell, and fruits, and water, and light, and the first-borne of all the land,

was

Nehc. 5. 11, 12.
Luk. 19. 8.
Gal. 1. 16.
Act. 9. 6.
1 Sam. 3. 10.
Act. 10. 33.

VERSE 2.

was not enough to make *Pharaoh* let goe his sinne, hee will once more rush into the midst of a wonderfull deliverance of Israel, and venture his owne and his peoples lives, for but the bondage of his enemies, and the satisfaction of his lust.) To doe justly then, to love mercy, and to walke humbly before God, to acknowledge his Name in the voice of the Minister, and to put away the treasures of wickednesse out of our hands, this onely is to give God the glory which is due unto his Word, *Mic. 6. 6, 10.*

Secondly, the Gospell is *glorious in the Promulgation* and publishing of it unto the world, And this may appeare whether wee consider the *initiall Promulgation* in Christs owne personall preaching. Or the *plenary Revelation* thereof in the sending of the Holy Ghost to those selected vessels who were to carry abroad this treasure unto all the world. For the former wee may note that there was a resemblance of State and Glory observ'd in the preaching of Christ. *A Forerunner sent to prepare his way*, and to beare his sword before him, as a Herald to proclaime his approach, and then at last is revealed the Glory of the Lord. And thus wee may observe how hee sent his Harbingers *before his face into every City and place whither he himselfe would come*: that so men might prepare themselves, and lift up their everlasting gates against this Prince of Glory should enter in. When one poore ordinary man intendeth to visit another, there is no state nor distance, no ceremonies nor solemnities observ'd; but when a Prince will communicate himselfe unto any place, there is a publication, and officers sent abroad to give notice thereof, that meete entertainments may bee provided. So doth Christ deale with men, he knoweth how unprepared wee are to give him a welcome, how foule our hearts, how barren our consciences, and therefore he sendeth his Officers before his face with his owne Provision, his Graces of Humiliation, Repentance, Desire,

Esa. 40. 3, 4, 5.

Mal. 13. 1, 4, 5.

Luk. 10.

The Glorie of the Gospell.

177

VERSE 2.

Desire, Love, Hope, Joy, hungriſg and thiſtling after his appearance; and then when hee is eſteemed worthy of all accepration, he commeth himſelfe.

Looke upon the more conſummate publication of the Goſpell (for Chriſt in his owne Perſonall preaching is ſaid but *to have begun to teach*) and wee ſhall ſee that as Princes in the time of their ſolemne Inauguration doe ſome ſpeciall acts of Magnificence and Honour, open Priſons, proclaime Pardons, create Nobles, ſtamp Coyne, fill Conduits with Wine, diſtribute Donatives and Congiaries to the people: So Chriſt to teſtiſie the Glory of his Goſpell, did reſerve the full publication thereof unto the day of his iſtalment and ſolemne re-admiſſion into his Fathers Glory againe. *When hee aſcended up on high hee ſhewed captivity captive, and gave gifts unto Men,* namely the Holy Ghoſt, who is called the *Gift of God*, *Act. 2. 38. Act. 8. 20. Ioh. 4. 10.* and in the plurall number *Gifts*, as elſewhere he is called *ſeven Spirits*, *Revel. 1. 4.* to note the plenty and variety of Graces which are by him ſhed abroad upon the Church. Wiſedome, and Faith, and Knowledge, and Healings, and Propheſie, and Diſcerning, and Miracles, and Tongues; *All theſe worke one and the ſelfe ſame Spirit, dividing to every man ſeverally as he will.* And theſe gifts were all ſhed abroad for Evangelicall purpoſes, for the perfecting of the Saints, for the worke of the Miniſtery, and for the edifying of the Body of Chriſt. And this Spirit Saint *Peter* telleth us is a *Spirit of Glory*, and therefore that Goſpell, for the more plentifull promulgation whereof hee was ſhedde abroad, muſt needs be a Goſpell of Glory too.

And this further appears, becauſe in this more ſolemne publication of the Goſpell there was much more *Abundance of glorious Light and Grace*, ſhed abroad into the world. The Sonne of Righteouſneſſe in his eſtate of humiliation was much eclipsed, with the ſimilitude of ſinfull fleſh, the Communion of our common infirmities,

N

the

Act. 1. 1.
Hebr. 2. 3.

1 Cor. 12. 8. 11.
Ephes. 4. 12, 13.

1 Pet. 4. 14.

VERSE 2.

Mal. 4. 2.
Ezek. 47. 8, 9.
Esaï. 35. 5, 6, 7.
Mat. II. II, 13.

2 Cor. 3. 10.

Tit 3. 6.
Heb. 6. 7.
Iohn 7. 38.
Iohn 4. 14.
Esaï. II. 9.

Esaï. 44. 3.
Ezek. 47. 3, 4, 5.

the poverty of a low condition, the griefe and vexation of the finnes of men, the overshadowing of his Divine vertue, the forme and entertainment of a servant, the burden of the guilt of sinne, the burden of the Law of God, the ignominie of a base death, the agony of a cursed death. But when he ascended up on high, like the Sunne in his Glory, hee then dispell'd all these mists, and now sendeth forth those Glorious beames of his *Gospell* and *Spirits*, which are the *two wings*, by which hee commeth unto the Churches, and *under which the healing and salvation of the World is treasured*. Iohn Baptist was the last and greatest of all the Prophets who foretold of Christ, a greater had not beene borne of women, and yet hee was lesse than the least in the Kingdome of Heaven, that is, than the least of those upon whom the Promise of the Spirit was shed abroad, for the more Glorious manifestation of the Kingdome of his Gospell. All the Prophets and the Law prophesied untill Iohn: but at the comming of Christ they seemed to bee taken away, not by way of abrogation and extinguishment, as the ceremonies, but by way of excesse and excellency, *ut stella exiliores ad exortum solis*, as the Orator speakes; so saith the Apostle, *Even that which was made Glorious, had no Glory in this respect, by reason of the Glory that excelleth*. Therefore the full Revelation of the Gospell is called an *effusion of the Spirit*, not in dew, but in showres of raine, which multiply into *rivers of living water* (for the raine of the Spirit floweth from Heaven as from a Spring) and into *wells of Salvation*, and into a *sea of Knowledge*. Which attributes, note unto us two things: First, *the abundance of spirituall Grace* and knowledge by the Gospell, it should bee a River: Secondly, *the growth and encrease thereof*, it should be *living water*, multiplying and swelling up like the waters of the Sanctuary, till it came to a bottomlesse and unmeasurable sea of eternall life. And, to touch that which was before spoken of, very glorious are:

The Power of the Gospell.

179

are the vertues of the Spirit in the Gospell intimated in this similitude of *living water*. To quench the wrath of God, that otherwise consuming and unextinguishable fury, which devoureth the adversaries with everlasting burnings. To satisfie those desires of the thirsty soule which it selfe begetteth: for the Spirit is both for medicine and for meate; for medicine, to cure the dull and averse appetites of the soule; and for meate, to satisfie them. The Spirit is both *a Spirit of supplication, and a Spirit of grace or satisfaction*. A Spirit of supplication, directing us to pray, and a Spirit of Grace, supplying those requests and satisfying those desires which himselfe did dictate. ^a To cleanse, to purifie, to mollifie, to take ^b away the barrenesse of our naturall hearts. To ^c overflow and communicate it selfe to others. To ^d withstand and subdue every obstacle that is set up against it. To continue and to multiply to the end.

By this then we learne the way *how to abound in grace and glory*, and how to be transformed into the Image of Christ. The beame and light of the Sunne is the *vehiculum* of the heate and influence of the Sunne; so the light of the Gospell of Christ is that which conveyeth the vertue and gracious working of his Spirit upon the soule. And therefore wee are to seeke those varieties of Grace, which are for meate to satisfie the desires, and for medicine to cure the bruises of the soule, onely upon the bankes of the waters of the Sanctuary, that is, in the knowledge of the word of Truth, which is the Gospell of Salvation. The more of this glorious light a man hath, the more proportion of all other graces will hee have too. And therefore the Apostle puts the growth of these two together, as contributing a mutuall succour unto one another, *Grow in Grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Iesus Christ*. Your Grace will inlarge your desires of knowledge, and your knowledge will multiply your degrees of Grace. And Saint Paul makes the knowledge

VERSE 2.

Esai. 33. 14.
Ioh. 4. 10.
Ezek. 47. 12.
Zech. 12. 10.

^a Ezek. 36. 25.
^b Esai. 35. 6, 7.
Ezek. 11. 19.
^c Mal. 3. 16.
Gal. 6. 1, 2.
^d Gal. 5. 17.
Phil. 1. 27.

Ezek. 47. 12.

^a Pet. 3. 18.

VERSE 2.

Col. 1. 9, 10.

Phil. 3. 8, 14.

2 Cor. 3. 18.

of the will of God in wisdom, and after a spirituall manner to bee the ground of fruitfulness in every good worke, and that againe an inducement to increase in knowledge, as in the twisting together of two cords into one rope, they are by Art so ordered that either shall bind and hold in the other. As in the Heavens the inferior orbes have the measure and proportion of their generall motion from the supreme: so in the motions of grace in the soule, the proportion of all the rest ariseth from the measure of our spirituall and saving light. The more distinctly and throughly the spirit of a mans minde is convinced of the necessity, beauty, and gloriousnesse of heavenly things, the more strong impressions thereof will be made upon all subordinate faculties; for wee move towards nothing without preceding apprehensions of its goodnesse, which apprehensions as they more seriously penetrate into the true and intimate worth of that thing, so are the motions of the soule thereunto proportionably strengthn'd. As the hinder wheel in a Coach ever move as fast as the former which leade them; so the subordinate powers of the soule are overruled in their manner and measure of working towards grace, by those spirituall representations of the truth and excellency thereof, which are made in the understanding by the sight of the Gospell. Thus the Apostle telleth us that the *excellency of the knowledge of Christ* was that which made him so earnest to winne him; the knowledge of the power of his resurrection, and fellowship of his sufferings was that which made him reach forth and presse forward unto the mark and price of that high calling which was before him.

Thirdly, the Glory of the Gospell of Christ with his Spirit may be considered in regard of the *matters* which are therein contain'd, namely the Glory, the Excellencies, the Treasures of God himselfe: *We all*, saith the Apostle, *with open face behold as in a Glasse* (that is, in the spirituall ministration of the Gospell, having the veile of carnall

stupidity

The Glorie of the Gospell.

181

VERSE 2.

Stupidity taken away by the Spirit) *The Glory of the Lord*. What glory doe we here behold, but that which a glasse is able to represent? Now *in speculo nisi imago non cernitur*, nothing can bee seene in a glasse but the image of that thing which sheddeth forth its species thereupon; and therefore he immediately addeth, we are changed *into the same image from glory to glory*; and he else-where putteth these two together, *Man is the image and the glory of God*, for nothing can have any thing of God in it, any resemblance or forme of him, but so farre it must needs be glorious. But how doe we in the Gospell see the Image of God who is invisible? The Apostle expresseth that else-where, *God who commanded the light to shine out of darknesse, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Iesus Christ*. Christ is the Image and expresse Character of his Fathers glory, as the impression in the wax is of the forme and fashion of the seale, there is no excellencie in God which is not compleatly, adequately, and distinctly in Christ; so that in that glasse wherein we may see him, we may likewise see the glory of the Father. Now *the Gospell is the face of Iesus Christ*, that which as lively setteth forth his grace and Spirit to the soule, as if he were present in the flesh amongst us. Suppose we that a glasse could retaine a permanent and unvanishing species of a mans face within it, though hee himselfe were absent, might we not truly say this glasse is the face of that man, whose image it so constantly retaineth? So, in as much as Christ is most exactly represented in his Gospell (so that when we come into his personall and reall presence, to know even as we are knowne, we shall be able truly to say, this is indeed the very person who was so long since in his Gospell exhibited to my faith, *sic ille manus, sic ora gerebat*) it is therefore justly by the Apostle called *the face of Iesus Christ*; and therefore the *Glasse wherein we see the Image and Glory of God*; as it is the same light

1 Cor. II. 7.

2 Cor. 4. 4, 5, 6.

VERSE 2.

^a Rom. 15. 19.ⁱ Cor. 15. 1.^b Act. 20. 25.^c Ephes. 3. 8.^d Ephes. 3. 10.^e 1 Cor. 1. 24.ⁱ Cor. 2. 6, 7.

Rom. 5. 8.

which shineth from the Sunne upon a glasse, and from a glasse upon a wall, so it is the same glory which shineth from the Father upon the Sonne, and from the Sonne upon the Gospell; so that in the Gospell we see the unsearchable treasures of God, because his treasures are in his Sonne: Therefore that which is usually called ^a *Preaching the Gospell*, is in other places called ^b *Preaching the Kingdome*, and ^c *the riches of Christ*, to note the glory of those things which are in the Gospell revealed unto the Church.

It containeth the *glory of Gods wisdom*, and that wisdom is *diversa et varia*, a manifold and various wisdom, as the Apostle speaketh, who therefore calleth Christ and his Gospell by the name of ^e *Wisdom*; we preach Christ crucified, to those that are called the power of God, and the *wisdom of God*, and we *speak wisdom amongst them that are perfect*: wisdom to reconcile his owne attributes of mercy and truth, righteousness and peace, which by the fall of man seemed to be at variance among themselves, wisdom in reconciling the world of obstinate and rebellious enemies unto himselfe, wisdom in sanctifying the whole creation by the bloud of the crosse, and repairing those ruines which the sinne of man had caused; wisdom in incorporating Christ and his Church, things in their owne distinct natures as unapt for mixture, as fire and water in their remotest degrees; wisdom in uniting the Jewes and Gentiles, and reducing their former jealousies and disaffections unto an intimate fellowship in the same common mysteries: In one word, wisdom above the admiration of the blessed Angels, in finding out a way to give greater satisfaction to his offended justice, by shewing mercie and saving sinners, than hee could ever have received by either the confusion or annihilation of them. It containeth the *Glory of Gods goodnesse and mercy*, of that *bonitas, good-will towards men*, which brought Glory to God, and

The Glorie of the Gospell.

183

and to the earth peace : for the Gospell is as it were a Love-token or commendatory Epistle of the Lord unto his Church. God left not himselfe without witnesses of his care, and evidences of *some love* even of those whom hee suffered to walke in their owne wayes without any knowledge of his Gospell ; hee did them good, he gave them raine from Heaven and fruitfull seasons ; so even they had experience of *some of his goodnesse*, the *goodnesse of his providence*, for hee is the *Saviour of all men* ; but the Gospell containeth *all Gods goodnesse*, as a heape and miscellany of universall mercy : *I will make all my goodnesse passe before thee, and I will proclaime the name of the Lord before thee, and will bee gracious to whom I will be gracious, and I will shew mercy to whom I will shew mercie.* Gods speciall and gracious mercy, the mercy of his promises in Christ, doth convey unto the soule an interest in *all his goodnesse* may, it maketh *all things good unto us*, so that we may call them ours, as gifts and legacies from Christ. He hath given to us *all things* that pertaine to life and godlinesse, the world, and life, and death, and things present, and things to come, *all are yours*, saith the Apostle. Death it selfe and persecutions are amongst the legacies of Christ unto the Church, and a portion of all that goodnesse with which in the Gospell she is endow- ed. It containes the *Glory of Gods power and strength*, for it is the *Power of God unto salvation*, as hath beene declared. It containeth the *glory of Gods grace*. The *grace of his favour* towards us, and the *grace of his Spirit* in us. *The Law was given by Moses, but Grace came by Christ*, that is, *favour* in stead of Gods fury, and *strength* in stead of mans infirmity ; for because man was unable to fulfill the Law, therefore the Law came with wrath and curses against man ; but in the Gospell of Christ, there is abundance, even a whole *kingdome of grace* (the Apostle saith, that by *Iesus Christ grace reigned*) there is *Grace to remove the curse of the Law, by Gods favour to-*

V E R S E 2.

Act. 14. 16, 17.

2 Pet. 1. 3, 4.

1 Cor. 3. 18.

John 1. 17.

Rom. 5. 21.

VERSE 2.

Iam. 4. 5, 6.

Matth. 13. 19.

Mark. 1. 14.

Luke 8. 10.

wards us: (so that on all sides the Law is weake, unable, by reason of mans sinne, to save; and unable, by reason of Gods favour, to condemne) and there is *Grace to remove the weaknesse of man by Gods Spirit in us*: for though our owne spirit lust unto envie, or set it selfe proudly against the Law of God; yet hee *giverh more Grace*, that is, strength enough to overcome the counter-lustings of the flesh against his will; and to enable us in sincerity, and evangelicall perfection to fulfill the commands of the Law. Lastly, it containeth in some sort the *Glory of Gods heavenly kingdom*, in that therein are let in the glimpses and first-fruits, the scales and assurances thereof unto the soule by the Promises, Testimonies, and Comforts of the Spirit. And therefore it is frequently called *the Gospell of the Kingdome*, and the *Mysterics of the Kingdome of God*, namely, that Kingdome which be- ginneth here, but shall never end. As if a man borne in Ireland bee afterwards transplanted into England, though hee change his countrey, he doth not change his King, or his Law, but is still under the same government: so when a Christian is translated from earth to heaven, he is still in the same kingdome, in heaven it is the king- dome of Glory (mended much by the different excellen- cie of the place and preferment of the person) in earth it is the same kingdome, though in a lesse amene and com- fortable climate, the Kingdome of the Gospell. These and many other the like things are the glorious matters which the Gospell containeth.

Here then wee see how and wherein we are to looke upon God, so as that wee may abide his glory, and bee comforted by it; wee must not looke upon him in his owne immediate brightnesse and essence, nor by our sawcie curiosities prie into the secrets of his unrevealed glory, for he is a consuming fire, an invisible, and unap- proachable light; we may see his back parts, in the pro- claiming of his mercy; and we may see the horns of
brigh

Deut. 29. 29.

Exod. 19. 21.

Exod. 33. 23.

The Glorie of the Gospell.

185

*bright beames of his hands, in the publishing of his Law; but yet all this was under a cloud, or under the biding of his Power; His face no man can see and live: Wee must not looke upon him onely in our selves. Though wee might at first have seene him in our owne nature, for we were created after his Image in Righteousnesse and true Holinesse; yet now that Image is utterly obliterated, and wee have by nature the Image onely of Satan and the old Adam in us: we must not looke upon him onely in mount Sinai, in his Law, lest the fire devoure us, and the dart strike us thorow; we can finde nothing of him there but rigour, inexorablenesse, wrath, and vengeance. But wee must acquaint our selves with him in his Sonne, wee must know him, and whom he hath sent together, there is no fellowship with the Father, except it be with the Sonne too: we may have the knowledge of his Hand, that is, of his workes, and of his punishments, without Christ: but wee cannot have the knowledge of his bosome, that is, of his counsels, and of his compassions, nor the knowledge of his Image, that is, of his Holinesse, Grace, and Righteousnesse; nor the knowledge of his presence, that is, of his comforts here, and his glory hereafter, but onely in and by Christ: we may know God in the World, for in the Creation is manifest *visus dei*, that which may bee knowne of him, namely his Eternall power and God-head. But this is a barren and fruitlesse knowledge, which will not keepe downe unrighteousnesse; for the wise men of the world when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, but became vaine in their imaginations, and held that truth of him which was in the Creation revealed, in unrighteousnesse. Wee may know him in his Law too, and that in exceeding great glory, when God came from Teman, and the Holy One from mount Paran (whereabout the Law was the second time repeated by Moses) his glory covered the heavens, and the earth was full of his praise, his brightnesse was as the light, &c. But this is a killing*

V E R S E 2.

Habak. 3. 4.

John 17. 3.

1 John 1. 3.

John 1. 18.

Col. 1. 15.

John 14. 6.

Ephes. 2. 18.

3. 12.

Heb. 10. 19. 21.

Habak. 3. 3. 4.

Deut. 1. 1.

V E R S E 2.

Deut. 33. 2.

Deut. 5. 22.

Gal. 3. 10.

Rom. 12. 10.

killing knowledge, a knowledge which makes us fly from God and hide our selves out of his presence, and fight against him as our forest enemies, and come short of his glory : therefore the Law is called *a fry Law*, or *a fire of Law*, to shew not onely the originall thereof, for it was spoken out of the middest of the fire ; but the nature and operation of it too, which of it selfe is to heap fire and curses upon the soule ; and therefore it is called the *ministration of Death*, 2 Cor. 3. 7. But now to know the glory of God *in the face of Iesus Christ*, is both a fruitfull and a comfortable knowledge ; wee know the patterne we must walke by, wee know the life we must live by, wee know the treasure wee must be supplied by, we know whom wee have beleaved, wee know whom wee may bee bold within all straits and distresses, wee know God in Christ full of love, full of compassion, full of eares to heare us, full of eyes to watch over us, full of hands to fight for us, full of tongues to commune with us, full of power to preserve us, full of grace to transforme us, full of fidelity to keepe covenant with us, full of wisdom to conduct us, full of redemption to save us, full of glory to reward us. Let us therefore put our selves into this Rocke, that Gods goodnesse may passe before us, that hee may communicate the mysteries of his Kingdome and of his glory unto us, that by him our persons may be accepted, our prayers admitted, our services regarded, our acquaintance and fellowship with the Lord increased, by that blessed Spirit which is from them both shed abroad in his Gospell upon us.

Exod. 19. 16, 21.

Now lastly, the Gospell of Christ is *glorious* in those *ends, effects, or purposes for which it serveth* : And in this respect principally doth the Apostle so often magnifie the glory of the Gospell above the Law. The Law was a glorious ministry, as appeares by the thunderings and lightnings, the shining of *Moses* his face, and trembling at Gods presence, the service of the Angels, and sound of the

The Glory of the Gospell.

187

VERSE 2.

Heb. 8. 6.

Heb. 7. 18, 19.

Rom. 8. 2, 3.

the trumpet, the ascending of the smoke, and the quaking of the mountaine: but yet still the glory of the Gospell was farre more excellent, a better Covenant, a more excellent ministry. The Law had *weaknesse and unprofitablenesse* in it, (both termes of diminution from the glory thereof) and therefore it could make nothing perfect: But that which the Law could not doe, in as much as it was weake through the flesh, the *Law of the Spirit of life in Christ Iesus* (which is a *periphrasis* of the Gospell, as appeareth, 2 Cor. 3. 6.) did doe for us, namely, make us free from the law of sin and death. So then the Law was glorious, but the Gospell in many respects did *excell in glory*, 2 Cor. 3. 10.

To take a more particular view of the spirituall glory of the Gospell of Christ in those excellent ends and purposes for which it serveth: First, It is *full of light*, to informe, to comfort, to guide those who sate in darknesse and the shadow of death, into the way of peace. Light was the first of all the creatures which were made, and the Apostle magnifieth it for a glorious thing in those other luminaries which were after created, 1 Cor. 15. 41. How much more glorious was the light of the Gospell? The Apostle calleth it *φῶς εὐαγγελίου*, *A marvellous light*: and therefore the Kingdome of the Gospell is exprest by *light and glory together*, as termes of a promiscuous signification, *Esaï. 60. 1, 2, 3.* Of all other learning the knowledge of the Gospell doth infinitely excell in worth, both in regard of the object thereof, which is God, manifested in the flesh, and in regard of the end thereof, which is flesh reconciled, and brought unto God. *A knowledge which passeth knowledge*, a knowledge which bringeth fulnesse with it, even *all the fulnesse of God*, a knowledge so excellent, that all other humane excellencies are but dung in comparison of it. What Angell in Heaven would trouble himselfe to busie his noble thoughts (which have the glorious presence of God, and the

1 Pet. 2. 9.

Ἄσπερον ὄραμα
πάντα ἐν τῷ ἀφ' ὧ
τῆς δυνάμεως τοῦ
καὶ μυσθίου.
Greg. Naz. Or. 3.

Ephes. 3. 18.

Phil. 3. 8.

VERSE 2.

ὡς τὸ τοῦ ὁπλοῦ-
σαι μέντοι τὸ ὄρα-
σαι καὶ ἡ ἀρετή·
ὡς χαίρειν ὡς ἐν-
μοῦσι. *Greg. Naz.*
Orat. 1.
1 Pct. 1. 32.

Ἡμεῖς τὸ φῶς
οὐκ ἔχοντες, καὶ τὸ ἔλα-
λῆναι, ὡς καὶ
οἱ βίβλιν διὰ τὸ ὑμῶν
ἢ ἡ ἀλογία καὶ ἡ
γροῦσία καὶ ἡ ἔσθ-
λα τὸ πνεῦμα,
καὶ ὑμῶν οὐκ ὄν-
τος. *Greg. Naz.*
Orat. 3.

the joyes of heaven to fill them) with metaphysicall, or mathematicall, or philologicall contemplations, which yet are the highest delicacies which humane reason doth fasten on to delight in? And yet we finde the Angels in heaven, with much greedinesse of speculation stoope downe, and as it were, turne away their eyes from that expresse glory which is before them in heaven, to gaze upon the wonderfull light, and bottomlesse mysteries of the Gospell of Christ. In all other learning a Devill in hell (the most cursed of all creatures,) doth wonderfully surpasse the greatest proficients amongst men; but in the learning of the Gospell, and in the spirituall revelations and evidences of the benefits of Christ to the soule from thence, there is a knowledge which surpasseth the comprehension of any angell of darkenesse; for it is the Spirit of God onely which knoweth the things of God. It was the divellish flout of *Julian* the Apostate against Christian Religion, that it was an illiterate rusticie, and a naked believe, and that true polite learning did belong to him and his Ethnick faction; and for that reason he interdicted Christians the use of Schooles and humane learning, as things improper to their beleiving religion (a persecution esteemed by the Ancients as cruel as the other bloody massacres of his predecessors.) To which slander, though the most learned Father might have justly returned the lye, and given proofes both in the canonicall bookes of holy Scripture, and in the professours of that religion, of as profound learning, as invincible argumentation, and as forcible eloquence as in any Heathen Author (for I dare challenge all the Pagan learning in the world to parallel the writings of *Clement* of *Alexandria*, *Origen*, *Iustin*, *Tertullian*, *Cyprian*, *Minutius*, *Augustine*, *Theodoret*, *Nazianzen*, and the other Champions of Christian Religion against Gentilisme) yet he rather chooseth thus to answer, that that authoritie, which the faith he so much derided was built upon,

The Glorie of the Gospell.

189

VERSE 2.

upon, came to the soule with more selfe-evidence, and invincible demonstration, than all the disputes of reason or learning of Philosophie could create. Though therefore it were to the Jewes an offence, as contrary to the honour of their Law, and to the Greekes foolishnesse, as contrary to the pride of their reason; yet to those that were perfect, it was an hidden and mysterious wisdom, able to convince the gain-sayers, to convert sinners, to comfort mourners, to give wisdom to the simple, and to guide a man in all his wayes with spirituall prudence; for, what ever the prejudice of the World may bee, there is no man a wiser man, nor more able to bring about those ends which his heart is justly set-upon, than hee who being acquainted with God in Christ by the Gospell, hath the Father of wisdom, the Treasurer of wisdom, the Spirit of wisdom, and the Law of wisdom to furnish him therewithall. It is not for want of sufficiency in the Gospell, but for want of more intimate acquaintance and knowledge thereof in us, that the children of this world are more wise in their generation, than the children of light.

Secondly, another glorious end and effect of the Gospell is to bee a *ministration of Righteousnesse*, a publication of a pardon to the world, and that so generall, that there is not one exception therein of any other sinne than onely of the contempt of the pardon it selfe. And in this respect likewise the Gospell exceeds in Glory. *If the ministration of condemnation* (saith the Apostle) *bee Glory, much more doth the ministration of Righteousnesse exceede in Glory, 2 Cor. 3. 9.* It is the glory of a man to passe by an offence; and the Lord proclaimeth his Glory to *Moses* in that *hee would forgive iniquity, transgression and sinne*, that is, multitudes of sinnes, and sinnes of all degrees, *Exod. 34. 7.* And thus the Lord magnifies his mercie, and thoughts towards sinners, above all the wayes and thoughts of men, even as the Heavens are higher than the

Βαλει τὸ γὰρ ἡμῶν ὁ
λόγος, μὴ ἐξ ἡμετέρας
διαπιστῆναι τὸς ἰσχυροῦς
τῆς θεοφάνειας ἀπο-
δείξαι τὴν ἀληθείαν
τῆς διδασκαλίας, τὸ
ἐκείνων ἀξιοπρεπείας,
πάσης δυνάμεως
λογικῆς καὶ ἀνελι-
κτικῆς ὑπερῶν
Greg. Naz. ibid.

V E R S E 2.

Numb. 20. 12.

1 Pet. 3. 14, 15.

1 Pet. 4. 14.

1 Iohn 5. 10.

Gen. 4. 13.

Psal. 78. 18, 19.
40. 41.

the earth, because he can abundantly pardon, or multiply forgivenesses upon those who forsake their wayes and turne to him, *Esa. 55. 7, 8, 9.* and therefore justifying faith whereby wee rely upon the power of God to forgive and subdue our finnes, is said to give glory to God. *Abraham* staggered not at the Promise through unbelief, but being strong in faith hee gave glory to God, namely, the glory of his power and fidelity, *Rom. 4. 20. 21.* *Ye shall not bring this congregation into the Land which I have given them.* saith the Lord to *Moses* and *Aaron*, because yee beleaved mee not, to sanctifie mee in the eyes of the children of *Israel*, that is, to give mee the glory of my Power and Truth (for to sanctifie the Lord of hosts, signifieth to glorifie his Power, by fearing him more than men, and by relying on him against the power and confederacies of men, *Esa. 8. 12, 13.* And therefore in the same argument touching the happinesse of the Saints, if they suffer for righteounesse sake, or bee reproached for the Name of Christ: Saint *Peter* useth in one place sanctifying of the Lord in our hearts, and in another glorifying of him, as termes equivalent;) And therefore unbelief is said to make God a liar, that is, to dishonour him, and to robbe him of the Glory of his Truth; And despaire to robbe God of his Mercy, and to make the guilt of sinne greater than the Power of God: And therefore murmurers, and unbelievers are said to speake against God, and to grieve him, to tempt, to limit him, that is, to call into question the Glory of his Power and Truth. Herein then consisteth another Glorious effect of the Gospell of Christ, that being a ministration of righteounesse, it is a glasse of that Power, Truth, mercy, and fidelity of God, which by faith we rest upon, for the forgiveness and subduing of sinne.

Thirdly, another glorious end of the Gospell is to bee a ministration and a law of life. If the ministration of death (saith the Apostle) were glorious, how shall not the ministration

The Glory of the Gospell.

191

stration of the Spirit be rather glorious? 2 Cor. 3. 6, 7, 8.
 The Law alone by it selfe is towards sinners but a *dead letter*, onely the *rule* according unto which a man ought to walke, not any *principle* enabling him to walke. If *Moses* alone should speake unto men, he could onely tell them what they ought to doe, hee could in no wise enable them to doe it: nay, further the Law hath occasionally from the sin of man a malignant property in it, to irritate and exasperate lust the more, to beget an occasionall rage and fiercenesse in our nature. As the Sunne shining on a dung-hill draweth forth noysome vapours, and maketh it stinke the more. But now the Gospell by the Spirit doth not onely *teach*, but *helpe* too, sheweth us what wee should doe, and giveth us strength to doe it; wee doe not onely therein *see* the glory of God, but are withall *changed* into the same Image, even *from Glory to Glory*, that is, (as I conceive from that allusion to a glasse) the Glory of the Lord shining upon the Gospell, and from the Gospell shining upon our hearts, doth change them into the Image of the same Glory; even as the glory of the Sunne shining upon a glasse, and from that glasse reflecting on a wall, doth therein produce a more extraordinary Image of its owne light: so that the Apostles *an̄ō d̄īkt̄is̄ īn̄ d̄īkt̄is̄*, is the same with the Poets *ē speculo in speculum*, from the glory of the Gospell which is one glasse of Gods Image, there is shaped the same Glory in the heart, which is another glasse of his image. This is that which the Apostle calleth the *forming of Christ in the soule*, and the planting of it into the likenesse of his death and resurrection.

Fourthly, it is a glorious Gospell in the *Judicature thereof*. The Spirit in the Gospell doth convince not of righteousness onely, but of *Judgement* too; that is, the Spirit shall erect a throne in the hearts of men, shall pull downe the prince of this world, and dispossesse him; shall enable mens owne hearts to proceed like upright Iudges with

VERSE 2.

*Quod operum
 lex minando im-
 perat hoc fidei
 lex credendo im-
 petrat. — le-
 ge operum dicit
 Deus, Fac quod
 jubeo, lege fidei
 dicitur Deo, Da
 quod jubes Aug.
 tom. 3. lib. de
 spiritu & litera.
 copp. 13. 19.
 2 Cor. 3. 10.*

John 16. 11.

VERSE 2.

Eſai. 42. 3.

Matth. 12. 20.

1 Cor. 11. 31.

2 Cor. 7. 11.

Hoſ. 14. 8.

Eſai. 31. 7.

Ier. 31. 19.

Phil. 3. 20.

with *truth* and with *victory* (which are two of the principall honours of judgement) againſt their owne luſts, to cenſure, to condemne, to crucifie them, though before they were as deare as their owne members; to throw all their idols away as menſtruous rags, and to judge and revenge themſelves. *Ephraim ſhall ſay, what have I to doe any more with idols? In that day, ſaith the Lord, every man ſhall caſt away his idols of ſilver, and his idols of gold, which your owne hands have made unto you for a ſinne. I have ſurely heard Ephraim bemoaning himſelfe: After that I was turned, I repented; and after that I was inſtructed, I ſmote upon my thigh.* Thus the government of the Goſpell in the heart, makes a man ſever to ſentence every ſinne, to hang up his *Haman*, his favourite luſts, to give up himſelfe to the obedience of Chriſt, and to have his converſation, his trading, his treaſure, his privileges, his freedome, his fellowſhip in Heaven, as being now conſtituted under the gracious and peaceable government of an Heavenly Prince.

Fifthly, it is a glorious Goſpell, in that it was to bee a *continuing miniſtration, and an Immortall ſeed.* If that *which was done away, ſaith the Apoſtle, was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious, 2 Cor. 3. 11.* Now the Goſpell is able to preſerve a man blameleſſe unto the coming of our Lord Jeſus; it will not ſuffer a man to be ſhaken nor overturn'd by all the powers of darkneſſe; there is ſtrength enough in it to repell, and wiſedome to anſwere all the temptations and aſſaults of the enemies of our ſalvation; If the world ſet upon us with any temptations on the right hand, or on the left, with diſgraces, perſecutions, diſcomforts, exprobrations, loe this was the man who made God his helpe, and would needs be more excellent than his neighbours: the Goſpell furniſheth us with *ſure promiſes, and ſure mercies*: this is anſwere ſufficient againſt all the diſcouragements of the World, *I know whom I have beleevd, I know that hee hath*

The Glory of the Gospell.

193

VERSE 2.

hath overcome the world, *I know that hee is able to keepe that which I have committed unto him, untill the last day,* and in the meane time the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world, that is, we are at an equall point of distance and defiance, the world contemnes me, and I am as carelesse of the world. If with pleasures, honours, and gilded baites to draw us away from God, *Faith in the Gospell easily overcommeth the world,* for it giveth both the Promises and first-fruites of such Treasures as are infinitely more pretious and massie than all the world can afford; the very reproaches of Christ (how much more his Promises, how infinitely more his performances at the last?) are farre greater riches, than the treasures of Egypt. The dayly sacrifice of a Godly life, and the daily feast of a quiet conscience put more sweetnesse into the afflictions of Christ, than is in all the profits, pleasures or preferments of the world, being made bitter with the guilt of sinne. If Satan, or our owne reasonings stand up against the Kingdome of Christ in us, the Gospell is a Store-house which can furnish us with Armory of all sorts to repell them. Faith can quench fiery darts, the weapons of the Spirit can captivate the very thoughts of the heart unto the Obedience of Christ, no weapon which is formed against it can prosper, and every tougue which riseth up against it in judgement, it shal condemne, it is a staffe which can carry a man over any Jordan, and can support and comfort him in any shadow of death. This is the honour of the Word that it doth not onely *(sanctifie men, but preserve their holinesse in them.* If it were not for the treasure of the Word in the heart every litle thing would easily turne a man out of his way and make him revolt from Christ againe. How easily would *afflictions* make us mistrust Gods affection to us, and so change ours unto him (for this is certaine, *His love to us is the originall of our love to him*) make us murmur, repine, struggle, fret under his hand, if in the Gospell we did

O

VERSE 2.

Psal. 119. 93.

2 King. 6. 33.

Mal. 3. 14.

Esaï. 58. 3.

Joh. 10. 4. 5.

Act. 20. 29, 32.

did not looke upon them as the gentle corrections of a Father, who loves us, as the pruning and harrowing of our soules that they may bring forth more fruit? *Except thy Law had beene my delight, I should have perished in mine affliction.* My affliction would have destroyed mee, and made mee perish from the right way, if it had not beene tempered and sanctified by thy Word. It wrought so with that wicked king of Israel, *Behold this evill is of the Lord, what should I waite upon the Lord any longer? what profit is there to walke humbly before him,* or to afflict our selves before him, who will not see, nor take knowledge of it, but continue to be our enemy still? But the Gospell teacheth a mans heart to rest in God, assureth it that there is hope in Israel, and balme in Gilcad, that they which beleve should not make haste to limit, or to misconstrue God, but wait for his Salvation, which will ever come in that due time, wherein it shall be both most acceptable and most beautifull. Againe, how easily would *Temptations* over-turne the faith of men, if it were not dayly supported by the Word? what is the reason that the sheepe of Christ will not follow strangers, nor know their voyce, that is, will not acknowledge any force, nor subscribe in their hearts to the conviction or evidence of any temptation which would draw them from God, but onely because they heare and know the voice of Christ in his Gospell, and feele a Spirit in their owne hearts setting to its seale and bearing witnesse to that Truth from whence those solicitations would seduce them? The Apostle foretold the Elders of Ephesus at his solemne departure from them, that *grievous wolves would enter in amongst them, and that some of themselves would arise speaking perverse things to draw away Disciples after them.* And the maine remedy which the Apostle gives them against this danger was, *I commend you to God, and to the Word of his Grace which is able to build you up, &c.* Noting, that it is the Word of God which keepeth

The Glorie of the Gospell.

195

V E R S E 2.

keepeth men from being drawne away with perverse disputes. And the same intimation hee gives them in his Epistle unto them; *Hee gave some Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Evangelists, and some Pastors and Teachers, — That wee henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every winde of Doctrine by the sleight of Men, and cunning craftinesse, whereby they lie in waite to deceive.* The more richly the Word of God, in the love and evidence thereof, doth dwell in any man, and enable him to prove all things, the more stedfastly will hee hold that which is good, and stand immooveable against the sleights and solicitations of men. Againe, how easily would our owne *evill hearts* gather a rust and unaptnesse for service over themselves, if they were not dayly whet and brightned upon the Word of God. That onely it is which scrapeth away that leprosie and mossinesse which our soules are apt to contract out of themselves. *A man may loose all that hee hath wrought,* all the benefit of what hee hath done already, and all the strength to doe any more, *by not abiding in the Doctrine of Christ.* He onely is no doer of the Word, who looketh in it as a man on a glasse, and presently forgetteth the image and state of his Conscience againe; it is onely hee that *continueth therein*, who is a doer of the worke, and blessed in his deed. He that treasureth up the Gospell in his heart, and laboreth to grow rich in the knowledge thereof, can never be turned quite out of his way, or become an Apostate from the Grace of Christ.

Lastly, it is a glorious Gospell in regard of those *noble and majesticall endowments with which it qualifieth the soule of a Christian*: for there is no nobility to that of the Gospell. It giveth men the highest priviledge in the World to bee called the *Sonnes of God*, to bee *Kings and Priests before him*, to be a *Royal Priesthood, a holy Nation, a peculiar People, a nation of Priests.* Nothing doth so

O 2

honour

Ephes. 4. 11, 14.

1 Thes. 5. 21.

2 Ioh. 8. 9.

Iam. 1. 23, 25.

Ioh. 1. 12.

1 Ioh. 3. 1.

Revel. 1. 6.

1 Pet. 2. 9.

VERSE 2.

Rom. 3. 1, 2.

1 Sam. 4. 22.

Luk. 2. 32.

Amos 8. 7.

1 Cr. 9. 24.

* ἡ τὴν φιλοτιμίαν
 ἡμῶν ἐν αὐτῇ λαλοῦμεν.
 Rom. 15. 20.

honour a land as to bee the seate of the Gospell. It was the honour of the Iewes that unto them were committed the Oracles of God. Therefore the *Arke* is called *the Glory of Israel*, and *Christ* the *Glory of Israel*, and the excellency of *Iacob*, neither is there any thing else allowed a man to glory in, save onely this that he understandeth and knoweth the Lord in his Word. It putteth *magnanimity* into the breasts of men, high thoughts, regall affections, publike desires and attempts, a kinde of Heavenly * ambition to doe and to gaine the greatest good. *The maine ends of a Christian are all high and noble.* The favour of God, the fellowship of the Father and the Son, the Grace of Christ, the peace of the Church; his trafficke and negotiation is for Heaven, his language the Dialect of Heaven, his Order a Heavenly Order, innumerable companies of Angels, and the Spirits of iust men made perfect. A holy man who hath the Spirit of his minde raised and ennobled by the Gospell, is an Agent in the same affaires, and doth in his thoughts, desires, prayers, emulations, pursue the same high and heavenly ends, for the advancement of the glory of Christ, and demolishing the kingdome of Satan, with the blessed Angels of God. His desires looke no lower than a Kingdome, a weight of masse, and most superlative exceeding Glory. That which other men make the utmost point even of their impudent and immodest hopes, the secular favours and dignities of the world, these put lowest under their feet; but their wings, the higher and more aspiring affections of their soule, are directed onely unto Heaven and Heavenly things. They no sooner are placed in the Body of Christ but they have publike services, some to preach, some to defend, all to pray, to practise, to adorne the profession they have under-taken. For indeede every Christian hath his talent given him, his service injoyn'd him. The Gospell is a *Depositum*, a publike Treasure, committed to the keeping of every Christian, each man having

The Glorie of the Gospell.

197

VERSE 2.

ving, as it were, a severall key of the Church, a severall trust for the honour of this kingdome deliver'd unto him.

As in the solemne Coronation of the Prince every Peere of the Realme hath his station about the Throne, and with the touch of his hand upon the royall Crowne declareth the personall duty of that honour which hee is called unto, namely to hold on the Crowne on the head of his Sovereigne, to make it the maine end of his greatnesse, to studie, and by all meanes endeavour the establishment of his Princes Throne: so every Christian as soone as he hath the honour to be called unto the kingdome, and presence of Christ, hath immediately no manner a *Depositum* committed to his care than the very Throne and Crowne of his Saviour, than the publike honour, peace, victorie, and stability of his masters kingdome. The Gospell is committed to the custody of the Bishops, and Pastors of the Church, to preach it. They are, as it were, the Harbingers and Fore-runners of Christ to prepare his way into the soules of men. To the custody of the Princes and Judges of the earth to defend it, to be a guard about the person and truth of Christ, to command the obedience, and to encourage the teaching of it. The Gospell is the Law of Christs Throne, and the Princes of the world are the Lions about his Throne, set there to watch, and guard it against the malice of enemies. And therefore it is recorded for the honour of *David* that he set in order the courses of the Priests, and appointed them their formes and vicissitudes of Service. Of *Salomon* that he built, adorned, and dedicated a Temple for Gods solemne worship. Of *Iosiah* that hee made the people to serve the Lord their God; Of *Ezekiah*, that he restored the service, and repaired the Temple of God, that hee spake comfortably to the Levites, who taught the good knowledge of the Lord, that hee proclaimed a solemne passeover, that he ordered the courses of the Priests and Levites, that hee gave commande-

O 3

ment

2 Tim. 1. 14.
22

1 Chron. 23. 24.

2 Chro. 34. 33.
2 Chron. 19. 3.
30. 1. 22.
31. 2, 3, 4.

VERSE 2.

Euseb. de vit.
Constantini, li. 2.
cap. 37, 38, 39.
Act. 13. 26.
Iude v. 3.
2 Thes. 2. 15.

Act. 13. 46.
28. 28.
1 Thes. 2. 2.
Act. 2. 14. 23. 36.
Act. 4. 8. 12, 13,
19.
Act. 5. 29, 32.

ment concerning the portion of their due maintenance, that they might be encouraged in the Law of the Lord (a patterne worthy the admiration and imitation of all Christian princes, in spite of the sacrilegious doctrine of those men who would rob them of that power and office which God hath given them for the establishment of his Gospell, and it was imitated by the first Christian Prince that ever the world had.) Lastly, the Gospell is committed to the keeping of every Christian to practise it, to adorne it, to pray for it, to be valiant and courageous in his place and station for the truth of it. And for a man to neglect these duties is to betray and dishonour the Kingdome of Christ, and to degenerate from that high and publike condition in which God had placed him.

Againe, it putteth a spirit of *Fortitude and boldnesse* into the hearts of men. Boldnesse to withstand the corruptions of the times, to walke contrary to the courses of the world, to out-face the finnes and the scornes of men, to bee valiant for a despised truth or power of religion, not to be ashamed of a persecuted profession, to spread out *contra torrentem brachia*, to stand alone against the power and credit of a prevailing faction, as *Paul* against the contradiction of the Iewes, and *Peter* and *Iohn* against a Synode of Pharises, and those invincible champions of Christ, *Athanasius* against the power of *Constantius*, the frequent synodical conventions of countenanced heretikes, and the generall deluge of Arrianisme in the world. *Ambrose* against the wrath and terrour of the emperour of the world, to whom, having imbrued his hands in much innocent blood, that holy Father durst not deliver the blood of Christ. *Chrysostome* against the pride and persecution of the Empreffe *Eudoxa*. *Luther* against the mistresse of fornications, the princesse of the earth, and as himselfe professed, if it had beene possible, against a whole citty full of divels. The Christians of all ages
against

The Glorie of the Gospell.

199

VERSE 2.

against the fire, fury, and arts of torment executed by the bloody persecutors of the Church. Nay further, the Gospell giveth boldnesse against that universall fire which shall melt the Elements, and shrivell up the heavens like a role of parchment; *Herein, saith the Apostle, is our love made perfect, that we may have boldnesse in the day of judgement, because as he is, so we are in this world;* that is, we have his image in us, and his love shed abroad in our hearts, and therefore wee are able to assure our hearts before him, and to have confidence towards him. Now hee who hath boldnesse to stand before God, to dwell with consuming fire, and with everlasting burnings; who can get the Lord on his right hand, and put on the Lord Jesus, though hee bee not out of the reach, or beyond the blow, yet is hee above the injurie of the malice of men, they may kill, but they can never overcome him. *I am he that comforteth you, who art thou (saith the Lord) that thou shouldest be afraid of a man that shall dye, and forgettest the Lord thy Maker, &c?* What an invincible courage was that of *Elijah*, which retorted the slander of *Ahab* upon his owne face: *I have not troubled Israel, but thou and thy fathers house?* And that of *Micaiah*, against the base request of a flattering Courtier, who thought God to bee such an one as himselfe, that would magnifie and cry up the ends of a wicked king, *As the Lord liveth, what the Lord saith unto mee, that will I speake.* And that of *Amos* against the unworthy instructions of *Amaziah*, the priest of Bethel, *Thou saiest, prophesie not against Israel, and drop not thy words against the house of Isaac; therefore thus saith the Lord, Thy wife shall be an harlot in the citie, and thy sonnes and thy daughters shall fall by the sword, and thy land shall be divided by line, and thou shalt dye in a polluted land, and Israel shall surely goe into captivity forth of his land.* And that of *Jeremiah*, who boldly gave the lye to *Irijah* the captaine of the ward; *It is false, I fall not away to the Caldeans.*

1 Ioh. 4. 17.

Esa. 51. 12, 13.

1 King. 18. 18.

1 King. 22. 14.

Amos 7. 16, 17.

Jer. 37. 13, 14.

VERSE 2.

Tertull. Apolog.
cap. ult. Baron.
An. 179. §. 27.
Euseb Hist. l. 5.
cap. I.
Christiani sumus,
Christiani & De-
os tuos impera-
tor non colemus.
Baron. An. 301.
§. 46. A. 165 §. 4.

Ier. 37. 16, 17.
38. 15. 16.

Mark. 6. 30.

Act. 6. 15.

1 Cor. 14. 24, 25.
Act. 16. 29, 30.

The time would faile if I should speake of the unbended constancie (or as the Gentiles stiled it, obstinacie) of *Ignatius, Polycarp, Iustin, Cyprian, Pionius, Sabina, Maximus*, as those infinite armies of holy martyrs, who posed the inventions, tyred out the cruelties, withstood the flatteries, and with one word (*Christiani sumus*) overcame all the tyrannies, quenched the fire, and stopped the mouthes of their proudest persecutors.

Againe, the Gospell putteth a kinde of *Lustre and terror* on the faces of those in whom it raigneth, and maketh them, as the Law did *Moses*, to shine as lights in the world, and to be more excellent than their neighbours; worketh in others towards them a dread and awefulnesse Though *Ieremie* were a prisoner, cast into the dungeon, and in such extremity as he was there likely to perish: yet such a Majestie and honour did God even then put upon him, and that in the thoughts of the king himselve, that he could not bee in quiet till hee consulted with him about the will of the Lord, and by his many conferences with him made it plainly appeare that he stood in awe of his person and prophesies. So it is said *That Herod feared Iohn, knowing that he was a just and a holy man, and observed him*; to note that Holinesse maketh mens persons and presence dreadfull to the wicked, by reason of that Grace and Majestie which God hath put into them. The whole Councell of Scribes and Pharises, they who afterwards gnashed on *Stephen* with their teeth, were forc'd to acknowledge the Majestie of holinesse shining upon him, *They stedfastly looked on him, and saw his face as it had beene the face of an Angell*. The mighty power of the Gospell of Christ maketh unbelievers fall on their faces, and confesse of a truth that God is in those who preach it. This we finde verified in the poore astonished keeper of the prison into which *Paul* and *Silas* had been cast, he sprang in and came trembling and fell downe before them, and brought them forth, and

The Glory of the Gospell.

201

VERSE 2.

and said, *Κλειος, Sirs*, (which is an honourable appellation, fit rather for Princes than for prisoners *what must I doe to be saved?*) It is true that naturally men hate Christ and his servants, but this is not as a man hateth a Toade (which hee can easily crush) with a simple hatred; but as a man hateth a Lion, or as a Malefactor hateth his Judge, or as a Theefe hateth the light, with a compounded hatred, mixed with a feare and dread of that Majestie within them. Which Majestie hath sometimes shined so brightly even under torments and persecutions, that it hath forced from Heathen Emperours a desire of the Christians Prayers, sometimes not astonished onely, but * converted the adversaries.

Lastly, the Gospell bringeth *liberty and joy* into the hearts of men with it. The liberty a *Glorious liberty*, *Rom. 8. 21.* and the joy a *Glorious joy*, *1 Pet. 1. 8.* therefore the Gospell is called a *Gospell of great joy*, *Luk. 2. 10.* Liberty is so sacred a thing, that indeed it belongs in the whole compasse of it onely to the Prince: for though other men bee free from servitude, yet they are not free from subjection. Now the Gospell giveth a plenary freedome to the consciences of men; they may bee commanded by their owne consciences, but their consciences cannot bee commanded by any but by Christ. The Sonne hath made them free from all others, that hee onely might bee Lord over them. These are those noble effects of the Majestie of the Gospell in the hearts of men, and all, so many severall evidences of that glorie which belongs unto it.

Now then, to draw some inferences from this most usefull and excellent Doctrine of the glory of the Gospell, we learne from thence first what liberty, and what sincerity the Ministers of Christ ought to use in the administration of this his Kingdome in the Word. First, *What Libertie*. The Officers of a Prince who goe before

* *Adjectos ideo vocabant, quia cum in eo essent ut torquerent martyres, ipsi martyres fuerunt, verbo Dei, & Constantia martyrum permoti. Cameron. De Eccles. pa. 83.*

VERSE 2.

Ier. I. 17, 18.

Ezek. 3. 8, 9.

I Tim. 4. 11.

2 Cor. 4. 1, 2.

2 Cor. 3. 12.

* Tertull. Apol.
cap. 5.

Rom. I. 16.

Ephes. 6. 10.

Act. 4. 29.

fore him to prepare his way, make bold to strike, and to scatter those unruly throngs of men, who presse too neere upon his sacred person. We are the Messengers of Christ sent before-hand with his royall proclamation of peace to make roome in the hearts of men for him, and to open their everlasting doores, that this King of Glorie may enter in. Wee may therefore boldly smite with the Rod of his mouth, wee must cry aloud, and not spare, Pull downe mountainous lusts, subdue strong holds, take unto us iron pillars, and brasen wals, and faces of flint, to roote up, to pull downe, to batter and destroy, not to teach onely, but to command with all authority, and to commend our selves to every mans conscience in the sight of God. This use the Apostle maketh of the Glory of the Gospell, *seeing wee have such Hope*, that is, seeing in this glorious Gospell wee have the dispensation of a blessed Hope unto men; or the revelation of Christ, who is unto us the Hope of Glory, or the assured confidence of doing excellent workes by the vertue of this so glorious a word; πολλή παρρησία χρησιμεύει, *Wee use great boldnesse or liberty of speech*; for why should hee, who bringeth unto men glad tidings of glorious things, which offereth unto them the blessed Hope of Eternall life, bee afraid or ashamed of his Office? Though Rome were the seate, and that * Emperour the first Dedicator of the persecutions of the Church, yet even unto that place the Apostle was not ashamed to preach the Gospell of Christ, because it was *the Power of God unto Salvation*. There is no shame in being a Saviour. And therefore it is both the honour and duty of the dispencers of the Gospell *to speake boldly as they ought to speake*; and of the people to pray that that excellent Spirit might ever accompanie so glorious a message. This was the Prayer of the Primitive Saints for the Apostles of Christ, *Grant unto thy servants, that with all Boldnesse they may speake thy Word*. And this duty lies upon

The Glory of the Gospell.

203

upon us with an heaue necessitie.

For first, wee are dispensers of *all Gods counsell*, there must not be a Word which God hath commanded that we should refuse to make knowne unto the people, for the things revealed are for them and their children. Thus we finde when the Angell of the Lord brought forth the Apostles out of prison, he gave them this command, *Goe stand and speake in the temple to the people all the words of this life*: and certainly some of these words will require boldnesse. When wee lay the axe to the roote of the tree, when wee hew off mens very members, when wee snatch them like brands out of the fire, when wee make them to see their owne faces in the Law of liberty, the face of a guilty, and therefore cursed conscience, there will be need of much boldnesse. A Chirurgian who is to search an inveterate wound, and to cut off a putrified member, had not need to be faint-hearted, or bring a trembling hand to so great a worke.

Secondly, the severest message we are sent withall, and which men are most unwilling to heare, is for them expedient. No newes could be so unwelcome to the Apostles as to heare of Christs departure, *Because I have said these things sorrow hath filled your heart, nevertheless I tell you the truth, it is expedient for you that I goe away*. The first newes which wee bring unto men is of Christs absence, of their false conceits, and presumptions of their being in him, of the distance, and unacquaintance which is betweene them, of our feare of them and their condition, and in all this we are not their enemies, because wee tell them the truth. As it is our office to speake, so it is the peoples duty and profit *to heare all things which shall be told them of God*, for *all Scripture*, as well that which reproveth and correcteth, as that which teacheth and instructeth in righteousness *is profitable*, and tends to the perfection of the Saints. *All his precepts concerning all things are right*. The contempt of one is virtually and inter-

VERSE 2.

Act. 20. 27.
Iosh. 8. 35.
Deut. 29. 29.
Act. 5. 20.

Ioh. 16. 6, 7.

Gal. 4. 16.

2 Tim. 3. 16, 17.
Deut. 12. 28.
Psal. 119. 128.
Iam. 2. 10, 11.

VERSE 2.

interpretatively in the constitution and preparation of heart, the violation of all, because they are all grounded upon the same divine authority, and directed unto the same saving ends: and therefore wee ought not to picke and choose either in the preaching or practising thereof. *

Ier.1.17.

Ezek.3.18.

Thirdly, we are to answer for the blood of the people if wee prevaricate, if wee let their sinnes alone they will have a double edge, to kill them and us both, like the mutuall embracements of two in a river, which is the meanes to drowne them both. *Speake unto them all that I command thee; be not dismayed at their faces, saith the Lord to his Prophet, lest I confound thee before them. If thou warne not the wicked from his wicked way that hee may live, he shall dye in his wickednesse, (thy bashfulness shall doe him no good) but his blood will I require at thy hands.* Is it at all congruous that men should have boldnesse enough to declare their sinnes, to speake them, to proclaime them, to weare them, to glory in them, and that those officers, who are sent for no other businesse, but in the name and authority of Almighty God to fight against the corruptions of the world, should in the meane time hang downe the head and be tongue-tied? that men should have more boldnesse to destroy themselves, and to doe Satans workes, than we to save them, or to serve God?

a 1 Pet. 4.11.

b Ezek. 3.4.

c 2 Cor. 5.20.

d 2 Cor. 13.3.

e 1 Cor. 14.25.

f Mic. 3.8.

Fourthly, we are to speake in the person of Christ, and in the vertue of his Spirit. We must speake as the ^a *Oracles of God*, and ^b *with his words*, ^c *as if he himselfe did by us speake unto the people*. We must give manifestation of ^d *Christ speaking by us*, that men may be ^e *convinc'd that God is in us of a truth*, and that we are ^f *full of power by his spirit*, that his spirit setteth to his seale to authorize our commission, and to countenance our ministration: and therefore we must use judgement and might, that is, spirituall discretion, and inflexible constancie against

The Glory of the Gospell.

205

VERSE 2.

against the finnes of men (for these two are contrary to the two grand props of Satans kingdome, which are *παρανομία*, and *παισινία*, his craftinesse, and his weapons of power :) & for where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty, ^h his Spirit will not be straightened, neither will the Lord keepe silence; hee that speaketh by the Spirit of Christ, must speake, though not in equality (which is impossible) yet in some similitude and proportion, as he spake, that is, as those that have ⁱ Authority and power committed to them for the edification of the Church.

Lastly, a partiall, unsearching and unreprouing Minister is one of Gods curses and scourges against a place, the forerunner of a finall and fearefull visitation. ^k The dayes of visitation and recompence come, saith the Lord. The Prophet is a foole, the Spirituall man is mad, for the multitude of thine iniquity, and the great hatred. ^l If a man walking in the spirit and falsehood, that is, professing the worke of a Spirituall man, and yet betraying his Office, or in a false and lying spirit prophesying of wine and strong drinke, that is, cherishing and encouraging sensuall livers in their pernicious courses, hee shall even bee the Prophet of this people. And therefore when the Lord will punish with an extreme revenge the rebellion of a people against his Gospell, who judge themselves unworthy of so great a salvation, hee either ^m removeth their Candle-sticke and taketh it away from them, or else ⁿ sealeth up the mouth of his Prophets, that they may bee dumbe and reprove them no longer, and that they may not bee purged any more from their filthinesse, or else infatuates their Prophets, and suffereth Satan to seduce them, and to bee a lying Spirit in their mouthes, that hee may destroy them, as we see in the ^o ruine of *Abab*, and in the ^p captivity of *Iudah*.

Againe, as the Ministers of the Gospell must use liberty, so must they likewise use sincerity in the dispensation thereof, because it is a *Glorious Gospell*. This likewise

g 2 Cor. 3. 17.

h Mic. 2. 7.

i Mat. 7. 29.

k Hof. 9. 7.

l Mich. 2. 11.

m Revel. 2. 5.

Mat. 21. 41, 43.

23. 37, 38.

1 Thes. 2. 16.

n Ezek. 3. 16.

Ezek. 24. 13.

o 2 King. 22. 10.

23.

p Ier. 4. 10.

Ier. 14. 13.

Ier. 23. 13, 33, 40.

Lam. 2. 14.

is

VERSE 2.

q 2 Cor. 4. 1, 2.

2 Cor. 2. 17.

ὅς οὐ καπαλεύον-
τες τὸ λόγον τῆς ἀνα-
μνησκόμενης τὸν
δυνάμιτι —

τὰς ἑαυτῶν ἡδονὰς
διακρίνομεν τὰς λό-

γους ἐκ τῶν ὁμο-
μετῶν, καὶ δυο-

μῶν οὐκ ἐστὶν ἡμῶν,
C. Greg. Naz.

Orat. 1. & Isid.

Pelut. lib. 1.

Epist. 169.

1 Ezck. 13. 10.

1 Cor. 14. 13.

1 Ephes. 4. 14.

Col. 2. 4, 8.

1 Cor. 5. 31.

Ἐν δὲ τῇ δόξῃ
πρὸς τὸν Θεόν καὶ
τὴν μαρτυρίαν.

1 Cor. 2. 4.

Demonstratio
autem nihil re-
linquit aut in-
evidentiæ in re,
aut formidinis
in intellectu.

is the Apostles inference, for having spent a whole chapter in this one argument of the Glory of the Gospell, hee presently concludeth, *Therefore seeing we have this ministry*, that is, the dispensation of such a Gospell committed unto us, *wee faint not, but have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty*; that is, as I conceive, the Arts of dawbing, and palliating, and covering over uncleane courses with plausible reasonings, and fleshly apologies (which is the use of false Prophets) *not walking in craftinesse*, that is, not using humane sleights or cogging, to carry men about with every winde of false doctrine (as sinners are very willing to bee deceived, and love to have it as false Prophets say it is) *nor handling the Word of God deceitfully*, that is, falsifying and adulterating it with corrupt glosses, and so tempering it to the pallat of sinners, that the working and searching vertue thereof, whereby of it selfe it is apt to purge out and wrestle with the lusts of men, may bee deaded, and so it may well consist with the power of lusts still (as Physicians use so to qualifie and allay poyson by other correctives, and crosse ingredients, that it shall serve as an instrument to strengthen us, not extinguish life: or as immodest Poets may so tamper with the chaste expressions of *Virgil* or *Homer*, as by them both to notifie, and in corrupt mindes to kindle uncleane lustings) *but by manifestation of the Truth*, that is, by such spirituall and perspicuous demonstrations, as under which there cannot *subesse falsum*, there can no falsity nor deceit lurke, *commending our selves to every mans conscience in the sight of God*, that is, working not the fancies, or humours, or fleshly conceits of men (which alwaies take the part of sinne) but their very consciences (which alwayes is on Gods side) to beare witnesse unto the Truth which wee speake, to receive it not as the wit or learning of a man, but as the Word and wisdom of God, to acknowledge the conviction, the iudicature, the penetration thereof, and

The Glorie of the Gospell.

207

VERSE 2.

and so to fall downe upon their faces, and to glorifie God, and report that he is in us of a truth; and all this *in the sight of God*, that is, so handling the Word as that we may please and approve ourselves to his eye, whose servants wee are, and whose worke wee doe. This is that which the Apostle calleth, *ἀδιαφθορίαν, σιμύτητα, ἀπαρτην λόγον ὡς, ὡς αὐτὸν διδασκαλίαν*, *Uncorruptnesse, gravity, sincerity, soundnesse of Doctrine*, such as the very adversaries themselves shall not bee able to picke quarrels withall, or to speake against: wee must not then make account to adorne the Gospell with our owne inventions, or with superstructions of humane wit and fancy; though these things may to fleshly reason seeme full of beauty, yet indeed they are but like the mingling of glasse-beads with a chaine of Diamonds, or of lime with pure and generous wine; they are indeede but *latebra dedecoris*, lurking places for uncleane lusts to hide themselves under, or to escape away while the corrupt fancies of men stand gazing at that which pleaseth them; as *Agag*, when hee was gloriously arrayed, thought nothing of the bitterness of death, or *Sisera*, of the naile and the hammer, while he saw nothing but the milke and the butter. Some there are not unlike *Praxiteles* the Painter, in *Clem. Alex.* who made the silly people worship the image of his strumpet, under the title and pretence of *Venus*; who by sleight and cunning craftinesse impose upon weake and incautelous hearers, the visions of their owne fancy, the crude and unnourishing vapors of an empty wit (things infinitely unsuteable to the Majestie and seriousnessse of the foundation in the Gospell) for the indubitate truth of God in his Word; which (with reverence may it bee spoken) is nothing else but to put the holy Prophets and Apostles into a fooles-coat: But how-ever these men may please and puffe up themselves in the admiration of their owne winde, yet certaine it is that the Gospell of Christ doth as much scorne humane contemperations,

Tit. 2.1,7,8.

*Clem. Alex. in
Protrept.*

V E R S E 2.

2 Tim. 4. 3.

2 Cor. 4. 3.

1 Tim. 1. 15.

4. 9, 10.

Act. 17. 11.

Matth. 2. 10.

Rom. 10. 15.

Rom. 1. 10.

Ephes. 3. 17.

Col. 1. 6.

1 Thess. 1. 5.

2. 1.

Rom. 10. 6, 7, 8.

Ier. 26. 4.

Esaï. 65. 1.

as a wall of marble doth a rooſe of ſtraw, or the Sunne at noone doth the light of a candle. And therefore the palate of thoſe who cannot away with the naked ſimplicity of the Goſpell, without the blandiſhments of humane wit, who muſt needs have Quaiſes to their Manna, is hereby diſcovered to bee manifeſtly diſtempered with an itch of luſt, and their eyes blinded by the god of this world.

Secondly, this glory of the Goſpell may teach us what admiration and acceptation it ſhould finde amongſt men, even as it doth with the bleſſed Angels themſelves. This is *a faithfull ſaying, and worthy of all acceptation*, worthy to be received with all readineſſe of minde, worthy to be gazed upon, like the Starre of the Wiſe-men, with exceeding great joy, worthy to be enamel'd in the Crownes of Princes, and to bee written in the ſoule of every Chriſtian with a beame of the Sunne; *That Ieſus Chriſt came into the world to ſave ſinners*. And indeede the faithfull have ever found *beauty in the ſeete of thoſe that bring them glad tidings of this their King*, that is, in the *comming* of this Word of Grace and Salvation unto them, which is the uſuall phraſe of the Scripture (ſetting forth more abundantly the mercy of the Lord, who did not chooſe one fixed place for his Goſpell to reſide in, and unto which all Nations, who would have benefit by it, ſhould take the paines to reſort (as hee did for the Jewes at Ieruſalem) but hath made it an itinerary ſalvation, and hath ſent it abroad to the very doores of men, who elſe would never have gone out of doores to ſeek it) what man in a ſad and diſconſolate eſtate would not ſpread wide open his heart, and let out his ſpirits, to run upon the embraces of that man who was comming unto him with a meſſage of more lovely and acceptable newes, than the very wiſhes of his heart could have framed to himſelfe? When *Ioeſeph* was ſent for out of priſon unto *Pharaohs* Court, when *Iacob* ſaw the Chariots which

The Glorie of the Gospell.

209

VERSE 3.

which were brought to carry him unto *Ioseph* his sonne, how were they revived and comforted after their distresses? When *Caligula* the Emperor sent for *Agrippa* (the same which was afterwards smitten by the Angel) whom *Tiberius* had bound in chaines, and cast into prison, caused him to change his garments, and cut his haire (it seemes that long and ugly haire was then the fashion of discontented prisoners) and placed a Diademe on his head, made him Tetrarch of Iturea and Trachonitis, and Governour of Judea, and for his chaine of iron, gave him another of gold, of equall weight, as the Historian relateth, he saith that men were *in amara et in periculo*, they could not beleve so wonderfull a change; for things of extraordinary goodnesse are very difficultly beleaved. When the Lord turned againe the captivity of Sion, wee were like them that dreame, the thing was so incredibly futable to their desires, that it seemed rather the imaginary wish of a dreame, than a deliverance really acted: as *Peter*, when hee was delivered out of prison, thought he had scene a vision; *Jacob* could not at first beleve the newes of the life and honour of *Ioseph* his sonne; and the Disciples for very joy were not able to beleve the Resurrection of Christ. Now what are all the good tidings to the Gospell? which is a Word of Salvation, which opens prisons and lets out captives, which brings our King unto us, and make us kings too, which gives us such a joy, as the whole world cannot rob us of? *Thou joy shalt no man take from you.* The joy which *Caligula* gave unto *Agrippa*, *Claudius* might have taken from him, as hee did after from *Agrippa* his sonne, and, though hee did not, yet we see the Angell did. But the joy of the Gospell is unvariable, the Angels themselves, (to whom one might thinke the joyes of men should seeme but small) call it *χαρὴ μεγάλη*, a great joy, *Luke 2. 10.* It is the joy of a treasure, infinitely more worth than all which a man hath besides. A joy of a triumphall harvest, and of victori-

*Ioseph. Antiq.
lib. 18. cap. 8.*

Psal. 126. 1.

*Act. 12. 9.
Gen. 45. 26.
Luk. 24. 41.*

The Glory of the Gospell.

VERSE 2.

Matth. 13. 44.

Esa. 9. 3, 4.

Iohn 15. 11.

Rom. 15. 13.

James 1. 2.

Hebr. 11. 26.

Mic. 5. 5.

Rom. 5. 3.

Esa. 61. 2.

Baron. An. 31.

num. 78.

2 Cor. 6. 1.

Luke 19. 6.

Act. 21. 17.

Act. 17. 11.

Gal. 4. 14.

Mark. 10. 39.

ous spoiles, wherein there is not onely an escape from dangerous hazard, but a large reward of peace and plenty. It is a *full joy*, there is no sorrow mingled with it, nay, it is *all joy*, and therefore there is nothing but sorrow without it. All joy in it selfe, and all joy in the midst of opposition too. A joy in the heart like gold in the Mine, which turneth every thing about it into joy. Divers temptations take not away one scruple of it, no more than fire doth of gold, it is *all joy* still. *My brethren*, saith the Apostle, *count it all joy when you fall into divers temptations*. It turneth the reproches of men into riches, nay, in the midst of all other tribulations it is our *Peace*, and our *Glory*: Therefore being so full of joy when once aright apprehended, needes must it likewise bee worthy of *all acceptation* too. And therefore the Prophet calleth the time of the Gospell *tempus acceptabile*, the acceptable time or yeere of the Lord, which *Baronius* falsely understands of the first yeere of Christs preaching onely, since the Apostle useth the same phrase for the whole time of evangelicall dispensation.

And indeed if we looke into the Church, wee shall see what worthy acceptation this Gospell hath found. *Zachew* made haste and received Christ into his house *gladly*; so did the brethren at Jerusalem receive the Apostles; so did the men of Berea receive the Word, *ut uolens crediderunt, with all readinesse of minde or forward affection*; so did the Galatians receive Saint Paul with the *honour of an Angell*, yea, even as Christ Iesus himselfe (for indeed Christ and his Gospell goe still together:) the man in the Gospell sold all he had for it; the Saints did earnestly contend for it, and take the Kingdome of Heaven by violence. Though they suffered the losse of all for Christ, yet they counted godlinesse great gaine still. In a shipwracke I throw my goods over-board, and get my life for a prey; in this case I come no loser to Heaven; *vita sibi merces*, a mans life is sufficient treasure in such an adventure.

The Power of the Gospell.

211

VERSE 2.

adventure. We are all by nature, *in maligna positi*, every man is a sea and a tempest to himselfe, as impossible to escape ruine, as to put off himselfe. Now in the Gospell, Christ sheweth a man a way to get out of himselfe, and so to escape the tempest, sheweth a way how with him he shall walke upon the sea and not sinke, how hee shall bee in the world, and not of it, nor swallowed by it. O how willingly will the man who is convinced of his danger, cast off every thing which would presse him downe, and account it a plentiful deliverance to have his soule saved from such a tempest of wrath as was falling upon him? We see what hazards men runne to get temporary riches, to the bottom of rocks for diamonds, to the bowels of the earth for gold and silver: such affections have the Saints had towards the Gospell. If they must digge in Mines for Christ (as it was an usuall condemnation, *Christiani ad metalla*) they were most willing so to doe, they had a treasure there which the Emperour knew not of, they had infinite more pretious wealth from thence than hee: If they must fetch Christ in the fire, or verifie for him, as for a pretious price, with the wilde beasts of the earth; if they be not suffered to weare Christ, except they put off themselves, how willing, how thankful are they for so rich a bargaine? Look to your life, said the Governour to Saint Cyprian that blessed Martyr, be not obstinate against your owne safety, but advise well with your selfe, *fac quod tibi praeceptum est*, saith the Holy man, *in re tam justa nulla est consultatio*; Sir, you are my Judge, you are none of my Counsellour, doe the office which is committed to you, in so righteous a cause, there is no further need of consultation. Take pay upon your selfe, and sacrifice and save your life, said the officers to Polycarpe; no saith the Martyr, this eighty six yeeres have I served Christ, and hee hath done mee no harme, *I will not doe what you perswade me*. That rich and blessed Virgine in Basil, who was for Christianitie

Baron. An. 161.
num. 30.

Euseb. lib. 4.
hist. cap. 14.

VERSE 2.

*Sculptet. Exercit.
sat. Evangel.
lib. 2. cap. 5.*

condemned to the fire, and was offered, if shee would worship idols, to have her life and state safe restored unto her, was obstinate in her resolution, *Valeat vita, pereat pecunia*; I shall have more life in Christ, than in my selfe; all the Emperours, all the Physitians in the world cannot make my life, which I have in my selfe, so long to morrow as it is to day; but in Christ my life is not onely an *abiding*, but an *abounding* life, I shall have more of that by losing mine owne; my life in him is an *hidden life*, free from all injuries and persecutions of men: I shall have more riches in him than in my selfe, even unsearchable riches, which can never bee stolen away, because they can never bee exhausted. It is as possible for thieves to draw out the Mines of India, or to steale away the Sunne out of his orbe, as for any humane violence to take away Christ from a man. Alike honourable was the answer of *Fredericke* the Elector of Saxony, who being prisoner to *Charles* the fifth, was promised enlargement and restitution of dignity, if hee would come to Masse, *Summum in terris Dominum agnosco Caesarum in caelis Deum*, In all civill accommodations I am ready to yeeld unto *Caesar*, but for Heavenly things I have but one Master, and therefore I dare not serve two; Christ is more welcome to mee in bonds, than the honours of *Caesar* without Christ. Such acceptance hath the Gospell found amongst renowned Worthies heretofore: and the like entertainment should wee all give unto it, even preferre it above our greatest glory, and, as the Thessalonians did, receive it with joy in the midst of afflictions, abide with Christ in his temptations, esteeme his Gospell glorious as the Starres are in the darknesse of the night, or as a Torch, which blazeth most when it is most shaken.

1. Thess. 1. 6.

Luk. 22. 28, 29.

This alone it is which proves our love to Christ to bee sincere and incorrupt, when wee embrace his Gospell for it selfe, and can therein in any condition see Christ.

The Glorie of the Gospell.

213

VERSE 2.

Christ full of glory, grace and truth. When a man can with Saint *Paul* not rejoyce onely in the Name and profession of the Crosse of Christ, but in conformitie and obedience thereunto, in that vertue of the Gospell which crucifies him unto the world and the world unto him. In dayes of peace and religion men may easily afford to magnifie the Gospell, because they get by it. The Persians, who, had the bloudie decree held, would have been the slaughterers of the Jewes, yet when leave was given to that people to deliver themselves from the malice of *Haman*, even many of them turned Jewes themselves, because the feare of that people fell upon them. We may observe this affection in the woman of Samaria, the first reason why shee gave some heed to Christ, speaking of his water of life unto her, was, because *shee should thirst no more, nor come thither to draw*. So long as *Ephraim* might have her worke and her wages together, she was contented to doe God some service, like an *Heifer* which loveth to tread out the corne, that is, while shee hath no yoke on her necke, no muzzle on her mouth, while shee is not put to plow, but to easie and pleasant service, shee is willing to yeeld unto it. To note, that it is but base and hypocriticall obedience, which is supported by no other than present rewards. *They seeke me daily*, saith the Lord of the hypocrites among his people, *and delight to know my wayes, as a nation that did righteousnesse*. But the end was that they might have their owne wils, and as it were oblige God to reward them: and therefore as soone as God seemeth to neglect them and their services, they proudly expostulate with him, and even twit him with their workes, *Wherefore have wee fasted, and thou seest not?* &c. This then is the prooffe of our sincere love unto Christ, which is not raised upon mercinarie respects, when we can receive the Gospell with persecution. ^a Persecution is amongst Christs legacies, a part of the Churches portion ^b and of Gods gifts unto her;

Gal. 6.14.

Ioh. 4.14.

Hos. 10.11.

Esa. 58.2,3.

^a Mark. 10.30.

^b Phil. 1.29.

VERSE 2.

c 2 Tim. 3. 12.

d Gal. 4. 19.

e Zech. 3. 8.

Esaï. 8. 18.

2 King. 9. 11.

Ier. 29. 26.

Wild. 5. 6.

her; c no man that will live godly can be without them. Even in *Abrahams* house, which was at that time, if not the sole, yet the most glorious Church on the earth, there was a persecutour, and d *as it was then, so is it now*, saith the Apostle. The Saints of God ever have beene, and ever will be to the worlds end esteemed for e wonders, and markes, and mad-men, and proverbes of reproch. And hereby the Lord doth provide to make his Gospell more glorious, because hee giveth men hearts to suffer scorne and reproch for it. *To receive the word in affliction, and yet with joy*, is an exemplary thing, which maketh the sound and glory of the Gospell to spread abroad. Now then, if persecution be thus an appendant to the Gospell, every man must resolve to receive it in some affliction, when he must be put to discard his wicked companies, to shake off his flattering and sharking lusts, to forsake his owne will and wayes, to runne a hazzard of undeserved scorne, dis-reputation, and misconstructions in the world, and yet for all this to set an high price upon the pretious truths of the Gospell still, is not this to receive the Word in much affliction? And surely till a man can resolve upon this conclusion, I am ready to be bound, and to dye for the Name of Jesus, I count not my life, much lesse my liberty, peace, credit, secular accommodations deare, so I may finish my course with joy; Lord, my will is no more mine, but it shall bee in all things subject unto thee; hee can never give such entertainment to the Word as becommeth so glorious a Gospell. All his seeming possession and acceptance, is but like the Gadarens courtesie in meeting of Christ, which was only to be rid of him, *Matth. 8. 34.*

Lastly, we should from hence learne a further Christian dutie, which is to adorne this glorious Gospell in an holy conversation. This use the Apostle every where makes of the Gospell of Christ; that wee should walke as becommeth the Gospell, that we should in all things adorne

Phil. 1. 27.

Tit. 2. 10.

The Glorie of the Gospell.

215

adorne the doctrine of God our Saviour that we should walke worthy of him who hath called us unto his kingdome and glorie, that wee shew forth the vertues of him who hath called us out of darknesse into his marvellous light, that we should not receive so great a grace, as the ministry of reconciliation in vaine, but that wee should walke fittingly to the holinesse and efficacy of so excellent a Rule, as becommeth a royall Nation, a people of glorie, a peculiar and selected inheritance, even zealous of good workes. It was once the expostulation of *Nehemiah* with his enemies, should such a man as I fly from such men as you? such should be our expostulation with Satan and our owne lusts, should such men as wee are, who have the Gospell of Christ for our Rule, conforme our selves unto another Law? Is not this the end why the Gospell is preached, that we should live unto God? Doth it become the Sonne of a King to goe in ragges, or to converse with meane and ignoble persons? Now by the Gospell wee have that great honour and priviledge given us to be called *the Sonnes of God*; and shall we then walke as servants of Satan? Would any Prince endure to see the heire of his crowne live in bondage to his owne vassall and most hated enemy? Herein is the greatest glory of the Gospell above the Law, that it is a Law of life and libertie, a Word which transformeth men into the Image of Christ, and maketh them such as it requieth them to be. So that to walke still according to the course of the world as wee did before, is, as much as in us lies to make the Gospell as weake and unprofitable as the Law. *How doe you say we are wise, saith the Prophet, and the Law of the Lord is with us? Certainly in vaine made he it, the pen of the Scribe is in vaine:* That is, the priviledge of having the oracles and ordinances of God committed unto us, will doe us no more good, if we walke unworthy of so great a Grace, than if those ordinances had never been written or revealed to men.

VERSE 2.

1 Thess. 2. 12.

1 Pet. 2. 8.

2 Cor. 6. 1. 3.

Gal. 6. 16.

Tit. 2. 14.

Nehem. 6. 11.

1 Pet. 4. 3, 6.

Ier. 8. 8.

VERSE 2.

Col. 2. 6.

Col. 1. 28.

2 Tim. 3. 15, 16,

17.

Psal. 119. 98, 99.

Ier. 8. 9.

Gal. 6. 16.

Here then it is needfull to enquire in *what manner* we are to adorne and set forth the glory of the Gospell? To this I answer, that the first and greatest honour wee can doe unto the Gospell, is, to set it up in our hearts, as our *onely Rule*, by which we are to walke, that we preferre it above all our owne counsels, and venture not to mingle it with the wisdom and reasonings of the flesh; that wee raise up our conversation unto it, and never bend it unto the crookednesse of our owne ends or rules. *As ye have received Christ Iesus the Lord, so walke ye in him*, saith the Apostle, that is, fashion your conversation to the doctrine of Christ, let that have the highest roome, and the over-ruling suffrage in your hearts. There is *all wisdom* in the Gospell, it is able to make men *wise unto salvation*, that is, there is wisdom enough in it to compassse the uttermost and most difficult end. And what can the reasonings of the flesh contribute to that which was all wisdom before? and which can thoroughly furnish a man unto every good worke? This glory Saint *Paul* (though a man of great learning, of strong intellectuals, of a working and stirring spirit, qualities very unapt to yeeld and be silent) did, at the very first revelation thereof, give unto the Gospell, *Immediately*, saith hee, *I conferr'd not with flesh and bloud*, I did not compare the Gospell of Christ with the principles of my carnall wisdom, I did not resolve to dispute against Gods grace, or to conforme unto this mystery no farther than the precepts of mine owne reason, or the coexistence of mine owne secular ends and preferments would allow; but I captivated all my thoughts, and laid downe all the weapons of the flesh at Christs feet, resting onely on this Word, as a treasury of wisdom, and yeelding up my whole heart to bee in all things ordered by this rule. It is an horrible boldnesse in many men to wrest, and torture, and distinguish the Gospell into all shapes for their owne lusts sake. As we

The Glorie of the Gospell.

217

VERSE 2.

we see what shifts men will use, to make the way of life broader than it is, by looking upon it thorow their owne multiplying glasses, what evasions and subterfuges sinne will finde out to escape by, when the letter of the Word passeth sore upon them. O how many sinnes might men escape, how wonderfully might they improve the Image of Christ in their hearts; if they did with *David* make the Law their counsellour, and weigh every action which they goe about, those especially which they have any motions of reluctancie in the spirit of their minde unto, *Non in statera dolosa consuetudinum, sed in recta statera scripturarum*, not in the deceitfull balance of humane custome, but in the balance of the Sanctuary, the holy Scriptures: If they would seriously remember that they must alwayes walke in Christ, *Coloss. 2.6.* make him the Rule, the Way, the End, the Judge, the Companion, the Assistant in all their workes, that as the members of the body doe nothing at all but in the fellowship of the body, and as they are thereunto applied by the same common soule which animates them all: so Christian men should doe nothing but as parts of Christ, and as actuated by the same gracious Spirit which is in him. This is the meaning of our being Christians, and of that consent which in our Baptisme we yeeld unto the Covenant of Christ, that wee will not follow nor bee led by Satan, the world, or the flesh, that is, by that wisdom which is earthly, sensuall, or divellish, but that we will bee ordered by that Spirit of regeneration, the seale of whose Baptisme wee receive in our sacramentall washing. O then what is become of the Christianity of many men, who forget that they have beene purged? who live as if they had never beene baptized into Christ, who live as if they had never learned Christ? What a prodigie and contradiction is it, that that tongue, which even now professed it selfe to bee Christian, and said Amen to a most cleane and holy Prayer, should, like those beasts which

Psal. 119. 24.

Aug. contr. epist.
Parmen. li. 3. c. 2.

VERSE 2.

which *Seneca* speaketh of, which by but turning aside their head to some other spectacle, doe immediately forget the meat which they seemed most greedily to eat before, breake forth presently into blasphemies, oathes, lies, revilings, clamours, obscenities, which are the very fumes and evidences of hell in the heart? That those hands which even now were reached forth to receive the sacred pledges and most dreadfull mysteries of salvation, which were even now imployed in distributing almes to the members of Christ, or in helping to heave and lift up a prayer unto heaven, which seemed like the hands of *Ezekiels* living creature to have wings of devotion over them, should suddenly have their wings melted off, and fall downe to covetous and cruell practices againe? that those feet which in the morning carried men into the Lords Sanctuarie, and into the presence of Christ, should the same day turne the backs of the same men upon the Temple of the Lord, and carry them to stewes & stages, the nurseries of uncleannesse? that those eyes which even now seemed to have been nail'd unto heaven, and to have contended with the tongue and the hand which should more earnestly have presented the prayers of the soule to God, should almost in the space of their owne twinkling, bee filled with sparkles of uncleannesse, gazing and glutting themselves upon vaine or adulterous objects? What is this but for men to renounce their Baptisme, to teare off their seale, and dash out their subscription from the covenant of Grace, to deny the Lord that bought them, to repent of their bargain which they had made for salvation, and *really* to dishonour that Gospell which they *hypocritically* professe? This then is the first honour which wee can doe unto the Gospell of Christ, when we set it up in our hearts as a most adequate rule of all wisdome, and the alone principle of every action.

Secondly, wee continue to honour the Gospell of Christ

The Glorie of the Gospell.

219

VERSE 2.

Christ by walking in Obedience thereunto as our perfect Rule. First, in *Obedience of faith*, receiving it, and leaning upon it, laying hold on the covenant which is therein revealed, as on the onely hope which is set before us: for this is a great acknowledgement of the glorie and praise of God when we trust in him for Salvation. Therefore the Apostle having shewed the Glorie of Christ above *Moses*, maketh this principall use of it, that therefore we should *heare his voyce, and take heed of an evill and unbeleeving heart, in departing from him*, Wee, saith he, *are to the praise of Gods Glory, who trust in Christ*.

Heb. 3. 3, 12.

Ephes. 1. 12.

Secondly, in *Obedience of life and Holinesse*. When for the honour of the Gospell wee can denie our selves, and dishonour our lusts, and part from all that wee had before as from dung and drosse, and expresse the image of Christ in our conversations. ^a This is indeed the true learning of Christ when wee shew forth his life in ours, when we walke as he also walked, when as he was so we are in this world, when the same minde, judgement, affections are in us which were in Christ. Thus the faithfull are said to honour God, when they sanctifie his Sabbath, and to glory him when they bring forth much fruit.

^a Ephes. 4. 20. 22.

1 Ioh. 2. 6.

1 Ioh. 4. 17.

Phil. 2. 5.

Esa. 58. 13.

Ioh. 15. 8.

Thirdly, we honour the Gospell of Christ by *Constancie and continuance* in our faith and obedience thereunto; for standing fast, or persisting immoveably in our course without sorrow or repentance is an argument of the excellencie of the Gospell. ^b *Walke*, saith the Apostle, *as becommeth the Gospell* — that I may heare of your affaires, *that you stand fast in one spirit*. ^c Lusts ever bring inconstancie with them, and make the soule like weary and distempered bodies never well in any posture or condition; wicked men fly like Bees from one flower to another, from one vanity to another, can never finde enough in any to satiate the endlesse intemperancie of

^b Phil. 1. 27.

^c Non stant uno loco vitia, sed mobilia & inter se dissidentia tumultuantur, pelunt invicem, & fugantur. Senec. de Benef. l. 1. c. 16

un-

VERSE 2.

δ Δείξας ὅτι τὴν
ἀμαρτίαν ὅντας
μαρτυροῦμεν, παρὰ
δὲ τῆς πίστεως αὐτῶν
ἐν θεοῦ μεταβέβηκε,
ὡς ἀξίον ὁμολογῶν.
Greg. Naz.
Orat. 40.
Rom. 2. 23, 24.

unnaturall desires: onely the Gospell, being spiritually apprehended, bath treasures enough for the soule to rest in, and to seeke no farther. And therefore falling away from the truth, power, or puritie of the Gospell is said to expose Christ to shame, and to crucifie him againe. For as in ^d Baptisme when wee renounce sinne, and betake our selves to Christ, we doe, as it were, expose sinne unto publike infamie, and naile it on the Crosse of Christ: So when we revolt from Christ unto sinne againe, and in our hearts turne backe unto Egypt, and thrust him from us, we doe then put him to shame againe, as if hee were either in his power deficient, or unfaithfull in those promises which before we pretended to relie upon. If Israel, as they consulted, should likewise actually have rebelled against *Moses*, and returned in body as well as in heart unto Egypt againe, what a scorne would it have wrought in that proud nation, that their vassals should voluntarily resume their thraldome, after so many boasts and appearances of deliverance? If a man should relinquish the service of some noble person, and apply himselfe unto some sordid master for subsistence, would not the mouthes of men be quickly open, or their mindes jealous to suspect that however such a man carry an high name, and there bee great expectations from attending on him, yet in truth he is but a dry master, whom his own servants doe so publikely dishonour? So when any men turne Apostates from the Power and Profession of the Gospell of Christ, presently wicked men are apt to blaspheme, and to conceive desperate prejudices against our high and holy calling. If any man make a boast of the Law, and yet breake it, hee dishonoreth God the more, for (saith the Apostle) *The name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written*, so then constancie in Christs service giveth him the glory of an honourable master, and his Law of a royall law, * *putteth to silence the ignorance of those foolish men, who lie in waite*

* 1 Pet. 2. 15, 16.

The Glorie of the Gospell.

221

waite to take advantages that they may blaspheme the Name of God, and his Doctrine.

Fourthly, the Gospell of Christ is honoured by the *unity of the Spirit*, and concurrent judgements and affections of men towards it. When all the sincere professors thereof, doe unanimously *strive* together, and *earnestly contend for it*; when all that ever have beene or are acquainted therewith doe glorifie it with their suffrages and subscription, *Nemo omnes, neminem omnes fefelleret*, it must needs be a glorious Gospell, if all that ever looked on it doe so conclude: Nothing was ever able to deceive all men, neither did so many ever combine to deceive others. When the Philosophers severally strove for the precedence of their severall sects, and every man after his owne order, gave the next place unto *Plato*, it was undoubtedly concluded that his was the most excellent, because after their owne prejudice and personall respects, it was honoured by the equall suffrages of all the rest. How much more must the Gospell needs bee glorious which hath the joynt attestation of Angels and all Holy men since the world began to honour it withall? Therefore when the Apostle proveth the greatnesse of this Heavenly mystery, hee useth a word which importeth the consent of men, *ὁμολογούμενος*, *without any doubt, or by an universall confession, Great is the mystery of Godlinesse*. Doth it not much set forth the glory of a Law, that there should bee so much wisdom, power, equity, majesty, beauty in the face of it, that every true subject in a Realme should concur in a constant and uniforme love and obedience to it? Let us therefore expresse the Glory of the Gospell, not onely in our joynt confessions, but in our united obedience thereunto, and in our unanimous zeale and contention for it, in our brotherly affections and compassions to one another thereby: for the schismes and disaffections of Christians bring much dishonour upon their holy profession, which in all their miscariages doth ever

VERSE 2.

2 Cor. 6. 3.

1 Tim. 6. 1.

Phil. 1. 27.

Iud. v. 3.

1 Tim. 3. 16.

VERSE 2.

ever by occasion of the unreasonableſſe of wicked men ſuffer together with them. Therefore the Apoſtle from the unity of Chriſt in himſelfe concludeth that ſuch hee ſhould bee in his members too. *Is Chriſt divided?* hath hee divers opinions, or hath hee the Truth of God in reſpect of perſons? ſuch as hee is ſuch ſhould you be like- wiſe, leſt by your contentions you ſeeme to make ano- ther Chriſt, or another Goſpell, than that which you have received.

Fifthly, the Goſpell of Chriſt is honoured in our *ſtudi- ing of it*, and digging after it in our ſerious and painefull enquiries into the myſteries of it. Saint *Paul* deſpiſed all other knowledge, and ſhooke off every weight that he might preſſe forward with the more unwearied affe- ctions towards ſo excellent a treaſure. Surely if men had the ſpirit of the Apoſtle, or of thoſe bleſſed Angels which deſire to pry into the Goſpell of Chriſt, they would not miſ- ſpend ſo much pretious time in frothy and fruitleſſe ſtudies, nor waſte away that lampe of reaſon in their boſomes, in empty and unnouriſhing blazes; but would ſet more houres apart to looke into the patent of their ſalvation (which is the Booke of God) and to ac- quaint themſelves with Chriſt before-hand, that when they come into his preſence they may have the enter- tainment of friends and not of ſtrangers. Men that in- tend to travell into forraigne kingdomes with any ad- vantage to their parts, or improvement of their expe- rience, doe before-hand ſeaſon and prepare themſelves with the language, with ſome topographiſall obſervati- ons of the Countrey, with ſome generall notions of the ingeny, manners, formes, civilities, entertainements of the natives there, doe delight to converſe with thoſe men who are beſt learned in theſe or the like particulars. Surely we all profeſſe a journey to heaven, a pilgrimage in this preſent world, to have our converſation now where we looketo have our everlaſting abode with the Lord here-

The Glory of the Gospell.

223

VERSE 2.

hereafter. Now in the Gospell of Christ wee have as it were a map, a topographicall delineation of those glorious mansions which are there prepared for the Church, wee have a taste and description of the manners of that people, wee have some rudiments of the Heavenly language, in one word, wee have abundantly enough, not onely to prepare us for it, but to enflame all the desires of our soules unto it, even as exiles or captives desire to returne to their native country. Now then if wee no way regard to study it, or acquaint our selves with it, if wee seeme to desire the sight of Christ in Heaven, and when we may every day have a most blessed view of his face in the Glasse of his Gospell, wee turne away our eyes and regard it not, wee doe as good as proclaime to all the world, that either our hopes of Heaven are very slender, or our care thereof little or none at all. And this I take for a most undoubted truth, that there is so much of the knowledge, grace, and Spirit of Christ, and through him of the Father in the holy Scriptures (and those onely are the things which make Heaven to bee the home and the hope of men) as that whosoever neglecteth the study of them, and suffereth the Scriptures to lie by him as a sealed booke, would bee every whit as unwilling if Heaven gates were wide open unto him, to relinquish his portion in the earth, and to spend his time in the fruition or contemplation of that glorious Countrey.

Lastly, we honour the Gospell when in our greatest distresses wee make it our *Altar of refuge*, our doore of escape, the ground of all our hope and comfort, the only anchor to stay our soules in any spirituall tempest, the only staffe to leane upon in our greatest darknesse. What ever other carnall comforts men may for a time rejoyce in, they will all prove but as a fire of sparkes, or as a blaze of thornes, which can yeeld no solid or abiding light unto the soule. When sinners in Sion beginne once to bee affraid, and to bee surprized with the fearefulnesse of a
guilty

VERSE 2.

Esa. 33. 14, 24.

Matth. 9. 2.

guilty soule, when the affrighted conscience shall put that dreadfull question in the Prophet to it selfe, *How can I dwell with devouring fire? How can I dwell with everlasting burnings?* there will no other answer allay the scorching terrour thereof but that in the end of the same Chapter, *The people that dwell therein shall be forgiven their iniquity.* A man may as soone drinke up the water of the sea with sponges, or remove mountaines with one of his fingers, as be able to draine out these close and incorporated sorrowes which together with sinne doe soake through the whole substance of the soule, with vaine company, worldly imployments, or youthfull pleasures. All these doe but respite them for a time that they may returne the stronger. But if thou wilt indeede bee comforted, sue out thy pardon, flie to the court of mercy which is erected in the Gospell; This was our Saviours argument to the man that was sicke of the Palsie. *Some bee of good cheere, thy sinnes bee forgiven thee.* There is no worldly affliction goeth closer to the life of a man than sicknesse, and yet as in the midst of laughter the heart of a wicked man is sorrowfull, because it is still under the guilt of sin, so in the midst of paine and sorrow the heart of a godly man may be cheerefull, because his sinnes are forgiven.

To conclude this point, we may for our better encouragement in so necessary a duty lay together these considerations: First in point of *honour* wee should learne to walke as becommeth the Gospell, for the Gospell is a Christians Glory, and therefore ought to bee preserved in his heart, as his chiefeft priviledge. The Spirit of God will not endure to have Holy things profaned as if they were common or uncleane. *Belsazzar* converted the consecrated vessels of the Temple into instruments of luxury and intemperance; but the Lord tempered his wine with dregges, and made them proove unto him as cups of trembling and astonishment. *Herod* polluted the

The Glorie of the Gospell.

225

the sepulchers of the Saints with a sacrilegious search of treasures presum'd to have beene there hidden, and God made fire rise out of the earth to devoure the over-busie searchers. *Antiochus* ransack'd the Temple of the Lord; *Heliodorus* emptied the treasures of their consecrated monies; *Pompey* defiled the Sabbath and the Sanctuary; *Craesus* robb'd the house of God of ten thousand talents. But inquire into the event of these insolencies, and wee shall finde that true then, of which latter ages have given many examples, and are still likely to give more, that stollen bread hath gravell in it to choake those that devoure it, that ruine is ever the childe of sacriledge, that mischiefe setteth a period to the lives and designs of prophane men. Now then if the Lord were thus jealous for the types of his Gospell, how, thinke wee, can hee endure to see the Gospell it selfe dishonoured by an unsuteable profession, or the blood of the Covenant trampled under foote, as if it were a common or uncleane thing? In the contempt of the Gospell there is more dishonour done unto every Person of the blessed Trinity, than can be by any other sinne. An undervaluing of the *Fathers wisdome*, that great mystery and counsell of Redemption which was hidden from former ages: and what an indignity is it unto him, for a man to shut out the light of the Sunne, that so hee may enjoy that pitifull benefit of darkenesse, to gaze upon the false glistering of rotten wood or of earthly slime, the deceit whereof would be by the true light discovered? An undervaluing of his *wonderfull Love*, as if he had put himselfe unto a needlesse compassion, and might have kept it still in his owne bosome. A scorne unto the Sonne of God, when wee suffer him to stand at our doores with his lockes wet with the dew of Heaven, to put his finger into the hole of the locke, as if hee desired to steale an enterance upon the soule; to empty, to humble, to deny himselfe, to suffer the wrongs of men, and the wrath of God, and

Q

after

VERSE 2.

Joseph. Antiq.
lib. 16. cap. 11.

2 Mac. 3.

5.

Tacit. Hist. lib. 5.

Joseph. Antiq.
lib. 12. cap. 13.

VERSE 2.

after all this to have that pretious blood which was squeezed out with such woefull agonies, counted no other than the blood of a common malefactor, nor that sacred Body which was thus broken, discerned from the bodies of the theeves which were crucified with him. An indignity beyond all apprehension to *the Spirit of Grace*; when wee suffer him to waite dayly at our Bethesda, our houses of mercy, and all in vaine, to spend his Sacred breath in the Ministry of reconciliation, in doubling, and redoubling his requests unto our soules, that wee would bee contented to be saved, and wee shall harden our hearts, and stop our eares, and set up the pride and stoutnesse of our owne reasonings, till wee doe even weary him and chide him away from us. Now this is a certainerule, God will not loose any honour by mens finnes; if they refuse to give him the Glory of his Mercy, hee will shew the Glory of his Power and Justice, in treading downe the proud enemies of Christ under his feete. As they that honour him shall be honoured; so they who cast any disgrace upon his Truth and Covenant, shall be sure to meete with shame and dishonour at the last.

Secondly, to avoid *Scandall*. The Gospell is the *light* of a Nation: And finnes in the light as they are committed with more impudence, so likewise with more offence. An offence or scandall tending unto sinne in misguiding the weake, in heartning and confirming the obdurate, in opening the mouthes of adversaries to revile our holy profession: and a scandall tending unto sorrow in wounding the hearts of the godly, and vexing their righteous spirits with a filthy conversation.

Thirdly, wee should learne to walke as becommeth the Gospell even in respect to the *state*, for the Gospell is the foundation of true peace, and tranquility in a common-weale, and those who shew forth the Power thereof are, as it were, Lions about the Throne of their King.

By

The Glorie of the Gospell.

227

By righteousness the Throne is established, but sinne is a reproch unto any people. One *Ioseph* in Egypt is a storehouse to all the Kingdome; One *Elisha* an army of chariots and of horsemen unto Israel; One *Moses* a fence to keepe out an inundation of wrath which was breaking in upon the people; One *Paul* an haven, an anchor, a deliverance to all that were in the Ship with him. And now *Si stella cadunt venti sequuntur*: If the Starres fall wee must needs looke for tempests to ensue, If the salt be infatuated we cannot looke that any thing should bee long preserved. If Christians live as if they had no Gospell, or as if they had another Gospell, what can wee expect but that God should either plague us, or forsake us, either send his judgements, or curse his blessings?

Lastly, the Gospell makes sinne more filthy, if it doe not purge it; as a Taper in the hand of a Ghost makes him seeme more gaskly than he was before. Sweet ointment causeth ranke and strong bodies to smell worse than they did before. So the sweete savour of the Gospell maketh the sinnes of men more noysome and odious in the nostrils of the Almighty. And therefore wee see what a fearefull doome the Apostle pronounceth against those, who having tasted of the good Spirit of God, and been illightened, and in some sort affected with his grace doe yet afterwards fall away, even an impossibility of repentance or renovation. From which place, perversly wrested, though the Novatians of old did gather a desperate and uncomfortable conclusion, that sinne committed after regeneration was absolutely unpardonable (to avoide the danger of which damnable and damning doctrine, some have boldly questioned both the Author and authenticalnesse of that Epistle) yet, all these inferences being denied, wee learne from thence this plaine observation; That precedent Illumination from the Gospell of Christ, doth tend much to the aggravation of

Q³

those

VERSE 2.

PROV. 16. 12.

20. 28.

25. 5.

Arist. Prob. §.

26. qu. 25.

Qui hircos redolent, fediū olent cum se unguentaverint. Arist. Prob.

Heb. 6. 4. 7.

Heb. 10. 26.

Vid. Sixt. Senens. bibliot. l. 7.

Melch. Can. loc.

Theolog. l. 2. c. 10.

Greg. Tholos. de

Rep. lib. 1. c. 7.

VERSE 2.

those sinnes which are committed against it. And therefore in all these considerations we should labor to walke worthy of so Glorious a Gospell, and of so great a salvation.

Thus have wee at large spoken of the *Rod of Christs strength*, as it is *Insigne regium*, or *Sceptum majestatis*, an Ensigne and Rod of Majestie: we are now to speake a little of it as it is *Pedum pastorale*, an episcopall Rod, which denoteth much heedfulnesse and tender care. This is the Precept which the Apostle giveth unto the Pastors of the Church that they should *αφοσιωθητε τῷ ποιμνίῳ*, *Take speciall heed to all the flocke over which the Holy Ghost had made them overseers*. And the Apostle againe reckoneth *Vigilantie* or *care over the flocke* amongst the principall characters of a Bishop: and hee professeth of himselfe, that there did dayly lie upon him *πλεμπλα πωσιν τῶ ἐκκλησιαστικῶν*, *The care of all the Churches*. And this consideration affordeth us another note out of the words, namely, That *Christ in the Ministrie of his Gospell and dispensation of his Spirit, is full of care and tendernesse towards his Church*. This Christ maketh one maine point of opposition betweene himselfe and hirelings, that these *Care not for the flocke*, but suffer the Wolfe to come, and to scatter them while they flie away; whereas hee keepeth them, that none may bee lost, and prayeth unto the Father to keepe them through his owne Name. The Lord committed the Church unto Christ as their Head, gave them into his hands, not as an ordinary gift, wherein hee did relinquish his owne interest in them or care of them (for hee careth for them still) but as a blessed *depositum* entrusted them with him, as the choycest of his jewels, as the most pretious casket amongst all the treasures of the Creation, that he should polish, preserve, present them faultlesse, and without spot before the presence of his Glory at the last day. And for this purpose he gave him *a Commandement* of the greatest care and tendernesse that

Act. 20. 18.

1 Tim. 3. 2.

2 Cor. 11. 28.

Ioh. 10. 12, 13.
Ioh. 17. 11, 12.

1 Pet. 5. 7.

Mal. 3. 17.

Iud. v. 24.

Eph. 5. 16, 27.

that ever the world knew, that hee should lay downe his life for his sheepe, and should lose nothing of all that was given him, but should raise it up at the last day. So that now want of care or compassion of Christ towards his Church, would be an argument of unfaithfulnesse; If he had not been a mercifull high priest, neither could he have beene faithfull to him that appointed him, for he was appointed to be mercifull, and was by the Spirit of God filled with most tender affections, and qualified with an heart fuller of compassion than the sea is of waters, that he might commiserate the distressed of his people, and take care of their salvations.

Notably doth this Care of Christ shew it selfe: First, in the apportioning and measuring forth to every one his due *dimensum*, and in the midst of those infinite occasions and exigencies of his severall members in providing such particular passages of his Word as may bee thereunto most exactly suitable; for this sheweth that his Care reacheth unto particular men. It is the dutie of a faithfull bishop, *ἐπισκοπος*, to make such a difference betweene men, and so to divide or distribute the Word aright, as that every one may have the portion which is due unto him: some are but Lambes in Christs flocke, young, tender, weake, easily offended or affrighted; others sheepe, growne up to more strength and maturity: some in his garner are but Cummin-seed, others Fitches, and some harder corne, some can but beare a little Rod, others a greater staffe or flaile, and some the pressure of a Cart wheele, that which doth but cleanse some would batter and breake others into pieces: some are *great with young*, in the pangs of a loaded conscience, in the travaile under some sore affliction, or in the throwes of a bitter repentance, as it were in fits of breeding or new forming of CHRIST in their soule: and these hee leadeth with a gentle hand. Others are, as it were, *new borne*, past their paines, but yet

VERSE 2.

John 10. 18.

John 6. 39.

Heb. 2. 17.

3. 2.

2 Tim. 2. 15.

Iud. v. 22, 23.

John 20. 15, 16.

Esaï. 28, 27, 28.

Esaï. 40. 11.

VERSE 2.

Esaï. 66. 11.

Esaï. 61. 1, 3, 3.

Esaï. 41. 3.
Mat. 12. 20.

very tender, weake, and fearefull; and these he gathers with his arme, and carries in his bosome, shewes them that his care doth not onely reach unto the least of his kingdome, but that his compassions are most enlarged to those that are too weake to helpe themselves, that hee hath breasts of consolation to satisfie and delight with abundance the smallest infant of his Kingdome. Some are broken-hearted, and those hee bindeth; some are captives, to those hee proclaimeth liberty; some are Mourners in Sion, and for them he hath beautie, and oile of joy, and garments of praise: some are bruized reedes, whom every curse or commination is able to crush; and some are smoaking flax, whom every temptation is able to discourage, and yet even these doth hee so carefully tend, and furnish with such proportionable supplies of his Spirit of Grace, as makes that seede and sparkle of holinesse, which hee began in them, get up above all their owne feares, or their enemies machinations, and grow from a *judgement of truth*, and sincerity (as it is called by the Prophet) unto a *judgement of victory* and perfection, as it is turned by the Evangelist. In one word, some are strong and others are weake; the strong hee feedeth, the weake hee cureth, the strong hee confirmeth, the weake he restoreth, hee hath trials for the strong to exercise their graces, and hee hath cordials for the weake to strengthen theirs. According unto the severall estates, and unto the secret demands of each members condition; so doth the Care of Christ severally shew it selfe towards the same in his Word: there is provision for any want, medicine for any disease, comforts for any distresse, promises for any faith, answers to any doubt, directions in any difficulty, weapons against any temptation, preservatives against any sinne, restoratives against lapse; garments to cover my nakednesse, meate to satisfie my hunger, physicke to cure my diseases, armour to protect my person, a treasure

treasure to provide for my posterity. If I am rich, I have there the wisdom of God to instruct me; and if I am poore, I have there the obligations of God to enrich me. If I am honourable, I have there the sight of my sinnes to make me vile; and rules of moderation to make me humble: If I am of low degree, I have there the Communion and consanguinity of Christ, the participation of the divine nature, the adoption of God the Father to make me noble. If I am learned, I have there a law of charity to order it unto edification, and if I am unlearned, I have there a Spirit which searcheth the deepe things of God, which can give wisdom unto the simple, which can reveale secrets unto babes, which can command light to shine out of darknesse, which can give the light of the knowledge of the glory, fulnesse, and love of God in the face of Iesus Christ, which can make me, though ignorant of all other things, to learne Christ, in whom there is more wisdom, more various and admirable curiosity, more filling and plentiful satisfaction, more proportion to the boundlesse desires of a soule once rectified, more fruit and salvation (which should bee the end of every Christian mans learning) than in all other knowledge which either past or present ages can afford. In one word, every where and in all things I am there taught how to want, and how to abound, and how to doe all things through CHRIST that strengthens me. A Christian can bee set in no estate, wherein the abundant Care of Christ over him is not in the Gospell wonderfully magnified. And commonly in the greatest straits he sheweth the greatest care, as waters runne strongest in the narrowest passages: when we walk in darknesse and have no light, when we seeke water and there is none, and our tongue faileth for thirst, then is his fittest time to helpe us, and then is our fittest time to stay upon him. Israel were deliverd by *miracles* of mercy from their Egyptian bondage, and in the wilderness conducted by a *miraculous* presence, and fed with Angels food.

VERSE 2.

Mark. 16. 7.
Vocatur ex nomine, ne desperaret ex negatione. Gregor. Mag.

Ezck. 16. 6.

Esaï. 65. 1.

Rom. 5. 6. 8. 10.

Isaak was upon the Altar, and then in the mount was the Lord scene, and his mercy stepped in betweene the knife and the sacrifice. *Jacob* in great feare of his brother *Esau*, and then comforted by prevailing with an Angell which was stronger than *Esau*. *Peter* in sorest distresse for denying Christ, and hee the first man to whom Christ sent newes of his Resurrection. *Paul* in the ship visited by an Angell. *Peter* in Prison delivered by an Angell. The distressed woman at Christs Sepulcher comforted by an Angell. Such as the extremities of the Saints are, such is Christs care for their deliverances.

And this care is further commended, that it proceedeth solely from the *grace and compassion of Christ*: there is no affection naturally in us to desire it, there is no vertue in us to deserve it: when we were in our blood, well pleased with our owne pollution, he doubled his goodnesse, and used a kinde of violence and importunity of mercy to make us live, when we did not seeke after him, when wee did not so much as aske whether hee were fit to bee sought, when wee were aliens from his Covenant, and strangers to his Name, hee even then multiplied his invitations unto us, *I said, behold mee, behold me, unto a people that were not called by my Name*. When wee were *weake*, full of impotency; when wee were *sinners*, full of antipathy; when wee were *enemies*, full of obstinacy and rebellion; when wee cared not for him, but turned our backs, and stopped our eares, and suffered him to throw away in vaine so many Sermons, so many Sacraments, so many mercies, so many afflictions upon us; when we cared not for our selves, *No man repented, or said, what have I done*; even then did he magnifie his compassion towards us; hee cared for us, when we neglected our selves, and despised him; he bestowed his mercy not onely upon the unthankfull, but upon the injurious.

But then a little compassion is enough for those that had

Christs care of his Church.

233

VERSE 2.

had deserved none, for those that had provoked scorne and displeasure against themselves: but herein is the care and tenderneſſe of Chriſt abundantly magnified, that it hath in it all the ingredients of a moſt ſoveraigne mercy, that nothing more could have beene done, than he hath done for us. Firſt, for the foundation and originall of all mercy, there is in him an overflowing of *love*, without ſtint or meaſure, a turning of heart, a rowling and founding of bowels, a love which ſurpaſſeth all knowledge, which is as much beyond the thoughts or comprehenſions, as it is above the merits of men.

Secondly, there is a *ſtudie and inquiſitivenesse* how to doe good, a debating within himſelfe, a conſulting and projecting how to ſhew mercy, an arguing as it were, of his Grace with mans ſinne, and his owne ſeverity: *How ſhall I give thee up Ephraim? How ſhall I deliver thee Iſrael? How ſhall I make thee as Admah? How ſhall I ſet thee as Zeboim? Mine heart is turned within me, my repentings are kindled together.* True it is, thou haſt beene unto mee as the Rulers of Sodome, and as the people of Gomorrah: But ſhall I be unto thee, as I have beene unto them? Am I not God, and not man? ſhall I change my Covenant, becauſe thou haſt multiplied thy backſlidings? The Lord uſeth ſuch humane expreſſions of his proceedings with men, as if their finnes had put him to a ſtand, and brought him to difficulties in ſhewing mercy. *I ſaid, how ſhall I put thee amongſt the children, and give thee a pleaſant Land? &c.* Thy caſe is very deſperate, and thou haſt ſtopped up the courſes of my mercy towards thy ſelfe; How then ſhall I make good my reſolutions of compaſſion towards thoſe that reject and nulliſie it to themſelves? Surely there is no way but one, to over-rule the hearts of obſtinate ſinners, that they may not turne away any more. *Thou ſhalt call mee, my Father,* that is, I will put filial affections, awfull thoughts, conſtant reſolutions into thy heart, and thou ſhalt not
turne

Eſai. 5. 4.

Hof. 11. 8.
Ier. 31. 20.
Eph. 3. 19.
Eſai. 55. 9.
Ier. 29. 11.

Hof. 11. 8.
Eſai. 1. 10.

Ier. 3. 19.

VERSE 2.

Ier. 9. 7.

Lament. 3. 22,
23.

Act. 13. 34.

2 Tim. 2. 19.
Psal. 89. 1.
Mal. 3. 6.
Esa. 64. 5.
Heb. 13. 8.

Esa. 41. 10, 14.

Hos. 11. 7, 11.

turne away from mee. *I will melt them and trie them,* saith the Lord, *for how shall I doe for the daughter of my people?* The Lord setteth himselfe to study and contrive mercy for his people, that as they set up their sinnes, as it were, in pride to pose his Covenant; so he gathereth together his thoughts of mercy, as it were, to conquer their sinnes.

Thirdly, there is *constancie and continuance* in this his Care: *His mercy endureth, his compassions faile not, but are renewed every morning.* And therefore the mercies of *David*, that is, of Christ, for so hee is called, or the mercies of the Covenant made with *David*, are called *Sure mercies*, they have a foundation, the everlasting love and counsell of God upon which they are built, they have many seales by which they are confirmed, the faithfulness, the immutability, and the oath of God: If there were not continuance in his mercies, if hee were not the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever in his truth and fidelity to his Church; if hee should change and turne from us, as oft as we forsake him, if he should leave us in the hand of our owne counsell, and not afford us such dayly supplies of his Spirit, as might support us against the ruinous disposition of our owne nature, wee should be children of wrath every day a new. But herein doth the abundant care of Christ in the Gospell declare it selfe unto us, that though wee are *wormes* in our selves, full of weaknesse, and of earthly affections, yet God hath *a right hand of righteousness*, which can uphold us; that though we are bent to back-sliding, yet *he is God and not man*, unchangeable in his Covenant with the Persons, almighty in his power and mercy towards the sinnes of men, both to cover them with his righteousness, and to cure them by his Spirit, both to forgive for the time past, and to heale and prevent back-slidings for the time to come.

Fourthly, that he might be fit for so meane and humble

ble a service, there was *a lessening and emptying of himselfe*; he was contented to be subject to his owne Law, to be the childe of his owne creature, to take upon himselfe not the similitude onely, but the infirmities of sinfull flesh, to descend from his throne, and to put on rags, in one word, *to become poore for us, that wee through his povertie might be made rich.* Amongst men, many will bee willing to shew so much mercy as will consist with their state and greatnesse, and may tend to beget a further distance, and to magnifie their heighth and honour in the mindes of men; but when it comes to this exigent, that a man must debase himselfe to doe good unto another, that his compassion will bee to a miserable man no benefit, except hee suffer ignominie, and undergoe a servile condition for him, and doe, as it were, change habits with the man whom he pities; what region of the earth will afford a man who will freely make his owne honour to be the price of his brothers redemption? yet this is the manner of Christs Care for us, who though hee were the Lord of Glory, the brightnesse of his Fathers Majestie, and the expresse Image of his Person, did yet humble himselfe to endure shame, and the contradiction of sinners, that he might be the Author and Finisher of our faith.

Fifthly, There was not onely a humbling or metaphoricall emptying of himselfe, in that he made himselfe of no reputation; but there was likewise *a reall and proper emptying of himselfe*, hee therein testified his wonderfull Care of the businesse of man, that for them he put himselfe to the greatest expence, and to the exhausting of a richer treasure, than any either heaven or earth could afford besides: yee were not redeemed, saith the Apostle, with corruptible things, as silver and gold from your vaine conversation, *but with the precious bloud of Christ, as of a Lambe without blemish, and without spot*: That which no man will bestow upon himselfe, and that
which

VERSE 2.

Phil. 2. 7, 8.

Gal. 4. 5.

Rom. 8. 3.

2 Cor. 8. 9.

VERSE 2.

which was in nature, and might justly in love have beene neereſt to Chriſt himſelfe, even the ſoule in his body, and the bloud in his veines, hee was contented to make a ſacrifice for them, who powred it out as the bloud of a malefactor.

Sixthly, beſides this great price which he paid to his Father for us, hee hath opened another treaſure of his *Grace and Spirit*, out of which he affordeth us daily ſupplies, and putteth into our hands, as it were, an heavenly ſtocke, for the better negotiating and improvement of our ſalvation. Hee ſetteth up his Spirit in our hearts, thereby converſing and communing with us, teaching us the trade of the Citizens of heaven, and of laying up treaſures there, where our finall abode muſt be, of having our converſation and commerce with innumerable companies of Angels, and with the ſpirits of juſt men made perfect, and with all that generall aſſembly or Church of the firſt-borne, which is inrolled in heaven.

Laſtly, to all this he addeth *Preparations and provisions* for the future for us, he doth not onely give, but he *prepareth things for thoſe that love him*, and what-ever is wanting now, he will *make it up unto us in the riches of his glory*. It was for our expedience that hee left the Church on earth (in regard of his carnall preſence) and went unto his Father againe. He was not beholden to change of place for his *owne glory*, for his heaven was within him as a fountaine, and indeed it is his preſence which maketh heaven to bee the place of glory; therefore Saint *Paul* deſired to depart, and to be with Chriſt (noting that it is not heaven, but Chriſts preſence which is the glory of the Saints:) Therefore, I ſay, it was for us, that he went to heaven againe; for *their ſakes*, ſaith he, *I ſanctifie my ſelfe*; it is expedient for you that I goe away. Expedient, to ſeale and ſecure our full and finall redemption unto us; for as the Leviticall Prieſt entred not into the holieſt of all without bloud, ſo neither did Chriſt

1 Cor. 2.9.
Phil. 4.19.

Phil. 1.23.
Iohn 17.19.
Iohn 16.7.

Christs Care of his Church.

237

Christ into Heaven without making satisfaction, he first obtained eternall redemption for us, and then he entred into the Holy place, and expedient to prepare a place for us, that the Glory which is given to him, hee may give unto us, that being raised up together, wee may likewise *sit together* with him in Heavenly places; for when the head is crowned, the whole body is invested with royall honour. He by the vertue of his Ascension opened the Kingdome of Heaven for all beleivers; even the Fathers before Christ entred not in without respect unto that consummate redemption which he was in the fulnesse of time to accomplish for his Church. As a man may bee admitted into an actuall possession of land, onely in the vertue of Covenants, and under the intuition of a payment to be afterwards performed. Thus wee see in how many things the abundant Care of Christ doth shew it selfe towards the Church.

And as there are therein all the particulars of a tender care, so by the Gospell likewise, doe all the fruits and benefits thereof redound unto the faithfull. First, in the Gospell hee *a feedeth* and strengthneth them, even in the presence of their enemies hee prepareth them a table, and feedeth them with his Rod, and according to their coming out of Egypt hee sheweth unto them marvellous things. And therefore our Saviour calleth his Gospell, *The childrens bread*. It is that which quickneth, which strengthneth them, which maketh them fruitfull in spirituall workes.

Secondly, He *upholdeth* them from fainting; if their strength at any time faile, hee *leadeth them gently*, and *teacheth them to goe*. ^b As *Iacob* led on his cattell and his children softly, according as they were able to endure: so Christ doth lead out his flocke, and hold his children by the hand, and teach them to goe, and draweth them *with the cords of a man*, that is, with meeke and gentle institution, such as men use towards their children, and

nor

VERSE 2.

Heb. 9. 12.

Iohn 4. 2, 3.

Iohn 17. 22.

Ephes. 2. 6.

^a Psal. 23. 5.

Mica. 7. 13. 15.

Ezek. 34. 14. 23.

Matth. 15. 26.

Phil. 4. 12.

Heb. 6. 12.

Iohn 15. 4.

^b Gen. 33. 14.

Iohn 20. 3.

Psal. 78. 52.

Esai. 63. 13.

Deut. 1. 31.

Esai. 40. 11.

Esai. 41. 13.

Hos. 11. 3, 4.

Deut. 32. 11, 12.

VERSE 2.

Hof. 2. 14, 15.

Hof. 14. 4.

a Iohn 6. 60.

Matth. 25. 24.

b Iob. 21. 14, 15.

Mal. 3. 14, 15.

c Ezek. 18. 25.

d Ier. 11. 10.

Act. 7. 39.

Psal. 14. 3.

c *Animalia quædam, ne inveniri possint vestigia sua circa cubile ipsum confundunt.* Senec.

epist. 68.

¶ *Is. 50. 11.*

Clem. Alex.

f Gal. 1. 7.

2 Pet. 3. 16.

g Ezek. 34. 16.

Gal. 6. 1.

Ezek. 47. 12.

not to their beasts, and *with bands of love*. As an Eagle fluttereth over her young, and spreadeth abroad her wings, and taketh them and beareth them on her wings: so doth the Lord in his Gospel sweetly lead on and institute the faithfull unto strength and salvation: he dealeth with them as a compassionate nurse with a tender infant, condescendeth to their strength and capacity; when we stumble, he keepeth us; when we fall he raiseth us; when wee faint, hee beareth us in his armes; when wee grow weary of well-doing, the Gospel is full of encouragements to hearten us, full of spirit to revive us, full of promises to establish us, full of beauty to entice us; when we seeme to bee in a wilderness, a maze, where there is no issue, nor view of deliverance, even there he openeth a doore of hope, and allureth, and speaketh comfortably unto us.

Thirdly, he *healeth our diseases*, our corruptions, our backe-slidings; easily are the best of us misled out of the right way, drawn and enticed away by our owne lusts, driven away by the temptations of Satan, the frownes or follies of the world, posselt with carnall prejudices against the wayes of God, as if they were ^a grievous, ^b unprofitable, and ^c unequall wayes; apt to take every pretence to flinch away, and steale from the eye of God; apt to ^d turne aside into every diverticle which a carnall reason, and a crooked heart can frame unto it selfe; for a corrupt heart is like ^e a wilde beast that loveth *confusa vestigia*, to have intricacies and windings in his holes, it cannot away with strait paths, ^f but loveth to wrie and pervert the rule of life. In these cases it is the care and office of Christ to ^g gather that which was scattered, to seeke that which was lost, to bring againe that which was driven away, to binde up that which was broken, to strengthen that which was sicke, and to restore by his Spirit of meeknesse those which are overtaken with a fault; his Gospel is like the Trees of the Sanctuary,

Christs care of his Church.

239

VERSE 2.

Sanctuary, not for *meat* onely, but for *medicine* too.

Fourthly, as hee healeth our diseases, and giveth us strength, so in the midst of enemies and dangers hee removeth our feares, and giveth us *comfort* and refreshment. ^h *I will make with them, saith he, a covenant of peace, and I will cause evill beasts to cease out of the Land, and they shall dwell safely in the Wildernesse, and sleepe in the Woods.* ⁱ When the Assyrian shall bee in our Land, and shall tread in our Palaces, then shall hee raise up *seven shepherds, and eight principall men*, namely, the Ministers of his Gospell, in abundance, to establish the hearts of his people against all dangers. This is that ** Skilo* who should bring *tranquillitie* and peace into the Church, even when the Scepter should depart from *Inda*. When the heart is full of doubts and distresses, disquieted with the feare of Gods displeasure, accused by the Law, pursued by the adversary, and condemned by it selfe; then doth hee still the raging of the Sea, and command the evill spirit to bee dumbe; then ^k doth hee wipe away teares from the conscience, and refresh it with living waters, even with the sweet Communion of his Spirit, and with the abundance of his graces.

Lastly, hee keepeth a *continuell watch* over us by his spirituall presence and protection: *As ^l Jacob testified his great care for the good of Laban, that the drought consumed him by day, and the frost by night, and that sleep departed from his eyes; so doth the Lord commend his care towards the Church, in that hee is the keeper of the Watch-man of Israel, which doth neither slumber nor sleepe. His presence is with his people to guide them in their pilgrimage, and unto which they have dayly recourse for comfort and establishment. In that great tempest when Christ was asleepe in the shippe, his Disciples awaked him and expostulated with him, Master, carest thou not that we perish? But when hee had rebuked the winde and the sea, hee then rebuked them likewise, hee*
had

^h Ezek. 34.25.

ⁱ Mica. 5.5.

^{*} *Sculiet exercit. Evang. l. i. cap. 4.*

^k Revel. 7. 17.

^l Gen. 31.40.

Psal. 121. 4.

Exod. 33. 14.

Marke 4. 38, 40.

VERSE 2.

Deut. 25. 5.
Ruth. 3. 9. 4. 5.
Levit. 25. 25.

Heb. 2. 11. 17.

Esai. 8. 18.

Esai. 49. 15.
Esai. 40. 11.
Matth. 23. 37.
Esai. 66. 11.
Iohn 20. 17.
Prov. 17. 17.
Rom. 7. 4.
Ephes. 5. 25. 32.

had another storme of feare and unbelcefe to calme in their hearts, who could not see him in his providence watching over them, when his body slept.

The grounds of this great care, which Christ in his Gospell testifieth towards his Church, are these: First, *He is our kinsman*, there is affinity in blood, and therefore a naturall care and tenderneffe in affection. Wee know amongst the Jewes when a woman had buried an husband without fruit of his body, the next of the kindred was to take care of her, and to raise up the name of the dead upon his inheritance: And if any man had waxen poore, and sold any of his possession, the neereft kinsman was to have the first option in the recovery and redemption of it. And from hence the Apostle argueth to prove the mercifulnesse and fidelity of Christ, in sanctifying or bringing many sonnes unto Glory (for I take those phrases to be in that place equivalent) because hee was *not ashamed to call us brethren, but was made in all things like unto us*. And wee may observe that in the Scripture he hath almost all the relations of consanguinitie, to note that his care is universall and of all sorts. Hee is a *Father*, Behold, *I and the children which thou hast given me*: and the care of a father is to govern, to nourish, to instruct, to lay up for his children. Hee is as a *mother*, hee carrieth his young ones in his bosome, hee gathereth them as a Hen her Chickens, hee milketh unto them out of the breasts of consolation. And thus he hath a care of indulgence and compassion. Hee is a *Brother*, Go to *my brethren and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father, and unto my God, and your God*. And the care of a brother is to counsell, advise, and comfort. A brother is borne for adversity. Lastly, hee is a *Husband*; yee are married to him who is raised from the dead, and that word compriseth all care, to love, to cherish, to instruct, to maintaine, to protect, to compassionate, to adorne, to communicate both his secrets and himselfe.

Christs Care of his Church.

241

VERSE 2.

himselfe. A father may maintaine his childe, but hee cannot suckle it; a mother may give it a brest, but shee cannot ordinarily provide it a portion; a brother can give counsell, but hee cannot give himselfe unto his brother: A husband may comfort his wife, but it becomes him not to correct her. There is no degree of neereneffe that hath power enough to answer all the offices of love, but in one point or other it will be defective. Therefore Christ is set forth unto us *under all relations of blood and unitie*; to note that there can no case or condition of the Church be supposed, wherein the care of Christ shall be impotent or deficient towards it, wherein hee is not able to correct, to nourish, to instruct, to counsell, to comfort, to provide for it.

Secondly, He is our *Companion* in sufferings, hee himselfe suffered and was tempted, and this the Apostle maketh a maine ground of his care towards us, and of our confidence in him: wee have not an high Priest which cannot be touched with a feeling of our infirmities, but was in *all points tempted as we are*, onely without sinne; and therefore hee is able to succour those that are tempted, and to take compassion on those that are out of the way, because he was compassed with such infirmities, as were much lesse grievous than the weight of sinne.

Heb. 4. 15.

Heb. 2. 17.

Heb. 5. 2.

Thirdly, He is our *Head*, and so is One with us in a neerer relation than that of affinitie, in a relation of Vnitie, for hee and his members make but *one Christ*. And being head, hee is the seat of Care, and the fountaine of influences into the rest of the body; all the wisdom, spirits, senses, which are in the head, are there placed as in a Watch-tower, or Councell-chamber, to consult and provide for the good of the whole; the eye seeth, the eare heareth, the tongue speaketh, the fancie worketh, the memory retaineth for the welfare of the other members, and they have *all the same care one for another*.

1 Cor. 12. 25.

R

Fourthly,

VERSE 2.

1 Ioh. 2. 2.

Heb. 3. 2.

Ioh. 6. 37.

Esa. 45. 2.

Esa. 50. 10.

Fourthly, He is *our Advocate*, and Mediatour, he is the onely practicer in the court of heaven, and therefore he must needs be full of the busineses of his Church. It is his office to dispatch the affaires of those that come unto him, and crave his favour and intercession to debate their causes, and he is both faithfull and mercifull in his place, and besides, furnished with such an unmeasurable unction of Spirit, and vast abilities to transact all the busineses of his Church, that whosoever commeth unto him for his counsell and intercession, *hee will in no wise cast them out*, or refuse their cause: And this is one great assurance we may take comfort in, that bee our matters never so foule and unexcusable in themselves, yet the verie entertaining him of our counsell, and the leaning upon his wisdom, power, fidelity, and mercie to expedite our busineses, to compassionate our estate, and to rescue us from our owne demerits, doth, as it were, alter the propertie of the cause, and produce a cleane contrary issue to that which the evidence of the thing in triall would of it selfe have created. And as wee may observe that men of extraordinary abilities in the Law, delight to wrestle with some difficult businesse, and to shew their learning in clearing matters of greatest intricacie, and perplexitie before; so doth Christ esteeme himselfe most honoured, and the vertue and wisdom of his Crosse magnified, when in cases of forest extremitie, of most hideous guilt, of most blacke and uncomfortable darknesse of soule, which pose not onely the presumptions, but the hope, faith, conjectures, thoughts, contrivances which the hearts of men can even in wishes make to themselves for mercy, they doe yet trust in him *whose thoughts are infinitely above their thoughts, and whose waies above their waies; who is there among you that feareth the Lord, that obeyeth the voice of his servant, that walketh in darknesse and hath no light? let him trust in the name of the Lord, and stay upon his God.* When the Soule can goe unto Christ

Christs Care of his Church.

243

VERSE 2.

Christ with such complaints and acknowledgements as these; Lord, when I examine my cause by mine owne conscience and judgement of it, I cannot but give it over as utterly desperate, and beyond cure, my bones are dried, my hope is cut off, I am utterly lost, my finnes, and my sorrowes are so heaue that they have broken my spirit all to peeces, and there is no sound part in me: But Lord, I beleeve that thou knowest a way to make dead bones live, that thy thoughts and wayes are above mine, that thou knowest thine owne thoughts of peace and mercy, though I cannot comprehend them, that thy riches are unsearchable, that thy love is above humane knowledge, that thy peace passeth all created understandings, that though I am the greatest of all sinners, and feeble enough in my selfe, to sinke me as low as *Judas* into hell, yet thou hast not left mee without patternes of all long-suffering, of thy royall power in enduring, and in forgiving finnes. And now, Lord, though thou afford me no light, though thou beset me with terrours, though thou make me to possesse the finnes of my youth, yet I still desire to feare thy name, to walke in thy way, to wait upon thy counsell, I know there is not in men or Angels so much wisdome, compassion, or fidelity as in thee, and therefore if I must perish, I will perish at thy feet, I will starve under thy table, I will be turned away and rejected by thee, who hast promised to cast away none that come unto thee; I have tried all wayes, and I here resolve to rest, and to looke no further, thou that hast kept such a sinner as I am out of hell thus long, canst by the same power keep me out for ever; upon thy wisdome and compassion (who canst make dried bones to flourish like an herbe, and broken bones to rejoyce and sing) I cast the whole weight of my guilty spirit, into thy bosome I emptie all the feares, cares and requests of my distracted and sinking soule: I say, when a man can thus powre out himselfe unto Christ, hee esteemeth the

Ezek. 37. 3.
Ier. 29. 11.
Ephes. 3. 8. 19.

1 Tim. 1. 16.

Esa. 66. 24.
Psal. 51. 8.
1 Pet. 5. 7.

R 2

price

VERSE 2.

price and power of his blood most highly honoured, when men beleeve in him against reason and above hope, and beyond the experience, or apprehensions they have of mercy; for Christ loveth to shew the greatnesse of his skill in the salvation of a *Manasse*, a *Mary Magdalen*, a crucified Theefe, a persecutour and injurious blasphemer, in giving life unto them that nailed him to his Crosse; the more desperate the disease, the more honourable the cure.

Joh. 17. 6.

1 Cor. 6. 20.

Heb. 3. 6.

Fifthly, Hee is *our Purchaser*, our Proprietary, wee belong unto him *by grant* from the Father, *Thine they were, and thou gavest them unto me*; and *by payment* from him unto the Father, *ye are bought with a price*. There is no good that concernes the Church that hee hath not fully paid for with his owne pretious blood: And Christ will not die in vaine, hee will take order for the accomplishing of that redemption which himselfe hath merited. And this is the greatest argument of his care and fidelitie, that he is not as a servant, but as a Lord, and his care is over *His owne house*. An ordinary advocate is faithfull onely *ratione officii*, because the dutie of his office requireth it; but the busineses which he manageth, come not close unto his heart, because he hath no personall interest in them: but Christ is faithfull, not as *Moses*, or a servant onely, but *ratione Dominii*, as Lord in *his owne house*; so that the affaires of the Church concerne him in as neere a right, as they concerne the Church her selfe, so that in his office of intercession hee pleadeth his *owne causes* with his Father, and in the miscarriages of them, himselfe should lose that which was infinitely more pretious than any thing in the world besides, even the price and merit of his owne blood. These are the grounds of the great care of Christ towards his people.

And from hence wee should learne faith and dependence on Christ in all our necessities, because wee are under

der

Christs Care of his Church.

245

VERSE 2.

2 Tim. I. 12.

der the protection and provision of him who careth for us, and is able to helpe us. A right judgement of God in Christ, and in his Gospell of salvation, will wonderfully strengthen the faith of men. *Paul* was not ashamed of persecutions, because hee knew whom hee had beleeved, hee doubted neither of his care or power, and therefore hee committed the keeping of his soule unto him against the last day, and therefore when all forsooke him, he stood to the truth, *because the Lord forsooke him not*. The reason why men trust in themselves, or their friends, is, because they are assured of their care and good-will to helpe them: But if men did compare the affections of Christ to other succours, they would rather choose to build their hopes and assurances on him. This consideration of the care and the power of God, made the three children at a point against the edict of an idolatrous king, *Our God is able to deliver us, and hee will deliver us*: And this made *Abraham* at a point to offer his sonne without staggering, because he rested upon the promise and the power of God, who was able to raise him from the dead, from whence, in a sort hee had received him before, namely from a dead body, and from a barren wombe. And *this is the ground of all diffidence that men consider not the power and care of God towards them*, but conceive of him as if hee had forgotten to be gracious, as if hee had cast them out of his sight, as if he had given over his thoughts of them, and that maketh them feare second causes, and seeke unto things which cannot profit. And therefore the Lord suffereth second causes to goe crosse, to faile and disappoint a man, because hee loveth to be glorified by our dependance on his all-sufficiency and protection. Hee suffereth friends to faile, to be off and on, promises to be uncertaine, assurances to vanish, projections and frames of businesses to be shattered, that men may know how to trust him; for man being impotent in himselfe, must needs have

2 Tim. 4. 16, 17.
18.

Dan. 3. 16, 17.
Heb. 11. 17, 19.
Rom. 4. 20, 21.

Ier. 17. 5, 8.

VERSE 2.

Heb. 11. 6.

Psal. 73. 28.

1 Pet. 5. 7.

something without himselfe to subsist upon. Now when a man findeth the creatures to bee deceitfull, and second causes vaine, and considereth that God is *I Am*, a most certaine rewarder of those that diligently seeke him, then the soule findeth it good to draw neare to God, to live under his fidelty, and to cast all its care on him, because he careth for it.

And indeed *a right judgement of God will helpe us to imploy our faith in any condition.* In wealth men are apt to trust in their abundance, to stand upon their mountaine, and to say, *I shall never be moved.* But now in this estate, if a man conceive aright of God, that it is he who giveth strength to be rich, and who giveth riches strength to doe us good, that he can blast the greatest estate with an imperceptible consumption, and in the midst of a mans sufficiency make him bee in straits, that hee can embitter all with his sore displeasure, and not suffer the floore nor the Wine presse to feede him. In great wisdom and deepe counsels, if a man consider that the counsell of the Lord shall stand, and that hee can turne the wisdom of Oracles into foolishnesse, and catch the wise in their owne craftinesse. In great provisions of worldly strength, and humane combinations, if hee consider that God can take off the wheelles, and amaze the phantasies, and dissipate the affections, and melt the Spirits, and way-lay the enterpriees of the hugest hosts of men, that he can arme flies, and lice, and dust, and wind, and starres, and every small unexpected contingency against the strongest opposition; it must needs make him set his rest, and hang his confidences and assurances upon an higher principle. Againe, in poverty and the extremest straits which a man can bee in, if hee consider that God is a God as well of the valleyes as of the hills, that he will bee seene in the Mount, when his People are under the sword, and upon the Altar; that the Lord knoweth the dayes of the upright, and will satisfie them

in

Christs Care of his Church.

247

VERSE 2.

in the time of famine, that when the young Lions famish for hunger, (they which live not by the fruites on the earth, but by their prey, they which can feed of the dead bodies of those other creatures whom a famine had devoured) yet even then hee can provide abundantly for his; that when things are marvellous unto us, then they are easie unto him; that when they are impossible unto us, then they are possible with him; that hee can lead in a wilderness, and feed with an unknowne and an unexpected bread; that when the light of the Sunne and the Moone shall faile, he can be an everlasting light and glory to his people; that *as a Father*, so he pittieeth; and *as an Heavenly Father*, so he knoweth, and can supply all our needs; that when wee are without any wisdom to disappoint, or strength to withstand the confederacies of men, when they come with Chariots of iron, and wals of brasse, even then the eyes of the Lord runne to and fro to shew himselfe valiant in the behalfe of those that walke uprightly, that hee can then order some accident, produce some engine, discover some way to extricate and to cleere all: then will a man learne to be carefull or distracted in nothing, but in every thing by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, make his request knowne unto him who is at hand, and who careth for him.

The like may bee said of mens spirituall condition; when men despaire, as *Cain*, that their sinne is greater than can be forgiven? the onely ground is, because they judge not aright of God in Christ, they looke not on him in his Gospell as a God that careth for them, they doe not leane upon the staffe of his strength. Despaire is an affection growing out of the sense of sinne and wrath, as it is, *malum arduum, instans, & ineluctabile*, an evill too heavy to bee borne, and yet impossible to bee removed. All victory ariseth either out of an inward power of our owne, or by the assistance of forraigne power, which is

R 4

more

Zech. 8. 6.
Marke 10. 27.

Psal. 136. 16.

Ier. 2. 6.

Amos 2. 10.

Deut. 8. 15, 16.

Esa. 60. 19.

Matth. 6. 32.

2 Chron. 16. 9.

Phil. 4. 6.

VERSE 2.

more than our owne. Now then when wee despaire because of sinne, this commeth first from the consideration of our owne everlasting disability to breake thorow sin by our owne strength and this is a good despaire, which helpeth to drive men unto Christ.

Secondly, it commeth from a misconceiving either of the *Power* or *Care* of those which might assist us, sometimes from the *mis-judging of Gods Power*, for the forgiveness of sinnes is an act of omnipotency, and therefore when the Lord proclaimeth himselfe a forgiver of iniquity, transgression and sinne, hee introduceth it with his titles of Power, *The Lord, the Lord God, Gracious and mercifull, &c.* To pardon malefactors is a power and royalty which belongeth onely unto Princes. There is much strength required in bearing burdens, and therefore patience especially towards sinners, is an act of power, and impatiency ever a signe of impotency. And therefore * the weakest affections are ever most revengefull, children, old men, sicke or indigent persons, are ever most subject to anger, and least able to concoct an injury: so that to conceive sin greater than can bee forgiven, is to mis-judge the omnipotency of God, but ordinarily despaire proceedeth from the *mis-judging of Gods affection and good-will towards men*; the soule conceives of him, as of one that hath utterly cast off all care or respect towards it. This is an error of Gods benevolence, and the latitude of his mercy, and heighth of his thoughts towards sinners. He hath declared himselfe willing that all men should bee saved, hee hath set forth examples of the compasse of his long-suffering, his invitations run in generall termes, that no man may dare to preoccupate damnation, but looke unto God, as one that careth for his soule. Let a mans sinnes be never so crimson, and his continuance therein never so obdurate (I speake this for the prevention of despaire, not for the encouragement of security or hardnesse) yet as soone as he is willing to turne,

Exod. 34. 6.

* ἀσθενέστεραι
καὶ ἡλικιωτέραι
καὶ ἐνδεστέραι
καὶ ἀσθενέστεραι
καὶ ἡλικιωτέραι
καὶ ἐνδεστέραι.
Arist. Rhet. l. 2.
cap. 2.

2 Pet. 3. 9.
John 5. 34.
1 Tim. I. 16.

The Gospell is Christs owne Power.

249

VERSE 2.

turne, God is willing to save, as soone as hee hath an heart to attend, God hath a tongue to speake salvation unto him. Wee see then the way to trust in Christ is to looke upon him as the Bishop of our soules, as the Officers of our peace, as one that careth and provideth for us, as one that hath promised to save to the uttermost, to give supplies of his Spirit and Grace in time of need, to give us dayly bread, and life in abundance, to bee with us alwaies to the end of the world, never to faile us nor forsake us.

And wee may hereby learne our duty one to another, to put on the affections of members, and the minde of Christ, in compassionating, considering and seeking the good of one another, in bearing one anothers burthens, in pleasing not our selves but our neighbour for his edification, for even Christ pleased not himselfe; that man cannot live in honour, nor die in comfort, who liveth onely to himselfe, and doth not by his prayers, compassions, and supplies intimate Christ, and interest himselfe in the good of his brethren.

Now the ground of all this Power, Majesty, and Mercy of the Gospell is here set forth unto us in two words. First, it is the strength of Christ; Secondly, it is sent by God himselfe. The Lord shall *send* the Rod of *Thy strength* out of Sion.

Here then we may first note, That *the Gospell is Christs owne Power and Strength*, and the Power of God his Father, by whom it is sent abroad; So the Apostle calls it, The ^a Power of God unto salvation, and the demonstration of the Spirit, and of Power; that our faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the Power of God. Therefore in one place we are said to be ^b *Taught of God*, and in another to bee ^c *Taught of Christ*; in one place it is called the ^d *Gospell of the blessed God*, and in another the ^e *Gospell of Christ*, to note that ^f whatsoever things the Father doth in his Church, the same the

Heb. 7. 25.

Heb. 4. 16.

Iohn 10. 10.

Heb. 13. 9.

Col. 3. 12, 13.

Eph. 5. 2.

Phil. 2. 4, 5.

Rom. 14. 7. 15.

15. 2, 3.

^a Rom. 1. 16.

¹ Cor. 2. 4, 5.

^b Iohn 6. 45.

^c Eph. 4. 20, 21.

^d 1 Tim. 1. 11.

^e Rom. 15. 19.

^f Iohn 3. 19.

VERSE 2.

S 2 Cor. 5. 19.

h Iohn 1. 18.

Iohn 14. 17.

i 1 Cor. 1. 23.

2 Cor. 4. 5.

Co. 1. 28.

k Heb. 12. 25.

Eph. 2. 17.

1 Pet. 3. 19.

1 Iohn 5. 25, 26.

Iohn 10. 27, 28.

m 2 Cor. 1. 24.

n Ioh. 13. 13, 14.

o 2 Cor. 4. 5.

p 1 Pet. 5. 3, 4.

q Ioh. 21. 15.

r 2 Cor. 5. 19.

Eph. 3. 2.

2 Tim. 1. 14.

s 1 Pet. 4. 11.

1 Cor. 4. 1.

2 Cor. 5. 19, 20.

the Sonne doth also, and that the Father doth not make knowne his will of mercy, but by his Sonne; & that as in the Sonne he did reconcile the world unto himselfe; so in the Sonne hee did ^h reveale himselfe unto the world. No man hath seene the Father at any time, but the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne shall reveale him. Christ is both the Matter and the Author of the Gospell. As in the worke of our Redemption he was both the Sacrifice, and the Priest to offer, and the Altar to sanctifie it: So in the dispensation of the Gospell, Christ is both the Sermon, and the Preacher, and the Power, which giveth blessing unto all. He is the Sermon, ⁱ *Wee preach Christ crucified*, saith the Apostile, *we preach not our selves, but Christ Iesus the Lord*. And he is the Preacher, ^k *See that yee refuse not him that speaketh — He came, and preached peace to them as farre off, and to those that were nigh*. And lastly, he is the Power which enliveneth his owne Word; ^l *The dead shall heare the voice of the Sonne of Man, and they that heare shall live; for as the Father hath life in himselfe, so hath he given to the Sonne to have life in himselfe. My sheepe heare my voyce, and I know them, and they follow me, and I give unto them eternall life, &c.* ^m He is the Lord of your faith, *we are but the Helpers of your joy*. He is the ⁿ Master in the Church, *wee are but* ^o *your servants for Iesus sake*. ^p Hee is the chiefe Sheepeheard, the Lord of the sheepe, ^q *the sheepe are his owne*; wee are but his ^r Depositories, entrusted with the Ministry of reconciliation, unto us is committed the dispensation of the Grace of God. So then the Word is his, but the Service ours.

From whence both the Ministers of the Word, and they which heare it may learne their severall duties. First, wee should learne to ^s *speake as the Oracles of God*, as the Servants and Stewards of a higher Master, whose Word it is which wee preach, and whose Church it is which we serve. Wee should therefore doe his worke, as
men

The Gospell is Christs owne Power.

251

VERSE 2.

men that are set in his stead, preach him, and not our selves. There can bee no greater Sacrilege in the world, than to put our owne image upon the Ordinances of Christ, than to make another Gospell than wee have received. Saint *Paul* durst not *please men*, because he was the servant of Christ; neither durst hee *preach himselfe*, because hee was the servant of the Church. For hereby men doe even iustle Christ out of his owne Throne, and as it were, snatch the Scepter of his Kingdome out of his owne hand, boldly intruding upon that Sacred and Vncommunicable dignity which the Father hath given to his Sonne only, which is to bee the Author of his Gospell, and the totall and adequate Object of all Evangelicall Preaching. This sacrilege of selfe-preaching is committed three manner of wayes: First, when men make themselves the Authors of their owne preaching, when they preach their owne inventions, and make their owne braines the Seminaries and Forges of a new faith; when they so glosse the pure Word of God, as that withall they poyson and pervert it. This is that which the Prophet calleth *lying visions, and dreames of mens owne hearts*, which Saint *Peter* calls *perverting*, or maketh crooked the rule of faith, and Saint *Paul* the huckstering, adulterating, and using the *Word of God deceitfully*. Which putteth mee in minde of a speech in the Prophet, *The Prophet is the snare of a Fowler in all his wayes*. Birds wee know use to bee caught with the same corne wherewith they are usually fed, but then it is either adulterated with some venomous mixture which may intoxicate the Bird, or else put into a ginne which shall imprison it; and such were the carnall Preachers in the Prophets and in Saint *Pauls* time, who turned the Truth of Christ into a snare, that by that meanes they might *bring the Church into bondage*. The occasions and originals of this perverse humour are; First, without men, the seducements of Satan, unto which by the

Gal. 1. 10.

Ezek. 13. 3, 9, 17.
Ier. 14. 14.
Ier. 23. 16.
2 Pet. 3. 16.
2 Cor. 2. 17.
2 Cor. 4. 2.
Hos. 9. 8.

Gal. 2. 4.

Mic. 3. 5, 6.
1 King. 22. 23.

VERSE 2.

2 Thes. 2. 10, 12.

^a *Mater omnium Hereticorum superbia.*
Aug. de Gen. contr. Manich.
l. 2. cap. 8. & Confes. l. 1. c. 24.
^b *Theodor. Eccle. Histor. l. 1. c. 2.*
vid. Petr. & Erod. Decret. l. 1. Tit. 6.
§. 12.

^{*} *Tertul. Con. Marc. l. 4. c. 6. & 43. & lib. 5. c. 4.*

the just severity of God, they are sometimes given over for the punishment of their owne and others finnes. Secondly, within them (upon which the other is grounded) as ^a Pride of wit, joyned with ambition and impatiencie of repulse in vaste desires, which hath anciently beene the ground of many heresies and schismes. Nothing hath ever beene more dangerous to the Church of God than greatnesse of parts unsanctified and unallaid with the love of Truth, and the Grace of Christ. Secondly, ^b envie against the paines and estimation of those that are faithfull. This was one of the originals of *Arrian* his cursed heresie, his envy against *Alexander* the good Bishop of Alexandria, as *Theodore* reports. Thirdly, impatiencie of the spiritualnesse and simplicity of the holy Scriptures, which is ever joyned with the predominancy of some carnall lust, whereby the Conscience is notoriously wasted or defiled. Hee that hath once put away a good Conscience, and doth not desire truth in order and respect to that, that thereby his Conscience may bee illightened, purified, and kept even towards God, will without much adoe make shipwracke of his faith, and change the truth for any thriving errour. And this impatiency of the Spirit of truth in the Scriptures is that which caused ^{*} heretikes of old to reject some parts and to adde more to the Canon of sacred Scriptures, and in these dayes to super-adde traditions and apocryphall accessions thereunto; and in those which are pure and on all sides confessed to use such licentious and carnall glosses, as may hale the Scripture to the countenancing and conformity of their lusts and prejudices rather than to the rectifying of their owne hearts by the Rule of CHRIST.

Secondly, men preach themselves when they make themselves the Object of their preaching, when they preach selfe-dependency and selfe-concurrency, making themselves, as it were, joynt-saviours with Christ. Such

was

The Gospell is Christs owne Power.

253

VERSE 2.

was the preaching of *Simon Magus*, who gave out that himselfe was some great one, even the great Power of God. Of *Montanus* and his scholars who preached him for the Comforter that was promised. Of *Pelagius* and his associates, who though they did acknowledge the Name of Grace, to decline envie, and avoide the curse of the great Councell of Carthage, yet still they did but shelter their proud heresies under equivocations and ambiguities. Of the *Massilienses* in the times of *Prosper* and *Hilarie*, and of some ancient Schoolemen touching pre-existent congruities for the preparations of Grace, and co-existent concurrencies with the Spirit for the production of Grace. Of the papists in their doctrines of indulgences, authoritative absolution, merits of good workes, justification, and other like, which doe all in effect out-face and give the lye unto the Apostle, when hee calleth Christ an able or sufficient Saviour.

Thirdly, men preach themselves when they make themselves the end of their preaching, when they preach their owne parts, passions, and designs, and seeke not the Lord; when *out of envie, or covetousnesse, or ambition, or any other servile or indirect affection, men shall prevaricate in the Lords Message, and make the Truth of God serve their owne turnes. When men shall stand upon Gods holy mount as on a theater, to act their owne parts, and as on a step to their owne advancement; when the truth of God, and the death of Christ, and the Kingdome of heaven, and the fire of hell, and the soules of men, and the salvation of the world shall be made basely serviceable and contributory to the boundlesse pride of an Atheisticall *Diotrephos*. Such as these were they, who in the times of *Constantius* the emperour, poisoned the world with Arrianisme, and in the times of *S. Cyprian* provoked persecutions against the Church; and in the times of Israel ensnared the ten Tribes till

*Gratie vocabulo
frangens invidiam,
offensionem-
que declinans,
Aug. de Grat.
Christ. l. 1. c. 37.
& Epist. 105.*

Heb. 7. 25.

* Jer. 10. 21.
Phil. 1. 16.
Ezek. 34. 2, 3.
Esa. 56. 11.
Mic. 3. 5.
2 Pet. 2. 14, 15.
Iud. v. 11.
3 Ioh. v. 9.
Amos 7. 12, 13.

*Sulpit. Sever. l. 2.
Cyprian. de lapsis.*

V E R S E 2.

Hof. 5. 1.

9. 7, 8.

Ier. 23. 28, 29.

till they were utterly destroyed, and blinded the two Tribes till they were led away captive by the Babylonians: so horrid are the consequences of taking away the Gospell of Christ from him, and making it the Rod not of his strength, but of our owne pride or passion. Wee must therefore alwayes remember that the Gospell is Christs owne, and that will encourage us to speake it as we ought to speake.

First, with authoritie and boldnesse, without silence or connivence at the sinnes of men. Though in our private and personall relations we are to shew all modestie, humilitie, and lowlinesse of carriage towards all men, yet in our masters businesses, wee must not respect the persons, nor bee daunted at the faces of men. *PAUL* a prisoner was not affraid to preach of righteousness and temperance, and judgement to come before a corrupt and lascivious Prince, though it made him tremble.

Secondly, with wisdom; as a Scribe instructed to the kingdome of heaven. This was Saint *PAULS* care to worke as a wise master-builder. When Christs enemies watched him to picke something out of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him, wee finde so much depth of wisdom in the answeres and behaviours of Christ, as utterly disappointed them of their expectations, and strooke them with such amazement that they never durst aske him questions more: So should we endeavour to behave our selves in such manner as that our ministerie may not be blamed, nor the truth of God exposed to censure or disadvantages: for sacred truthes may bee sometimes either so unseasonably, or so indigestedly, and uncoherently delivered, as may rather open than stop the mouthes of gain-sayers, and sooner discredit the truth than convert the adversary. The Apostle saith that wee are to *make a difference to save some with compassion, others with feare*. This is to speake a word in due season, and as our Saviour did, *to speake as men are able to heare;*

to

Mat. 13. 51.

1 Cor. 3. 10.

Matt. 22. 22, 46.

2 Cor. 6. 3.

Iud. v. 22, 23.

to presse the Word upon the conscience with such seasonable and suitable enforcements as may bee most likely to convince those judgements, and to allure those affections which we have to doe withall. It is not knowledge in the generall; but the right use thereof, and wise application unto particulars which winneth soules. *The tongue of the wise useth knowledge aright.* This is that heavenly Craft wherewith the Apostle caught the Corinthians as it were *by guile*: such Art he useth towards the Philosophers of Athens, not exasperating men who were heady and confident of their owne rules, but seeming rather to make up the defects which themselves in the inscription of their Altar confessed; and to reveale that very God unto them, whom they worshipped, but did not know. Therefore wee finde him there honouring their owne learning, and out of that disputing for a resurrection, and against idolatry; to shew that Christian Religion was no way against that learning or rectified reason which they seemed to professe. The like art hee used towards king *Agrippa*, first presuming of his knowledge and credit which he gave to the Prophets, and then meeting and setting on his inclinable disposition to embrace the Gospell; like the wisdom of the servants of *Benhadad* unto *Ahab*, *They did diligently observe whether any thing would come from him, and did hastily catch it; and they said, Thy Brother Benhadad.* And the like wisdom he used every where, hee denied himselfe his owne libertie, and made himselfe a servant unto all; to the Jew as a Jew, to the Greeke as a Greeke, to the weake as weake, and all things to all, that by all meanes he might save some, and so further the Gospell. One while he used Circumcision that he might thereby gaine the weake Jewes, another while hee forbade Circumcision, that he might not misguide the converted Gentiles, nor give place by subjection unto false brethren. *Who is weake, saith he, and I am not weake? who is offended, and I* burne.

Prov. 11. 30.
Prov. 15. 2.
2 Cor. 12. 16.
Act. 17. 23, 28.

Act. 26. 23,
27, 29.

1 King. 20. 33.

1 Cor. 9. 19, 23.

2 Cor. 11. 29.

VERSE 2.

*Eadem omnibus
debetur chari-
tas, non eadem
medicina, &c.
Aug. de Catech.
Rudib. cap. 15.*

burne not? His care of mens soules made him take upon him every mans affection, and accommodate himselfe unto every mans temper; that hee might not offend the weake, nor exasperate the mightie, nor dis-hearten the beginner, nor affright those which were without from comming in, but be All unto All for their salvation. The same love is due unto all, but the same method of cure is not requisite for all: With some Love travelleth in paine, with others it rejoyceth in hope, some it labourerth to edifie, and others it feareth to offend; unto the weake it stoopeth, unto the strong it raiseth it selfe; to some it is compassionate, to others severe, to none an enemy, to all a mother. But all this it doth *non mentiendo, sed compatiendo*, not by belying the truth, but by pittying the sinner. It is not the wisdom of the flesh, nor to bee learned of men. The Scripture alone is able to make the man of God *wise unto the worke of Salvation*.

Iam. 3. 13, 17.

Matth. 11. 29.
21. 5.

Luk. 9. 55.

Gal. 6. 1.
2 Tim. 2. 25.

Thirdly, with meeknesse, for that is the childe of wisdom; *Who is a wise man*, saith Saint James, *let him shew out of a good conversation his workes* *ἐν ᾧ ἡ γνῶσις ὁραταί*, with meeknesse of wisdom, and againe, the wisdom which is from above is pure, peaceable, gentle, easie to bee intreated, full of mercie. The Gospell is Christs Gospell, and it must be preached with Christs spirit, which was very meeke and lowly. When the Disciples would have called for fire from heaven upon the Samaritans for their indignitie done unto Christ, hee rebuked them in a milde and compassionate manner, *Ye know not what spirit ye are of*. A right Evangelicall Spirit is ever a meeke and a mercifull Spirit. *If a man* (saith the Apostle) *be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual restore such an one in the spirit of meeknesse*: and againe, *In meeknesse*, saith the Apostle, *Instruct those that oppose themselves*, if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.

Lastly, with faithfulness, in as much as the Gospell is none

The Gospell is Christs owne Power.

257

none of ours, but Christs whose servants and stewards we are. Christ was faithfull, though he were a Son over his owne house, and therefore might in reason have assumed the more liberty to doe his owne will: much more doth it become us who are but his Officers, to be faithfull too, not to dissemble any thing which the estate and exigence of those soules committed to our charge shall require us to speake, not to adde, diminish, or deviate from our commission, preaching one gospell in one place, and another in another; but to deliver only the Counsell of God, and to watch over the Soules of men, as they that must give an account.

Againe, since the Gospell is Christs *owne Power*, wee must all learne from thence two duties: first, to receive it as from him with the affections of subjects which have beene bought by him, that is, first in hearing of the Word to expect principally *his voice*, and to seeke him speaking from Heaven. This is the nature of Christs sheepe, to turne away their eares from the voice of strangers, and to *heare him*. Two things principally there are which discover the voice of Christ in the Ministry of the Word: First, it is a spirituall and *heavenly Doctrine*, full of purity, righteousness and peace, touching the soule, with a kind of secret and magneticall vertue, whereby the thoughts, affections, conscience and conversation are turned from their earthly center, and drawne up unto him as Eagles to a carcasse. Secondly, it is a powerfull, an edged, a *piercing Doctrine*. If the Word thou hearest speake unto thy conscience, if it search thy heart, if it discover thy lusts, if it make thy spirit burne within thee, if it cast thee upon thy face, and convince and judge thee for thy transgressions, if it bind up thy sores, & cleanse away thy corruptions, then it is certainly Christs Word, and then it must be received with such affections as becommeth the Word of Christ.

First, with Faith: if we conferre with flesh and blood, we shall be apt ever to cavill against the Truth; For hee

S

that

VERSE 2.

Heb. 3. 2.

1 Cor. 4. 2.

2 Tim. 2. 2.

Deut. 4. 2.

Gal. 1. 6.

Act. 20. 27.

Heb. 13. 17.

Ioh. 10. 4, 5, 27.

Ioh. 3. 12.

Iam. 3. 17.

Heb. 4. 12.

VERSE 2.

Ioh. 12. 48.

Rom. 8. 7.

Heb. 12. 3.

Act. 13. 45.

Act. 28. 23.

1 Ioh. 1. 1, 2.

Gal. 1. 12.

Matth. 5. 12.

Ioh. 4. 21.

2 Cor. 1. 24.

1 Pet. 5. 3.

Heb. 4. 2.

1 Thess. 3. 13.

Eph. 4. 13.

Esa. 55. 11.

that rejecteth Christ, doth never receive his Word. A fleshly heart cannot submit unto a Heavenly Doctrine. Christ and his Apostles did every where endure the contradiction of sinners. But yet he claimeth this honor over the consciences of men to over-rule their assents against all the mists, and sophisticall reasonings of the flesh. The Apostles themselves preached nothing but either by immediate commission from him, or out of the Law and Prophets. But his usuall forme was, *Verily I say unto you*, noting that hee onely was unto the Church the Author and Fountaine of all heavenly Doctrine, that unto him onely belongeth that authoritative and infallible Spirit which can command the subscription and assent of the conscience, that hee onely can say with boldnesse to the soule, as hee did to the Samaritan woman, *Beleeve mee*. And that therefore no authority either of Men, or Churches, either Episcopall, Papall, or Synodical can without open Sacrilege usurpe power to over-rule the faith of men, or impose any immediate and Doctrinall necessity upon the conscience in any points which are not ultimately and distinctly resolved into the evident authority of Christ in his Word. Saint *Paul* himselfe durst not assume Dominion over the faith of men; nor Saint *Peter* neither suffer any Elders (amongst whom hee reckoneth himselfe as an Elder also) *ετακτειναι*, to over-rule, or prescribe unto the heritage of God. It is onely Christs Word which the hearts of men must stoop and attend unto, and which they must mingle with faith that it may bee profitable unto them; that is, they must let it into their hearts with this assurance, that it is not the breath of a Man, but the message of Christ, who is true in all his threatnings, and faithfull in all his promises, and pure in all his precepts, that hee sendeth this Ministry abroad for the perfection of the Saints, and the edification of his Church, and therefore if they be not hereby cleansed, and built up in his body, they doe as much

The Gospell is Christs owne Power.

259

VERSE 2.

as in them lieth make voide the holy Ordinance of God, which yet must never returne in vaine. The Word of God doth *effectually worke* onely in those that beleeeve. It worketh in hypocrites, and wicked hearers, (according to the measure of that imperfect faith which they have) but it worketh not effectually, that is, it doth not consummate or accomplish any perfect worke but onely in those that beleeeve; in the rest it proves but an abortion, and withers in the blade.

Secondly, ^a with love, and readinesse of minde, without despising or rejecting it. No man can bee saved who doth not *receive the Truth in love*, who doth not receive it (as the primitive Saints did) *with gladnesse and readinesse of minde*, as *Elis*, though from the hand of *Samuel* a Childe, as *David*, though from the hand of *Abigail*, a woman, as the Galatians, though from the hand of *Paul*, an infirme and persecuted Apostle. For herein is our homage to Christ the more apparent, when we suffer a litle childe to lead us.

Thirdly, ^b with meeknesse and submission of heart, reverencing and yeolding unto it in all things. Wrestling, shifiting, evading, perverting the word is as great an indignity unto Christ, as altering, interlining, or rasing a patent which the King hath drawen with his owne roiall hand, is an offence against him. Patience and effectuall obedience even in affliction, is an argument that a man esteemes the word to bee indeed Gods owne word, and so receives it. Hee onely who putteth off the old man, the corrupt deceitfull lusts of his former conversation, and is renewed in the Spirit of his minde, is the man that hath heard, and been taught by Christ, that hath received the *Truth in him*.

Againe, in as much as the Gospell is the Rod of *Christs owne strength*, or the instrument of his arme (who hath beleev'd our report and to whom is the *arme of the Lord revealed*) and the instrument is no further operative or

2 2 Theſſ. 10.
Act. 2. 41.
Act. 17. 11.
Act. 21. 17.
1 Sam. 3. 18.
1 Sam. 25. 32.
Gal. 4. 14.
Eſai. 11. 6.

b 1am. 1. 21.
Levit. 26. 2.
Act. 10. 33.
1 Theſ. 2. 13, 14.
Eph. 4. 2, 22.

Eſai. 53. 1.

VERSE 2.

effectuall than according to the measure of that impressed vertue which it receiveth from the superiour cause: therefore wee should learne alwayes to repaire unto Christ for the successe of his Word. For he onely is the Teacher of mens hearts, and the Author of their faith. To him only it belongeth to call men out of their graves, and to quicken whom he will. We have nothing but the Ministry, he keepeth the Power in his owne hands, that men might learne to waite upon him, and to have to doe with him, who onely can send a blessing with his Word, and teach his people to profit thereby.

Another ground of the power of the Word is, that it is *sent from God. The Lord shall send forth the Rod of thy strength.* From which particular likewise wee may note some usefull observations, as,

First, that Gods appointment and ordination is that which gives being, life, majesty, and successe to his owne Word, sauthority, boldnesse, and protection to his servants. When he sendeth his Word he will make it prosper. When *Moses* disputed against his going down into Egypt to deliver his brethren, sometimes alledging his owne unfitnessse and infirmity, sometimes the unbeliefe of the people, this was still the warrant with which God encouraged him, *I will bee with thee, I have sent thee, doe not I make mans mouth? I will bee with thy mouth and teach thee what thou shalt say.* I was no Prophet, neither was I a Prophets Son (saith *Amos*) but I was an heardsman and a gatherer of Sycamore fruit: *And the Lord tooke me as I followed the flocke and said unto me, Goe prophecie unto my people Israel.* And this made him peremptory in his office to prophecie against the idolatry of the kings Court, and against the flattery of the Priest of Bethel. And this made the Apostles bold, though otherwise unlearned and ignorant men, to stand against the learned councell of Priests and Doctors of the Law, *Wee ought to obey God rather than men.* Vpon which, Grave was the
advice

Esa. 55. II.
Exod. 3. 4.

Amos 7. 14, 15.

Act. 4. 13. 5. 29.
35, 36.

The Gospell sent by God.

261

VERSE 2.

advise of *Gamaliel*; If this counsell or worke be of men, it will come to naught; *But if it be of God, yee cannot overthrow it*, lest haply ye be found even to fight against God. For to withstand the power or progresse of the Gospell, is to set a mans face against God himselfe.

Secondly, in as much as the Gospell is sent forth by God, that is, revealed and published out of Sion, we may observe, That Evangelicall learning came not into the world by humane discovery or observation, but it is utterly above the compasse of all reason or naturall disquisition, neither men nor Angels ever knew it but by divine revelation. And therefore the Apostle every where calleth it a *Mystery, a great and a hidden Mystery*, which was kept secret since the world began. There is a *Naturall Theologie*, without the word, gathered out of the works of God, out of the resolution of causes and effects into their first originals, and out of the Law of nature written in the heart. But there is *no naturall Christianitie*. Nature is so farre from finding it out by her owne inquiries, that shee cannot yeeld unto it when it is revealed without a Spirit of faith to assist it. The Jewes stumbled at it as dishonorable to their Law, and the Gentiles derided it, as absurd in their Philosophy; It was a *Hidden and secret wisdom*, the execution and publication whereof was committed only to Christ. In God it was an *Eternall Gospell*, for Christ was a lambe slaine from before the foundations of the world, namely in the pre-determinate counsell and decree of his Father; but revealed it was not till the dispensation of the *fulnesse of time*, wherein he gathered together in one all things in Christ. The purpose and ordination of it was eternall, but the preaching and manifestation of it reserved untill the time of Christs solemne inauguration into his Kingdome, and of the obstinacie of the Jewes, upon whose defection the Gentiles were called in.

Which might teach us to adore the unsearchablenesse
S 3 of

Rom. 16. 25.
1 Cor. 2. 7, 9.
Rom. 1. 20, 21.
14. 15.

Revel. 14. 16.
1 Pet. 1. 20.
1 Cor. 2. 7. 10.
Eph. 19. 10.
Eph. 3. 9. 11.

Act. 14. 16, 17.
30.

VERSE 2.

Ioh. 17. 3.
Esaï. 53. 11.

1 Cor. 2. 14.

Ioh. 1. 5.

Exod. 4. 22.

Psal. 147. 20.
Vide Cameron.
de Eccl. p. 81.

Deut. 7. 6, 7.

Deut. 9. 5.

Ios. 14. 2, 3.

of Gods judgements unto former ages of the world, whom hee suffered to walke in their owne wayes, and to live in times of utter ignorance, destitute of any knowledge of the Gospell, or of any naturall parts, or abilities to finde it out. For if these things bee true: First, that without the knowledge of Christ there is no salvation. *This is eternall life to know thee and him whom thou hast sent Iesus Christ. By his knowledge shall my righteous servant justifie many.* Secondly, that Christ cannot bee knowne by naturall, but Evangelicall and revealed light. *The naturall man cannot know the things of the Spirit of God, because they are spiritually discerned. The light shined in darknesse, and the darknesse was so thicke and fixed that it did not let in the light nor apprehend it.* Thirdly, that this light was at the first sent onely unto the Jewes, as to the first-borne people, (excepting only some particular extraordinary dispensations and privileges to some few first fruits and preludes of the Gentiles.) *He shewed his word unto Iacob, his statutes and his judgements unto Israel. Hee hath not dealt so with any nation.* He hath not afforded the meanes of salvation ordinarily unto any other people; the world by wisdom knew him not. Fourthly, that this severall dispensation toward one and other, the giving of saving knowledge to one people, and with-holding it from others, was not grounded upon any preceding differences and dispositions thereunto in the people, but only in the *Love of God. The Lord thy God hath chosen thee to be a speciall people unto himselfe, above all people that are upon the face of the earth.* The Lord did not set his love upon you nor choose you, because yee were more in number than any people (for ye were the fewest of all people) *but because the Lord loved you, &c. The Lord thy God giveth thee not this good land to possesse it for thy righteousness, for you are a stiffe-necked people. Your Fathers dwelt on the other side of the flood in old time, and they served other gods.* There

The Gospell sent by God.

263

VERSE 2.

There was no difference betweene them and the Gentiles from whom I gathered them. Fifthly, that the Gospell was hidden from others *in God*, his owne will and counsell was the cause of it. He forbad men to goe into the Cities of the Gentiles, neither were they to goe unto them without a speciall gift, and commission. The same *Beneplacitum* was the reason of revealing it to some, and of hiding it from others; *Even so, O Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight*. If all these particulars be true, needs must we both admire the inscrutableness of Gods judgments towards the Gentiles of old, (for no humane presumptions are a fit measure of the wayes and severities of God towards sinners.) And also everlastingly adore his Compassions towards us, whom hee hath reserved for these times of light, and, out of the alone unsearchable riches of his grace, hath together with principalities and powers in heavenly places, made us to see what is the fellowship of that great myserie which from the beginning of the world was hidden in himselfe.

Thirdly, in that the Lord doth send forth the Gospell of Christ out of *Sion* into the world, wee may further observe that the Gospell is a Message, and an invitation from heaven unto men. For, for that end was it sent that thereby men might be invited and perswaded to salvation. The Lord sendeth his Sonne up and downe, carrieth him from place to place; he is set forth before mens eyes, he comes, and stands, and calls, and knocks at their doores, and beseecheth them to bee reconciled. Hee setteth his word before us, at our doores, and in our mouths and eares. He hath not erected any standing sanctuary or city of refuge for men to fly for their salvations unto, but hath appointed Ambassadors, to carry this treasure unto mens houses where hee inviteth them, and intreateth them, and requireth them, and commandeth them, and compelleth them to come into his feast of mercy. And this must needs bee. *πλετοὶ τῆς ἀνεξήρατος*, an unsearchable

Ephes. 3. 9.
Math. 10. 5.
Ephes. 3. 7, 8.
Mat. 11. 25, 26.
Eph. 3. 9, 11.
Rom. 11. 33.

Gal. 3. 1.
Col. 1. 6.
Revel. 3. 20.
Ier. 26. 4.
Deut. 30. 19.
Rom. 10. 8.
2 Cor. 5. 20.
Math. 11. 28.
Mich. 6. 8.
1 Ioh. 3. 23.
Luk. 14. 23.

VERSE 2.

riches of grace, for mercy, pardon, preferment, life, salvation to goe a begging, and sue for acceptance; and very unsearchable likewise must needs be the love of sinne, and madnesse of folly in wicked men, to trample upon such pearles, and to neglect so great salvation when it is tendered unto them. O what a heaue charge will it be for men at the last day, to have the mercy of God, the humility of Christ, the entreaties of his Spirit, the proclamations of pardon, the approaches of salvation, the dayes, the yeeres, the ages of peace, the ministers of the word, the booke of God, the great Mysterie of Godlinesse, to rise up in judgement, and to testifie against their soules?

Heb. 5. 4.

Gal. 1. 12.

Lastly, in that the Gospell is sent from God, the Dispencers thereof must looke unto their Mission, and not intrude upon so sacred a businesse before they are thereunto *called by God*. Now this *call* is twofold: *Extraordinary* by immediate instinct, and revelation from God, which is ever accompanied with immediate and infused gifts (of this wee doe not now speake:) And *Ordinary*, by imposition of hands, and Ecclesiasticall designation. Whereunto there are to concur three things. First, an Act of *Gods providence* casting a man upon such a course of studies, and fashioning his minde unto such affections towards learning, and disposing of him in such Schooles and Colleges of the Prophets, as are congruous preparations, and were appointed for nurseries and seminaries of Gods Church. It is true many things fall under Gods *providence*, which are not within his *allowance*, and therefore it is no sufficient argument to conclude Gods consent or commission in this office, because his wisdom hath cast mee upon a collegiate education. But when therewithall, hee in whose hands the hearts of all men are as clay or wax, to bee moulded into such shapes as the counsell of his will shall order, hath bended the desires of my heart to serve him in his Church, and hath set the strongest delight of my minde upon those kindes of learning

The Gospell sent by God.

265

VERSE 2.

learning which are unto that service most proper and conducent; when measuring either the good will of my heart, or the appliablenesse of my parts, by this, and other professions of learning, I can cleerely conclude that that measure and proportion which the Lord hath given mee is more suteable unto this, than other learned callings, I suppose, other qualifications herewith concurring, a man may safely from thence conclude, that God, who will have every man live in some profitable calling, doth not only by his *providence* permit, but by his *secret direction* lead him unto that service, whereunto the measure of gifts which he hath conferred upon him are most suteable and proper. And therefore secondly, there is to bee respected in this *Ordinary mission*, the meet qualification of the person who shall bee ordained unto this ministerie. For if no Prince will send a mechanicke from his loome, or his sheeres, in an honorable Embassage to some other forraigne Prince, shall wee thinke that the Lord will send forth stupid and unprepared instruments about so great a worke as the perfecting of the Saints, and Edification of the Church? It is registred for the perpetuall dishonor of that wicked King *Ieroboam* (who made no other use of any Religion but as a secondary by-thing, to be the supplement of policie) *that hee made of the Lowest of the People*, those who were really such as the Apostles were falsely esteemed to be, the scumme and off-scouring of men, to be Priests unto the Lord. Now the Qualities more directly and essentially belonging unto this office are these two; *Fidelitie* and *Abilitie*. The things, saith the Apostle, which thou hast heard of amongst many witnesses, *the same commit thou to Faithfull men, who shall be able to teach others also*.

Wee are stewards of no meaner a gift than the *Grace of God*, and the *Wisedome of God*, that grace which by *S. Peter* is called *ποικίλη χάρις*, a *manifold Grace*; and that wisedome which by *S. Paul* is called *πολυποικίλον σοφία*, the *manifold*

1 King. 12. 31.

2 Tim. 2. 2.

1 Pet. 4. 10.
Eph. 3. 10.

VERSE 2.

1 Cor. 4. 2.

a Luk. 4. 16. 31.
 b Act. 17. 2. 18. 4.
 c Τῇ τῷ ἡμέρᾳ λαο-
 μίῳ ἡμεῖς πάντων
 καὶ πόλεως ἡ ἁγίας
 μυστήτων ἐπὶ τῇ
 αὐτῇ συνελθούσας ἡ-
 νίο. εἴτα παυσα-
 μένης τῷ ῥήματι ἡ-
 καίθη, ὁ ὁμοῦτος
 διὰ λόγον τῶν γε-
 νισίας καὶ ὁ ὁμοῦτος
 οὐ καὶ τῇ καλῶν
 τῶν μυστήτων
 ποιεῖ. Justin.
 Martyr. Apol. 2.
 Tert. Apol. ca. 3. 9.

manifest wisdom of God. We are the depositaries and dispensers of the most pretious treasures which were ever opened unto the Sonnes of men, the incorruptible and precious bloud of Christ, the exceeding great and pretious promises of the Gospell, the word of the Grace of God and of the unsearchable riches of Christ. Now it is required of stewards that a man bee found faithfull, that he defraud not Christ of his purchase, which is the soules of men, nor men of their price and priviledge, which is the bloud of Christ; that he neither favour the sinnes of men, nor dissemble the truth of God; that hee watch, because hee is a seer, that he speake, because he is an oracle, that he feed, because hee is a shepheard, that hee labour, because hee is a husbandman, that hee bee tender, because hee is a mother, that hee bee carefull, because he is a father, that he be faithfull, because he is a servant to God and his Church; in one word, that he be instant in season and out of season, to exhort, rebuke, instruct, to doe the worke of an Evangelist, to accomplish and make full proove of his Ministry, because he hath an account to make, because he hath the presence of Christ to assist him, the Promises of Christ to reward him, the example of Christ, his Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Bishops and Martyrs of the purest time, who have now their palmes in their hands, to encourage him. ^a It was Christ custome to enter into their Synagogues on the Sabbath dayes, and to read and expound the Scriptures to the people. ^b It was S. Pauls manner to reason in the Synagogues, & to open the Scriptures on the Sabbath daies. ^c Vpon Sunday, saith Justin Martyr, All the Christians that are in the Cities or countries about meet together, and after some Commentaries of the Apostles, and writings of the Prophets have been read, the Senior or President doth by a Sermon exhort the people, and admonish them to the imitation and practice of those divine truths which they had heard read unto them. And

The Gospell sent by God.

267

^d And Saint *Austin* telleth us of *Ambrose*, that hee heard him rightly handling the Word of God unto the people every Lords day. Yea, it should seeme by the Homilies of *S. Chrysostome* that hee did oftentimes preach daily unto the people, and therefore we frequently meet with his ~~words~~, yesterday this and this I taught you. ^e And *Origen* intimateth this frequencie of expounding the Scriptures in his time, if, saith hee, you come frequently unto the Church of God, and there attend unto the sacred Scriptures and to the explication of those heavenly commandements thy soule will be strengthened, as thy body with food. And ^f our Church in her Ecclesiasticall Constitutions hath provided for the continuance of so faithfull and pious a custome, injoyning every allowed Preacher to have a Sermon every Sunday in the yeere, and in the afternoone besides to spend halfe an houre in Catechizing the yonger and ruder sort in the Principles of Christian Religion. The neglect of which most necessary dutie no man can more bewaile, nor more urge the necessity thereof, than those who looking abroad into the world have experience of more thick and palpable darknesse in the mindes of men, concerning those absolutely necessary Doctrines of the passion, merits, and redemption of Christ and of faith in them, than men who have not with their owne eyes observed it can almost beleve. And that too in such places where Sermons have been very frequently preached. I will close this point with the assertion and profession of Holy *Austin*. ^g Nothing, saith he, is in this life more pleasant and easie than the life of a Bishop or Minister if it be perfunctorily and flatteringly executed, but then in Gods sight *Nihil turpius, miserius, damnabilius*, and it was his profession, ^h that hee was never absent from his Episcopall service and attendance, upon any licentious and assumed liberty, but onely upon some other necessary service of the Church.

V E R S E 2.

d Sum in populo
verbum verita-
tis recte tra-
ctantem omni
die Dominico
audiebam. Aug.
Confess. l. 6. c. 3.
e Si ad Ecclesiam
frequenter veni-
as, aurem divi-
nis literis admo-
ueas, explanati-
onem mandato-
rum celestium
capias, sicut cibus
caro, ita spiritus
verbis divinis
convalescet.
Origen. Hom. 9.
in Levit.
f Canon. 45. 59.

g Nihil in hac
vita letius aut
hominibus ac-
ceptabilius, E-
piscopi, aut pres-
byteri, aut Dia-
coni officio, si
perfunctorie at-
que adulatorie
res agatur, &c.
Aug. Epist. 148.
h Illud noverit
dilectio vestra,
nunquam me
absentem fuisse
licentiosâ liber-
tate, sed necessa-
ria servitute.
Aug. Epist. 138.

Touching

VERSE 2.

ἰ ἐν ὅτι ἡ
 φρονητικὴ τῶν κα-
 θολῶν μόνον, ἀλλὰ
 καὶ ἐν ταῖς καὶ
 ἑκατα γινώσκουσιν,
 &c. *Arist. Ethic.*
lib. 6. cap. 8.
 * *Aug. in lib. de*
Doctr. Christ. &
de Catechiz.
Rud. Gregor.
Mag. de Officio
Pastoral. part. 3.
cap. 1. & c.
 † *Hieron. Apol.*
adver. Ruffin.
Aug. de Doctr.
Christ. lib. 2.
cap. 16, 17, 39.

^a *Theodoret.*
Hist. 3. cap. 7.

^b *Aug. de Doctr.*
Christ. l. 1. ca. 28.
Vid. Greg. Na-
zianz. Orat. 1.

Touching the abilitie required in the discharge of this great office, there are (as I conceive) two speciall branches thereunto belonging. First, *Learning* for the right information of the consciences of men, that men may not pervert the Scripture. Secondly, *Wisdom* or *spirituall prudence* for seasonable application of the truth to particular circumstances, which is that which maketh a *wise builder*. For this latter, it being so various, ⁱ according to those infinite varieties of particular cases and conditions, which are hardly reducible unto generall rules, I cannot here speake, but referre the Reader to the grave and pious counsels of those ^k holy men who have given some directions herein. For the other, two great workes there are which belong to this high calling. *Instruction* of the Scholar, and *Conviction* of the Adversary. Vnto the perfection of which two services, when wee duly consider how many different parts of learning are requisite, as knowledge of the ^l tongues, for the better understanding of the holy Scriptures by their originall idiome and emphasis; of the arts, to observe the connexion, and argumentation, and method of them; of ancient customes, Histories, & antiquities of the Babylonians, Persians, Greeks and Romans, without insight whereinto the full meaning of many passages of holy Scripture cannot be cleerly apprehended; of Schoole learning, for discovering and repelling the subtilty of the adversaries, a thing required in a Rhetorician by *Aristotle* and *Quintilian*, inasmuch ^a that *Julian* the Apostate complained of the Christians, that they used the weapons of the Gentiles against them, and therefore interdicted them the use of Schooles of learning; ^b Lastly, of Histories and Antiquities of the Church, that we may observe the succession of the Professours, and Doctrines hereof, the originals and sproutings of heresie therein, the better to answer the reproaches of our insolent adversaries, who lay innovation to our charge. I say, when wee duely consider these particulars, wee cannot suffi-

The Gospell sent by God.

269

VERSE 2.

sufficiently admire, nor detest the saucinesse of those bold intruders, who when they have themselves neede to bee taught what are the first Principles of the Oracles of God, become teachers of the ignorant before themselves have beene Disciples of the learned, and, before either maturity of yeers, or any severer progresse of studies have prepared them, boldly leape, some from their manuell trades, many from their grammar and logicke rudiments, into this sacred and dreadfull Office, unto which heretofore the most learned and pious men have trembled to approach. To these men I can give no better advice than that which *Tully* once gave unto *Aristoxenus* a Musitian, who would needs venture upon Philosophicall difficulties, and out of the principles of his Art determine the nature of a humane soule, *Hac magistro relinquat Aristoteli, canere ipse doceat*. Let them spend their time in the worke which best befits them, and leave great matters unto abler men.

Thirdly and lastly, unto this call is requisite the **imposition of hands*, and the authoritative act of the Church ordaining and setting apart, and deriving actuall power upon such men, of whose fidelity and ability they have sufficient evidence (for *hands are not to be laid suddenly on any man*) to preach the Word, and to administer the Sacraments, and to doe all those ministeriall acts, upon which the edification of the People of Christ doth depend. I have now done with the first of Christs regalities in the Text, which was the *Scepter of his Kingdome*.

Now to speake a word of the second, which is *Solum*, the *Throne of his Kingdome*. The Lord shall send the Rod of thy strength *out of Sion*. Which notes unto us: First, that the Church of the Jewes was the chiefe originall, Metropolitan Church of all others. Therefore, our Saviour chargeth his Disciples to *Tarry in the City of Ierusalem, till they should bee endued with power from on high*.

Docent Scripturas quas non intelligunt, prius imperitorum magistri, quam Doctorum discipuli, &c. Hieron. Eph. 8. ad Dessenriad. Apol. ad Dominion: & To. 3. Epistol. Ep. ad Paulinum.

* Hi sunt qui se ultro apud temerarios convenas sine divina dispositione praeficiunt, qui se praepositos sine ulla Ordinationis lege constituunt, qui nemine Episcopatum dante Episcopi sibi nomen assumunt. Cyprian. de unitat. Ecclesiae.

Luk. 24. 49.

VERSE 2.

Rom. 3. 1, 2.

Rom. 9. 4.

a Jer. 31. 9.

b Lam. 1. 18.

c Matth. 8. 12.

d Eph. 2. 12.

e Matth. 15. 26.

f Gal. 4. 26. 6. 16

Rom. 2. 29.

Heb. 12. 22.

g Rom. 15. 8.

h Matth. 15. 24.

i Matth. 10. 5, 6.

k Rom. 11. 11.

12. 15. 30.

l 1 Thes. 2. 14.

m Act. 15. 2, 22.

n Rom. 15. 27.

o Rom. 11. 25,
26.

high. The Apostle saith that they had the advantage or precedence and excellency above other people, because *unto them were committed the Oracles of God. To them did pertain the Adoption, and the Glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the Law, and the Service of God, and the promises.* Of them was Christ after the flesh. All the Fathers, Patriarchs, Prophets, Apostles, and writers of the holy Scriptures were of them. There is no Church can shew such Priviledges, nor produce such authentique records for her precedency as the Church of the Jewes. Therefore they are called by an excellency *Gods a first-borne,* and *b the first fruites of the Creatures,* they are called *The c Children of the Kingdome,* whereas others were at first *d Dogs,* and *e strangers.* Their *f Titles, Sion, Hierusalem, Israel,* are used as proper names to expresse the whole Church of God by, though amongst the Gentiles. Christ Jesus though hee came as a *Saviour unto All,* yet he was sent to be a *Prophet and a Preacher* onely unto them. Therefore the Apostle calleth him *g the Minister of the Circumcision,* that is, of the Jewes, and hee saith, *h I am not sent but unto the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.* And when hee gave his Apostles their first Commission, *i hee sent them onely into the Cities of the Jewes;* the *k Gentiles* were incorporated into them, were brought in upon their rejection, and refusall of the Gospell, *l* tooke the Christians of Judea for their pattern in their profession; from *m* that Church were Rules and constitutions sent abroad into other Churches, as binding and necessary things. To *n* that Church the Churches of the Gentiles were debtors, as having beene made partakers of their spirituall things; and though they bee now a rejected people, yet *o* when the *fulnesse of the Gentiles* is come in, Israel shall bee gathered againe, and made a glorious Church. And in the meane time their dispersion tended unto the conversion of the Gentiles. For though they were enemies to the faith of Christians,

P yet

Yet they did beare witnesse unto those Scriptures, out of which the Christians did prove their faith. And there is no greater evidence in a cause, than the affirmative testimony of that man who is an enemy to the cause. If the Church of Rome had such evidences as these out of the Booke of God, to prove their usurped primacy by, how proud and intollerable would they be in boasting thereof, and obtruding it unto others, who are now so confident upon farre slenderer grounds?

And from hence wee may learne to take heed of the sinnes of that people, which were principally the rejecting of the corner stone, and the putting off the Gospell of Christ away from them, as every obstinate and unbelieving sinner doth for himselfe. This is that which hath made them of all Nations the most hated, and the most forsaken, and hath brought *wrath to the uttermost* upon them, because when Christ came unto his owne they received him not. *Because of unbeliese they were broken off,* saith the Apostle, *and thou standest by faith; bee not high-minded, but feare, for if God spared not the naturall branches, take heed lest hee also spare not thee.* And wee should likewise learne to pray for the *fulnesse of the Gentiles*, and for the restoring of this people unto their honour and originall priviledges againe; for *wee are their debtors*; wee entred upon the promises which were made to them; and therefore good reason we have to doe for them now, as they did for us before: *We have a little sister, or rather an elder sister, and she hath no breasts,* the Oracles and Ordinances of God are taken from her; *What shall we doe for our sister in the day when shee shall be spoken for?* Cant. 8.8.

Secondly, this notes unto us the calling of the Gentiles into the fellowship of the same mystery which was first preached unto the Jewes, that they might bee the *daughters* of this mother Church, that they may *take hold of the skirt of the Jew*, and say, Wee will goe with you, for

VERSE 2.

P Magnum est quod Deus prestitit Ecclesie sue ubique diffuse, ut Gens Judea, merito debellata & dispersa per terras, ne a nobis hac composita putarentur codices Prophetarum nostrorum ubique portaret, & inimica fidei nostre testis fieret veritatis nostre.
Aug. tom. 4. de Consens. Evang. lib. 1. cap. 26. & Epist. 3. ad Volusianum.

Ezek. 16. 61.
Zech. 8. 23.
Esai. 2. 2, 3.

VERSE 2.

for we have heard that God is with you. The Church of Jerusalem was set up as a beacon or an ensigne, or a publike sanctuary to which the Nations should flie, as Doves to their window's. Of this mercifull purpose some evidences and declarations the Lord gave before in *Rahab*, *Iob*, *Ninive*, the Wise-men, and others, who were the preludes and first fruites of the Gentiles unto God: and did after fully manifest the same in his unlimited commission to his Apostles, *Goe preach the Gospell unto every creature.*

And now alas, what were we that God should bring us hitherto? Saint *Paul* saith that we were filled with all *unrighteousnesse*; that wee did neither understand God, nor seeke after him. All our faculties were full of sinne, and the fulnesse of all sinne was in us; wee were ruled by no lawes but the course of the world, the Prince of the Aire, and the lusts of the flesh, without God in this world and without any hope for the world to come. Here vessels of lust and poyson, and fitted to bee hereafter vessels of destruction and misery. We were no Nation, a foolish people, a people that sought not, nor inquired after God; and yet his owne people hath hee set by and called us to the knowledge of his Love and Mercy in Christ. And that, not as many other Gentiles are called, who heare of him indeed, and worship him, but have his Doctrine corrupted and overturned with heresie, and his worship defiled with superstition and idolatry; but, hee hath for us purged his floore, and given unto us the wheat without the chaffe, he hath let the light of his Glory to shine purely upon us onely in the face of Iesus Christ, without any humane supplements, or contributions. How should wee prayse him for it, and as wee have received Christ purely, so labour to walke worthily in him? How should we runne to him that called us when we knew him not? How should we set forward, and call upon one another, that wee may flie like Doves in companies unto the windows

VERSE 3.

Hebr. 12. 18, 22.
Gal. 4. 25, 26.

a Quomodo potest esse cum Christo qui cum sponsa Christi, atq; in ejus Ecclesia non est? Cypri. lib. 2. ep. 8. & lib. 4. epist. 2. ad Anton. & lib. de unitat. Eccle. Aug. 10. 1. de vera Relig. cap. 5.
b 1 Cor. 7. 14.
c Phil. 2. 16.
d 1 Tim. 3. 16.
e ἡ ἀληθὴς ἐκκλησία ἡ εὐαγγ. ἡ ἱεραι-
μα. Chrysoſt.
hom. 11. in Tim.
f Ephes. 2. 10.

VERSE 2.

g Rom. 3. 1.
Rom. 9. 4.

h Revel. 1. 12.

i Reynol. Confer.
with Hart. c. 8.
divis. 6.
k Eccles. 12. 11.

l Cameron. de
Eccles. pag. 44.
m August. in
Proem. lib. de
Doctrin. Christi.
n Doct. white in
his Way to the
Church, §. 15.
o *Figi enim sole-
bant leges, aut
quandoq; in eis
incidi, & in locis
celeberrimis, ut
à quolibet lege-
rentur, proponi.
vid. Briffon. ac.
formul. l. 2. pag.
137. & lib. 3.
pag. 323.*

Prophets and Apostles, namely upon that fundamentall doctrine which they have laid; But s the Church is the depositary of the Truth, that Orbe out of which this glorious Light shines forth, unto it appertaines the Covenants and the giving of the Law, and the service of God, and the promises. Her office and her honour it is to be the *Candlesticke* which holdeth up the Word of truth, to set to her scale unto the evidence and excellency thereof, i by her Ministry, Authority, consent, and countenance to conciliate respect thereunto in the mindes of aliens, and to confirme it in the mindes of beleivers, k to fasten the nailes and points thereof, like masters of the assemblies under one principall Shepheard, which is Christ, in the hearts of men; not to dishonour it by their usurped authority above it (for by that meanes all controversies of religions, are turned not into contentions of doctrine, that that may bee rested in, which doth appeare to have in it most intrinsecall majesty, spiritualnesse, and evidence; but into factions and emulations of men, that that sect may be rested in, who can with most impudence and ostentation arrogate an usurped authority to themselves) but by their willing submission thereunto to credit it in the affections of men, and to establish others in the love and obedience thereunto; for the Authority of the Church is not l *Autoritas jurisdictionis*, an authority of jurisdiction above the Scriptures: but onely *Autoritas muneris*, an authority of dispensation and of trust, to proclaime, exhibire, present the truth of God unto the people, m to point to the Starre, which is directed unto by the finger, but is seene by the evidence of its owne light. n To hold forth, as a o pillar that Law, and Proclamation of Christ, the Contents whereof we discover out of it selfe. In one word, that place sheweth the duty of the Church to preserve knowledge, and to shew forth the truth of sacred Scriptures out of themselves; but not any infallibility in it selfe, or authority over

over others, to binde their Consciences to assent unto such expositions of Scripture, as derive not their evidence from the harmony and analogie of the Scriptures themselves, but onely from *Ipsè dixit*, because the Church hath spoken it.

To conclude this point, wee are to note for the cleere understanding of the Office of the Church concerning the Holy Scriptures: First, that some things therein are *Hard to bee understood*, as Saint *Peter* speakes, either by reason of their allegoricall and figurative expressions, as the visions of *Ezekiel, Daniel, Zechary, &c.* Or by reason of the obscure and strange connexion of one part with another, or of the dependance thereof upon foraine learning, or the like; but then wee must note that the knowledge of such things as these, are not of absolute necessity unto salvation, for though the perverting of hard places be damnable (as Saint *Peter* telleth us) yet that ignorance of them which groweth out of their owne obscurity, and not out of our neglect, is not damnable. Secondly, some things have evidence enough in the termes that expresse them, but yet are *Hard to bee beleaved*, by reason of the supernaturall quality of them. As when wee say that Christ was the Sonne of a Virgin, or that hee died and rose againe, there is no difficulty in the sense of these things, it is easily understood what hee that affirmeth them doth meane by them. All the difficulty is to bring the minde to give assent unto them. Thirdly, some things though easie in their sense to bee understood, and it may be easily likewise in their nature to bee beleaved, are yet *Hard to bee obeyed and practised*, as repentance and forsaking of sinne, &c. Now according unto these differences wee may conceive of the Office and Power which the Church hath in matters of Holy Scripture.

First, for hard places in regard of the sense and meaning of the place, it is the duty of the Church to open

VERSE 2.

^a Neceſſe eſt eos
qui Scripturas
conſiderando per-
tractant, etiam ſi
recte atque uni-
us fidei fuerint,
varias parere in
multorum loco-
rum obſcuritate
ſententias: quā-
vis nequaquam
iſa varietas ab
ejuſdem fidei
unitate diſcor-
det; ſicut etiam
unus tractator
ſecundum ean-
dem fidem aliter
atq; aliter eun-
dem locum poteſt
exponere, quia
hoc ejus obſcuri-
tas patitur. Aug.
Epiſt. 19.

^b Theodoret. de
curand. Græc.
affect. lib. 8.
Cypr. ſerm. de
Baptiſ. Chriſti.
Aug. Epiſt. 3. ad
Voluſ. & tom. 3.
de doctrin. Chri-
ſti. lib. 2. cap. 9.

them to Gods people with modeſty, and moderation; and ^a therein God alloweth the learned a *Chriſtian liberty*, with ſubmiſſion of their opinions alwayes to the *ſpirits of the Prophets*, ſo long as they doe therein nothing contrary to the *Analogy of faith*, to the generall *peace*, and *unity of the Church*, to the *rules of charity, piety, loyalty, and ſobriety*; to abound in their owne ſenſe, and to declare, for the further edifying of the Church, what they conceive to be in ſuch difficult places principally intended. And further than this no Church nor Perſon can goe; for if unto any man or chaire there were annexed an *infallible ſpirit*, enabling him to give ſuch a cleere and indubitate expoſition of all Holy Scriptures, as ſhould leave no invidenſe in the Text, nor heſtancy in the mindes of men; how comes it to paſſe that hitherto ſo many difficulties remaine, wherein even our Adverſaries amongſt themſelves doe give ſeverall conjectures and explications, and how can that man, to whom ſo excellent a gift of *infallibility* is beſtowed, cleere himſelfe of envie, and abuſe of the grace of God, who maketh not uſe thereof to expound the Scriptures, and to compoſe thoſe differences thereabouts, which doe ſo much perplexe the world?

Secondly, for thoſe places which in their meaning are eaſie to bee underſtood, but in their excellent and high nature *hard to bee beleaved* (as all Articles of faith, and things of absolute neceſſity are *in their termes* ^b *perſpicuous*, but in their Heavenly nature *unevident unto humane reaſon*) The office of the Church is not to binde mens Conſciences to beleieve theſe truths upon her Authority, for wee haue not Dominion over the faith of men, neither are wee lords in Chriſts ſlocke; and how ſhall any ſcrupulous minde, which is deſirous to bould things to the branne, be ſecure of the power which the Church in this caſe arrogates, or have any certainty that this ſociety of men muſt bee beleaved in their religion, who will
allow

The Church the seat of saving truth.

277

VERSE 2.

allow the same honour to no society of men but themselves? But in this case the office of the Church is, both to labour by all good meanes to evidence the credibility of the things which are to be beleev'd, to discover unto men those essentiall and intimate beauties of the Gospell, which to spirituall mind's and hearts raised to such a proportionable pitch of capacity, as are suteable to the excellency of their natures, are apt to evidence and notifie themselves, and also to labour to take men off from dependance on their owne reason or corrupted judgement, to worke in their heart an experience of the Spirit of grace and an obedience to those holy Truths which they already assent unto; with which preparations & perswasions, the heart being possessed, will in due time come to observe more cleerely, by that spirituall eye, the evidence of those things which were at first so difficult; so then the *Act of the Church is in matters of faith an act of introduction and guidance*, but that which begetteth the infallible and unquestionable assent of faith is that spirituall taste, relish, and experience of the Heavenly sweetnesse of divine doctrine, which, by the Ministry of the Church accompanied with the speciall concurrence of Almighty God therewithall, is wrought in the heart; for it is only the Spirit of God which writeth the Law in mens hearts, which searcheth the things of God, and which maketh us to know them.

Thirdly, for those places which are difficult, rather to bee obeyed than to bee understood: The worke of the Church is to enforce upon the conscience the necessitie of them, to perswade, rebuke, exhort, encourage with all authority.

Which should teach us all *to love the Church of Christ*, and to pray for the peace and prosperity of the walls of Sion, for the purity, spiritualnesse, power and countenance of the Word therein, which is able to hold up its owne honour in the mindes of men, if it be but faithfully

T 3

published;

Dr. Field of the Church, l. 4. c. 8.

Singulis credentibus suus gustus est iudicii à spiritu, ut hominibus à naturâ suus. Jun. contr. l. lib. 3. cap. 3. S. 13.

VERSE 2.

c Ne quicquam
proficit exquisi-
tior quāq, cru-
delitas vestra,
illecebra est ma-
gis sectæ, plures
efficimur quoties
metimur à vo-
bis. Semen est
sanguis Christia-
norum — Inde
est quod senten-
tiis vestris gra-
tias agimus, ut
est æmulatio di-
vine rei & hu-
mana. Tertul. A-
polog. cap. ult.

published; wee should therefore studie to maintaine, to credit, to promote the Gospell, to encourage truth, dis- countenance error, to stand in the gap against all the stratagems and advantages of the enemies thereof, and to hold the candlestick fast amongst us, to buy the truth, and sell it not, betray it not, forsake it not, temper it not, misguize it not. This is to bee a pillar, and to put the shoulder under the Gospell of Christ. And surely though the Papists boast of the Word and Name of the Church (as none more apt to justifie and brag of their sobriety than those whom the wine hath overtaken) yet the plain truth is, they have farre lesse of the nature thereof, than any other Churches, because farre lesse of the pure service and ministration thereof, for in stead of holding forth the Word of life, they pull it downe, denying unto the people of Christ the use of his Gospell, dimidiating the use of his Sacrament, breeding them up in an ignorant worship, to begge they know not what, in all points disgracing the Word of Truth, and robbing it of its certainty, sufficiency, perspicuitie, authority, purity, energie in the minds of men. And this is certaine, the more any set themselves against the light and generall knowledge of the Word of truth, the lesse of the nature of the Church they have in them, what-ever ostentations they may make of the name thereof.

The last thing observed in this second verse amongst the regalities of Christ, was *Imperium, his Rule and Governement* in his Church by his holy Word, maugre all the attempts and machinations of the enemies thereof against it: *Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies*, that is, *Thou shalt rule safely, securely, undisturbedly*, without danger, feare, or hazzard, from the enemies round about; their counsels shall bee infatuated, their purposes shall vanish, their decrees shall not stand, their persecutions shall but sow the blood of Christ, and the ashes of Christians the thicker, they shall see it, and gnash with

with their teeth and gnaw their tongues, and be horribly amazed at the emulation and triumph of a Christians sufferings over the malice and wrath of men.

The Kingdome of Christ is two-fold; His *Kingdome of Glory*, of which there shall bee no end, when he shall *rule over his enemies*, and tread them under his feet: and his *Kingdome of Grace*, whereby hee *ruleth amongst his enemies*, by the Scepter of his Word. And this is the Kingdome here spoken of; noting unto us, that Christ will have a Church and People gathered unto him by the preaching of his Gospell on the Earth, maugre all the malice, power, or policy of all his enemies. Never was Satan so loose, never Heresie and darkenesse so thicke, never persecution so prevalent, never the taile of the Dragon so long, as to sweepe away all the Stars of Heaven, or to devoure the remnant of the womans seed. The gates of Hell, all the policie, power and machinations of the Kingdome of darknesse, shall never roote out the Vine which the Father hath planted, nor prevaile against the Body of Christ. His Gospell must bee preached till the worlds end, and till then he will be with it to give it successe. Though the Kings of the Earth stand up, and the Rulers gather together against the Lord and his Christ, yet they imagine but a vaine thing, and hee that sitteth in Heaven shall laugh them to scorne.

The grounds of the certainty and perpetuity of Christs Evangelicall Kingdome is not the nature of the Church in it selfe considered, either in the whole or parts; for *Adam* and *Eva* were a Church at first, a people that were under the Law of obedience, and worship of God, and yet they fell away from that excellent condition. And the Prophet tels us, that except the Lord had left a very small remnant, the Church had beene all as Sodom, and like to Gomorrah. But the grounds hereof are; First, *The Decree*, ordination, and appointment of God, *Psal. 2. 7. Act. 10. 42. Heb. 3. 2.* and we know what

Esai. 1. 9,

VERSE 2.

Act. 3. 21.

ever men project, the counsell of the Lord must stand. Secondly, Gods Gift unto Christ, *Aske of me, and I will give thee the Heathen for thine inheritance, &c. Psal. 2. 8. Thine they were, and thou gavest them me, Iohn, 17. 6. My Father which gave them mee is greater than all, and none is able to plucke them out of my Fathers hand, Ioh. 10. 29.* Thirdly, Gods Oath, which is the Scale of his irreverfible decree and Covenant with Christ. *Once have I sworne by my Holinesse, that I will not lie unto David; His seede shall endure for ever, and his Throne as the Sunne before me, Psal. 89. 35, 36.* Fourthly, Christs owne Purchase and price which he payed for it. The Apostle saith, Christ died not in vaine, and the vertue of his blood lasteth to the end of the World; for as his blood was shed from the beginning of the world in regard of Gods Decree, so doth it continue to the end, in regard of its owne merit and efficacy; so long as hee sitteth at the right hand of God, which must be till the time of the restitution of all things, the merit of his blood shall worke amongst men. Fifthly, Christs owne Power, to keepe inviolable the propriety hee hath gotten, *My sheepe heare my voice, and I give unto them eternall life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any man plucke them out of my hand, Ioh. 10. 27, 28.* Sixthly, the Fathers Command unto his Son, *This is the Fathers Will, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, &c. Ioh. 6. 39.* Seventhly, Christs Love and Care. The Church is his Spouse, under his Coverture and protection, and therefore as hee hath Power and Office, so hee hath delight to preserve it still. His Love is better able to helpe, than the malice of the enemy is to hurt. Eighthly, Christs Intercession, which is not for the world, but for those whom God hath given him out of the world, and those he demandeth of his Father (who heareth him alwayes) in the vertue of that Covenant which betweene them was ratified, on Gods part by a Promise and Oath, and on Christs part by a Merit

Merit and Purchase. Now Christs Intercession shall last till his returning to judge the world, and therefore still he must have a Church, for whom to intercede. Lastly, Christs owne *Promise*, to bee with the preaching of his Gospell; that is, to give it assistance and successe, for the gathering together and perfecting of the Saints unto the End of the world, *Matth. 28.20.*

Here then may bee answered two great Questions: First, whether the Church may *deficere*, faile upon the earth or no? To which I answer, That the Church may be taken either *Mystically, Spiritually, and Universally*. And in that sense it can never faile, but there must bee upon the earth a true Church of Christ, not onely *Certitudine eventus*, by the certainty of the event, which is on all sides agreed; but *Certitudine causa* too, by a certainty growing out of those irresistable causes upon which the being of the mysticall body of Christ on the earth dependeth. Or it may be considered *Particularly*, in the severall parts and places of the world where the Gospell is planted; and *Hierarchically and politically*, denoting a company of men, professing the Faith of Christ, and reduced into a quiet, peaceable, composed and conspicuous government: and so wee affirme that there is no Church in the world so safe, but that it may *Deficere*, faile, and be extinguished out of its place. The Church of the Jewes did, and after them any may. Else the Apostles argument even to the Roman Church it selfe (which was then a famous Church throughout the world, and of that passage in the Apostle, *Baronius* makes a long boast) were very weake, when *a majori ad minus* he thus argueth, *Bee not high-minded but feare, for if God spared not the naturall Branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.* Thus wee finde the ten Tribes in their apostacy, till they became *Lo ammi* to bee no more a people; and their brethren after fall in their condition, *Wrath*, saith the Apostle, *is come to the uttermost upon them.* And hee telleth

Rom. 1. 8.

Baron. An. 58. S.
47, 48, 49, 50.

Rom. 11. 21, 22.

Hos. 1. 9.

1 Thes. 2. 16.

VERSE 2.

2 Thes. 2. 3, 7.

1 Tim. 4. 1.

Cameron. de Eccles. p. 265. 268.

* Ex illis omnibus qui intrinsecè & in occulto intus sunt constat ille Hortus conclusus, fons signatus, &c. Aug. de Baptism. cont. Donat. li. 5. cap. 27. Alii ita sunt in domo Dei ut ipsi etiam sint eadem Domus Dei — Alii ita ut non pertineant ad compagem Domus, &c. De Bapt. l. 7. c. 51

telleth us that the man of sinne, the Sonne of perdition, should bee revealed by *Apostacy*, to note unto us that Antichrist was to bee generated out of the corruption or falling away of some eminent Church, and that, by a mysterious and insensible declination.

A second question which may bee made is this, that since the Church doth not totally faile from off the earth, whether that which remaineth thereof bee *alwaies visible*? To which we answer, That if we take the Church for the *Spirituall and Mysticall body of Christ*: * Which is indeed the House of God, so it is *in a sort still invisible*, because the qualities and principles which constitute a man in the Body of Christ, as Faith, and the Spirit of Grace, are invisible things. Seene indeed they may be by an eye of *Charity*, in their fruits, but not by an eye of *Certainety*, in their owne infallible being. Secondly, if wee take the Church for a company of men *professing the true Doctrine of Christ*, we answer that *take the men in themselves* so truly professing, and impossible it is but their faith should shew it selfe in the fruits thereof, for the Kingdome of Christ is in the heart like leaven which will manifest it selfe in the whole lump, and so we can in all even the worst ages of the Church, shew some who have witnessed the truth against that deluge of ignorance, error and idolatry, which had invaded the world, like gray haire here and there mingled on a blacke head; as if you single out fire from the ashes, it will bee seene by its owne evidence, though it may be so raked up that it is not observed. But then if we speake of these men *in aggregato*, as concurring to make up a distinct externall Body, or Church, so wee say that the Professors of the truth may be so few, and they persecuted, traduced, suppressed, cried downe, driven into the wildernesse, without any apparant, separated conspicuousnesse, and government of its owne (as in the time of *Constantinus* the Emperour the publike professors of the Divinity

Divinity of Christs Person, against the damnable heresie of the Arrians were used) as that in this sense wee may justly deny the Church to have beene *alwayes visible*, that is, The few true Professors of Christ in Power and Purity to have had a free, open, uncontroled, distinct ecclesiasticall body of their owne, notoriously and *in conspectu hominum* different from that tyrannicall and pompous hierarchie under which they suffered: for though Christ rule, yet it is *in the midst of his enemies*, and the enemies may be so many, and Christs subjects in whom he rules so few, that the corne may bee invisible for the abundance of weeds amongst which it growes, though in it selfe very apt to be seene.

And this giveth a full answer to that Question, where *Our Church was* before the late Reformation began by *Luther*: for that Reformation did not *new-make* the Church, but *purge it*. And that it stood in need of purging, the Papists themselves were faine to confesse, and declare to the world in their Councell of Trent. Onely herein is the difference. The Councell pretended a Reformation *in points of Discipline and manners*, and wee made a Reformation *in points of Doctrine* too. When Christ purged the Temple of buyers and sellers, it was the same Temple after, which before. When a man separateth the wheat from the chaffe, it is the same corne which before. In these corrupter ages than the pure Professour of Christ, who denied not his faith did dwell where Satan had his seate. The members of Christ were amongst the Rulers of Antichrist. Wee are not another Church newly started up, but the same which before from the Apostles times held the common and necessary grounds of Faith and Salvation, which grounds being in latter ages perverted and overturned by Antichristianisme, have beene by valiant Champions for the faith of CHRIST therefrom vindicated, who have onely proved the Lords Vine, and picked out the stones, and driven

*Ut sub Anti-
christi sacerdo-
ibus Christi po-
pulus non exci-
deret. Hilar.*

VERSE 2.

Revel. 14. 16.
Esa. 31. 4.
Iud. v. 24.

1 Thes. 4. 3.

Phil. 2. 13.

Heb. 8. 12.
Hos. 14. 4.
Hos. 11. 9.
Mel. 3. 6.
Esa. 54. 9, 10.

driven out the Bores out of his Vineyard, but have not made either one or other new.

Now this point that Christ ruleth in the midst of his enemies is ground of great confidence in his Church, in as much as shee subsisteth not upon any corruptible strength of her owne, but upon the Promise, Decree, Oath, Power and Love of God, things invincible by all the powers of darkenesse. Let the enemies rage never so much, they cannot dis-throne Christ, nor extinguish his Gospell, for it is an *Everlasting Gospell*. It is but as the *comming forth of a shepheard against a Lion*, as the Prophet compareth it. For either Christ is unable to protect his People, and that is against Saint *Iude*, *Hee is able to keepe you from falling, and to present you faultlesse, &c.* Or else hee is unwilling, and that is against Saint *Paul*, *This is the Will of God, even your sanctification*; Or else both his Power and his Will are suspended upon expectation of humane concurrence, or nullified and disappointed by us, and that is against the influence of his Grace, which giveth us *both the will and the deed*, against the mercy of his gracious promise: *I will bee mercifull to their unrighteousnesse, and their sinnes and their iniquities will I remember no more. I will heale their back-slidings, I will save them freely*: against the immutability of his Covenant and holy Nature, *I am God and not Man, I change not, therefore the sonnes of Iacob are not destroyed*.

Now besides this generall observation, the words afford some particular notes which I will but briefly touch. As first, That Christs Kingdome in this world is *Regnum Crucis*, a Kingdome betet with enemies, of all other the most hated and opposed. They that submit unto it, must resolve to bee herein conformable to their head; a Crosse was his Throne, and Thornes were his Crowne, and every one which will live godly must suffer persecution, and through many afflictions enter into his Masters Kingdome. *Quod erat Christus, erimus Christi*

Christs kingdom hated in the world.

285

VERSE 2.

Christiani. No marvell if the world hate the Church of Christ, for it hated him first. In his Word he is resisted, disobeyed, belied, and if it were possible, silenced and corrupted; in his Officers mocked and misused, in his subjects persecuted and reviled, in his Spirit thrust away and grieved; in his Worship neglected and polluted; in all his waies slandered and blasphemed.

The reasons of which strange entertainment of the Kingdome of Christ are, first, because it is a *New Kingdome*, which enters into the world by way of challenge and dispossession of former lords, and therefore no wonder if it finde opposition. Secondly, it is an *invisible*, unconspicuous, unattended, desolate, and in appearance ignoble kingdome. It beganne in the forme of a servant, in the ignominie of a Crosse, none of the Princes of this world, none of the Learned of this world to countenance or helpe set it up, but amongst them all, esteemed as an offensive and foolish thing. Thirdly, it is an *Universall Kingdome*, *Nec parem patitur nec superiorem*, Christ will admit of no Consorts or Corrivals in his Government. Body, and Soule, and Spirit, he will have wholly and throughout unto himselfe. And this amongst others is given for the reason, why, when *Tiberius* proposed Christ unto the Romane Senate with the priviledge of his owne suffrage, to bee worshipped, they rejected him, because hee would bee a God alone. If hee would exempt some of the earthly members from his subjection, let lust have the eye, or folly the eare, or violence the hand, or covetousnesse the heart, or any other evill affection share with him, he would be the easier tolerated, but when hee will bee absolute, and nothing must remaine in our hearts but as his vassall, to bee spoiled, subdued, condemned, and crucified by him, if the whole state of sinne must be ruined, and the body destroyed, no wonder if the world cannot away with him. Fourthly, which is the Summe of all, It is a *Heavenly Kingdome*,
a Spi-

Iohn 7. 48.

1 Cor. 1. 21, 22.

1 Cor. 6. 20.

1 Thes. 5. 23.

Laurent. de La
Bar. in Tertull.
Apolog. cap. 5.

VERSE 2.

Revel. 2. 13.

2. 9.

* Esai. 29. 13.

a Gal. 2. 4.

2 Per. 2. 1.

1 Tim. 4. 1, 2.

Col. 2. 23.

2 Tim. 3. 5, 6.

Occultæ obrep-
tiones, Aug. To. 4
de fid. & op. c. 5.τῇ χριστολογίᾳ τὰς
ἑαυτῶν κακονοίας
καὶ ὁ πῶς αὐτῶν
ἐπὶ τοῖς αἰνέ-
σις αὐτοῦ θάνα-
τον, Isid. Pelut.

lib. 1. Epist. 102.

Sub ipso Christi-
ani nominis titu-
lo fallit [inimic⁹]
incautos, &c.

Cyp. de unit. Eccle.

Usitatissimæ hæc

Hæreticorum

fraus de persona-

rum reverentiâ

& pretextu pie-

tatis sibi fidem

præstruere. vid.

Aug. Tom. 1. De

morib. Eccle. l. 1.

c. 1. & Epist. 120.

c. 37. De peccat.

meritis & Remiss

lib. 2. cap. 16.

& 43. c. 1. & 3.

b Revel. 17. 1.

a *Spiritual Kingdome, My Kingdome is not of this World,* and therefore no marvell if the Divels of Hell, and the Lusts of the flesh doe set themselves against Him.

Note secondly, even there where Christs Throne and Kingdome is set up hee hath enemies. *Sathan hath his seate even where Christ dwelleth.* Men may say they are Jewes, and are not, but of the Synagogue of Satan, and men may say they are Christians, and are not, but of the kingdome of Satan too. A wenne in the body seemeth to belong unto the integrity of the whole, when indeed it is an enemy and theefe therein. Ivie about a tree seemeth to embrace it with much affection, when indeede it doth but kill and choake it. Men may take upon them the profession of Christians, and like a wenne be skinned over with the same out-side which the true members have, may pretend much submission, worship, and ceremony unto him, and yet (such is the hellish hypocrisie of the heart) the same men may haply inwardly swell and ranckle against the power of his Truth and Spirit. * *This people, saith the Lord, draw neere mee with their mouth, and honour mee with their lips, but have removed their heart farre from me, and their feare towards mee is taught by the precepts of men.* a In the Apostles times there were false brethren, and false teachers, who crept in, to spie out and betray the liberty of the Church, and privily to bring in damnable heresies, and to speake lies in hypocrisie, that is, under the pretext of devotion, and carnall humilicy, to corrupt the Doctrine of Christ, and under a forme of Godlinesse to deny the Power thereof. Therefore b *Antichrist is called a Whore*, because hee should seduce the Christian world with much expression of love, and creepe peaceably and by flatteries into the Kingdome of Christ: of these severall enemies of Christ, under the profession of his Name and Worship, some are Christians but not in purity, as heretikes; some not

not in unity, as Schismatikes; some not in sincerity, as Hypocrites; some not so much as in externall conformity, as evill workers: The Heretike corrupteth Christ, the Schismatike divideth him, the Hypocrite mocketh him, the prophane person dishonoreth him, and all deny him.

Let us then learne to looke unto our hearts, for wee may ^c flatter Christ, when wee doe not love him; wee ^d may inquire and seeke early after him, and yet have no desire to finde him; wee may come unto his Schoole as untoward children, not for love of his Doctrine, but for feare of his Rod; we may call him Husband, and yet be wedded to our owne lusts; wee may bee baptised in his Name, so was ^e *Simon Magnus*; we may preach him, so did the ^f false brethren; we may flocke after him, so ^g did the multitude who followed him not for his Words or miracles, but for the Loaves; we may bow unto him, ^h so did his Crucifiers; wee may call upon his Name, ⁱ so did the Hypocrites that said, *Lord, Lord*, and yet did not enter into the Kingdome of Heaven; we may confesse and beleve him, ^k so doe the very Divels in Hell; wee may give him our lips, our eyes, our tongues, our knees, our hands, and yet still our kingdome, our throne, our hearts may bee Sathans. And all this is to make him but a mocke-king as the Jewes did, when indeede we crucifie him.

Note thirdly, Christs Word and Spirit are stronger than all adverse opposition. This is his Glory that his Kingdome commeth in unto him *by way of Conquest*, as Canaan unto Israel. Therefore at the very first erecting of his Kingdome, when, in all presumption, it might most easily have beene crushed, he suffer'd his enemies to vent their utmost malice, and to glut themselves with the blood of his People, that so it might appeare, that though they did fight against him, they ^l could not prevaile against him, but that his Counsell should still stand and flourish, and should consume, and breake in pieces

all

^c Psal. 78. 36, 37.
^d *Nihil laborant nisi non invenire quod querunt.*
Aug. de Gen. con.
Manich. l. 2. c. 2.

^e Act. 8. 13.
^f Mat. 7. 22.
^g Phil. 1. 16.
^h Iohn 6. 26.
ⁱ Mat. 27. 29.
^j Mat. 7. 21.

^k Luk. 8. 28.
Iam. 2. 19.

^l Esai. 8. 7, 10.
Dan. 2. 44.
Dan. 7. 25, 26.
Zech. 12. 3, 4.
Esai. 31. 8.

VERSE 2.

all the kingdomes which set themselves against it: that they all should be affraid of the Ensigne of the Gospell, and should flie from it.

This jealousie of God for his Church may bee seene, in frustrating the attempts, and pulling off the wheelles on which the projects which are cast against his Church doe move, as hee dealt with *Pharaoh*. Hee can dissolve the confederacies, shatter the counsels, cast a spirit of treachery, unfaithfulnesse, and mutinous affections into the hearts of his enemies, as he did into the *Midianites*, and into the children of *Ammon Moab* and *Edom*, when they gathered together against his people. He can infatuate their counsels, and make them the contrivers and artificers of their owne ruine, as wee see in the consultation of *Rehoboam* with his young men, and of *Ieroboam* in his idolatrous policy, and of *Haman* in his gallows. He can defeat their expectations, and disannull their decrees, and make his owne Counsell alone to stand.

But when all this is done, this is onely to rule in spight of his enemies. But besides this, his Kingdome fetcheth his enemies under, and in some sort ruleth over their consciences, and striketh them to the ground; maketh the Devils in hell, the stoutest of all sinners to tremble, breaketh the Rockes asunder, affrighteth, judgeth, sealeth, hardeneth, thresheth, revengeth the pride of men, and maketh them before-hand to taste the bitternesse of that damnation, which waketh over them, and commeth swiftly against them.

Let us take heed then of being Christs enemies, in opposing the power and progresse of his word, the evidence and puruy of his Spirit in the lives of men. It is but to make a combination to pull the Sunne out of Heaven; or for a wave to contend with a rocke; for as the ruines of a house are broken on the things upon which they fall: so are the enemies of Christ, which gather together against his Church, and fall upon the rocke, at length ruined by their

Judg. 17. 22.

2 Chr. 20. 22, 23

Esa. 19. 9.

29. 14.

Mic. 4. 11, 12.

Esa. 37. 33, 34.

Psal. 33. 10, 11.

Ier. 13. 29.

2 Cor. 10. 6.

Luk. 20. 18.

their owne malice. *Sampsons* foxes were themselves burnt amongst the corne which they fired. The land brought forth corne the next yeere againe (and it may bee more plentifully by reason of that fire) but the foxes never came up any more. Even so can the Lord deale with those enemies which waste and depopulate his Church, make them the Authors of their owne utter confusion, and bring forth his Church with shouting, and with double graces.

Who then is the man that desireth tranquility of life, and security against all evill? Let him become a subject in this conquering Kingdome, and cast himselfe under the Banner and Protection of Christ, and hee cannot miscarry. *Hee that walketh uprightly, walketh surely. The Name of the Lord is a strong Tower, the righteous flieeth unto it and is safe. The Lord is a Summe and a shield, a Fountaine of all good.* Grace and Glory will hee give, and no good thing will hee withhold from them that walke uprightly: and a protection against all evill; *I will not be affraid of ten thousand of men,* saith the Prophet *David, that compasse me about.* When there is no light, nor issue, nor in nature possibility of escape, he can open a doore of deliverance, to relieve his Church. As a man in the kings high-way is under the kings protection; so in Christs way we are under his protection. Let us then never repine at the miscarriages of the world, nor murmur against the wise proceedings of God in the severall dispensation towards his Church on Earth: when hee punisheth, he doth it in measure, lesse than our sinnes deserved; and when we search and try our wayes, and returne unto him, hee knoweth how to worke his owne glory in our deliverance. Those stones which are appointed for a glorious building are first under the saw, and the hammer to bee hewed and squared; and those Christians in whom the Lord will take most delight, hee usually thereunto fitteth by trials and extremities. He that is

VERSE 2.

Hab. 3. 16.

Mic. 5. 5.

Iohn 16. 33.

Mat. 10. 34.

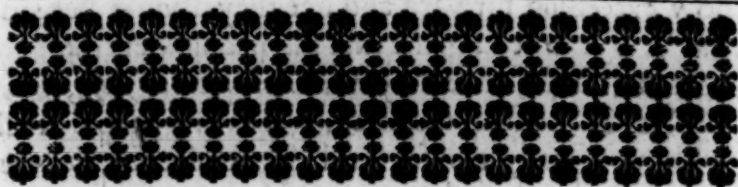
Eph. 2. 17.

Esa. 32. 17.

brought to tremble in himselfe, may with most confidence expect to rejoyce in God.

Note fourthly, this is the honor of Christs Kingdome to be a peaceable, quiet, and secure Kingdome, not only after the victory, but in the midst of enemies. *This man*, saith the Prophet of Christ, *shall bee the peace, when the Assyrian, the enemy, is in the Land.* Wee have peace in him, when wee have tribulation in the world. Christ saith of himselfe, *I came not to send peace but a sword*; and yet the Apostle saith, *That hee came, and preached peace to those which were as farre off, and to them which were neer.* How shall these things bee reconcil'd? Surely as a man may say of a Rocke, Nothing more quiet, because it is never stirred, and yet nothing more unquiet, because it is ever assaulted: so we may say of the Church. Nothing more peaceable, because it is established upon a Rocke, and yet nothing more unpeaceable, because that Rocke is in the midst of Seas, Windes, Enemies, Persecutions. But yet still the Prophets conclusion is certaine; *The worke of righteousnesse is peace, and the effect of righteousnesse, quietnesse and assurance for ever.*

VERSE 3.



VERSE 3.

*Thy people shall be willing in the
day of thy Power, in the Beauties of
Holinesse from the womb of the mor-
ning: thou hast the dew of thy youth.*



He Prophet before shewed the Raigne of Christ over his enemies; hee now speaketh of his Raigne over his people, and describeth what manner of subjects or souldiers Christ should have. I will not trouble you with varietie of Expositions (occasioned by the many Metaphors, and different Translations) but give in a few words, those which I conceive to bee most literall and pertinent to the place.

Thy People] that is, those whom thou dost receive from thy Father, and, by setting up the Standard and Ensigne of the Gospell, gather to thy selfe. *Shall bee willing*] the word is *willingnesse*, that is a people of *great Willingnesse and Devotion*, or (as the Originall word is elsewhere used, *Psalme*, 119. 108.) shall bee *Free will offerings* unto thee. The Abstract being put

VERSE 3.

Eph. 4. 8.

Eph. 5. 8.

for the Concrete, and the plurall for the singular, notes how exceeding forward and free they should bee; as the L O R D to signifie that his people were most rebellious, saith, that they were *Rebellion it selfe*, *Ezekiell*, 2. 8. So then the meaning is, Thy people shall, with most ready and forward cheerefulnesse, devote, consecrate, and render up themselves to thy government as a reasonable sacrifice, shall bee of a most liberall, free, noble, and unconstrained Spirit in thy Service, they shall bee *Voluntaries* in the Warres of thy Kingdome. *In the Day of thy Power, or Of thine Armies*] by these words wee may understand two things, both of them ayming at the same generall Sense: First, so as that [*Armies*] shall bee the same with [*Thy People*] before: In the Day when thou shalt assemble thy Souldiers together, when thou shalt set up thine Ensignes for them to seeke unto, that is, when thou shalt cause the Preaching of thy Gospell to sound like a Trumpet, that men may prepare themselves in Armies to fight thy Battells, then shall all thy People with great devotion and willingnesse gather themselves together under thy Colours, and freely devote themselves to thy Military service. Secondly, so, as that by *Power* or *Armies*, may bee meant the *Meanes* whereby this free and willing Devotion in C H R I S T S People is wrought: that is, When thou shalt send forth the Rod of thy strength; When thou shalt commaund thy Apostles and Ministers to goe soorth and fight against the kingdomes of Sinne and Sathan; When thou shalt in the dispensation of thine Ordinances reveale thy Power and Spirituall strength unto their Consciences, then shall they most willingly relinquish their former service, and wholly devote themselves unto thee, to fight under thy Banners, and to take thy part against all thine enemies.

Beauty of Holinesse.

293

VERSE 3.

In the Beauties of Holinesse] This likewise wee may severally understand. Either, *In thy Holy Church*. Which may well so bee called with allusion to the Temple at Hierusalem, which is called *The Beauty of Holinesse*, *Psal.* 29.2. and a *Holy and Beautifull house*, *Esa.* 64.11. and a *glorious high throne*, *Ier.* 17.12. And hither did the tribes resort *in troopes*, as it were *in armies*, to present their free will offerings, and celebrate the other services of the Lord. Or else we may understand it *Causally*, thus; *In the Day of thy Power*, that is, when thou shalt reveale thy strength and Spirit, and in *the Beauties of Holinesse*, that is, when thou shalt reveale how exceeding beautifull, and full of lovelinesse thy Holy wayes and services are, then shall thy people bee perswaded with all free and willing devotion of heart to undertake them. Or lastly, thus; as the Priests who offered sacrifices to the Lord were cloathed with *Holy and Beautifull garments*; *Exod.* 28.2.40. or as those who in admiration of some noble Prince voluntarily follow the service of his warres, doe set themselves forth in the most complete furniture and richest attire as is fit to give notice of the noblenesse of their mindes: (for * beautifull armor was wont to be esteemed the honour of an army.) So they who willingly devote themselves unto Christ, to bee Souldiers and Sacrifices unto him, are not onely armed with strength, but adorned with such inward graces, as make them *Beautifull as Tirza*, *comely as Ierusalem*, *faire as the Moone*, *cleere as the Sunne*, and *terrible as an army with banners*. All which three Explications meete in one generall, which is principally intended, that Holinesse hath all beauties in it, and is that only which maketh a man lovely in the Eyes of Christ.

From the wombe of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth] There is a middle point after those words, [*The Wombe of the Morning.*] which may seeme to disjoyne the clauses, and make those words referre wholly to

Psal. 84.7.

* *Iudg.* 5.30.
Curtius, lib. 3.
& 3. *vid.* *Brif-
son. de Reg.*
Persarum, lib. 3.
pag. 323.—&
Tho. Demsteri.
ad Rosin. Antiq.
paralipom. lib.
10. cap. 1. Cant.
6.4.10.

VERSE 3.

Pfal. 45. 13, 14,
15.

Mic. 5. 7.
Revel. 22. 16.
Luk 2. 78.
Mal. 4. 2.
Rom. 13. 12.
1 Iohn 2. 8.

the preceding. In which relation, there might be a double sense conceived in them. Either thus, *In the Beauties of Holinesse*, or in Holinesse very beautifull more than the *Aurora* or *wombe of the morning*, when shee is ready to bring forth the Sunne. And then it is a notable metaphor to expresse the Glorious beauty of Gods wayes. Or thus, thy people shall bee a willing people from the very *wombe of the Morning*; that is, from the very first forming of Christ in them, and shining forth upon them, they shall rise out of their former nakednesse and security, and shall adorne themselves with the beautifull graces of Christs Spirit, as with cloathing of wrought gold, and rayment of needle-worke, and shall with gladnesse and rejoycing, with much devotion and willingnesse of heart be brought unto the King, and present themselves before him as Voluntaries in his Service. But because the learned conceive that the middle point is onely a distinction for convenient reading, not a disjunction of the sense, I shall therefore rest in a more received exposition. Thy Children shall be borne in great abundance unto thee, by the seed of thy Word, in the wombe of the Church, as soone as the morning, or sunne of Righteousnesse shall shine forth upon it. As the Dew is borne out of the coole morning Aire as out of a wombe, distilling downe in innumerable drops upon the Earth; so thine Elect shall bee borne unto thee, by the Preaching of thy Word and first approach of thy Heavenly light, in innumerable armies. And this explication is very suteable to the harmonic of Holy Scripture, which useth the same metaphors to the same purpose in other places. The *Remnant of Iacob*, saith the Prophet, *shall bee in the midst of many people as a dew from the Lord*. And Christ is called the *Bright-morning-starre*, and the *Day-spring*, and the *Sunne of Righteousnesse*, and the time of the Gospel is called the *time of Day*, or the approach of Day. So that, *from the wombe of the morning*, is from the heavenly light

The faithfull are Christs own people.

295

VERSE 3.

light of the Gospell, which is the wing or beame whereby the Sunne of Righteousnesse revealeth himselfe, and breaketh out upon the world, as the rising Sunne, which rejoyceth like a Giant to runne his race, shall the succession increase, and armies of the Church of God bee continually supplied.

The words thus unfolded doe containe in them a lively *Character of the Subjects in Christs spirituall Kingdome*. Described first by their Relation to him, and his propriety to them, *Thy People*. Secondly, by their present condition, intimated in the word, *Willing*, or *Voluntaries*, and (if wee take [*Thy People*] and [*Armies*] for Synonymous termes. The one notifying the Order and quality of the other) expressed in the Text, and that is, to bee *military men*. Thirdly, by their through and universall resignation, subjection, and devotednesse unto him. For when he conquereth by his Word, his conquest is wrought upon the wils and affections of men. *Victorque volentes Per populos dat jura. Thy people shall bee willing*. The ground of which willingnesse is further added, (for so chiefly I understand those words) *The Day of thy Power*. So that the willingnesse of Christs subjects is effected by the Power of his Grace and Spirit in the revelation of the Gospell. Fourthly, By their honourable attire, and military robes, in which they appeare before him, and attend upon him, *In Beauties of Holinesse*, or in the various and manifold graces of Christ as in a garment of diverse colours. Fifthly, and lastly, by their age, multitudes, and manner of their birth; They are the *Dew of the morning*, as many as the small drops of dew, and they are borne to him out of the *Wombe of the morning*, as Dew is generated, not on the earth, but in the aire, by a *Heavenly calling*, and by the shining of the morning-star, and day-spring upon their consciences. Ye are all the *children of light*, saith the Apostle, and the *children of the day*; wee are not of the night nor of darknesse, 1 *Thess.* 5. 5.

VERSE 3.

^a Matth. 1. 21.
Ioh. 10. 3.
Can. 2. 16. 7. 10.

^b Col. 1. 16, 17.
Rom. 9. 5.
^c Heb. 1. 2, 3.
2. 7, 8.

^d Esai. 63. 19.

Act. 2. 36.
Ephes. 1. 22.
Psal. 2. 8.
Esai. 8. 18.
Ioh. 17. 6.

I said before, that I approve not the mincing and crumbling of Holy Scriptures. Yet in these parts of them, which are written for models and summaries of Christian Doctrine, I suppose there may bee weight in every word, as in a rich Jewell there is worth in every sparkle. Here then first wee may take notice of Christs Propriety to his people. [*Thy people*] All the Ele& and Eleevers doe ^a belong unto Christ. They are *His people*. They are his *Ownne sheepe*. There is a mutuall and reciprocall propriety between him and them. *I am my beloveds, and my beloved is mine*. His desire is towards me. *His*, I say, not as hee is God onely, by a right of inseparable dominion as wee are his creatures. For all things were ^b created by him and *for him*. And he is *over all*, God blessed for ever. Nor his onely as he is the ^c first-borne and the heire of all things. In which respect hee is Lord of the Angels, and God hath set him *over all the workes of his hands*. But as he is the mediator and head in his Church. In which respect the faithfull are his by a more peculiar propriety. ^d *Wee are thine, thou never barest rule over them, they were not called by thy name*. The Devils are his *Vassals*. The wicked of the world his *prisoners*. The faithfull onely are his *subje&ts and followers*. His Jewels, his Friends, his Brethren, his Sonnes, his Members, his Spouse. His, by all the relations of intimatenesse that can be named.

Now this Propriety Christ hath unto us upon severall grounds. First, by Constitution and Donation from his Father. God hath *made him Lord and Christ*. Hec hath *put all things* under his feete, and hath *given him to bee Head* over all things to the Church. Aske of me and I *will give thee* the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession. Behold, I and the Children whom *thou hast given mee*. Thine they were, and *thou gavest them to mee*. For as in regard of Gods Justice we were *bought by Christ in our redemption*,

VERSE 3.

Ezek. 16. 8.

Rom. 6. 3, 5.

Gal. 3. 27.

Act. 19. 5.

^a Socrat. Hist.

lib. 7. cap. 17.

Laurent. de la

Bar. in Tertull.

lib. de Coron.

milit. cap. 1.

Ambros. Tom. 4.

lib. de iis qui

mysteriis initi-

antur, cap. 7.

^b Tertull. de Co-

rona milit. cap. 3.

^c de spectacu-

lis, cap. 4. Am-

bros. To. 4. de Sa-

cram. lib. 1. c. 2.

Basil Mag. To. 2.

de Spir. Sancto.

cap. 11. vid.

Brisson. Com-

ment. in lib. Do-

minico, &c.

pag. 137.

^c 1 Pet. 3. 21.^d Eph. 2. 2.

covenant with thee, and thou becamest mine, Therefore in our Baptisme wee are said to bee *Baptized into Christ*, and to *put on Christ*, and to bee *Baptized into his Name*, that is, wholly to consecrate and devote our selves to him as the servants of his family. Therefore they which were Baptized in the ancient ^a Church were wont to put on *white rayment*, as it were the Livery and Badge of Christ, a Testimony of that purity and Service which therein they vowed unto him. And therefore it is that wee still retain the ancient forme of *vow, promise, or profession in Baptisme*, which ^b was to *renounce the Divell, and all his workes, the world, with the pompe, luxury and pleasures thereof*. And this is done in a most solemnne and deliberate manner by way of answer to the question and demand of Christ. For which purpose Saint Peter calleth Baptisme ^c *quoniam dicitur a qua dicitur inquitur*. The Answer, or the Interrogative triall of a good conscience towards God. Hee that conformeth himselfe to the fashions, and setteth his heart upon the favours, preferment, empty applause, and admiration of the World, that liveth ^d *κατὰ δαιμόνα*, according to the rules and courses and sinfull maximes of worldly men, in such indifferency, compliancy and connivence as may flatter others and delude himselfe; he that is freely and customarily over-rul'd by the temptations of Satan, that yeeldeth to loosenesse of heart, to vanity of thoughts, lust of eye, pride of life, luxury, intemperance, impurity of minde or body, or any other earthly and inordinate affection, is little better in the sight of God than a perjured, and a runnagate person, flinging off from that service unto which hee had bound himselfe by a solemnne vow, and robbing Christ of that interest in him which by a mutuall stipulation was agreed upon.

Lastly, by the vertue of our Communion with him, and participation of his grace and fulnesse. Al that we are in regard of Spirit and life is from him, ^e *Wee are nothing of*

^e 2 Cor. 13. 11.

The faithfull are Christs own people.

299

of our selves. And wee ^f can doe nothing of our selves. All that wee are is from the grace of Christ. ^s By the grace of God I am what I am. And all that we doe is from the grace of Christ, ^h I am able to do all things through Christ that strengthneth mee. As when wee doe evill, ⁱ it is not wee our selves, but sinne that dwelleth in us : So when we doe good, it is ^k not wee, but Christ that liveth in us. So that in all respects wee are not our owne, but his that died for us.

Now this being a point of so great consequence, needfull it is that we labor therein to try and secure our selves that we belong unto Christ. For which purpose wee must note that a man may belong unto Christ two manner of wayes : First, by a meere *Externall profession*. So all in the visible Church that call themselves Christians, are his, and his Word and Oracles theirs. In which respect they have many priviledges, (as the Apostle sheweth of the Jewes.) Yet notwithstanding such men continuing unreformed in their inner man, are neerer unto cursing than others, and subject unto a sorer condemnation, for despising Christ in his Word, and Spirit, with whom in their Baptisme they made so solemne a Covenant. For God will not suffer his Gospell to be cast away, but will cause it to prosper unto some end or other, either to save those that beleeve; or to cumulate the damnation of those that disobey it. He will bee more carefull to cleanse his Garner, and to purge his Floore, than of other empty and barren places. A weed in the garden is in more danger of rooting out than in the open field. Such belong unto Christ, no other wise than Ivy to the tree unto which it externally adheres. Secondly, a man may belong unto Christ by *Implantation into his Body* : Which is done by *faith*. But here wee are to note that as some branches in a Tree have a more faint and unprofitable fellowship with the roote than others, as having no further strength than to furnish themselves with leaves, but not

VERSE 3.

^f Iohn 15. 5.

^s I Cor. 15. 10.

^h Phil. 4. 13.

ⁱ Rom. 7. 20.

^k Gal. 2. 20.

Esai. 29. 13.

Esai. 55. 10, 11.

Luke 3. 17.

VERSE 3.

Iam. 2. 26.

1 Tim. 1. 5.

Ioh. 15. 2.

not with fruit: so, according unto the severall vertues or kindes of faith, may the degrees of men ingrafture into Christ bee judged of. There is a dead, unoperative faith, which like *Adam* after his fall hath the nakednesse thereof covered onely with leaves, with meere formall and hypocriticall conformities. And there is an unfained, lively and effectuall faith; which is availeble to those purposes for which faith was appointed, namely to justify the person, to purifie the heart, to quench temptations, to carry a man with wisdom and an unblameable conversation through this present world, to worke by love, to grow and make a man abound in the service of the Lord. And this distinction our Saviour giveth us, *That there are some branches in him which beare not fruit, and those he taketh way: And others which beare fruit, and those hee purgeth that they may bring forth more. Those onely are the branches, which hee desires to owne.*

And thus to belong unto Christ is that onely which maketh us *λαοὶ ἀποκτηθέντες* and *οἱ πεποιημένοι*, *A purchased, a peculiar people unto him.* And there are severall wayes of evidencing it. I will onely name two or three, and most in the Text. First, wee must know that Christ is a *Morning, starre, a Sunne of Righteousnesse*, and so ever comes to the soule *With selfe-evidencing properties.* Vnto him belongeth that royall prerogative, to write *Teste Meipso* in the harts of men, to be himselve the witnesse to his owne Acts, purchases and covenants. Therefore his Spirit came in tongues of fire, and in a mighty winde, all which have severall wayes of manifesting themselves, and stand not in need of any borrowed or forraigne confirmations. If Christ then bee in the heart hee will discover himselve. His Spirit is the Originall of Grace and strength, as concupiscence is of sinne. It is a seed in the heart which will spring up and shew it selfe. And therefore as lust doth take the first advantage of the faint

The faithful are Christs own people.

301

VERSE 3.

faint and imperfect stirrings of the reasonable soule in little infants, to evidence it selfe in pride, folly, stubbornesse, and other childish sinnes : So the Spirit of Grace in the heart cannot lie dead, but will worke, and move, and as a Spirit of burning by the light, heate, purging, comforting, inflaming combating vertue which is in it, make the soule which was barren, and setled on the lees, and unacquainted with any such motions before, stand amazed at its owne alteration, and say with *Rebekah*, *If it be so, why am I thus?* Externals may bee imitated by Art; but no man can paint the soule or the life, or the sense and motion of creature. Now Christ and his Spirit are the internall formes, and active principles in a Christian man, *Christ liveth in us*, when Christ who is *our Life* shall appeare, &c. Therefore impossible it is that any hypocrite should counterfeite, and by consequence obscure those intimate and vitall workings of his Grace in the soule; whereby hee evidenceth himselfe thereunto. It is true, a man that feareth the Lord may walke in darkness, and be in such discomforts as hee shall see no light; and yet even in that condition Christ doth not want properties to evidence himselfe in tendernes of conscience, feare of sinne, striving of Spirit with God, closenesse of heart and constant recourse to him in his Word, and the like; onely the soule is shut up and overcrowded that it cannot discern him. The *Spirit* of Christ is a *Seale*, a *Witnesse*, an earnest, an hansell, a *first Fruite* of that fulnesse which is promised hereafter. It is Christs owne Spirit, and therefore fashioneth the hearts of those in whom it is unto his heavenly Image, to long for more comprehension of him, for more conformity unto him, for more intimacy and communion with him, for more grace, wisdom, and strength from him; it turneth the bent and course of the soule from that earthly and sensuall end unto which it wrought before, as a good branch having beene ingrafted into a wilde stocke converteth

Eph. 1. 14.
1 Iohn 4. 3.

VERSE 3.

verteth the sap of a Crab into pleasant fruit.

Againe, if a man be one of Christs people, then there hath a *day of power* passed over him, the sword of the Spirit hath entred into him, hee hath beene conquered by the rod of Christs strength, he hath felt *Iohns* axe laid to the root of his conscience, and hath beene perswaded by the terrour of the Lord; for the comming of Christ is with shaking: the conscience hath felt a mighty operation in the Word, though to other men it hath passed over like emptie breath; for the Word *worketh effectually in those that beleeve*, and bringeth about the purposes for which it was sent. To those that are called it is *the power of God*, 1 Cor. 1.22.

Ezek. 16.9, 14.

Esa. 61.3.

Againe, where Christ comes, hee comes with *Beautie and Holinesse*, those who lay in their bloud and pollutions before bare and naked, are made exceeding beautifull and renowned for their beautie, *perfect through the comelines which he puts upon them*. He comes unto the soule with beautie and pretious oile, and garments of praise, that is, with comfort, joy, peace, healing, to present the Church a holy Church without spot or wrinkle to his Father.

Iohn 7.38.
15.2.

Cant. 4.2.

Esa. 32.15.

Rom. 7.4.

Lastly, where Christ commeth, he commeth with a *wombe of the morning*, with much light to acquaint the soule with his truth and promises; and with much fruitfulness, making the heart, which was barren before, to flow with rivers of living water, to bring forth fruit more and more, and to abound in the workes of the Lord. These are the particular evidences of our belonging to Christ in the Text, and by these we must examine our selves. Doe I finde in my soule the new name of the Lord Jesus written, that I am not onely in title, but in truth a Christian? Doe I finde the secret nature and figure of Christ fashioned in mee, swaying mine heart to the love and obedience of his holy wayes? Doe I heare the voice, and feele the hand and iudicature of his blessed Spirit within me, leading me in a new course, ordering

ring mine inner man, sentencing and crucifying mine earthly members? Am I a serious and earnest enemy to my originall lusts, and closest corruptions? Doe I feele the workings and kindlings of them in mine heart with much paine and mourning, with much humiliation for them, and deprecation against them? Is Christ my center? Doe I finde in mine heart a willingnesse to bee with him, as well here in his word, wayes, promises, directions, comforts, yea, in his reproches and persecutions, as hereafter in his glory? Is it the greatest businesse of my life to make my selfe more like him, to walke as hee also walked, to be as he was in this world, to purifie my selfe even as hee is pure? Hath the terrour of his wrath perswaded mee, and shaken my conscience out of its carnall security, and made me looke about for a refuge from the wrath to come, and esteeme more beautifull than the morning brightnesse the feete of those who bring glad tidings of deliverance and peace? Hath his Gospell an effectuall seminall vertue within me to new forme my nature and life dayly unto his Heavenly Image? Is it an ingrafted word which mingleth with my conscience, and hideth it selfe in my heart, actuating, determining, moderating, and over-ruling it to its owne way? Am I cleansed from my filthinesse, carefull to keepe my selfe chaste, comely, beautifull, a fit Spouse for the fairest of ten thousand? Doe I rejoyce in his light, walking as a childe of light, living as an heire of light, going on like the Sunne unto the perfect day labouring to abound alwayes in the worke of the Lord? Then I may have good assurance that I belong unto Christ. And if so, that will be a seminary of much comfort to my soule.

For first, if we are Christs, then hee *careth for us*, for propriety is the ground of care. *Hee that is an hireling*, saith our Saviour, *and not the shepheard, whose owne the sheepe are not, seeth the Wolfe comming, and leaveth the sheepe, &c. Because hee is an hireling hee careth not for the sheepe.*

John 10. 12, 13, 14.

V E R S E 3

Ezek. 34. 11, 15.

Heb. 3. 5, 6.

Ezek. 16. 8, 9.

Ezek. 15. 5.

Psal. 80. 15.

Esa. 63. 8, 19.

Esa. 16. 13.

Ezek. 16. 8, 9.

Iohn 15. 2.

Tit. 2. 14.

Psal. 4. 3.

2 Tim. 2. 21.

sheepe. But I am the good Sheeheard, and know my sheepe, and am knowne of mine, because they are mine, therefore I am carefull of them. He watcheth over us, he searcheth and seeketh us out in our straglings, and feedeth us. This is the principall argument we have to beleeve, that God will looke upon us for good, notwithstanding our manifold provocations, because he is pleased to owne us, and to take us as his owne peculiar People. Though the Church be full of ruines, yet because it is his owne house, he will repaire it; though it be blacke aswell as comely, yet because it is his owne Spouse, hee will pity and cherish it; though it bring forth wilde grapes, and be indeed meet for no worke, yet because it is his owne Vine, planted by his owne right hand, and made strong for himselfe, hee will therefore bee carefull to fence and prune it. This is the onely argument wee have to prevaile with God in prayer, that in Christ wee call him *Father*, wee present our selves before him, as his *owne*, we make mention of no other Lord or Name over us, and therefore he cannot deny us the things which are good for us.

Secondly, if wee are Christs, then hee will certainly *purge us*, and make the members suteable to the Head. I sware unto thee, and entred into covenant with thee, saith the Lord, and *thou becamst mine*, and immediately it followes, *then washed I thee with water*, yea, I thoroughly washed away thy blood from thee. Every branch in mee that beareth fruit, *hee purgeth it*, that it may bring forth more fruit. He *purifieth to himselfe a peculiar people*: If we be his *peculiar people*, and set apart for himselfe (as the Prophet David speakes) hee will undoubtedly *purifie us*; that we may be honourable vessels, sanctified and meet for the Masters use, and prepared unto every good worke. Hee will furnish us with all such supplies of the Spirit of Grace, as the condition of that place in his body requires, in the which hee hath set us. Grace and Glory will he give, and no good thing will he withhold

hold from those who walke uprightly, our propriety to Christ giveth us right unto all good things: *All is yours, and you are Christs.*

Thirdly, if we are Christs, then he will *spare us*. This was the argument which the Priest was to use betweene the Porch and the Alter, *Spare thy people, O Lord*, and give not thine heritage to reproch. Then will the Lord be jealous for his Land, and *pity his people*. They *shall bee mine*, saith the Lord, in the day that I make up my jewels; and I will *spare them*, as a man *spareth his owne sonne* that serveth him. Of my servant, to whom I give wages for the merit of his worke, not out of love or grace, I expect a service proportionable to the pay hee receives: But in my childe I reward not the dignity of the worke, but onely the willingnesse, the loving and obedient disposition of the heart; and therefore I passe over those failings and weakenesses which discover themselves for want of skill or strength, and not of love, praising the endeavours, and pardoning the miscarriages. Thus doth the Lord deale with his children.

Fourthly, if wee be Christs he will *pray for us*, I pray not for the world, but *for them which thou hast given me, for thy are thine; and all mine are thine, and thine are mine, &c.* so that wee shall bee sure to have helpe in all times of need, because we know that the Father heareth his Sonne alwayes; and those things which in much feare, weakenesse, and ignorance we aske for our selves, if it bee according to Gods will, and by the dictate and mouth of the Spirit in our heart, Christ himselfe in his intercession demandeth for us the same things. *And this is the ground of that confidence which we have in him, that if we aske any thing according to his will hee heareth us, and we have the petitions that we desire of him*: For as the world hateth us, because it hateth him first; so the Father loveth and heareth us, because hee loveth and heareth him first.

Ioc. 12. 17, 18.

Exod. 32. 12.
Numb. 14. 13.
Esai. 64. 9.
Mal. 3. 17.

Ioh. 17. 9, 10.

Ioh. 11. 42.

I Ioh. 5. 14.

VERSE 3.

Ioh. 10. 3. 4.

Psal. 147. 19.
Ioh. 8. 17.

Psal. 119. 125.

Vers. 64.

Icr. 30. 10, 11.

Ezra 9. 13.

Qui trucidat
non considerat
quemadmodum
laniat, qui cu-
rat, considerat
quemadmodum
secat. Aug.

Fifthly, if wee be Christs, then hee *will teach us*, and commune with us, and reveale himselfe unto us, and lead us with his voice. He *callesth his owne sheep by name*, and *leadeth them*, and *putteth them forth*, and *goeth before them*. Because Israel was his owne people, therefore he shewed them his words. *The Law was theirs*, and *the Oracles theirs*, when hee entreth into covenant with a people, that they become his, then he writeth his Law in their hearts, and teacheth them. This is the Prophet *Dauids* argument, *I am thy servant, give me understanding*: Because I am thine in a speciall relation, therefore acquaint me with thee in an especiall manner. *The earth is full of thy mercy*, there is much of thy goodnesse revealed to all the nations of the world, even to those that are not called by thy name: but as for mee whom thou hast made thine owne by a neerer relation, let mee have experience of a greater mercy, *Teach mee thy Statutes*.

Sixthly, if we bee his, he will *Chastise us in mercy*, and not in fury, though hee leave us not altogether unpunished, yet he will punish us lesse than our iniquities deserve; he will not deale with us as with others: *Though I make a full end of all nations whither I have driven thee*, yet *I will not make a full end of thee*, but *I will correct thee in measure*. I will correct thee to cure, but not to ruine thee.

The second thing considered in the words, was the *Present condision of the people of Christ*, which was to be *military men*, to joine with the armies of Christ against all his enemies. As he was, so must wee be in this world; no sooner was Christ consecrated by his solemne Baptisme unto the worke of a Mediatour, but presently hee was assaulted by the Tempter: And no sooner doth any man give up his name to Christ, and breake loose from that hellish power under which hee was held, but presently *Pharaoh* and his hoasts, Satan and his confederates.

Christs people have a warre to fight.

309

VERSE 3.

rates pursue him with deadly fury, and powre out floods of malice and rage against him. Hell and Death are *at truce with wicked men*, there is a covenant and agreement betwixt them, Satan *holdeth his possession in peace*: but when a stronger than hee commeth upon, and overcome him, there is from that time implacable venome and hostility against such a soule; the malice, power, policie, stratagems, and machinations of Satan; the lusts and vanities, the pleasures, honours, profits, persecutions, frownes, flatteries, snares of the wicked world: the affections, desires, inclinations, deceites of our owne fleshy hearts, will ever ply the soule of a Christian, and force it to perpetuall combates.

Esa. 28. 15.

Luk. 11. 21.

There is in Satan an everlasting enmity against the Glory, Mercy, and Truth of God, against the power and mystery of the Gospell of Christ. This malice of his exerciseth it selfe against all those that have given themselves to Christ, whose Kingdome hee mightily labourerth to demolish: by his *power* persecuting it, by his *crafftinesse* and wily insinuations undermining it; by his vast knowledge and *experience* in palliating, altering, mixing, proportioning, and measuring his temptations and spirituall wickednesse in such manner, as that hee may subvert the Church of Christ, either in the *purity* thereof, by corrupting the *Dollrine* of Christ with *heresie*, and his *Worship* with *idolatrie* and *superstition*; or in the *unity* thereof, by pestering it with *schisme* and distraction; or in the *liberty* thereof, by *bondage* of Conscience, or in the *progresse* and *inlargement* thereof, endeavouring to blast and make fruitlesse the ministry of the Gospell. And this malice of Satan is wonderfully set on and encouraged both by the *corruption of our nature*, those armies of lusts and affections which swarme within us, entertaining, joyning force, and co-operating with all his suggestions; disheartning, reclaiming, and pulling backe the soule when it offers to make any opposition; and also by the

VERSE 3.

men, and materials of this evill world. By the examples, the threats, the interests, the power, the intimacie, the wit, the tongues, the hands, the exprobrations, the persecutions, the insinuations and seductions of wicked men. By the profits, the pleasures, the preferments, the acceptation, credit and applause of the world.

By all which meanes Satan most importunately pursueth one of these *two ends*, either to *subvert* the godly by drawing them away from Christ to apostacie, formalitie, hypocrisie, spirituall pride, and the like, or else to *Discomfort* them with diffidence, doubts, sight of sinne, opposition of the times, vexation of spirit, and the like afflictions. And these oppositions of Satan meet with a Christian in every respect or consideration, under which he may be conceiv'd: consider him in his *spirituall estate*, in his *severall parts*, in his *temporall relations*, in his *Actions or employments*; and in all these Satan is busie to overturne the Kingdome of Christ in him. In his *spirituall estate*, if he be a *weake Christian*, he assaulteth him with perpetuall doubts and feares touching his election, conversion, adoption, perseverance, Christian liberty, strength against corruptions, companies, temptations, persecutions, &c. if he be a *strong Christian*, he laboureth to draw him unto selfe-confidence, spirituall pride, contempt of the weake, neglect of further proficiencie, and the like. There is no *naturall part* or facultie which is not aimed at likewise by the malice of Satan, for Christ when hee comes, takes possession of the whole man, and therefore Satan sets himselfe against the whole man. Corporeall and *sensitive faculties* tempted either to *sinfull representations*, letting in and transmitting the provisions of lust unto the heart, by gazing and glutting themselves on the objects of the world: or to *sinfull executions*, finishing and letting out those lusts which have beene conceived in the heart. The *phantaste* tempted by Satanicall injections and immutations to be the forge of loose, vaine, unprofitable,

Christs people have a warre to fight.

311

VERSE 3.

unprofitable, and uncleane thoughts. The *understanding* to earthly wisdom, vanity, infidelity, prejudices, mispersuasions, fleshly reasonings, vaine speculations and curiosities, &c. The *will* to stiffenesse, resistance, dislike of Holy things, and pursuite of the world. The *conscience* to deadnesse, immobility, and a stupid benumbednesse, to slavish terrors and evidences of Hell, to superstitious bondage, to carnall security, to desperate conclusions. The *affections* to independence, distraction, excesse, precipitancie, &c. In *temporall conditions*, there is no estate of health, wealth, peace, honor, estimation, or the contraries unto these: no relation of husband, father, magistrate, subject, &c. unto which Satan hath not such futeable suggestions, as by the advantage of fleshly corruptions may take from them occasion to draw a man from God. Lastly, in regard of our *actions and employments*, whether they bee *Divine*, such as respect God, as acts of Piety, in reading, hearing, meditating, and studying his Word, in calling upon his Name, and the like, or such as respect *our selves*, as acts of temperance and sobriety, personall examinations, and more particular acquaintance with our owne hearts; or such as respect *others*, as acts of righteousness, charity, and edification. Or whether they bee actions *naturall*, such as are requisite to the preservation of our being, as sleepe and diet: or actions *civill*, in our *callings or recreations*, in all these Satan laboureth either to *pervert* us in the performance of them, or to *divert* us from it. There is then no condition, faculty, relation, or action of a Christian man, the which is not alwayes under the eye and envy of a most raging, wise, and industrious enemy. And therefore, great reason there is, that Christians should bee *Military men*, well instructed in the whole Armour of God, that they may bee able to stand against the wiles of the Divell, and to quench all his fiery darts. It is our calling to wrestle against principalities and powers, and

spirituall

VERSE 3.

spirituall wickednesses in high places, to resist the Devill, to strive against sinne, to mortifie earthly members, to destroy the body of sinne, to deny our selves, to contradict the reasonings of the flesh, to cheeke and controule the stirrings of concupiscence, to resist and subdue the desires of our evill hearts, to withstand and answer the assaults of Sathan, to out-face the scornes, and despise the flatteries of the present World, in all things to endure hardnesse as the souldiers of Jesus Christ. Our cause is righteous, our Captaine is wise and puissant, our Service honourable, our Victory certaine, our Reward massie and eternall, so that in all respects great encouragements we have to be voluntaries in such war, the issue whereof is our enemies perdition, our Masters honour, and our owne Salvation.

The third thing observed was the through and *universall Resignation* and devotednesse of Christs People unto him. Thy people shall be *willing*, or a people of *great devotion* in the day of thy Power. From whence I shall gather two observations; First, They that belong unto Christ as his people are most thoroughly and *willingly subject unto his government*, doe consecrate, resigne, and yeelde up their whole soules and bodies to serve in his warres against all his enemies. For the distinct understanding of which point, wee are to observe first, that *by nature* wee are *utterly unwilling* to bee subject unto Christ. The carnall minde is enmity against God, it is *not subject* to the Law of God, *neither indeed can bee*. For if Christ bee over us, the body of sinne must dye; it once crucified him, and hee will bee revenged upon it. By nature wee are willingly subject unto no Law, but the Law of our members, nor to no will, but the will of the flesh; full of contumacy, rebellion, and stoutnesse of Spirit against the truth and beauty of the Word or wayes of God. The Love of corrupted nature is wholly ^a set upon our owne wayes, as an ^b untamed Heifer, or

Rom. 8. 7, 8, 10.

Mal. 3. 17.

1 Sam. 15. 23.

^a Eccles. 8. 11.

Prov. 14. 14.

^b Jer. 2. 24.

8. 6.

Hos. 4. 16.

Christs people a willing people.

313

V E R S E 3.

or a wilde asse; men ^c wander, and ^d goe about, and ^e weary themselves in their full compasse and swinge of lust, and will not be turned. And therefore it is that they bid God ^f depart from them, and desire not the knowledge of his wayes, that they leave the paths of uprightnesse, that having ^g crooked hearts of their owne, they labour likewise to pervert and ^h make crooked the Gospell of Christ, that they may from thence steale countenance to their sinnes, contrary to that holy affection of ⁱ David, *Make my way strait before me*; that they ^k snuffe and rage, and ^l pull away the shoulder, and ^m fall backward, and ⁿ thrust away God from them. And hence it is that men are so apt to cavill, and foolishly to charge the wayes of God; first, as *grievous wayes*; too full of austerity, narrownesse and restraint. ^o *I knew that thou wert an austere man*; and this is an ^p hard saying, who can beare it? ^q *The land is not able to beare all his words.* ^r *There is a Lion in the way*, a certaine damage and unavoidable mischief will follow me if I keepe in it. Thus as ^s Israel when they heard of Giants and sonnes of *Anak*, had no heart to Canaan, but cried, and whined, and rebelled, and mutined, and in their heart turned backe into Egypt, that is, had more will to their owne bondage, than to Gods Promise: so when a naturall man heares of walking in a narrow way with much exactnesse and circumspection, that come what baite of preferment, pleasure, profit or advantage will, yet hee must not turne to the right hand or to the left, nor commit the least evill for the greatest good: that as the people in the Wildernesse were to goe onely where the Cloud and Pillar of Gods presence led them, though he carried them through Giants, terrours, and temptations: so a Christian must resolve to follow the Lambe whither soever he goeth; He ^t then turneth backe to his iniquities, and refuseth to heare the words of the Lord. Secondly, as *unprofitable wayes*: ^u *for who will shew us any good*, is the onely language

^c Ier. 2. 20.

^d Ier. 31. 22.

^e Esai. 57. 10.

^f Iob 21. 14.

^g Deut. 32. 5.

^h Gal. 1. 7.

ⁱ 2 Pet. 3. 16.

^j Psal. 5. 8.

^k Mal. 1. 13.

^l Nehem. 9. 29.

^m Act. 7. 51.

ⁿ Act. 7. 39.

^o Matth. 25. 24.

^p Ioh. 6. 60.

^q Amos 7. 10.

^r Prov. 22. 13.

^s Num. 13. 31.

14. 1, 4.

Neh. 9. 16, 17.

^t Ier. 11. 10.

^u Psal. 4. 6.

VERSE 3.

* Job. 22. 17.

y Mal. 3. 14, 15.

z Mic. 2. 7.

1 Tim. 4. 8.

1 Sam. 2. 30.

* Ezek. 18. 25.

a 1 Pet. 4. 4.

Esaï. 8. 18.

Zech. 3. 8.

1 Cor. 1. 21.

b Hof. 4. 4.

c Jer. 2. 27.

Hof. 5. 5, 6.

a King. 17. 25, 26.

d *Qui gehennas metuit, non peccare metuit, sed ardere ille autem peccare metuit, qui peccatum ipsum sicut gehennas odit. Aug. Epi. 144. In ipsa intus voluntate peccat, qui non voluntate sed timore non peccat, Idem con. 2. Epi. Pelag. l. 1. cap. 9. & lib. 2. cap. 9. Non sicut feram & timeo & odi, ita etiam patrem vereor quem timeo & amo. Cle. Alex. Strom. l. 2.*

guage of carnall men: * *What can the Almighty doe for us, say the wicked in Job? It is in vaine to serve God, What profit have wee that have kept his Ordinances, &c?* If we must take our conscience along in all the busineses of our life, there will be no living in the world; notwithstanding the Lord saith, that his words doe good to those that walke uprightly, that godlinesse hath the Promises even of this life; that God will honour those that honour him. Thirdly, as * *Unequall and unreasonable wayes*, as a strange, a mad, and a foolish strictnesse, rather the meteor of a speculative braine, than a thing of any reall existence, rather *verum* than *veritas*, a wish or figment, than a solid truth. And from such prejudices as these men grow to wrestle with the Spirit of Christ, to withstand his motions, to quench his suggestions, and to dispute against him. b *This people are as they that strive with the Priest*, such a bitter and unreconcilable enmity there is betweene the two seeds.

Secondly, we may observe, that notwithstanding this naturall averfenesse, yet many by the *Power of the Word* are wrought violently and *compulsorily* to tender some *unwilling services* to Christ, by the spirit of bondage, by the feare of wrath, by the evidences of the curse due to sinne, and by the wakefulnesse of the conscience. c They have turned their backe unto me, and not their face, saith the Lord; that notes the disposition of their will. But in the time of their trouble, they will say, *Arise and save us*, that notes their compulsory and unnaturall devotion. They shall goe with their flocks and their herds, that is, with their pretended sacrifices, and externall ceremonies to seek the Lord; but they shall not finde him; hee hath withdrawnne himselfe. As when the Lord sent Lions amongst the Samaritanes, then they sent to enquire after the manner of his worship, fearing him; but yet still serving their owne Gods. But this compulsory obedience doth not proceed from d a feare of sinne but a feare of hell.

Christs people a willing people.

315

bell. And that plainly appears ^c in the readinesse of such men to apprehend all advantages for enlarging themselves, and in making pretences to flinch away and steale from the Word of Grace, in consulting with carnall reason to silence the doubts, to untie the knots, and to breake the bonds of the Conscience asunder, and to turne into every diverticle which a corrupted heart can shape, in taking every occasion and pretext to put God off, and delay the payment of their service unto him. Thus *Felix* ^f when he was frightened with the discourse of Saint *Paul* put it off with pretence of some further convenient season; and the ^g unwilling Jewes in the time of reedifying the temple at Jerusalem, *This people say the time is not come, the time that the Lords house should bee built*; in slighting the warnings and distinguishing the words of Scripture out of their Spirituall and Genuine purity, and so ^h *Belying the Lord, and saying, It is not he. The Word of the Lord, saith the Prophet, is to them a reproach, they have no delight in it*, that is, they esteeme me when I preach thy Words unto them rather as a slanderer than as a Prophet. Wouldest thou then know the nature of thy devotion? Abstract all conceits of danger, all workings of the spirit of bondage, the feare of wrath, the preoccupation of Hell, the estimations and sweatings of a troubled conscience, and if all these being seclused, thou ⁱ canst still afford to dedicate thy selfe to Christ, and be greedily ambitious of his Image, that is an evident assurance of an upright heart.

Thirdly, wee may observe, that by the Power of the Word there may yet be further wrought in naturall men a certaine *Velleity*, a languide and incomplete will, ^k bounded with secret reservations, exceptions, and conditions of its owne, which maketh it upon every new occasion mutable and inconstant. When ^l the Hypocriticall Jewes came with such a solemne protestation unto the Prophet *Jeremie*, *The Lord bee a true and faithfull*
witness

VERSE 3.

^c Aug. de Natur. & Grat. cap. 57. cont. 2. ep. Pelag. l. 3. c. 4. & To. 4. lib. de Spi. & lit. cap. ult.

^f Act. 24. 25.

^g Hag. 1. 2.

^h Jer. 5. 12. 13. 6, 10.

ⁱ Nec si per hypothesin à Deo potestatem acceperit faciendū ea quæ sunt prohibita citra ullam penam: — sed nec si persuasum habuerit, fore, ut Deum lateant quæ gerit, in animum unquam inducet ut aliquid agat præter rectam rationem clem. Alex.

^k Strom. l. 4.

^l Vid. Aquipar. 3. qu. 21. art. 4. c. Semisanciam hac atq; hac versare & jactare voluntatem, &c. Aug. confess. lib. 8. cap. 8.

^l 1 Cr. 42. 3, 5, 6. 20 43. 2.

VERSE 3.

m 2 King. 8. 13.

n Mat. 26. 5.

o 1 Sam. 24.
16. 19.

witnesse betweene us, if wee doe not according to all things for the which the Lord thy God shal send thee unto us, &c. I suppose they then meant as they spake, and yet this appeares in the end to have beene but a *velleitie and incomplete resolution*, a zealous pang of that secret hypocrisie which in the end discover'd it selfe, and brake forth into manifest contradiction: when ^m Hazael answer'd the Prophet, *Is thy servant a dog that he should doe thus and thus?* he then meant no otherwise than hee spake, upon the first representation of those bloody facts, hee abhorred them as belluine and prodigious villanies; and yet this was but a *velleity and fit of good nature* for the time which did easily weare out with the alteration of occasions. When *Iudas* asked Christ, ⁿ *Master is it I that shal betray thee?* (though a man can conceive no hypocrisie too blacke to come out of the hell of *Iudas* his heart) yet possible, and peradventure probable it may bee that hearing at that time and beleeving that wofull judgement pronounced by Christ against his betrayer, *It had beene good for that man if he had never beene borne*, hee might then upon the pang and surprizall of so fearefull a doome secretly and suddenly relent, and resolve to forsake his purpose of Treason; which yet when that storme was over, and his covetous heart was tempted with a bribe, did fearefully returne and gather strength againe. When the people returned and inquired early, and remembered God their Maker, they were in good earnest for the time, and yet that was a *velleity, and ungrounded devotion*, their heart was not right towards him, neither were they steadfast in his Covenant. When ^o *Saul* out of the force of naturall ingenuity, did upon the evidence of *Dauids* integrity, who slew him not when the Lord had delivered him into his hands, relent for the time, and weepe, and acknowledge his righteousness above his owne, he spake all this in earnest as hee thought; and yet wee finde that hee afterwards returned to pursue him againe, and

was

was once more by the experience of *David's* innocencie reduced into the same acknowledgement. The people in one place would have made Christ a King, so much did they seeme to honour him, and yet at another time when their over-pliable and unresolved affections were wrought upon by the subtile Pharises, they cried against him, as against a slave, Crucifie him, Crucifie him. So may it be in the generall Services of God, men may have wishings and wouldings and good liking of the truth, and some faint and floating resolutions to pursue it: which yet having no firme roote, nor proceeding from the whole bent of the heart, from a through mortification of sinne and evidence of Grace, but from such weake and wavering principles, as may bee perturbed by every new temptation, like letters written in sand, they vanish away like a morning dew, and leave the heart as hard and scorched as it was before. The young man (whom for his ingenuity and forwardnesse Christ loved) came in a sad and serious manner to learne of Christ the way to Heaven: and yet wee finde there were secret reservations which hee had not discerned in himselfe, upon discovery whereof by Christ hee was discouraged and did repent of his resolution, *Marke 10. 21, 22.* The Apostle speaketh of a *Repentance not to bee repented of,* *2 Cor. 7. 10.* which hath firme, solid, and permanent reasons to support it, therein secretly intimating that there is likewise a Repentance, which rising out of an incomplete will, and admitting certaine secret and undiscerned reservations, doth upon the appearance of them, flag and fall away, and leave the unfaithfull heart to repent of its repentance. *S. James* tels us that a *double-minded man, is unstable in all his waies, Jam. 1. 8.* never uniforme nor constant to any rules. Now this division of the mind stands thus: The heart on the one side is taken up with the *pleasures of sinne for the present;* and on the other with the *desires of salvation for the future;* and now according

VERSE 3.

cording as the workings and representations of the one or other are at the time more fresh and predominant, in like manner is sinne for that time either cherished or suppressed. Many men at a good Sermon, when the matter is fresh and newly presented, while they are looking on their face in the Glasse; or in any extremity of sicknesse, when the provisions of lust doe not relish for the present, when they have none but thoughts of salvation to depend upon, are very resolute to make promises, vowes, and professions of better living; but when the pleasures of sin grow strong to present themselves again, they returne like a man recover'd of an ague with more stomacke and greedinesse to their lusts againe. As water which hath been stop'd for a while rusheth with the more violence, when its passages are opened. A double heart is like the boles of a Scale, according as more weight is put into one or other, so are they indifferently over-rul'd unto either motion, up or downe. When I see a vapour ascend out of the earth into the Aire, why should I not thinke that it will never leave rising till it git up to Heaven? and yet because the motion is not naturall, but caused either by expulsion from a heat within, or by attraction from a heat without, when the cause of that ascent is abated, and the matter gathers together into a thicker consistence, it growes heavy and fells downe againe. Even such is the affection of those faint and unresolv'd desires of men who like *Agrippa* are but *half-per/waded* to beleeve in Christ.

But now lastly wee must observe, that in the day of Christs Power, when hee by his Word and Spirit worketh effectually in the hearts of men, they are then made *free-will offerings*, *Totally willing* to obey and serve him in all conditions. The heart of every one stirreth him up, and his Spirit maketh him willing for the worke and service of the Lord, *Exod. 35. 21.* They *yeeld themselves* unto the Lord, and their members are weapons of righteousness unto him, *2 Chron. 30. 8. Rom. 6. 19.* They
offer

Christs people a willing people.

319

VERSE 3.

offer and present themselves to God as a living Sacrifice; and therefore they are called *propitiatus*, an oblation sanctified by the Holy Ghost, *Rom. 12. 1. Rom. 15. 16.* Therefore they are said to come unto Christ, by the vertue of his Fathers teaching, *Ioh. 6. 45.* To runne unto him, *Esa. 55. 5.* To gather themselves together under him as a common head, and to flow or flock together with much mutuall encouragement unto the mountaine of the Lord, *Hos. 1. 11. Esa. 2. 2, 3.* To waite upon him in his Law, *Esa. 42. 4.* To enter into a sure Covenant, and to write and seale it, *Nehem. 9. 38.* In one word, To serve him with a perfect heart, and with a willing minde, *1 Chron. 28. 9.* when the heart is perfect, undivided, and goeth all together, the minde will bee willing to serve the Lord.

This willingness of Christs people sheweth it selfe in two things: First, in begetting most cordiall and constant Enmitie against all the enemies of Christ, never holding any league or intelligence with them, but being alwayes ready to answer the Lord as David did Saul, *Thy servant will goe and fight with this Philistine.* Hee that is a voluntary in Christs armies is not disheartned with the potencie, policie, malice, subtlety, or prevailing faction of any of his adversaries. Hee is contented to denie himselfe, to renounce the friendship of the world, to bid defiance to the allurements of Satan, to smile upon the face of danger, to hate father, and mother, and land, and life, to be cruell to himselfe, and regardlesse of others for his masters service. Through honour and dishonor, through evill report and good report, through a Sea and a wilderness, through the hottest services, and strongest oppositions will hee follow the Lambe whither soever he goeth: though he receive the word in much affliction, yet hee will receive it with joy too. Secondly, in begetting most loving, constant, and deare affections to the mercie, grace, glory, and wayes of God, an universall conformity unto

VERSE 3.

unto Christ our Head, who was contented to take upon him the forme of a servant, to have his eare bored, and his Will subjected unto the Will of his Father. *I delight to doe thy Will O my God, yea, thy Law is within my heart, Psal. 40. 8.* And as hee was, so are all his in this world, of the same minde, judgement, Spirit, conversation, and therefore of the same will too.

Now this deare and melting affection of the heart toward Christ and his wayes, whereby the soule longeth after him, and hasteth unto him, is wrought by severall principles: First, by the *Conviction of our naturall Estate*, and a through humiliation for the same. *Pride is ever the principle of disobedience.* They were the proud men who said unto *Ieremie, thou speakest falsely, the Lord hath not sent thee, Ier. 43. 2.* And they were the proud men who hardned their necks, and withdrew the shoulder, and *would not heare*, and refused to obey, *Nehem. 9. 16, 17, 29.* A man must bee first brought to deny himselfe before hee will bee willing to follow Christ, and to lug a crosse after him. A man must first *humble himselfe before hee walke with God, Mich. 6. 8.* The poore onely receive the Gospell. The hungry onely finde sweetnesse in bitter things. Extremities will make any man not only willing but thankfull to take any course wherein hee may recover himselfe and subsist againe. When the soule findes it selfe in darkenesse, and hath no light, and be- ginnes to consider whither darkenesse leads it; that it is even now in the mouth of Hell, under the paw of the roaring Lion, under the guilt of sinne, the curse of the Law, and the hatred and wrath of God, it cannot chuse but most willingly pursue any probability, and with most enlarged affections meete any tender of deliv- rance. Suppose wee that a Prince should cause some bloody malefactor to bee brought forth, should set be- fore his eyes all the racks and tortures which the wit of man can invent to punish prodigious offenders withall, and

Christs people a willing people.

321

VERSE 3.

and should cause him to taste some of those extremities: and then in the midst of his howling and anguish, should not onely reach out a hand of mercie to deliver him, but should further promise him upon his submission to advance him like *Ioseph* from the iron which enters into his soule, unto publike honor and service in the state, would not the heart of such a man be melted into thankfulness, and with all submission resigne it selfe unto the mercy and service of so gracious a Prince? Now the Lord doth not onely deale thus with sinners; doth not onely cause them by the report of his Word, and by the experience of their own guilty hearts, to feele the weight, fruitlesnesse, and shame of sinne, and the first fruits of that eternall vengeance which is thereunto due: nor onely set forth Christ before them as a rocke of redemption, reaching out a hand to save, and offering great and pretious promises of an exceeding, eternall, abundant weight of glory: but besides all this doth inwardly touch the heart by the finger of his Spirit, framing it to a spirituall and divine conformity unto Christ. How can the soule of such a man in these present extremities of horror, which yet are but the pledges of infinite more which must ensue; and in the evidence of so wonderfull and sweet promises, the scales of the eternall favour and fellowship of God, choose but with much importunity of affection to lay hold on so great a hope which is set before it, and with all readinesse and ambition of so high a service, yeeld up it selfe into the hands of so gracious a Lord, to bee by him ordered and over-ruled unto any obedience?

Secondly, this *Willingnesse* of Christs People is wrought by a *spirituall illumination of minds*. And therefore the *Conversion* of sinners is called a *Conviction*, because it is ever wrought in us *Secundum modum iudicii* as we are reasonable and intelligent creatures. I take it (under favour and submission to better judgements) for a
firme

VERSE 3.

^a Col. 4. 17.

Act. 14. 26.

² Tim. 4. 5.

Rom. 15. 19.

^b 2 Cor. 1. 18.

Luk. 24. 32.

1 Cor. 8. 2.

firmē truth; that if the minde of a man were once thoroughly and in a spirituall manner (as it becommeth such objects as are altogether spirituall) possessed of the adequate goodnesse and truth which is in grace and glory, the heart could not utterly reject them; for humane liberty is not a brutish, but a reasonable thing, it consisteth not in contumacie or headstrongnesse, but in such a manner of working, as is apt to bee regulated, varied, or suspended by the dictates of right reason. The only cause why men are not willing to submit unto Christ is because they are not thoroughly and in a manner suteable to the spirituall excellency of the things, illightned in their minde. The Apostle often maketh mention of *a fulfilling and making full proove of our ministry*, and of *preaching the Gospell fully*, namely *with the evidence of the Spirit and of power*, and with such a *manifestation of the truth as doth commend it selfe unto the conscience of a man*. The ^b Word of God, saith the Apostle, is not yea and nay, that is, a thing which may bee admitted or denied at pleasure, but such a word as hath no in-evidence in it selfe, nor leaveth any uncertainty or hesitancie in a minde fitted to receive it. And as wee may thus distinguish of *Preaching*, that there is an imperfect and a full preaching: so may wee distinguish of understanding the things preached, in some it is full, and in others but *superficiall*; for there is a *Twofold illumination* of the minde, the one *Theoreticall* and meerely *Notionall* consisting in knowledge; the other *Practicall, Experimentsall, and spirituall*; consisting in the irradiation of the soule by the light of Gods countenance, in such an apprehension of the truth as maketh the heart to burne therby, *when we know things as we ought to know them*, that is, when the manner and life of our knowledge is answerable to the nature and excellencie of the things knowne, when the eye is spiritually opened to beleeve, and seriously conclude that the things spoken are of most precious and everlasting consequence

Christs people a willing people.

323

VERSE 3.

quence to the soule, as things that concerne our peace with God. This is the *Learning of Christ*, the *teaching of the Father*, the *knowing of things which passe knowledge*, the *setting to the seale of our owne hearts that God is true*, the evidence of spirituall things not to the braine, but to the conscience. In one word this is that which the Apostle calleth, *A spirituall Demonstration*. And surely in this case, the heart is never over-ruled contrary to the full, spirituall, and infallible evidence of Divine truths, unto a practicall judgement. Therefore the Apostle saith that *Eve being Deceived* was in the transgression, and there is frequent mention made of the *deceitfulnesse of sinne*, to note that sinne got into the world, by *error and seduction*. For certainly the will is *ἐν τῇ αἰσθητικῇ*, a *Rationall Appetite*, and therefore (as I conceive) doth not stirre from such a good as is fully and spiritually represented thereunto, as the most universall, adequate, and unquestionable object of the desires and capacities of a humane soule; for the freedome and willing consent of the heart is not lawlesse, or without rules to moderate it, but it is therefore said to be free, because whether out of a true judgement it moove one way, or out of a false, another; yet in both it mooveth *naturally, secundum modum sibi competentem* in a manner suteable to its owne condition.

If it bee objected that the heart being unregenerate is utterly averse unto any good, and therefore is not likely to bee made willing by the illumination of the minde. To this I answer, that it is true, the will must not onely bee *mooved*, but also *renewed and changed*, before it can yeelde to Christ. But withall, that God doth never so fully and spiritually convince the judgement, in that manner, of which I have spoken, without a speciall worke of grace thereupon, opening the eye, and remooving all naturall ignorance, prejudice, hesitancie, inadvertency, mispersuasion, or any other distemper of the minde

1. Tim. 2.14.

*Oportet non
tantum moveri,
sed etiam novari.
fieri. Prosper.*

duy

Y

which

VERSE 3.

Psal. 51. 12.

2 Tim. 1. 7.

2 Cor. 3. 17.

which might hinder the evidence of spirituall truth. By which meanes hee also frameth and fashioneth the will to accept, embrace, and love those good things, of which the minde is thus prepossessed.

Thirdly, this *willingnesse* of Christs people is wrought by the *Communion* and *aspiration* of the *Spirit of Grace*, which is a *free spirit*, a *spirit of love*, and a *spirit of liberty*, a spirit which is in every faculty of man, as the soule and principle of its Christianity or Heavenly being and working. And therefore it makes every faculty *secundum modum sibi proprium* to worke unto spirituall ends and objects. As the soule in the eye causeth that to see, and in the eare to heare, and in the tongue to speake: so the spirit of Grace in the minde causeth it rightly to understand, and in the will causeth it freely to desire Heavenly things; and in every faculty causeth it to moove towards Christ in such a way and manner of working, as is fiteable to its nature.

Fourthly, this *willingnesse* of Christs people ariseth from the *apprehension* of Gods deare love, bowels of mercy, and riches of most unsearchable grace, revealed in the face of Iesus Christ to every broken and penitent spirit. Love is naturally, when it is once apprehended, an Attractive of love. And therefore it is that the Apostle saith, *Faith worketh by love*, that is, By faith first the heart is perswaded and affected with Gods Love unto us in Christ. *I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himselfe for me, Gal. 2. 20. Eph. 3. 17. 18.* Being thus perswaded of his love to us, the heart is framed to love him againe: for who can be perswaded of so great a benefit as the remission of sinnes, and not be most deeply inflamed with the love of him, by whom they are remitted? 1. *Ioh. 4. 19. Luk. 7. 47.* and lastly by this reciprocall love of the heart to Christ, *faith becommeth effectuall* to worke obedience and conformity to his will. *Love is the fulfilling of the Law*, he that loves God would
with

Christs people a willing people.

325

VERSE. 3.

with all joyfulness fulfill every jot of Gods Law if it were possible; *This is the love of God*, saith the Apostle, *that wee keepe his Commandements, and his Commandements are not grievous*. True love overcomes all difficulties, is not apt to pretend occasions for neglecting any service of God, nor to conceive any prejudices against it, but puts an edge and alacrity upon the spirit of a man, he can no more be said to love Christ, who doth not willingly undergoe his yoke, than that woman to love her husband who is ever griev'd at his presence, and delighteth more in the society of strangers.

Fifthly, this *willingnesse* of Christs people ariseth from the *beauty and pretiousnesse of those ample Promises*, which by the love of Christ are made unto us. It is said of *Moses* that he did *chuse* (and that is the greatest act of willingnesse) rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sinne for a season: and the ground of this willingnesse was, *he had a respect unto the recompence of the reward*, Heb. 11. 25, 26. so Christ endur'd the Crosse, and despised the shame, that is, the shame (which would much have stagger'd and disheartned an unresolved man) was no prejudice or discouragement unto him, to abate any of his most willing obedience, and the motive was, *for the joy that was set before him*, Heb. 12. 2. And Saint Paul professeth of himselfe that hee *pressed forward*, hee was not onely willing, but importunate and contentious to put forth all his spirits, and like riders in a race to rouse up himselfe in a holy fervour and emulation, and all this was *for the Price of the high calling of God in Christ Iesus*, which was, as it were, before his face in the Promises thereof. *Philippians* 3. 14. so the Apostle assureth us, That a Christians Hope to bee like unto Christ hereafter, will cause him to purifie himselfe even as hee is pure, 1 *Joh.* 3. 3. when a man shall sit downe and recount with *David*, what God hath done for him already. *Who am I,*

VERSE 3.

O Lord God, and what is my house, that thou hast brought mee hitherto? And what God hath further promised to doe for him more. Thou hast also spoken of thy servants house for a great while to come. Of a childe of wrath, thou hast called mee to an inheritance of the Saints in light, and into the fellowship of more glory than can be shadowed forth by all the lights of Heaven, though every Star were turned into a Sunne; I say, when the soule shall thus recount the goodnesse of God, how can it but bee wonderfully enlarged with thoughts of thankfulness, and grieved at the slow and narrow abilities of the other parts to answer the urgent and wide desires of a willing soule.

*Sixthly, this willingness of Christs people ariseth from the experience of that peace, comfort, life, liberty, triumph and security which accompanieth the Spirit and the service of Christ. Nothing makes a man more fearefull of warres, than the dangers and hazards which are incident thereunto. But if a man can serve under such a Prince, whose employments are not onely honourable, but safe; if hee, who is able and faithfull to make good his words, promise us that none either of the stratagems or forces of the enemy shall doe us hurt, but that they shall flie before us, while wee resist them: who would not bee a *Voluntary* in such services as are not liable to the casualties and vicissitudes which usually attend other warres, wherein hee might fight with safety, and come off with honour? *David* had experience of Gods power in delivering him from the Lion and the Beare, and was well assured that that God who was carefull of sheepe, would be more pitifull to his people *Israel*; and that made him with much willingness ready to encounter *Goliath*, whose assurance was onely in himselfe and not in God. When a man shall consider what God might have done with him, hee might have sent him from the wombe to Hell, depriv'd him of the means of grace, left him to the rebellion*

Christs people a willing people.

327

VERSE 3.

rebellion and hardnesse of his eyill heart, and to the rage of Satan, burnt his bones, and dried up his bowels with the view of that wrath which is due to sinne, and what he hath done with him; he hath called him to the knowledge of his will, refreshed him with the light of his Countenance, heard his Prayers, given an issue to his temptations, and a reviving out of bondage, fastned him as a naile in his holy place, given him his favour which is better than light, and spoken of his servant for a long time to come; O how readily will the spirit of such a man conclude, Lord, according to thine owne heart hast thou done all this unto me, and I have found so much sweetnesse in thy service above all mine owne thoughts or expectations, that now, O Lord, my heart is prepared, my heart is prepared, I will sing and rejoyce in thy service.

Lastly, this *willingnesse* of Christs people ariseth from that excellent *beauty and attractive vertue* which is in holinesse. *Thy Law is pure, therefore thy servant loveth it.* And therefore wee finde Christ and his Church doe kinde the coales of love, and stirre up those flames of mutuall dearenesse towards one another, doe cherish those longing, languishing, and ravished affections, and suspirings of hearts, by the frequent contemplations of each others beautie. *Behold, thou art faire my love, behold, thou art faire, thou hast Doves eyes. Behold, thou art faire my beloved, yea pleasant, &c. Cant. 1. 15, 16.* These are the principles of that great devotion and willingnesse which is in the people of Christ vnto his service.

And hereby we may make triall of the truth of that profession, subjection, and obedience which we all pretend unto the Gospell of Christ. It is then onely sound when it proceeds from a willing and devoted heart, from purpose, fervour and earnestnesse of Spirit; for as God in mercy accounts *the will for the deed*; because where there is a willing minde there will certainly be all answerable

Act. 11. 23.

Rom. 12. 17.

Gal. 4. 18.

VERSE 3.

* *Qui perspicit apud te paratam fuisse virtutem, reddet pro virtute mercedem. Nunquid Cain cum Deo munus offerret jam peremerat fratrem? & tamen paricidium mente conceptum Deus providus ante damnavit, ut illis cogitatio prava, & perniciosâ conceptio Deo providente prospecta est: ita & in Dei servis, apud quos confessio cogitatur, & martirium mente concipitur, animus ad bonum deditus, Deo iudice coronatur. Aliud est martirio animum deesse aliud animo defuisse martirium — nec enim sanguinem vestrum querit Deus, sed fidem. Cyr. de mortal. Neq; enim in sacrificiis quæ Abel & Cain primi obtulerunt, munera eorum Deus, sed corda intuebatur, ut ille placeret in munere qui placebat in corde. Idem de Orat. Domini.*

able endeavours to execute that will, and reduce it into act, so he esteemes the deed nothing without the * will: Cain and Abel did both sacrifice, it was the heart which made the difference betweene them: let the outward conversation be what it will, yet if a man regard iniquitie in his heart, God will not heare him. *Gravius est diligere peccatum quam facere:* It is a worse token (saith Gregory) of an evill man to love sinne, than to commit it, for it may be committed out of temptation and infirmie, and so may be either in part the sin of another that tempteth us, or at least not the sinne of our whole selves, but of those remainders of corruption which dwell within us. But *our love is all our owne*, Satan can but offer a temptation, the heart it selfe must love it: and love is strong as death, it worketh by the strength of the whole man, and therefore ever such as the will is (which is the seat of love) such is the service too. And the reason is: First, because the will is the first moover, and the master-wheele in spirituall workes, that which regulateth all the rest, and keepeth them right and constant; that which holdeth together all the faculties of the soule and bodie in the execution of Gods will. In which sense, amongst others I understand that of the Apostle, *That love is the bond of perfection*, because when love resideth in the heart, it will put together every facultie to doe that worke of God perfectly which it goes about. And therefore by a like expression it is called *The fulfilling of the Law*, because love aimes still at the highest, and at the best in that thing which it loves, it is ever an enemy to defects. He that loves learning will never stop, and say I have enough, in this likewise love is as death. And he that loves grace, will bee still *Ambitious to abound* in the worke of the Lord, and to presse forward unto perfection, to make up that which is wanting to his faith, to

Christs people a willing people.

329

VERSE. 3.

be sanctified throughout, to bring forth more fruit, to walke *in all pleasing*, to be holy, and unblameable, and unreproueable, without spot or wrinkle. It is an absurd thing in religion to dote upon mediocrities of grace; *in eo non potest esse uimium, quod esse maximum debet*; Hee that with all the exactnesse and rigour of his heart, can never gather together *all grace*, can surely never have too much. In false religions no man so much magnified as he that is strictest: that Papist which is most cruell to his flesh, most assiduous at his beads, most canonicall in his houres, most macerated with superstitious penance, most frequently prostrated before his idols, is of all other most admired for the greatest saint. O why should not an holy strictnesse be as much honoured as a superstitious? why should not exactnesse, puritie, and a contending unto perfection, be as much pursued in a true as in a false religion? Why should not every man strive to be filled with grace, since he can never have enough till he have it all, till he is brimme-full? Hee that truely loves wealth, would be the richest; and he that loves honour, would be the highest of any other: certainly Grace is in it selfe more lovely than any of these things. Why then should not every man strive to bee most unlike the evill world, and to be more excellent than his neighbour, to be holy as God is holy, to bee as Christ himselfe was in this world, to grow up in unitie of faith, and in the knowledge of him, unto a perfect man? Certainly, if a man once set his will and his heart upon Grace, he will never rest in mediocrities; he will labour to abound more and more, he will never thinke himselfe to have apprehended, but forgetting the things which are behinde, he will reach forth to those things which are before him, for all the desires of the heart are strong, and will over-rule any other naturall desire. The griefe of *Dauids* heart made him forget to eate his bread. The desire of Christs heart to convert the Samaritan woman, made him carelesse of

VERSE 3.

his owne hunger. It is my meat to doe the will of him that sent me, and to finish his worke. A true heart will goe on to finish the worke which it hath begunne. *The wicked sleepe not, saith Salomon, except they have done mischief;* And the enemies of Saint Paul provided to stop the clamours and demands of an empty stomacke with a solemne vow that they would neither eate nor drinke till they had slaine Paul. Lust never gives over till it finish sinne, and therefore the Love of Christ should never give over till it finish Grace.

Iudg. 5. 29.

Secondly, because *God is more honored in the obedience of the will* than of the outward man. Humane restraints may rule this, but nothing but Grace can rule the other; for herein we acknowledge God to bee the searcher of hearts, the discernor of secret thoughts, the Judge and Lord over our consciences. *Whatsoever ye doe (saith the Apostle) doe it heartily as to the Lord, and not to men.* Noting unto us that a man doth never respect the Lord in any service which commeth not willingly, and from the inner man. Now he worketh in vaine, and loseth all that hee hath wrought, who doth not worke for him who is master of the businesse he goes about, and who onely doth reward it. Therefore saith the Apostle, *Doe it heartily as to the Lord, knowing that of the Lord you shall receive the Reward of the Inheritance, for you serve the Lord Christ.* He onely is the pay-master of such kinde of worke, and therefore doe it onely as to him, so that he may approve and reward it.

Before I leave this point touching the willingnesse of Christs people, here is a great case, and of frequent occurrence to be resolved, Whether those who are truly of Christs people may not have feares, torments, uncomfortablenesse, wearinesse, unwillingnesse in the wayes of God? Saint John in generall states the case, *There is no feare in love, but perfect love casteth out feare: Because feare hath torment,* 1 Ioh. 4. 18. so that it seemes where there

Christs people a willing people.

331

VERSE 3.

there is torment, and wearinesse, there is no love: for the clearing of this case, I shall set downe some few positions.

First, in generall, where there is true obedience there is ever a *willing and a free spirit*, in this degree at the least, a most deepe desire of the heart, and serious endeavour of the spirit of a man to walke in all well-pleasing towards God: a longing for such fulnesse of Grace, and enlargement of soule as may make a man fit to runne the way of Gods Commandements.

Secondly, where there is this *will*, yet there may upon other reasons be such a *fear* as hath paine and torment in it, and that in two respects: First, there may be a *fear* of Gods wrath, the soule of a righteous man may be surpriz'd with some glimpses and apprehensions of his most heaueie displeasure, he may conceive himselfe set up as Gods markes to shoot at, *Iob 7. 20.* that the *poysoned arrowes and terrors of the wrath of God doe stick fast upon him.* *Iob 6. 4.* that *his transgressions are sealed up and reserv'd against him,* *Iob 14. 17.* The hot displeasure of the Lord may even *vexe his bones*, and make his soule sore within him, *Psal. 6. 1, 2, 3.* Hee may conceive himselfe *forgotten and cast out by God*, surpris'd with fearefulness, trembling, and the honour of death, *Psal. 13. 1.* *Psal. 55. 4, 5.* Christ may withdraw himselfe and bee gone, in regard of any comfortable and sensible fruition of his fellowship, and in that case the soule may faile and seeke him but not finde him, and call upon him but receive no answer, *Cant. 5. 6.* A man may feare the Lord, and yet bee in darkenesse, and have no light, *Esa. 50. 10.* Secondly, there may be a great *feare* even of performing spirisual duties. A broken and dejected man may tremble in Gods service, and upon a deepe apprehension of his owne unworthinesse, and erroneous applying of that sad exhortation of God with wicked men, *What hast thou to doe to take my Covenant in thy mouth?*

VERSE 3.

mouth? *Psal.* 50. 16. And, what hath my beloved to doe in mine house, seeing she hath wrought lewdnesse with many? *Ier.* 11. 15. he may be startled, and not dare adventure upon such holy and sacred things without much reluctancie, and shame of spirit. *O my God*, saith *Ezra*, *I am ashamed and blush to lift up my face to thee my God: for our iniquities are increased over our heads*, *Ezra* 9. 6.

Thus it is said of the poore woman who upon the touch of Christs garment had beene healed of her bloody issue, That *shee came fearing and trembling, and fell downe* before Christ, and told him the truth, *Mark.* 5. 33. But yet great difference there is betweene this feare of the Saints, and of the wicked. The feare of the wicked ariseth out of the evidences of the guilt of sinne, but the feare of the Saints from a tender apprehension of the *Majestie of God*, and his most pure eyes which cannot endure to behold uncleannesse (which made *Moses* himselfe to tremble, *Act.* 7. 32.) and out of a deepe sense of *their owne unworthinesse* to meddle with holy things. And such a feare as this may bring much *uncomfortablenesse* and distraction of spirit; but, *never* at all any dislike or hatred of God, or any stomacke-full disobedience against him. For as the feare of the soule deterres, so the necessity of the precept drives him to an endeavour of obedience and well-pleasing. Slavish feare forceth a man to doe the dutie some way or other, without any eye or respect unto the manner of doing it. But this other which is indeed a filiall, but yet withall an uncomfortable feare, rather dissuades from the dutie it selfe, the heart being so vile; and unfit to performe so pretious a dutie in so holy a manner as becomes it.

Thirdly, as the Saints may have *feare* and uncomfortablenesse (which are contrary to a free spirit) so they may have a *wearinesse* and some kinde of *unwillingnesse* in Gods service. Their spirits like the hands of *Moses* in the mount may faint and hang downe, may be dam'pd with

with carnall affections, or tired with the difficulty of the worke, or pluck'd back by the importunitie of temptations, so that though they beginne in the spirit, yet they may be bewitched and transported from a through-obedience to the truth, *Gal. 3. 1, 3.* A deadnesse, heavinessse, insensibilitie, unactivenesse, confusednesse of heart, unpreparednesse of affections, insinuation of worldly lusts and earthly cares may distract the hearts, and abate the cheerefulnesse of the best of us. And hence come those frequent exhortations to stirre up our selves, to prepare our hearts to seeke the Lord, to whet the Law upon our children, to exhort one another lest the deceitfulnesse of sinne harden us, to be strong in the Grace of Christ, not to faint or bee weary of well-doing, and the like. All which, and sundry like, intimate a sluggishnesse of disposition, and naturall bearing backe of the will from Gods service.

Fourthly, the *Proportion* of this discomfort and wearinessse ariseth from these grounds: First, from the *strength of these corruptions* which remaine within us: for ever so much fleshlinesse as the heart retaines; so much bias a man hath to turne him from God and his waies, so much clog and encumbrance in holy duties. And this remainder of flesh is in the will as well as in any other facultie to indispose it unto spirituall actions, as it is in our *members* that we *cannot doe* the things which we would, *Gal. 5. 17.* so in proportion it is in *our-wills*, that we cannot with all our strength *desire* the things which we should, and therefore *David* praiseth God for this especiall Grace, Who am I, and what is my people that wee should be able *to offer so willingly after this sort?* for all things come of thee, and of thine owne have wee given thee, *1 Chro. 29. 14.*

Secondly, from the dulnesse or sleepinesse of Grace in the heart, which without daily reviving, husbanding, and handling will be apt to contract a rust, and to bee over-

over-growne with that bitter roote of corruption within. As a bowle will not moove without many rubs and stops in a place overgrowne with grasse, so the will cannot move with readinesse towards God, when the Graces which should actuate it are growne dull and heavie. A rustie key will not easily open the locke unto which it was first fitted; nor a neglected Grace easily open or enlarge the heart.

Thirdly, from the violent importunity and *immodesty* of *some strong temptation*, and unexpellible suggestions, which frequently presenting themselves to the spirit doe there beget jealousies to disquiet the peace of the heart: for Satans first end is *to rob us of Grace*, for which purpose he hearteneth our lusts against us: but his second is *to rob us of Comfort*, and to tesse us up and downe betweene our owne feares and suspicions: for unwearied and violent contradictions are apt to beget wearinesse in the best. Consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himselfe, saith the Apostle, *lest ye be wearied and faint in your mindes, Heb. 12.3.*

Fourthly, from the *present weight of some heavie fresh sinne*, which will utterly indispose the heart unto any good. As we see how long securitie did surprize *David* after his murther and adulterie. Thus as *Jonah* after his flight from God, fell asleepe in the ship: so stupiditie and unaptnesse to worke is ever the childe of any notable and revolting sinne. When the conscience lieth bleeding under any fresh sinne it hath first a hard taske to goe through in a more bitter renewing the teares of repentance. And hard workes have for the most part some feares and reluctancies in the performing of them. Secondly, it hath not such boldnesse and assurance to bee welcome to God. It comes with shame, horror, blushing and want of peace, and so cannot but finde the greater conflict in it selfe. Thirdly, sinne diswonts a man from God, carries him to thickets and bushes. The soule loves

not to be deprehended by God in the company of Satan or any sinnefull lust. That childe cannot but feelee some straglings of shame and unwillingnesse to come unto his father, who is sure when he comes to be upbraided with the companions which he more delights in.

Fifthly, from the *proportions of the desertions of the spirit*: for the Spirit of God bloweth where and how hee listeth; and it is he that worketh our wils unto obedience. If he be grieved and made retire, (for he is of a delicate and jealous disposition) if hee turne his winde from our sailes, alas, how slow and sluggish will our motion bee? How poore our progresse? Vpon these and severall other the like grounds, may the best of us bee possessed with feares, discomforts, and unwillingnesse in Gods service. But yet

Fifthly, none of all this takes off the *will à Toto*, though it doe *à Tanto*, but that the faithfull in their greatest heavinesse and unfitnesse of spirit, have yet a stronger byas towards God, than any wicked man when hee is at best, for it is true of them in their lowest condition, that they *Desire* to feare Gods name. *Nehem. 1. 11.* That the *desire* of their soule is towards the remembrance of him *Esay 26. 8.* that they are seriously displeased with the distempers and uncomfortablenesse of their spirit, *Psal. 42. 5.* that they long to bee enlarged, that they may run the way of Gods Commandements, *Psal. 119. 32.* That they *set their affection* unto God and his service, *1 Chron. 29. 3.* That they *prepare their heart* to seeke the Lord God, *2 Chron. 30. 19.* That they *strine, groane, wrestle*, and are unquiet in their dumpees and dulnesse, earnestly contending for joy and freedome of Spirit, *Psal. 51. 8, 11, 12.* In one word, that they dare not omit those duties, which yet they have no readinesse and disposednesse of heart to performe; but when they cannot doe them in *alacrity*, yet they doe them in *obedience*, and serve the Lord when hee hideth his face from them. *I said, I am cast*

VERSE 3.

cast out of thy sight, yet I will looke againe towards thy holy Temple, Ionah 2. 4. He that feareth the Lord will obey his voice, though he walke in darknesse, and have no light, Esay 50. 10. So then the faithfull have still thus much ground of comfort, that God hath their wils alwaies devoted and resign'd unto him, though thus much likewise they have to humble them too, the dayly experience of a backe-sliding and tired spirit in his service; and should therefore bee exhorted to stirre up the spirit of grace in themselves, to keepe fresh and frequent their communion with Christ. The more acquaintance and experience the heart hath of him, the more abundantly it will delight in him, and make haste unto him, that it may with Saint Paul apprehend him in fruition, by whom it is already apprehended, and carried up unto heavenly places in asurance and representation. As long as wee are here, there will bee something lacking to our faith, some mixture of unbelcefe and distrust with it, 1 Theff. 3. 10. Marke 9. 24. corruptions, temptations, afflictions, trials, will bee apt to beget some feares, discomforts, wearinesse, and indisposednesse towards Gods service. The sense whereof should make us long after our home, with the Apostle gone, and wait for the adoption, even the redemption of our bodies, for the manifestation of the sons of God, (for though we are now sonnes, yet it doth not appeare what we shall be, 1 Ioh. 3. 2.) should make us pray for the accomplishment of his promises, for the hastening of his Kingdome, where we shall be changed into an universall spiritualnesse, or purity of nature, where those relickes of corruption, those struglings of the law of the members against the law of the minde shall bee ended, those languishings, decayes, ebbes and blemishes of grace shall bee remooved, where all deficiencies of grace shall bee made up, and that measure and first fruits of the Spirit which we here receive, shall be crowned with fulnesse, and everlasting perfection. Here wee are

are likewise the stones and other materials of *Salamons* Temple, but in the act of fitting and preparation, no marvell if we be here crooked, knotty, uneven, and therefore subject to the hammer, under blowes and buffets. But when we shall be carried to the heavenly building which is above, and there laid in, there shall bee nothing but smoothnesse and glory upon us, no noise of hammers, or axes, no dispensation of Word or Sacraments, no application of censures and severity; but every man shall bee filled with the fulnesse of God, Faith turned into sight, Hope turned into fruition, and Love everlastingly ravished with the presence of God, with the face of Iesus Christ, with the fulnesse of the Holy Spirit, and with the communion and society of all the Saints. And so much for the first observation out of the third particular, concerning the *willingnesse of Christs people*.

There was further therein observed the *Principle* of this *Willingnesse*, [*In the day of thy power, or, of thine armies*] that is, when thou shalt send abroad Apostles, and Prophets, and Evangelists, and Doctours, and Teachers for evidencing of the Word and Spirit unto the consciences of men. Whence wee may secondly observe, that the [*Heart of Christs people is made willing to obey him by an act of Power,*] or by the strength of the Word and Spirit. It is not barely *enticed*, but it is *conquered* by the Gospell of Christ, 2 Cor. 10. 4, 5. And yet this is *not a compulsory conquest* (which is utterly contrary to the nature of a reasonable will, which would cease to bee it selfe, if it could be compell'd) but it is an *effectuall conquest*. The will (as all other faculties) is dead naturally in trespasses and sins: And a dead man is not raised to life againe by any *enticements*, nor yet compell'd unto a condition of such exact complacency and surebleness to nature by any act of *violence*. So then a man is made *willingly subject* unto Christ, neither by *meere morall persuasions*, nor by any *violent impulsions*; but by a
power,

VERS.

power, in it selfe *supernaturall, spirituell, or Divine*, and in its manner of working *sweetly tempered to the disposition of the will*, which is never by grace destroyed, but perfected. Therefore the Apostle saith, that it is *God who worketh in us to will and to doe*, *Phil. 2. 13.* first, hee frameth our will according to his owne (as *David* was said to bee a man *after Gods owne heart*) and secondly, by that will, and the imperate acts thereof, thus sanctified and still assisted by the Spirit of grace, hee setteth the other powers of nature on worke in further obedience unto his Will. And therefore the Prophet *David* praised God that had enabled him and his people *to offer willingly* unto the service of Gods house, and prayeth him that hee would ever keepe that willing disposition in the imaginations and thoughts of the hearts of his people, *1 Chron. 29, 14, 18.* Therefore, the Apostle saith, that *Our faith standeth not in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God*, *1 Cor. 4. 5.* Therefore likewise it is called *The faith of the operation of God who raised Christ from the dead*, *Col. 2. 12.*

For the more distinct opening and evidencing this point, how Christs people are made *Willing by his power*, I will onely lay together some brieft positions which I conceive to bee thereunto pertinent, and proceed to that which is more plaine and profitable. First, let us consider the *nature of the will*, which is, to be a *Free agent or moover*, to have *ex se*, and within it selfe an *indifferencie* and *undeterminatenesse* unto severall things; so that when it moves or not moves, when it moves one way or other, in none of these it suffers violence, but workes according to the condition of its owne nature.

Secondly, we may note that this indifferency is twofold, either habituall, belonging to the constitution of the will, which is nothing else, but an originall aptitude, or intrinsecall non-repugnancy in the will, to moove unto contrary extremes, to worke, or to suspend its owne working;

working; or else actual, which is in the exercise of the former, as objects present themselves, & this is twofold, either a freedom to good, or evil, or a freedom to wil, or not to wil.

Thirdly, notwithstanding the wil be in this manner free, yet it may have his freedom in both regards so determined, as that in such or such a condition, it cannot do what it should, or forbear what it should, or cannot do what it should not, nor forbear what it should not. Man fallen without the Grace of God, is free onely unto evil, and Christ in the time of his obedience was free wholly unto good. Man free to evil, but yet so, as that hee onely doth it voluntarily, hee cannot voluntarily leave it undone. Christ free onely to good, yet so, as that he doth it most freely, but could not freely omit the doing of it.

Fourthly, the wil worketh not in this condition of things unto moral objects without some other cōcurrent principles which sway and determine it severall waies; so that the wil is *principiū quod*, the facultie which moves, and the other *principiū quo*, the quality or vertue by which it moves. And these qualities are in naturall men the *flesh* or the originall concupiscence of our nature, which maketh the motions of the wil to be *ad hunc mundum*, the will of the flesh; and in the regenerate, the *Grace and Spirit of Christ*, so farre forth as they are regenerate.

Fifthly, as the wil is ever carried either by the flesh or the spirit to its objects, so neither to the one or the other, without the preceding conduct and direction of the practicall judgement, whether by grace illightned to judge aright, or by corrupt affections bribed & blinded to misguide the wil; for the wil being a rationall appetite, never moveth but *per modū iudicii*, upon apprehension of some goodnes & convenience in the thing whereunto it moves.

Sixthly, the judgement is never thoroughly illightned to understand Spirituall things in that immediate and ample beauty and goodnesse which is in them, but only by the Spirit of Christ, which maketh a man to have the

VERSE 3.

selfe-same minde, judgement, opinion, and apprehension of Heavenly things which hee had; so that Christ and a Christian doe *in spirit, thinke the same thing*, as the Apostle speakes, *Phil. 2. 5.* By the which Spirit of grace, working first upon the judgement to rectifie that, and to convince it of the evidence and necessity of that most universall and adequate good which it presenteth, the whole nature is proportionably renew'd, and Christ formed aswell in the will and affections, as in the understanding. As the body in the wombe is not shaped by peece-meale, one part after another, but altogether by proportionable degrees and progresse of perfection. So that at the same time when the Spirit of grace by an act of Heavenly illumination is present with the judgement of reason to evidence, not the truth onely, but the excellency of the knowledge of Christ thereunto, it is likewise present by an act of Heavenly perswasion, and most intimate allurements unto the will and affections, sweetly accommodating its working unto the exigence and condition of the faculties, that they likewise may with such liberty and complacency as becomes both their owne nature, and the quality of obedience required, apply themselves to the desire and prosecution of those excellent things which are with so spirituall an evidence set forth unto them in the ministry of the Word. As by the same soule the eye seeth, and the eare heareth, and the hand worketh: so when Christ by his Spirit is formed in us, (for the Spirit of Christ is the *Aethus primus*, or soule of a Christian man, that which animateth him unto an heavenly being and working) every power of the soule and body is in some proportionable measure enabled to worke *suo modo*, in such manner as is convenient and proper to the quality of its nature, to the right apprehension and voluntary prosecution of spiritual things. The same Spirit which by the word of Grace doth fully convince the judgement, and let the light of the knowledge

Rom. 8. 9, 10, 11.
1 Cor. 6. 17.

ledge of the glory of God shine upon the minde; doth by the same word of grace proportionably excite, and assist the will to affect it, that as the understanding is elevated to the spirituall perception, so the will likewise is enabled to the spirituall love of Heavenly things.

By all which wee may observe that this working of the Spirit of grace, whereby wee become voluntaries in Christs Service, and whereby he worketh in us both to will and to doe those things which of our selves we were not obedient unto, neither indeed could bee, is both a sweet and powerfull worke; as in the raising of a man from the dead (to which in the Scriptures the renewing of a sinner is frequently compared) there is a worke of great power, which yet being admirably suteable to the integrity of the creature, must needs bring an exact complacency and delight with it. We may frequently in holy Scriptures observe, that of the same effect severall things may be affirmed by reason of its connexion unto severall causes, and of the severall casualties or manners of concurrence with which those severall causes haue contributed any influence unto it. As the obedience of Christ was of all other the most free and voluntary service of his Father; if wee consider it with respect unto his most Holy, and therefore most undistracted, and unhindered will: (for if it were not voluntary, it were no obedience) and yet notwithstanding it was most certaine and infallible, if wee consider it with respect to the sanctitie of his nature, to the unmesurableness of his unction, to the plenitude of his uneducible and unerring Spirit, to the mystery of his hypostaticall union, and the communication of properties betweene his natures, whereby what-ever action was done by him, might justly bee called the action of God, in which regard it was impossible for him to sinne. In like manner, the passive obedience of Christ was most free and voluntary, as it respected his owne will, for hee troubled himselfe, hee hum-

V E R S E 3.

* For if *Assuerus* the husband of *Ester*, were the same, who was father to *Darius* the Median, *Dan. 9. 1.* (as *Melchior Canus l. 11. c. 5. p. 308.* thinketh) then it is plaine that the utter defolation of the Iews wold have preveted their restitution under *Cyrus*, who was grandchild to that *Assuerus*. And if, as others, we take him to have been *Cambyses*, the son of *Cyrus* or *Darius*, *Hydaspis* (as *Carion lib. 2. & Tisinnus in Ester. c. 1.*) or *Xerxes* sonne to *Darius*, (as *Genebrard. l. 1. p. 331. Junin Ezra. 4. 6. Ester. 1. 1.* *Helvicus Scalig. Emend. temp. l. 6.*) or *Artaxerxes Longimanus*.

(as *Bellarmin. l. 1. de verbo Dei. c. 7. Et de scriptoribus verbo Mardocheus, p. 31.*) or *Artaxerxes Mnemon*. (as *Torniellus An. mun. 3650. § 1.*) Then we must note, that though the restoring of the Captivity, began in *Cyrus. Esay. 44. 28.* yet it was not accomplished on the sudden. Since above 100. yeeres after, *Artaxerxes Longimanus* published an Edict, *Ezra. 7. 13.* like that of *Cyrus, Ezra. 1. 3.* to give liberty for building the City, and for every one of the Iews that were willing to returne into their owne countrey againe.

and

bled and emptied himselfe, he laid downe his owne life, hee became obedient unto death, even the death of the Crosse; and yet, thus it was written, and thus it behoved or was necessary for Christ to suffer, if wee respect the predeterminate counsell and purpose of God, who had so ordained, *Ath. 4. 28.* God would not suffer a bone of Christs to bee broken, and yet hee did not disable the souldiers from doing it, for they had still as much strength and liberty to have broken his, as the others who were crucified with him, but that which in regard of the truth and prediction of holy Scriptures was most certainly to bee fulfilled, in regard of the second causes by whom it was fulfilled was most free and voluntary. Wee finde what a chaine of meere casualties and contingencies (if we looke onely upon second causes) did concur, in the offence of *Vashti*, in the promotion of *Ester*; in the treason of the two Chamberlaines, in the wakefulnesse of the King, in the opening of the Chronicles, in the acceptance of *Esters* request, and in the favour of the King unto her, and all this ordered by the immutable and efficacious providence of God (which moderates and guides causes and effects of all sorts to his owne fore-appointed ends) for the deliverance of his people from that intended slaughter determined against them, the execution whereof, would in part have voided that great promise of their returning out of captivity after seventie yeeres: with relation unto which promise their deliverance at this time was in regard of Gods Truth and purpose necessary, though in regard of second causes brought about by a cumulation of contingencies. In like manner, when the hearts of men do voluntarily dedicate

and submit themselves to the Kingdome of Christ, if we looke upon it with relation unto the Spirit of Grace, which is the *principium quo*, the formall vertue whereby it is wrought; so it is an effect of power, and as it were, an act of conquest; and yet looke vpon it with relation unto the heart it selfe, which is *Principium quod*, the materiall efficient cause thereof, and so it is a most free, sweet, connaturall action, exactly temper'd to the exigencie of the second cause, and proceeding therefrom with most exact delight, answerably to the measure of the Grace of illumination, or spirituall evidence in the minde, whereby our naturall blindnesse, prejudices, and misperswasions may be remov'd: and to the measure of the Grace of excitation, assistance, and co-operation in the heart, whereby the natural frowardnesse and reluctancy thereof may be subdued.

In one word, there are but three things requisite to make up a free and voluntarie action. First, it must be *cum judicio rationis*, with a preceding judgement. Secondly, it must be *cum indifferencia*, there must be an internall indeterminatenesse and equall disposition of it selfe unto severall extremes. Thirdly, it must be *cum dominio actus*, the will must have the power of her owne worke. And all these three doe sweetly consist with the point of the Text, That the heart is made willing to obey Christ by an act of power.

For first, this power we speake of is onely the power of the Word and Spirit, both which doe alwaies worke in the ordinary course of Gods proceeding by them with men, *secundum judicium*, by a way of judgement and conviction, by a way of teaching and demonstration, which is suteable to rationall facultie.

Secondly, which way soever the will is by the Spirit of Grace directed and perswaded to move, it still retaines an habituall or internall habitude upto the extremes, so that if it should have moved towards them, that motion

VERSE 3.

would have beene as naturall and suteable to its condition, as this which it followeth; for the determination of the act is no extinguishment of the libertie thereunto.

Thirdly, when the Spirit by the power of the word of Grace doth worke the will in us, yet still the will hath the dominion of its owne act, that is, it is not servilely, or compulsorily thereunto overswayed, but worketh, *ex motu proprio*, by a selfe-motion, unto which it is quickened and actuated by the sweetnesse of divine Grace, as the seed of that action, according to that excellent knowne speech of Saint *Augustine*, *Certum est nos velle cum volumus, sed Deus facit ut velimus*. Thus wee see how the subjection of Christs people unto his kingdome is a voluntary act in regard of mans will, and an act of power in regard of Gods Spirit inwardly illighting the minde with the spirituall evidence, not onely of the truth, but the excellencie and superlative goodnesse of the Gospell of Christ; and inwardly touching the heart, and framing it to a lovely conformity and obedience thereunto.

The ground of this point why there is an act of power required to conquer the wils of sinners unto Christ, is that notable enmitie, stoutnesse, reluctancie, rebellion, wearinesse, averfenesse; in one word, fleshlinesse which possesseth the wils of men by nature: such forwardnesse unto evil, so much frowardnesse against good, such a spring and byas from private ends, and worldly objects, such feares without, such fightings within, such allurements on the right hand, such frownes and affrightments on the left, such depths of Satan, such hellish and unsearchable plots of principalities and powers, to keepe fast and faithfull to themselves this chiefe mistress of the soule of man; such flie and soaking, such furious and fiery temptations, to flatter or to fright it away from Christ; such strong prejudices, such deepe reasonings, such high imaginations, such scornfull and meane conceits of the purity and power of the wayes of Christ, such

blow

deceit

Christs people a willing people.

345

VERSE 3.

deceitfulnesse of heart, such mis-perfwasions and presumptions of our present peace, or at least of the easinesse of our future reformation, such strong surmises of carnall hopes which will be prevented, or worldly dangers incurred, or private ends disappointed; such luts to bee denied, such members to be hewed off, such friends to be forsaken, such passions to be subdued, such certaine persecutions from the world, such endlesse solicitations of Satan, such irreconcilable contentions with the flesh; in the midst of all these pull-backes, how can we thinke the will should escape and breake thorow, if God did not send his Spirit, as once the Angell unto *Lot*, *Gen. 19. 16.* to lay hands upon it while it lingers and hankers after its wonted course, to use a mercifull conquest over it, and, as the Scriptures expresse it, * to *lead it*, to *draw it*, to *take it by the arme*, to *carry it in his bosome*, to *beare it as an Eagle her young ones* on her wings, nay, by the terrours of the Lord, and the power of his Word and wrath, to pull and snatch it as a brand out of the fire? Certainly, there is so much extreme perverseness, so much hellishnesse, and devillish antipathy to God and his service in the heart by nature, that if it were left to its owne stubbornnesse to kicke, and rebell, and fall backe and harden it selfe, and were not set upon by the Grace of Christ, no man living would turne unto him, or make use of his blood; by the same reason that any one man perissheth, every man would too, because in all there is as fundamentall and originall enmitie to the wayes of Grace, as there is in any.

The consideration whereof may justly humble us in our reflexion upon ourselves, whom neither the Promises of heaven can allure, nor the blood and passions of Christ perswade, nor the flames of hell affright from our sinnes, till the Lord by the sweet and gracious power of his holy Spirit subdue and conquer the soule unto himselfe. If a man should rise from the dead, and truly

* Rom. 8. 14.
Ioh. 6. 44.
Hos. 11. 3.
Esa. 40. 11.
Deut. 1. 31.
Deut. 32. 11.
Iude ver. 13.

VERSE 3.

a Gen. 49. 6.
 Ier. 6. 17.
 Ier. 44. 16.
 Luk. 19. 27.
 Ephes. 2. 3.
 b 1 Sam. 15. 23.
 c Malac. 3. 13.
 d Rom. 9. 19.
 10. 21.
 e Ezek. 2. 33. 4.
 f Hof. 5. 2.
 2 Cor. 10. 5.
 g Ier. 7. 27.
 Ier. 8. 5. 6.
 Ier. 18. 18.
 h Ier. 19. 15.
 Zech. 7. 11.
 i Ier. 6. 10.
 Rom. 3. 11.
 2 Thess. 3. 2.
 Esai. 1. 3.

relate unto the conscience the woefull and everlasting
 horrors of hell, if a mans naturall capacity were made as
 wide to apprehend the wrath, fury, and vengeance of a
 provoked God, the foulness, guilt, and venome of a
 soule, fuller of finnes than the heavens of starres, as the
 most intelligent divels of hell doe conceive them; If an
 Archangell or *Seraphim* should be sent from heaven to
 reveale unto the soule of a naturall man the infinite glory
 of Gods presence, the full pleasures of his right hand, the
 admirable beauty of his wayes, the intimate conformity
 and resemblance betweene his divine nature in himselfe,
 and Image of his holinesse in the Creature, the unsearch-
 able and bottomlesse love of Christ in his Incarnation and
 sufferings, the endlessse incomprehensible vertue and pre-
 tiousnesse of his blood and prayers; yet so desperately
 evill is the heart of man, that if after all this, God should
 not afford the blessed operation and concurrence of his
 owne gracious Spirit, the revelation of his owne arme and
 power upon the soule, to set on those instrumentall cau-
 ses, it would be invincible by any evidence, which all the
 cries and flames of hell, which all the armies and hosts of
 heaven were able to beget. There is no might or power
 able to snatch a man out of the hands of his sinne, but only
 Gods Spirit. Notable are the expressions which the holy
 Ghost every where useth, to set forth this wretched con-
 dition of the heart by nature: a wilfulnesse and selte-
 willednesse, *We will not hearken, we will not have this man*
to raigne over us; *Salpurgu*, many wils in one. b Rebellion
 and stubbornnesse, c stoutnesse of heart, d contestation
 with God, & gain-saying his Word; e Impudence, stifte-
 nesse, and hard-heartednesse, f mischievous profoundnesse,
 and deep reasonings against the Law of God; g pertina-
 cie, resolvednesse, and abiding in mischief; they hold fast
 deceit; obstinacie and h selfe-obduration, *They have*
hardned their necks that they might not heare; i impoten-
 cie, unmoveablenesse, and undocilenesse, their heart is un-

Christs people a willing people.

347

circumcised; they cannot heare, there is none that understandeth or seeketh after God: k scorne and slighting of the messages of the Lord, where is his Word? *Where is the promise of his comming?* ¹ Incredulity, and belying the Lord in his Word, saying it is not he: *Who hath beleevved our report, and to whom is the arme of the Lord revealed?*

^m Wrestling, resisting, and fighting with the Word, rejecting the counsell of God, vexing and striving with his holy Spirit, *Ye have alwaies resisted the holy Ghost.* ⁿ Rage and fiercenesse of disordred affections, despising of goodness, trayterous, heady, and high-minded thoughts. ^o Brutishnesse of immoderate lust, the untamed madnesse of an enraged beast without any restraint of reason, or moderation. In one word, ^a p. hell, and gulfe of unsearchable mischiefe, which is never satisfied. It is impossible that any reasonable man, duly considering all these difficulties, should conceive such an heart as this to be overcome with meere mora'l perswasions, or by any thing lesse than the mightie power of Gods owne Grace. To him therefore we should willingly acknowledge all our conversion and salvation. So extremely impotent are wee, O Lord, unto any good, so utterly unprofitable, and unmeet for our Masters use, and yet so strongly hurried by the impulsion of our owne lust towards hell, that no *precipice*, nor danger, no hope nor reward, no man or Angell is able to stop us, without thine owne immediate power, and therefore *Not unto us, O Lord, nor unto us, but unto thy name* onely be attributed the glory of our conversion.

Again, by this consideration we should be provoked to stirre up and call together all our strength in the Lords service, to recover our mis-spent time, to use the more contention and violence for the Kingdome of Heaven, when wee consider how abundant wee have beene in the workes of sinne, in the pursuing of vaine desires which had neither end nor hope in them. O how
happie

V E R S E 3.

^k Jer. 17. 15.

² Chro. 30. 10.

² Pet. 3. 4.

¹ Esai. 53. 1.

Ier. 5. 12.

^m Gen. 6. 3.

Luk. 7. 30.

Esai. 63. 10.

Act. 7. 51.

ⁿ 2 Tim. 3. 2, 3, 4.

Rom. 1. 19, 31.

^o Ier. 2. 24. 8. 6.

Hos. 8. 6.

^p Ier. 17. 9.

Habac. 2. 5.

VERSE 3.

happie a thing would it be, if men could serve God with the same proportion of vigour and willingnesse of mind, as they served Satan and themselves before? I was never tired in that way, I went on indefatigably towards hell, like a swift Dromedary, or an untamed heifer, I pursued those evill desires which had vanity for their object, and miserie for their end, no fruit but shame, and no wages but death. But in the service of Christ I have a price before me, an abiding Citie, an enduring substance, an immarcescible crowne to fix the highest of my thoughts upon: I have the Promises of Christ to strengthen me, his Angels to guard, his Spirit to lead, his Word to illighten me. In one word, I have a Soule to save, and a God to honour. And why should not I apply my power, to serve him, who did reach forth his owne power to convert me? A long way I have to goe, and I must doe it in a spanne of time; so many temptations to overcome, so many corruptions to shake off, so many promises to beleieve, so many precepts to obey, so many mysteries to study, so many workes to finish, and so little time for all: my weakenesses on one side, my busineses on another, my enemies and my sinnes round about me take away so much, that I have scarce any left to give to God. And yet, alas, if I could serve God on earth, as he is served in heauen, if I had the strength of Angels, and glorified Saints, to doe his will, it would come infinitely short of that good will of God in my redemption, or of his power in my conversion. If God should have said to all the Angels in heaven, there is such a poore wretch posting with full strength towards hell, goe stand in his way and drive him back againe, all those glorious armies would have beene too few to blocke up the passages betweene sin and hell; without the concurrence of Gods owne Spirit and power, they could have returned none other answer but this, we have done all we can to perswade and turne him, but he will not be turned.

If

The Beautie of Holinesse.

349

VERSE 3.

If then the Lord did put to his owne power to save me, great reason there is that I should set my weake and impotent faculties to honour him, especially since hee hath beene pleased both to mingle with his service great joy, liberty, and tranquillity here, and also to set before it a full, a sure, and a great reward, for my further animation and encouragement thereunto.

The fourth thing observed in this Verse was the attire wherein Christs people should attend upon his service, *In the Beauties of Holinesse*] These words referre to those before, and that either to the word [*People*] or to the word [*willing*]. If to [*People*] then they are a further description of Christs Subjects or Souldiers, they shall be all like servants in Princes Courts, beautifully arraied, like the Priests of the Law that had garments of beauty and glory, and so *Schindler* expounds it, *In societate Sacerdotum*. If to the word [*willing*] then it notes the ground and inducement of their great devotion and subjection unto Christs Kingdome, that as the people came up in troopes to the Lords house, which was the Beauty of his Holinesse, or as men doe flocke together to the sight of some honorable and stately solemnity: so Christs people should by the beauty of his banners be allured to gather unto him, and flye in multitudes as Doves unto their windowes. Which way ever wee understand the words we may from them observe, First, *That Holinesse is a glorious and a beautifull thing*. The holy oile with which all the vessels of the Sanctuary were to bee consecrated, was a type of that Spirit which sanctifieth us and maketh us Kings and Priests unto God, and it was to be compounded of the purest and most delicate ingredients which the art of the Apothecary could put together. Therefore our Saviour still calleth his Spouse the *fairest of women*; to note, that no other beautie in the world is to be compared with Holinesse. Therefore our Faith, and Holinesse is called a *Wedding Garment*, at which

Exod. 30. 23.

Cant. 4. 2.

Mat. 22. 12.

VERSE 2.

^a Rom. 13. 14.
Col. 3. 12.

^b Psal. 45. 13, 14.
Esa. 61. 10.
Ier. 2. 32.
Ezek. 16. 8, 14.

^c Cant. 5. 10. 16.

^d Hag. 2. 7.

^e Psal. 84. 1.

87. 3.

Revel. 21. 18, 23

^f 2 Cor. 7. 1.

^g Zech. 3. 3, 4.

Esa. 1. 5, 6.

^h Ioh. 15. 3.

17. 17.

which solemnitie men use above all other to adorne themselves with their costliest and most beautifull attire. Therefore we are said to ^a Put on the Lord Iesus, and to Put on bowels of mercie, and humblenesse of minde, and meekenesse, &c. and therefore likewise the Church is compared to a ^b Bride decked in her choicest ornaments and jewels, broidred worke, silke, fine linnen, bracelets, chaines, jewels, crownes, gold, silver, perfect comelinesse, garments of salvation, and of praise, robes of righteousness, &c. And Christ the husband of this Spouse, the ^c chiefest and most amiable of ten thousand, even altogether lovely, The ^d Desire of all Nations; and the allure-ment of all hearts that can looke upon him. And ^e Jerusalem the palace of this glorious couple described by the most pretious and desireable things which can bee thought on. Jasper the wall, gold the pavement, pearle the gates, pretious stones the foundation, and the Lord the light thereof. Of our selves by reason of sinne we are full of ^f filthinesse and deformity in flesh and spirit, & clothed with filthy garments, and overspread from the head to the foot with blaines and putrefactions. It is only the holy Word of God which ^h maketh us cleane from our filthinesse and from all our pollutions. *By the washing of water through the word Christ sanctifieth us, that he may present unto himselfe in glory a glorious Church without spot or wrinkle that it might bee holy and without blemish, Ephes. 5. 27.* And therefore the Apostle Saint Peter exhorteth Christian women to adorne the *inner man of the heart* with the ornament of a meeke and quiet spirit which is in the sight of God (whose pure eye they ought rather to please than the wanton eye of man) of great price, 1 Pet. 3. 3, 4. And the truth hereof may bee proved even from the practice of hypocrites themselves: for no man will counterfeit villanies, and make a shew of the vices, which indeed hee hath nor, except he be desperately thereunto swayed by an humor of

The Beautie of Holinesse.

351

VERSE 3.

of pleasing his wicked companions. And therefore Saint *Austin* complaineth of it as of a prodigious corruption of his nature, that he did sometimes bely himselfe to his wicked associates, and boasted of the wickednesse which hee durst not practise. No woman will paint her selfe with dung, or spread inke upon her face. It must bee beautifull in it selfe which any man will ordinarily counterfeit: so that Holinesse hath the prerogative of an enemies suffrage, which is one of the strongest evidences, to testifie the beauty and excellency thereof.

This point will more distinctly appeare if we consider either the *Author, Nature, Properties, or Operations* of this Holinesse. First, the *Author* is God himselfe by his Spirit. *The very God of Peace sanctifie you wholly*, saith the Apostle, and *the God of Peace make you perfect in every good worke to doe his Will*. Therefore the Spirit is called a Spirit of Holinesse, by the power whereof Christ rising from the dead was declared to bee the Son of God, to note the answerablenesse betweene raising from the dead, or giving life where there was none before, and the sanctification of a sinner. Therefore the Apostle calleth it the renewing of the Holy Ghost, and the forming of Christ in us, the quickening, and creating us to good workes. By all which wee may note, that what Beauty the Creation brought upon that empty and unshaped Chaos when it was distributed into this orderly frame which wee now admire; or what beauty the reunion of a living soule unto a dead and gasty body doth restore unto it; the same beauty doth Holinesse bring unto the soule of a man which was filthy before. But yet further wee must note that God did not make man as other ordinary Creatures, for some low and inferiour use; (and yet *Salomon* saith, that they were made *all beautifull* in theintime) but there was a pause, a consultation, a more than common wisdom, power, and mercy revealed in the workmanship of man: for God made man for his
owne

1 Thes. 5. 23.
Heb. 13. 20, 21.
Rom. 1. 4.

Tit. 3. 5.
Gal. 4. 19.
Ephes. 2. 5, 10.

VERSE 3.

Pfal. 4. 3.
Esaï. 43. 27.

^a 1 Tim. 3. 15.

^b 1 Cor. 6. 16.

^c Ier. 3. 17.

^d Esaï. 60. 13.

^e 1 Cor. 3. 9.

^f Cant. 7. 5.

owne more peculiar delight, company and communion one whom hee would enter into a more intimate league and covenant withall. *The Lord hath set apart the man that is godly for himselfe. Thus people have I formed for my selfe, they shall shew forth my praise,* I will magnifie the beauty of my glorious vertues in those whom I have sanctified for my selfe. Thus we finde what perfect comelineesse the Lord bestowed upon his people, when he entered into Covenant with them, and made them his *owne*, one which was alwaies to leane on his bosome, and to stand in his owne presence, *Ezek. 16. 8, 14.* The Church is the Lords ^a *own House*, ^a *Temple* in the which he will dwell and walke; it is his ^c *Throne*, in which he sitteth as our Prince and Law-giver. And in this regard it must needs bee extraordinary beautifull; for *the* ^d *Lord will beautifie the place of his Sanctuary*, and will make the place of his feete glorious. Now then, if by Holinesse wee are made ^e *Gods building*, and that not as the rest of the world is for his Creatures to inhabite, but as a Temple for himselfe to dwell in, as a ^f *Gallery* for him to walke and refresh himselfe in, certainly Holinesse which is the Ornament and ingraving of this Temple must needs bee a glorious thing, for there is much glory and wisdom in all Gods workes.

Secondly, if wee consider the *Nature* of Holinesse, it must needs be very *Beautifull*. In generall, it consists in a *Relation of conformity*, as all Goodnesse, save that of God doth: for no Creature is so absolute as to have its being from it selfe, and therefore its Goodnesse cannot consist in any thing which hath its originall in it selfe. It is the Rule and End which denominateth the Goodnesse of any created thing; that therefore which ought not to worke for its owne end, ought not to worke by its owne Rule, for he who is Lord of an end, must needs bee Lord of the meanes and directions which lead unto that end. And this is indeede the ground of all sinne, when men make

The Beautie of Holinesse.

353

VERSE 3.

make themselves, their owne will, wit, reason or resolutions, to bee the spring and fountaine of all their actions. Therefore sinne is called our *owne waies*, and the lusts of our owne hearts, and our owne counsells, because it is absolutely from our selves, and hath no constituted rule to moderate or direct it. Impossible it is for any Creature, as it comes out of Gods hands, to bee without a Law, or to bee an originall law unto it selfe: for as hee who hath none over him cannot possibly be subject unto any Law, in as much as a Law is but the declaration of a Superiours will what hee requires to bee done, and what he threatneth on default thereof to inflict: so hee that is under the wisdom and ends of another, must needs likewise bee subject to the Lawes which his will prescribes for advancing and compassing his owne ends, who if hee bee in his owne nature and ends most holy, must needs be holy in the Lawes which he enacts. By all which we may observe, that Holinesse consisteth in conformity, so that according to the excellency of the patterne whereunto it refers, so is the measure of its beauty to bee conjectured. And the patterne of our Holinesse is God himselfe, *Bee you holy, as your Father which is in Heaven is Holy.* Other Creatures have some prints and paths of God in them, and so are all beautifull in their time: but Man had the Image of God created in him, his will was set up in our heart as a Law of nature, most pure, right, holy, good, wise and perfect, and that Law did beare the same relation to mans life, as his soule doth unto his members, to animate, forme, and organize every motion of the heart, every word of the mouth, every action of the soule and body according unto the will of God. When after this, man threw away his Image, and God was pleased in mercy againe to renew Holinesse in him, he did it againe by another patterne, or rather the same exhibited in another manner. Hee made him then conformable to the image of his Son, the heavenly *Adam* who

Rom. 8. 19.
1 Cor. 15. 49.

VERSE 3.

who is himselfe the image of the invisible God, the expresse Character of his Fathers brightnesse, a Sunne of Righteousnesse, a morning Star, the Light of the world, the Fairest of ten thousand. So that compare Holinesse with the first Originall draught thereof in Paradise, the nature of *Adam* as it came new out of Gods fashioning, or that, with the Law of God written in his heart, or that, with the Holinesse of God, of which it was a ray shining into the soule, or that Image of God with it selfe in Christ the second *Adam*, and every way Holinesse in its nature consists in a Conformity and Commensuration to the most beautifull things.

Thirdly, if wee consider some of the chiefe *Properties* of Holinesse, wee shall finde it in that regard likewise very Beautifull. First, *Rectitude* and *Uprightnesse*, sincerity and simplicity of heart, *God made man upright, but they have found out a many inventions*, that is, have sought up and downe through many turnings and by-ways to satisfie crooked affections. It was ^b *David*s Prayer, *Make thy way strait before my face*, and it is the Apostles instruction, ^c *Make strait paths for your feete, lest that which is lame bee turned out of the way*. True Holinesse is a plaine, and an even thing, without falsehood, guile, perversenesse of Spirit, deceitfulnesse of heart, or starting aside. It hath one end, one rule, one way, one heart, whereas hypocrites are in the Scripture called ^d *Double minded men*, because they pretend to God, and follow the world. And ^e *crooked men*, like that ^f swelling of a wall, whose parts are not perpendicular, nor leuell to their foundation. Now rectitude, sincerity, and singleness of heart is ever both in the eyes of God and man a beautifull thing.

Secondly, *Harmony* and *Uniformity* within it selfe. The Philosopher saith of a *Iust man* that he is like a *Dye*, which is every way even and like it selfe, turne it how you will, it falls upon an equall bottome. And so Holinesse

^a Eccles. 7. 29.

Ier. 31. 22.

Esa. 57. 10.

^b Psal. 5. 8.

^c Heb. 12. 13.

^d Iam. 1. 8.

^e Deut. 32. 5.

^f Esa. 30. 12. 13.

The Beauty of Holinesse.

355

VERSE 3.

lineſſe keepes the heart like its ſelfe in all conditions as a watch though all together it may bee tossed up and downe with the agitation of him that carrieth it about him; yet that motion doth no way perturb the frame, or disorder the workings of the spring and wheels within: so though the man may bee many wayes tempted, and disquieted, yet the frame of his heart, the order of his affections, the government of the spirit within him is not thereby stopped, but holdeth on in the same tenor. Wee know in the body if any part doe exceede the due proportion, it destroyes the beauty and acceptableneſſe of the rest. Symmetry and fitnesse of the parts unto one another is that which commends a body. Now Holinesse consisteth in this proportion, there is in it an *exaſſe* an *exaſſe* of Obedience, an equall respect unto all Gods Commandements, an hatred of every false way, an Universall worke upon the whole Spirit, soule, and body, a supply made unto every joynt, a measure dispenced unto every part, not a grace due unto Christian integrity which is not in some proportion fashioned in a man. Christ hath no *Monſters* begotten by his Spirituall seed: for Monſters are ever caused either by an exceſſe, or by a defect of seed; in the one case nature being overcharged is forc'd to labour that which remains, and will not be laid aside, into some superfluous members; and in the other for want of materials to leave her worke unfinished, and destitute of some necessary parts. But now first wee are to note that a man can have no superfluity of Grace, we can never have too much of that, the fulnesse whereof wee should labour to get, and for the other danger, wee know Christ hath a Residue of spirit to supply any defect, and to make up whatsoever is away for the fashioning of Christ in us. So then Holinesse fashioneth the whole man. Hee that leaves any one faculty of his soule neglected, or any one part of the Service or Law of God disobeyed (I

A a

ſpeake

VERSE 3.

spake of a totall, and constant neglect) is undoubtedly an Hypocrite and disobeyes all, *Iam. 2. 10, 11.* As *David* with a litle stone slew *Goliath*, because his forehead was open; so can our enemy easily deale with us if hee observe any faculty naked and neglected. The actuall and totall breach of any one Commandement, (*Totall*; I meane, when the whole heart doth it, though haply it execute not all the obliquity which the compasse of the sinne admits) is an implicite, habituall, interpretative, and conditionall breach of all; His soule stands alike disaffected to the holinesse of every Commandement, and hee would undoubtedly adventure on the breach of this, if such exigences and conditions as misguided him in the other should thereunto as strongly induce him. He that hath done *any one* of these abominations, hath done *all these abominations* in Gods account. *Ezek. 18. 10, 13.* There being then in a Christian man a futeable life and vigour of holinesse in every part, and a mutuall conspiring of them all in the same wayes and ends, there must needs likewise be therein an excellent beauty.

Thirdly, *growth* and further *Progresse in these proportions*: for it is not onely uprightnesse and Symmetry of parts, which causeth perfect beauty and comelinesse, but stature likewise. Now Holinesse is a thriving and growing thing. The Spirit is seede, and the Word is raine, and the Father is an Husband-man, and therefore the Life of Christ is an *abounding Life*, *Iohn 10. 10.* The rivers of the Spirit of Grace spring up unto Eternity, *Iohn 7. 36.* As Christ hath no Monsters, so neither hath hee any *Dwarfs* in his mysticall Body: but all his grow up unto the pitch of perfection which it becommeth them to have in him, even *unto the measure of the stature of the fulnesse of Christ*, *Ephes. 4. 12, 13.* The meaning of the Apottle is, that Christ is not alwaies an Infant in us as when he is first formed, but that he doth *Grandescere in Sanctis*, as *Musculus* well expresseth it, that he groweth up.

The Beauty of Holinesse.

357

VERSE 3.

up still unto the stature of a man : for wheresoever there is faith and holinesse there is ever ingenerated an appetite for augmentation. Faith is of a growing and Charity of an *abounding nature*, 2 *Thes.* 1. 3. By the Word of truth, as by incorruptible seed wee were begotten, and by the same Word as by the sap and milke are wee nourished, and grow up thereby. This affection Holinesse ever works, as it did in the Disciples, *Lord, increase our faith*, and in *David, Strengthen, O God, that which thou hast wrought for us.*

Iam. 1. 18. 21.
1 Pet. 1. 23.
2. 2.
Luk. 17. 5.
Psal. 68. 28.

Fourthly, besides the Rectitude, Harmony, and Maturity which is in Holinesse, there is another property, which maketh the Beauty thereof surpasse all other Beauty, and that is *Indeficiencie*. The measure of Christ must be the Rule of our growth, but Christ never was overtaken by old age or times of declining, He never saw corruption : so wee must proceede from strength to strength, like the Sunne to the perfect day, but there is no sinking or setting of Holinesse in the heart. They that are planted in Gods House doe still bring forth fruite in their *Old age*, and are even then fat and flourishing. As our outward man decayeth, so our inward man groweth day by day. Our holinesse is a branch of the life of Christ in us, which doth never of it selfe runne into death, and therefore is not *aptata* of it selfe to decay : for that is nothing but an earnest, inchoation, and assurance of death. *That which waxeth old*, saith the Apostle, *is ready to vanish away*, *Heb.* 8. 13.

Psal. 92. 14.

Fourthly, and lastly, if we consider the *Operations* of Holinesse, that likewise will evidence the Beauty thereof, for it hath none but gracious and honourable effects. It filleth the Soule with Joy, Comfort, and Peace : All Joy, Unspeakable and Glorious Joy, Peace, quietnesse, assurance, songs, and everlasting Joy. It maketh the blinde see, the deafe heare, the lame leape, the dumbe sing, the wilderness and parched ground to be-

Rom. 15. 13.
1 Pet. 1. 8.
Esa. 32. 17.
Esa. 35. 5, 10.

VERSE 3.

Ela. 25. 6.

Cant. 2. 4, 5.

Pfal. 45. 15.

Cant. 1. 4.

Cant. 7. 5.

Iohn 14. 21. 23.

Heb. 12. 14.

Pfal. 45. 11.

Cant. 4. 9.

come springs of water. It entertaineth the soule with feasts of fatted things, and of refined wines, and carrieth it into the banquetting-house unto apples and flagons. It giveth the soule a deare communion with God in Christ, a sight of him, an accessse unto him, a boldnesse in his presence, an admission into most holy delights, and intimate conferences with him in his bed-chamber, and in his galleries of love. In one word, it gathers the admiration of men, it secures the protection of Angels, and which is argument of more beautie than all the creatures in the world have besides, it attracteth the eye and heart, the longings and ravishments, the tender compassions and everlasting delights of the Lord Jesus.

I have insisted on those properties of holinesse, which denote *inward beautie*, because all the graces of the Spirit doe beautifie inherently. But the word properly signifying *Decus* or *Ornatum*, outward adorning by a metaphor of rich apparell, expressing the internall excellencie of the soule, notes unto us two things more.

First, that the people of Christ are not onely sanctified within, but have interest in that unspotted holinesse of Christ, wherewith they are clothed as with an ornament. So the Priests ^a of God are said to be *clothed with righteousness*, and we are said to ^b *put on Christ*: And the righteousness of Christ is frequently compared to ^c *long white robes*, fit to ^d cover our sinnes, to hide our nakednesse, and to protect our persons from the wrath of God: so that to the eye of his justice wee appeare, as it were parts of Christ; as when *Iacob* wore *Esau's* garment, hee was as *Esau* to his father, and in that relation obtained the blessing. God carrieth himselfe towards us in Christ, as if we our selves had fulfilled *all righteousness*, as if there were no ground of contestation with us, or exception against us. And this is indeed the *beautie of holinesse*: The modell, prototype, and originall of *all beautie*.

^a Psal. 132. 9.^b Gal. 3. 27.^c Revel. 3. 18.

4. 4.

6. 11.

7. 9.

^d Psal. 32. 1.

Secondly,

The Beauty of Holinesse.

359

VERSE 3.

Secondly, from the metaphoricall allusion (as it is usually understood) it notes unto us likewise, that all the people of Christ are *Priests unto God*, to offer up sacrifices acceptable unto him by Jesus Christ. They have all the priviledges, and the duties of Priests. To approach unto God, ^e we have libertie to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus; to consult and have communion with him, to be his *Remembrancer*; for as his Spirit is his Remembrancer unto us, & he shall bring *all things to your remembrance*, whatsoever I have said unto you; so is he ^h our Remembrancer unto God, to put him in minde of his mercy and promises, to make mention of him, and to give him no rest. To know, and propagate his truth; this ⁱ was the Office of the Priest, to bee the Keeper of Knowledge, and to teach it unto others: and this knowledge in the Gospell doth ^k overflow the earth, and make every ^l man, in a spirituall sense, a Priest, an Instructor, and Edifier of his brother. To offer to him such sacrifices as hee now delighteth in: the ^m sacrifices of thanksgiving, the ⁿ sacrifices of a broken and contrite spirit, the ^o sacrifices of praise, confession, good workes, and mutuall communicating unto one another: in one word, the ^p sacrificing of a mans whole selfe, to be consecrated as a kinde of first fruit unto God, being sanctified by the holy Ghost. There is no man actually belonging unto the Kingdome of Christ, who hath not all these holy affections wrought in him, and maketh conscience of them, as of his calling, and the duties of his life.

Wee see then that *Holinesse* is the badge of Christs Subjects; they are called ^q *The people of his Holinesse*: ^r Israel was *Holinesse unto the Lord*, and the *first fruits* of his increase consecrated unto him and his service as a kinde of first fruits. The livery of Christs servants is a parcell of the same holy Spirit with which his owne humane nature was clothed. ^s All the vessels and ministrall

^e 1 Per. 2. 5.

Esa. 56. 7.

Revel. 1. 6.

^f Heb. 10. 19.

^g Iohn 14. 26.

^h Esa. 43. 26.

Esa. 62. 6, 7.

ⁱ Mal. 2. 7.

^k Esa. 11. 9.

^l Col. 3. 16.

Heb. 3. 13.

Iude vers. 20.

^m Psal. 107. 22.

ⁿ Psal. 51. 17.

^o Heb. 13. 15, 16

Phil. 4. 18.

^p Rom. 12. 1.

Rom. 15. 16.

Esa. 66. 20.

Iam. 1. 18.

^q Esa. 63. 18.

^r Ier. 2. 3.

Iames 1. 18.

^s Exod. 40. 9.

VERSE 3.

† Psal. 93. 5.

u 2 Cor. 6. 16.

x Rom. 6. 13.

y Eph. 1. 13.

z 1 Cor. 3. 12.

a Tit. 2. 14.

b Heb. 12. 14.

c Ezek. 9. 4.

d Malac. 2. 3.

Jer. 11. 15.

Psal. 50. 16, 17.

Esa. 1. 11, 14.

riall instruments of the Tabernacle were anointed with the holy Oyle; and the ^t house of the Lord was an house of Holinesse, to signifie that every Christian should bee by the Spirit of God sanctified, because he is ^u a Temple, and every member, because it is ^x a vessell and instrument for the Masters use. *The Spirit of Holinesse* is that which *distinguisheth*, and as it were, *marketh* the sheepe of Christ from the wicked of the world: yee are ^y sealed with the *Holy Spirit of promise*: ^z yee have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God. Holinesse ^a *setteth us apart* for Gods Service, for his ^b *Presence* and fruition; ^c protecteth and priviledgeth us from the wrath to come, in the day when he shall separate betweene the pretious and the vile, and make up his jewels: without this no man can either serve, or see, or escape God, either doe his Will, enjoy his favour, or decline his fury. All our *services* without this are but ^d *Dung*, and who would thanke that man for his service, who with wonderfull officiousnesse should bring nothing but heapes of Dung into his house? If a man could powre out of his veines rivers of blood, and offer up every day as many prayers as thoughts unto God, if his eyes were melted into teares, and his knees hardned into horne with devotion; yet all this, if it bee not the fruit of Holinesse, but of will-worship, or superstition, or opinion of merit and righteousness, it is but as Dung in Gods sight. *Wherefore liest thou upon thy face, there is an accursed thing in the Campe?* What-ever sinne thy Conscience tels thee lieth next thy heart, and warmes it, so that thou art unwilling to part from it, take heed of bringing it into Gods presence, or provoking him with thy services, for he will throw them backe like dung into thy face. *What hath my beloved to doe in mine house, seeing shee hath wrought lewdnesse with many? What hast thou to doe to take my Covenant in thy mouth, seeing thou hatest instruction? who hath required this at your hands*

The Beauty of Holinesse.

361

VERSE 3.

to tread in my Courts? Bring no more vaine oblations, incense is an abomination unto mee, &c. Till a man put away the evill of his doings, and cleanse himselfe, all his worship of God is but mocking of him, and prophaning his Ordinances. In vaine did the Marriners pray while *Ionah* was in the ship; in vaine did *Ioshua* intercede while the accursed thing was in the Campe. A man shall lose all which hee hath wrought in Gods worship, and have neither thanks nor reward for it, so long as he harboureth any uncleane affection in his heart, and will not yeeld to part from it. Any sinne which wasteth the conscience (as every great and presumptuous sinne doth in whomsoever it is) unqualifieth that person for the Kingdom of Heaven. Grace maketh a beleever *sure* of salvation, but it doth *not* make him wretchlesse or secure in living; though there be not an extinguishment, yet there is a suspension of his right upon any blacke and notorious fall, that man must not dare to lay claime to Heaven, that hath dared in a presumptuous manner to provoke the Lord. Our Holinesse is not the *cause* of our salvation, but yet it is the *way* thereunto; he which by any wasting and presumptuous sin putteth himselfe out of that way, must by repentance turne into it againe, before hee can hope to finde out Heaven; for *without Holinesse no man shall see the Lord*. Hee that is an hundred miles from his owne house, notwithstanding his propriety thereunto, shall yet never actually enter therein, till he have travelled over the right way which leads unto it. There is an *Order, à primo ad ultimum* in the salvation of men, many intermediate passages betweene their vocation and their Glory: Justification, Repentance, Sanctification, as a scale or ladder betwixt Earth and Heaven. He that falls from his holinesse and purity of conscience, though he be not quite down the ladder, and hath the whole worke to begin againe, as much as ever, yet doubtlesse he shal never get to the top till he recover the step from which he fell.

And if in this case it bee true that the righteous shall scarcely be saved; O then where shall that man appeare whom God at the last shall finde without this garment and seale upon him. When there was a tempest, he who slept and least thought of it, was throwne into the Sea; and when the day of wrath shall come, those that have neglected their estate most, shall doubtlesse bee in the greatest danger. And therefore we should labour to goe to Gods Throne with our garments and our marke upon us; for all other indowments, our learning, our honours, our parts, our preferments, our earthly hopes and dependencies will none follow us, but wee shall live to see either them or the comforts of them depart. *Achitophel* had wisdom like an Oracle of God, but he liv'd to see it bid him quite farewell, for he died like a very foole or childe, who when hee may not have his owne will, will bee reveng'd upon himselfe. *Haman* had more honour than the ambition of a subje&t usually aspires unto, and yet he lived to see it bid him farewell, and died the basest death which himselfe could devise for his most hated and despised enemy. *Iehoiakim*, a king lived to see his Crowne take its leave, and was buried with the buriall of an Asse, and drag'd like carrion out of the gates of the City. There will bee nothing at last left for any man to cast his trust upon but God, or Angels, or our fellowes; and if then God be against us, though all which remains were on our side, alas what is an handfull of stubble to a world full of fire? but yet there will not be that advantage, but the combate must be single betweene God and a sinner. The good Angels rejoyce to doe Gods Will, and the wicked will rejoyce to doe man any mischief; these will bee onely ready to accuse, and those to gather the wicked together unto the wrath of him that sitteth on the Throne. O what would a man give then for that Holinesse which hee now despiseth? what Covenants would such a man bee content to subscribe unto, if God would

would then shew him mercy when the court of mercy is shut up? wouldst thou returne to the earth, and live there a thousand yeeres under contempt and persecution for my service? O yes, not under thy service onely, but under the rockes and mountaines of the earth, so I may bee hid from the face of the Lambe. Wilt thou bee content to goe to Hell and serve me there a thousand yeers in the midst of Hellish torments, and the reviling of damned creatures? O yes, even in Hell infinitely better would it bee to be thy servant than thine enemy. Wilt thou revenge every oath with a yeere of prayers, every bribe or corruption with a treasury of almes, every vanity with an age of precisenesse? Yes Lord, the severest of thy commands to escape but the smallest of thy Judgements. O let us be wise for our selves, there shall be no such easie conditions then proposed when it will bee impossible to observe them, and there are now farre easier proposed, when we are invited to observe them.

Lastly, from hence we learne that none will bee *Willing* to come unto Christ till they see *Beauty* in his Service, which with a carnall eye they cannot doe, for naturally the heart is possessed with much prejudice against it, that the way of religion in that exactnesse which the Word requires, is but the phantasie of more sublimated speculations, a meere notionall and airy thing, which hath no being at all, but in the wishes of a few men, who fancie unto themselves the shape of a Church, as *Zenophon* did of a Prince, or *Plato* of a Commonwealth. And therefore though with their tongues they doe not, yet in their hearts men are apt to lay aside that rigour and exactnesse which the Scripture requires, namely, to pull out our right eyes, to cut off our right hands, to hate father and mother, and wife, and lands, and our owne life; to deny our selves, to crosse our owne desires, to mortifie our earthly members, to follow the Lambe through evill report and good report, through afflictions

VERSE 3.

Esaï. 8. 14. 18.

Zech. 3. 8.

Luk. 2. 34.

*Quantus in
Christiano popu-
lo honor Christi,
ubi religio igno-
bilem facit?*

*— per hoc om-
nes quodammo-
do mali esse co-
guntur ne viles
habeantur. Sal-
vian.*

Cant. 1. 5, 8.

Cant. 5. 7, 10.

afflictions and persecutions, and manifold temptations whither soever hee goeth, to warre with principalities and powers, and spirituall wickednesses, to acquaint our selves with the whole Counsell of God, and the like: and in stead thereof to resolve upon certaine more tolerable maximes of their owne to goe to Heaven by, certain mediocrities betweene piety and prophanesesse, wherein men hope to hold God fast enough, and yet not to lose either the world, or their sinfull lusts. This is a certaine and confessed truth, that the spirit which is in us by nature, is contrary to the Spirit of purity and power which is in the Word: and therefore the universall and willing submission of the heart unto this, must needs finde both many antipathies within, and many discouragements and contempts without. Christ was set up for *a signe of contradiction* to be spoken against, and that *in the houses of Israel and of Iuda*, and as it was then, so is it now, even *in Abrahams family*, in the household and visible Church of Christ, *They that are of the flesh persecute those that are after the spirit*; Christ had never greater enemies than those which professed his Name. This is one of the forest engines Satan hath against his Kingdome, to make it appeare in the eyes of men, as a despicable, contemptuous, and unbeautifull thing. And therefore no man comes under Christs government till that prejudice by manifest evidence of the Spirit be removed. And for this reason the wayes of Christ are set forth as *beautifull, even under crosses and afflictions*. *I am blacke* with persecution, with the beating of the Sunne upon me, *but yet I am comely*, O yee daughters of Jerusalem. When the watch-men smote the Church, and wounded her, and tooke away her veile, yet still she acknowledged Christ, for whose sake he suffered these persecutions, to be *white and ruddy, the fairest of tenne thousand*: and the same opinion hath Christ of his Church, though she be afflicted and tossed with tempest, yet he esteemeth of her as
of

of a beautifull structure. *How faire and how pleasant art thou, O love, for delights?* And this is that we should all endeavour, to shew forth in a shining and unblameable conversation, the *Beauty of the Gospell*, that the enemy may have no occasion from any indiscretions, affectations, unnecessary reservednesse, and difformities, ungrounded scrupulosities, over-worldly affections, or any other miscarriages of those who professe not the name onely, but the power of religion, to blaspheme or sling off from a way, against which they have such prejudices offered them for all that which the faithfull have common with the world, shall yet be sure to be charg'd upon their profession by wicked men, who have not either reason or charity enough to distinguish betweene Gods rule, and mans error. *Submit your selves*, saith the Apostle, *to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake, &c.* For *so is the Will of God, that with well-doing you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men*: for this is certaine, the ignorance of foolish men will not so much lay the blowes upon your persons, as upon that truth and religion which you professe, when you needlessly withstand any such Ordinances as you might without sinne obey.

The last thing observed in this verse was the *Multitudes* of Christs subjects, and the *manner* of their birth; *From the wombe of the morning, thou hast the dew of thy youth*. Thy children are borne in as great abundance unto thee, as the dew which falleth from the morning wombe.

From whence wee may note; First, that Christ in the day of his Power, in the morning of his Church, had *multitudes of children* borne unto him. This promise the Lord made to *Abraham*, and it is not to bee limited to his children after the flesh, but to his children of promise, that his seed should be as the *Starres*, and as the *Dust* for multitude. And the Prophet applies that Promise to Israel

VERSE 3.

Esa. 54. 11, 12.

Cant. 4. 1, 7.

Gen. 22. 7.

Gen. 28. 14.

VERSE 3.

Num. 23. 10.

Hos. 1. 10.

Esa. 11. 9.

Revel. 74. 9.

Act. 14. 16.

Act. 17. 30.

Iohn 14. 12.

Israel by promise, when those after the flesh should bee dissipated and become no people, yet saith the Prophet, the number of the children of Israel shall be as the *sand* of the sea which cannot be measured nor numbred, &c. meaning the Israel of God amongst the Gentiles. Thus the faithfull are said to flocke like *Doves* unto their windows, and to swell into a *sea* of great waters, *an hundred and foure and forty thousand*, with an innumerable company more, all sealed and standing before the Lambe.

Now this was *in die copiarum*, in the time when Christ first sent abroad his armies and the rod of his strength into the world. Before this God suffered men to walke in their owne wayes, yea, while he was on the earth hee forbade his Disciples to enter into the Cities of the Samaritans, or the Gentiles. And hee promised them that they should doe greater workes than hee himselfe had done, because he went unto his Father: for when hee ascended up on high, he then led captivitie captive, that ignorance and thralldome under which the world was held he triumphed over, and gave gifts of his Spirit unto men of all sorts in abundance; Visions to the young, Dreames to the aged, and his gracious Spirit unto all. Wee never reade of so many converted by Christs personall preaching (which was indeed but the beginning of his preaching, for it is the Lord which speaketh from heaven still) as by the ministry of his Apostles; hee thereby providing to magnifie the excellencie of his spirituall presence, against all the carnall superstitions of those men who seeke for an invisible corporall presence of Christ on the earth, charmed downe out of heaven under the lying shapes of separated accidents. And who cannot be content with that *All-sufficient Remembrancer*, which himselfe hath promised to his Church, *Ioh. 14. 26.* except they may have others, and those such as the holy Scriptures every where disgraceth as teachers of lyes and vanity.

nity, the Crucifixes and Images of their owne erecting; therein infinitely derogating from that All-sufficient provision which the Lord in his Word and Sacraments (the onely living and full Images of Christ crucified, *Gal. 3.1.*) hath proposed unto men as alone able to make them wise unto salvation, being opened and represented unto the Consciences of Men, not by humane inventions, but by those Holy ordinances and offices which himselfe hath appointed in his Church, the preaching of his Word, and administration of his Sacraments. And surely they who by *Moses* and the Prophets, by that Ministry which Christ after his ascension did establish in his Church, doe not repent, would bee no whit the neerer, no more than *Indas* or the Pharises were, if they should see or heare Christ in the flesh. Therefore it is observed after Christs ascension that the Word of God grew mightily and prevailed; and that there were men daily added unto the Church. That the Savor of the Gospell was made manifest in every place. That the Children of the desolate were more than of the married wife. Therefore the believers after Christs ascension are called *מִלִּיּוֹת וְרַבִּיּוֹת*. The multitude of them that beleeved, and multitudes of men and women were added to the Lord. Tenne to one of that there was before: Tenne men shall take hold out of all languages of the Nations, of the skirt of him that is a Jew, saying *Woe will goe with you*; that is, shall take the Kingdome of Heaven by violence, as *Saul* laid hold on the skirt of *Samuels* Mantle, that hee might not goe from him.

The reason hereof is to magnifie the exaltation and spirituall presence and Power of Christ in the Church. While he was upon the earth he confin'd his ordinary residence and personall preaching unto one people, because his bodily presence was narrow, and could not be communicated to the whole world. For he took our nature with those conditions and limitations which belong thereunto.

*Act. 19. 20.
Act. 3. 47.
2 Cor. 2. 14.
Esa. 54. 1.
Act. 4. 32.
Act. 5. 14.
Zech. 8. 20. 23.
Matth. 11. 12.
1 Sam. 15. 27.*

VERSE 3.

I Cor. 1. 27, 28.

I Cor. 2. 3, 4, 5.

2 Cor. 4. 7.
Zech. 4. 6.

I Cor. 16. 9.

unto. But his Spirit and Power is over the whole Church, by them he walketh in the midst of the Candlestickes. Christs bodily presence and preaching the Jewes withstood, and crucified the Lord of Glory. But now to shew the greatnesse of his Power by the Gospell, hee goes himselfe away; and leaves but a few poore and persecuted men behinde him, assisted with the vertue of his Spirit, and by them wrought workes which all the world could not withstand. He could have published the Gospell as hee did the Law by the ministry of Angels; hee could have anointed his Apostles with regall oyle, and made them not Preachers onely but Princes, and Defenders of his faith in the world. But hee rather chose to have them to the end of the world poore and despised men, whom the world (without any shew of just reason which can be by them alleaged) should overlooke, and account of as low and meane conditioned men, that his Spirit might in their Ministry bee the more Glorified. *God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise, and weake things of the world to confound things that are mighty, and base things of the world, and things which are despised hath God chosen, yea and things that are not, to bring to nought things that are; that no flesh should glory in his presence.* But that his owne Spirit might have all the honor: therefore *I was with you in weaknesse,* saith the Apostle, *and in feare, and in much trembling, &c. That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the Power of God.* And againe, *We have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellencie of the power may be of God and not of us; not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit,* saith the Lord. Thus we finde that when the Church was most persecuted it did then most grow, and in the worst times it brought forth the greatest fruit, to note the power of Christs Kingdome above all the attempts of men. *A great doore, and effectuall is opened unto me,* saith the Apostle, *and there are many adversaries,* intimating

ting that the Gospell of Christ had great successe when it was most resisted. All persecutors (as S. Cyprian observes) are like *Herod*, they take their times, and seeke to slay Christ and overthrow his Kingdome in its Infancie, and therefore at that time doth hee most of all magnifie the power and protection of his Spirit over the same. Never were there so many men converted as in those Infant-times of the Church when the Dragon stood before the woman ready to devoure her Childe, as soone as it should bee borne. The great Potentates of the world, which did persecute the Name of Christ, were themselves at last thereunto subjected. *Non à repugnantibus sed à morientibus Christianis*, not by fighting but by dying Christians. As a tree shaken sheds the more fruit, and a perfume burnt diffuseth the sweetest Savor; so persecuted Christianity doth the more flourish by the power of that Holy Spirit, whose foolishnesse is wiser, and whose weakenesse is stronger than all the oppositions and contradictions of men.

But if there be such multitudes belonging unto Christs Kingdome, is not *universality* and a *visible pompe* a true note to discern the Church of Christ by? To this I answer, that a true characteristickall note or difference ought to bee convertible with that of which it is made a note, and onely suteable thereunto; for that which is common unto many, can bee no evident note of this or that particular. Now *universality* is common to Antichristian, idolatrous and malignant Churches. The *Arrian* heresie invaded the world, and by the Imperiall countenance spread it selfe into all Churches. The whore was to sit upon *many waters*, which were *peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues*; the *kings of the earth* were to bee *made drunke with the wine of her fornications*, and *all nations to drinke thereof*. Therefore touching these multitudes in the Church, we are thus to state the point; Consider the Church in it selfe, and so it is a very vast body,

VERSE 3.

Infantiam Christi studiosè persequuntur, & antequàm formetur Christus in nobis, in ipso pia conversationis initio ut extinguatur Spiritus, & suffocetur vita justitiæ, penitus elaborant. Cyprian. Serm. de stella & Magis. Aug. Epist. 42.

πῶς ἵστανται πλῆθος
τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν
ἐπιζῶντων; Ναζι-
αν. Orat. 25.

Revel. 17. 15.
18. 3.

VERSE 3.

Brierwood of
Religion.

*Manifesta se
tum Dei virtus
contra odia hu-
mana porrexit:
cum tanto magis
Christus predi-
catur, quanto
magis predicari
inhiberetur.
Hilar. contra.
Auxent.*

dy, but yet consider it *comparatively* with the other more prevailing and malignant part of the world, and so it is but a *little flocke*, as many graines and measures of come may lie hid under a great heap of chaffe. Secondly, the Church now is *many comparatively* with the old church of the Jewes, *more are the Children of the desolate than of the married wife*, *Eesai. 54.1*. But not comparatively with the adversaries of the Church in generall. Wee see of thirty parts of the World, nineteene are either idolatrous or Mahumetan, and the other eleven serving Christ in so different a manner as if there were many Christs or many Gospels, or many wayes to the same end. Thirdly, though Christ alwayes have a *numerous offspring*, yet in severall Ages there is observable a different purity and conspicuousnesse according to the different administrati- ons and breathings of the Spirit upon his Garden. In some ages the Doctrine more uncorrupt, the profession and acceptation more universall than in others. In the Apostles times there were *many borne* unto Christ, by reason of the more abundant measure of Spirit which was shed abroad upon them, *Tii. 3.6*. In the times of the Primitive persecutions there were many likewise borne, because God would glorifie the foundations of his Church, and the Power of his Spirit above the pride of men. In the first countenancing of it by Imperiall Lawes and favors, it was very generall and conspicuous, because professed by the obedience, and introduc'd by the power of those great Emperours whom the world followed. But after that long peace and great dignities had corrup- ted the mindes of the chiefe in the Church, and made them looke more after the pompe than the purity there- of, the mystery of iniquity, like a weed, grew apace, and overspread the Corne, first abusing, and after that sub- jecting the power of Princes, and bewitching the Kings of the earth with its fornications.

Hence likewise we may learne to acknowledge Gods
mercy

mercy in the worst times; in those Ages wherein the Church was most oppressed, yet many have yeelded themselves unto Christ. *The woman was with Childe, and was delivered even when the Dragon did persecute her, Revel. 12. 1. 4.* And even then God found out in the Wildernesse a place of refuge, defence, and feeding for his Church. As in those cruell times of *Arrianisme* when heresie had invaded the World, and in those blinde and miserable ages wherein Satan was loosed, God still stirred up some notable instruments by whom hee did defend his truth, and amongst whom hee did preserve his Church, though they were driven into solitary places, and forced to avoid the assemblies of Hereticall and Antichristian Teachers.

*Hieronymus
Contr. Lucife-
rianos. Vincen-
tius Lyrinensis
in Commonito-
rio.*

Wee learne likewise not to censure persons, places or times; God hath seven thousand in Israel, when *Elias* thought none but himselfe had beene left, all are not alike venturous or confident of their strength. *Nicodemus* came to Christ *by night*, and yet even then Christ did not reject him. Therefore we must not presently censure our neighbours as cold or dead, if they discover not immediately the same measure of courage and publike stoutnesse in the profession of Christ with our selves; some men are by nature more retir'd, silent, unsociable, unactive men: some by the engagement of their places, persons, and callings wherein they are of more publike and necessary use in the Church, are put upon more abundant caution and circumspection in the moderate carriage of themselves than other men. *Paul* was of himselfe very zealous and earnest in that great confusion, when *Gaius* and *Aristarchus* were haled into the Theater, to have gone in unto the people in that there outrage and distemper: but the wisdom of the Disciples, and some of his chiefe friends is herein commended, that they sent unto him desiring him that he would not adventure into the Theater and that they suffered him not, *Acts, 19. 30, 31.* It is a

VERSE 3.

Gregor. Nazian.
Orat. 20.

grave observation which *Gregorie Nazianzen* makes of that great champion, and universall agent for composing the differences and distractions of the Church. *S. Basil*, that *pro temporis ratione & Hæreticorum principatu*, by reason of the prevalency of adversaries and condition of the times, hee did in the controversies concerning the Deity of the Holy Ghost abstaine from some words which others of an inferiour ranke did with liberty and boldnesse use; and that this hee did in much wisdome, and upon necessary reasons; because it was not fit for so eminent a Person, and one who had such generall influence by the quality of his place and greatnesse of his parts in the welfare of the Church, by the envy of words or phraes to exasperate a countenanced enemy, and to draw upon himselfe, and in him upon the Church of God, any inevitable and unnecessary danger. And surely if the wisdome and moderation of that Holy man were with the same pious affection generally observed, that men, when they doe earnestly contend for the Truth once delivered, (which is the duty of every Christian) did not in heate of argument load the Truth they maintaine, with such hard and severe, though it may bee true expressions, as beget more obstinacy in the Adversary, and it may bee suspicion in the weake or unresolved looker on, differences amongst men might bee more soberly composed, and the Truth with more assurance entertained.

Againe, wee have from hence an encouragement to goe on in the wayes of Christ, because wee goe in great and in good Company: many wee have to suffer with us, many wee have to comfort and to encourage us. As the people of Israel when they went solemnely up to meeete the Lord in *Sion* went on *from troope to troope*, the further they went, the more company they were mixed withall, going to the same purpose: so when the Saints goe towards Heaven to meeete the Lord there, they doe not

Psal. 84. 7.

VERSE 3.

Heb. 12. 22, 23.

1 Kings 19. 14.

not onely goe unto an *innumerable company of Angels,* and *just men*, but they meete with *troopes in their way*, to encourage one another. All the discouragement that *Elias* had was, that he was alone; but we have no such plea for our unwillingnesse to professe the Truth and Power of Religion now. Wee are not like a Lambe in a wide place, without comfort or company; but wee are sure to have an excellent guard and convoy unto Christs Kingdome. And this use the Apostle makes of the multitudes of beleivers, that we should by so great a *Cloud of witnesses*, be the more encouraged in our patient running of that race which is set before us. *Heb. 12. 1.*

Lastly, It should teach us to *love the multitudes*, the assemblies and the *Communion of the Saints*, to speake often to one another, to encourage and strengthen one another, not to forsake the assembling of our selves together as the manner of some is; to concur in mutuall desires, to conspire in the same holy thoughts and affections; to be of one heart, of one soule, of one judgement, to walke by one and the same rule, to besiege Heaven with armies of united Prayers; to bee mutually serviceable to the City of God, and to one another as fellow members. Therefore hath the Lord given unto men *severall gifts*, and to no one man all, that thereby wee might be enabled and induced to worke *together* unto one end, and by *Love* to unite our severall graces for the edification of the Body of Christ, *Ephes. 4. 11, 13.*

Now for the manner of producing or procuring these multitudes, it is set forth unto us in two Metaphors. *A wombe, and Dew of the morning.* Now the birth of Dew is first *generatio cœlestis*. That which is exhal'd is an earthly vapor, but the Heavenly operation changeth it into *Dew*; no art of man is able to doe it. It is also *undiscovered* and *secret*, when it is fallen you may see it, but how is it made you cannot see. Lastly, it is a *sudden Birth*, in a night, or morning it is both begotten,

All Christs subjects are his Children.

conceived, and brought forth. Here then wee have foure notes.

First, that all Christs subjects are withall his *Children*. They are *borne unto him*. *Christianity* is a *Birth*, except a man bee borne againe, hee cannot see the Kingdome of God. There is a *Father*. Christ our Father by Generation; *Behold, I and the Children whom thou hast given mee*; as we are his brethren by adoption. *He is not ashamed to call us brethren*. There is a *Mother*, Jerusalem which is above is the *Mother of us all*. And there are *subordinate instruments*, both of one and other, the Holy Apostles, Evangelists, Doctors, and Pastors, who therefore are sometimes called *Fathers begetting us*, in Christ Jesus *I have begotten you through the Gospell*; and sometimes *Mothers bearing, and bringing forth; of whom I travel in birth againe untill Christ be formed in you*. There is a *Holy seed* out of which these Children of Christ are formed; namely the *Word of God*, which liveth and abideth for ever. For the heart of a man new borne unto Christ, commeth from the Word as a paper from the Presse, or as a garment from a Perfume, transformed into that quality of Spiritualnesse and Holinesse which is in the Word. There is a *Vis plastica*, or *formative Vertue*, which is the energy and concurrence of the Spirit of Grace with the Word, for the Truth is not obeyed but by the Spirit, except a man bee borne of Water and the Spirit; Water as the seed, and the Spirit as the formative vertue quickning and actuating that seed, he cannot enter into the Kingdome of God. There are *Throwes and paines* both in the Mother and the Childe; much trouble and care in the ministry of the Word, *ὡς παλαίσματα* with whom *I travel in paine againe*. I ceased not to warne every one night and day *with teares*. As a woman with Childe, by reason of the feare and danger of miscarriages, doth abridge her selfe of many liberties, in meates, physicke, violent exercise, and the like; so those who travel in birth

with

Iohn. 3. 3.
Esa. 8. 18.
Hcb. 2. 12, 13.
Gal. 4. 26.
Esa. 51. 18.
I Cor. 4. 15.
Philem. v. 10.
Gal. 4. 19.
I Pet. 1. 23.

I Pet. 1. 22.
Iohn. 3. 5.

Gal. 4. 19.
Act. 20. 31.

All Christs subjects are his Children.

357

VERSE 3.

with the Children of Christ are put to deny themselves many things, and to suffer many things for the successe of their service. *I will eat no flesh while the world standeth rather than make my brother to offend. I am appointed a Preacher, and an Apostle, a Teacher of the Gentiles; for the which cause I also suffer these things. I endure all things for the Eleets sake that they may obtaine the salvation which is in Christ Iesus.* And there is paine in the Childe too; a sinner doth not leave the warmth and pleasure of his former condition without paine; Christ comes not without shaking unto the soule. There is a *New being or nature*; a corruption of our old man, and a formation of the new. *Old things are done away, behold all things are become new*; the same holy nature, the same minde, judgement, will, affections, motions, desires, dispositions, are by the Spirit wrought in us which were in him. Hee that hath this hope *purifieth himselfe, even as he is pure; as he is so are we in this world*; Patient as he is patient, *Heb. 12. 2.* Holy as he is holy, *1 Pet. 1. 15.* Humble as he is humble, *Iohn 13. 14.* Compassionate as hee is compassionate, *Col. 3. 13.* Loving as hee is loving; *Ephes. 5. 2.* in all things labouring to shew Christ fashioned in our nature and in our affections. There is a *new conversation* answerable to our new nature; that as God is good in himselfe, and doth good in his workes, *Psal. 119. 68.* so we both are as Christ was, *1 Iohn 4. 17.* and walke as he walketh, *1 Iohn 2. 6.* There is *new foode, and appetites thereunto suseable.* A desire of the sincere, immediate, untempered, uncorrupted milke of the Word as it comes with all the spirits and life in it, that we may grow thereby. *New Privileges and Relations*; the Sonnes of God, the Brethren of Christ, the Citizens of Heaven, the Household of the Saints, *New Communion and Society*; the Fellowship of the Father and the Sonne by the Spirit; fellowship with the holy Angels, wee have their Love, their Ministry, their Protection; fellowship with

*1 Cor. 8. 13.
2 Tim. 1. 11, 12.
2 Tim. 2. 10.*

*Tit. 3. 5.
2 Cor. 5. 17.
Eph. 4. 22, 23.
Rom. 12. 2.
1 Iohn 3. 3.
4. 17.*

1 Pet. 2. 1.

VERSE 3.

Eph. 5. 8.
Rom. 13. 12.

the Spirit of just men made perfect, by the seeds and beginnings of the same perfection, by the participation of the same Spirit of Holinesse, by expectance of the same glory and finall redemption.

In the meane time then wee should *walke as Children of the Light*, or as it is here, as *Children of the morning*. The Day is given unto worke in, and therefore in the morning, as soone as wee have our Day before us, wee should endeavour to *walke honestly*. Night-workes are commonly workes of uncleannesse, violence, dishonour, and therefore want a cover of darkenesse to hide them. Theeves use to come in *the night*, 1 *Thes.* 5. 2. The eye of the adulterer waiteth for *the twilight*, saying, no eye shall see mee, and disguiseth himselfe, *Iob.* 24. 15. In the *twilight*, in the *evening*, in the *blacke and darke night*, he goeth to the house of the strange woman, *Prover.* 7. 9. The Oppressour diggeth through houses in the *darke*. For *the morning is, to them as the shadow of Death*, *Iob.* 24. 16, 17. They that are drunken are *drunken in the night*, 1 *Thes.* 5. 7. Sinnes are of the nature of some fullen weeds, which will grow no where but in the side of Wels, and of darke places. But workes of Christianity are neither uncleane, nor dishonourable; they are beautifull and royall workes, they are exemplary, and therefore publike workes, they are themselves light (*let your light shine before men*) and therefore they ought to be done in *the light*.

Mark. 10. 15.
Phil 2. 15.
1 Cor. 14. 20.
1 Pet. 2. 2, 3.

If wee bee Children wee should expresse the affecti-
ons of Children. *The innocencie*, Humilitie, and Dove-
like simplicity of little Children; as the *Sonnes of God*
blamelesse, pure, and without rebuke. *Children in malice*,
though men in understanding. The *Appetite of little Chil-*
dren, As new borne babes desire the sincere milke of the
Word that yee may grow thereby. In all impatiency the
breast will pacifie a little Infant, in all other delights the
breast will entice it and draw it away: even so should the

Word

The birth of a Christian is heav'nly.

377

VERSE 3.

Word and worship of God worke upon us in all our distempers, and in all our deviations; Christ was hungry and faint with fasting; it was about the sixth houre, and hee had sent his Disciples to buy meate, and yet having an occasion to doe his Father service, he forgot his food, and refused to eate, *Ioh. 4. 6. 8. 34. The Love of Children; Hee that is begotten, loveth him that did beget him. 1 Iohn 5. 1. with a Love of thankfulness. Wee love him because Hee loved us, 1 Iohn 4. 19. I love the Lord, because hee hath heard my voice, and my supplication, Psal. 116. 1. With a love of obedience; faith worketh by love, Gal. 5. 6. Love is the fulfilling of the Law, Rom. 13. 10. If a man love mee he will keepe my Words, Ioh. 14. 23. with a love of reverence, and awfull feare. A Sonne honoureth his Father, Mal. 1. 6. If you call on the Father, &c. Passe the time of your sojourning here in feare, 1 Pet. 1. 17. The faith of Children. For whom should the Childe rely on for maintenance and supportance but the Father; Take no thought, saying, what shall we eat, or what shall wee drinke, or wherewith shall wee bee cloathed: For your Heavenly Father knoweth that you have need of all these things? Matth. 6. 31, 32. The hope, assurance, and expectation of Children; For as Children depend on their Parents for present supply, so for portions and provisions for the future; Fathers lay up for their Children, and so doth God for his. There is an inheritance reserved for us, 1 Pet. 1. 4. Lastly, the Praiers and requests of Children. Because yee are Sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, crying, Abba Father, Gal. 4. 6.*

Note 2. The Birth of a Christian is a divine and heavenly work. God is both Father and Mother of the Dew, by his power and wisdom, a Father; by his providence and indulgence, a Mother, Progenitor, genitrixque, therefore hee is cal'd in *Clem. Alex. Metripater*, to note that those casualties which are in the second agents divided,

VERSE 3.

are eminently and perfectly in him united, as all things are to bee resolved into a first Unity. *Hath the Raine a Father, or who hath begotten the droppes of Dew?* saith *Iob*. Out of whose wombe came the Ice? and the hoary Frost of Heaven who hath gendred it? None but God is the parent of the Dew, *It doth not stay for nor expect any humane concurrence, or causality.* *Nich. 5. 7. Esai. 55. 10.* such is the call and conversion of a man to Christ, *A Heavenly calling, Heb. 3. 1. The operation of God in us, Col. 2. 12.* A birth not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, *but of God, Iohn 1. 13. 1 Iohn 3. 9.* Paul may plant, and Apollo may water, but it is God that must blesse both; nay it is God who by them, as his instruments, doth both: *Of his owne will begat hee us, Iam. 1. 18.* The Ministers are a Savor of Christ, *2 Cor. 2. 15.* It is not the garment but the perfume in it which diffuseth a sweet sent: It is not the Labor of the Minister, but Christ whom hee preacheth, that worketh upon the soule. *I laboured more abundantly than they all, yet not I, but the Grace of God which was with mee, 1 Cor. 15. 10.*

It is not good therefore to have the faith of God in respect of persons; the seede of this Spirituall generation cannot otherwise bee given us than in earthen vessels, by men of like passions and infirmities with others. Therefore when pure and good seede is here and there sowed, to attribute any thing to persons, is to derogate from God; where gifts are fewer, parts meaner, probabilities lesse, God may and often doth give an increase above hope, as to *Daniels Pulse*, that the excellency of the Power may bee of him, and not of man. Though it be a lame or a leprous hand which soweth the seede, yet the successe is no way altered: good seede depends not in its growth on the hand that sowes it, but on the Earth that covers, and on the Heavens that cherish it: So the Word borroweth not its efficacy from any humane

The birth of a Christian is heavenly.

379

mane vertue, but from the heart which ponders, and the Spirit which sanctifies it.

VERSE 4.

When then thou comest unto the Word, come with affections futeable unto it. All earth will not beare all seed; some wheate, and some but pulse; there is first required a *finesse*, before there will bee a *fruitfulnessse*. Christ had many things to teach which his Disciples at the time could not carry away, because the Comforter was not then sent, who was to lead them into all truth; they who by use have their senses exercised, are fit for strong meate. The Truth of the Gospell is an Heavenly truth, and therefore it requires a Heavenly disposition of heart to prosper it. It is *wisedome to those that are perfect*, though to others foolishnesse and offence. The onely reason why the Word of truth doth not thrive is, because the heart is not fitted nor prepared unto it. The seed of it selfe is equall unto all grounds, but it prospers onely in the honest and good heart; the raine in it selfe alike unto all, but of no vertue to the rockes, as to other ground, by reason of their inward hardnesse, and incapacity. The Pharises had covetous hearts, and they mocked Christ: the Philosophers had proud hearts, and they scorned *Paul*. The Jewes had carnall hearts, and they were offended at the Gospell: the people in the wilderness had unbeleeving hearts, and the Word preached did not profit them. But now a Heavenly heart comes with the affections of a Scholler to be taught by God; with the affections of a servant, to bee commanded by God, with the affections of a Sonne, to bee educated by God; with the affections of a sinner, to bee cur'd by God. It considers that it is the *Lord from Heaven, who speakes* in the Ministry of the Word to him who is but dust and ashes; and therefore he puts his hand on his mouth, dares not reply against God, nor wrestle with the evidence of his Holy Spirit, but falleth upon his face, and giveth Glory unto God; beleeves when God promiseth, trembles when God

John 16.12,13.
Heb.5.14.

I Cor. 2.6.

VERSE 3.

God threatneth, obeyes when God commaundeth, learns when God teacheth, bringeth alwayes meekenesse and humility of Spirit, ready to open unto the Word that it may incorporate.

Lastly, from hence we must learne to looke unto God in all his Ordinances, to expect his Arme and Spirit to be therein revealed, to call on, and depend on him for the blessing of it. If a man could when he enters into Gods House. but power out his heart in these two things; A *Promise* and a *Prayer*. Lord, I am now entring into thy Presence, to heare thee speake from Heaven unto mee, to receive thy Raine and Spirituall Dew which never returneth in vaine, but ripeneth a Harvest either of Come or Weeds, of Grace or Judgement. My heart is prepared O Lord, my heart is prepared, to learne and to love any of thy Words. Thy Law is my Counsellor, I will bee ruled by it; It is my Physitian, I will bee patient under it; It is my Schoolemaster, I will bee obedient unto it. But who am I that I should promise any service unto thee? and who is the Minister that hee should doe any good unto mee without thy Grace and Heavenly call? Bee thou therefore pleased to reveale thine owne Spirit unto mee, and to worke in mee that which thou requirest of mee; I say, if a man could come with such sweet preparations of heart unto the Word, and could thus open his soule when this spirituall *Manna* falls downe from Heaven, hee should finde the truth of that which the Apostle speaketh, *Ye are not straitned in us*, or in our Ministry, we come unto you with abundance of Grace, but yee are straitned onely in your owne bowels, in the hardnesse, unbeliefe, incapacity, and negligence of your owne hearts, which receiveth that in drops, which falleth downe in showres.

Note 3. As it is a Divine, so it is a *secret and undiscerned Birth*. As the winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence
it

Deut. 32. 2.
Amos 7. 16.
Esaï. 55. 10.

it commeth, nor whither it goeth: So, saith our Saviour, *is every one, that is borne of God, Ioh. 3.8.* The voluntary breathings and accessses of the Spirit of God unto the soule, whereby hee ^a commeth mightily, and as it were cloatheth a man with power and courage, are of a very secret nature, and notwithstanding the power thereof be so great, yet there is nothing in apparance but ^b a voice, (of all other one of the most empty and vanishing things.) As Dew falls in small and insensible drops, and as a Childe is borne by slow and undiscerned progresses (as the Prophet *David* saith, ^c *Fearfully and wonderfully am I made,*) Such is the birth of a Christian unto Christ, by a secret, hidden, and inward call, *Vocatione Altâ*, as Saint *Austen* calleth it, by a deepe and intimate energy of the Spirit of Grace is Christ formed, and the soule organized unto a Spirituall being. A man heares a voyce, but it is ^d behinde him, hee seeth no man; hee feels a blow in that voyce, which others take no notice of, though externally they heare it too. Therefore it is observable that the men which were with *Paul* at his miraculous conversion are in one place said to *heare a voyce, Acts 9. 7.* and in another place, *not to have heard the voyce* of him that spake unto *Paul, Acts 22. 9.* They heard onely a voyce, and so were but astonished, but *Paul* heard it distinctly as the voyce of Christ, and so was converted.

Note 4. As it is a Divine and secret, so it is likewise a *sudden Birth*. In naturall generations the more vast the creature, the more slow the production, an Elephant ten yeers in the wombe. In humane actions *magnarum rerum tarda molimina*, great workes move like great engines slowly and by leasure to their maturity: but in Spirituall generations, Children are borne unto Christ like Dew, which is exhaled; conceived, formed, produced, and all in one night. *Paul* to day a Wolfe, to morrow a Sheepe; to day a Persecutor, to morrow a Disciple; and
not

^a Iudg. 14. 6.
Iudg. 6. 34.

^b Matth. 10. 20.
2 Pet. 1. 22.

^c Psal. 139. 14.
Iob. 10. 10, 11.

^d Esai. 30. 21.
Act. 9. 8.

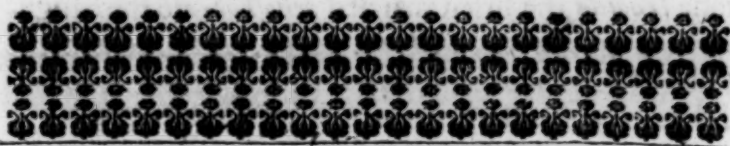
Gloss. Philolog.
Sacr. lib. 2. pag.

VERSE 4.

2 Kings 7. 1, 2.
Tarnou. Exercit.
Biblic. Edit. 2.
pag. 84. 85.

not long after an Apofile of Christ. The Noble man of *Samarita* could see no possibility of turning a famine into a plenty within one night : neither can the heart of a man who rightly understands the closenesse, and intimate radication of sinne and guilt in the soule, conceive it possible to remove either in a sudden change; yet such is the birth of men unto Christ, *Before shee travelled shee brought forth : before her paine came, she was delivered of a Man-Childe.* The Earth bringeth forth in one day, and a Nation is borne at once; It is spoken of Jerusalem the Mother of us all, *Esaï. 66. 7, 8.*

VERSE 4.



VERSE 4.

The Lord hath sworne, and will not repent, thou art a Priest for ever after the Order of Melchisedeck.



From the Regall Office of Christ, and the Administration thereof by the Scepter of his Word and Spirit to the conquering of a willing people unto himselfe; the Prophet now passeth to his Sacerdotal Office; the vigor and merit whereof is by the two former applied unto the Church. * Therefore we may observe that though the Tribes were interdicted confusion with one another in their marriages, *Num. 36.7.* Yet the Regall and Leviticall Tribes might interchange, and mingle bloods; to intimate (as I conceive) that the *Messiah*, with relation unto whose Lineage that confusion was avoided, was to bee both a King and a Priest. Thus we

* Poterant Levitæ ex Regia familia ducere, quippe quæ etiam peculiari Privilegio hinc est exempta, &c. Tarnou. Exercit. Biblic. pag. 21. Edit. 2. Communabant inter se Regia tribus, ac Sacerdotalis, propterea quod Christi Dominus secundum humanitatem, Rex

futurus erat, & Sacerdos. Theodoret. in Num. Quest. 52. αἱ δύο φυλαὶ συνήπικοντο μόναι πρὸς ἀλλήλας, ἢ τὴ βασιλικὴν τῇ ἱερατικῇ, καὶ ἡ ἱερατικὴ τῇ βασιλικῇ, &c. Epiph. contr. Antidicom. a. rionitas Hæres. 78. ἡμῶν δὲ λέω, μὴ μετὰ τὴν φυλὴν ἵε ἱεράρας φυλῆς. Damascen. de Orthod. fide. l. 4. c. 15. But notwithstanding these Authorities, upon more deliberate consideration of this matter, I conceive my selfe to have beene herein mistaken; and am rather perswaded that Marriages were lawfull betweene severall Tribes, save onely in the Case when Daughters did inherit, to avoid confusion of Possessions amongst the Tribes. Iudg. 21. 1. Augustin. Quest. in Judic. quæ. 47. Joseph. Antiq. lib. 4. cap. 7. Philo Judæus de Monarchia. lib. 2. Lucas Bûrgensis in Matth. 1. 16.

finde

VERSE 4.

a *Sacerdos Ecclesie habentis praputium. Hieron. Tom. 3. lib. quest. Heb. in Genes. Verisimile est illum esse ex illis Gentibus que Palestinam incolebant. Theodoret. Quest. 63. in Genes.*
 b *Vid. Casaub. in Sueton. August. cap. 31. Rex Anus, Rex idem hominum Phœbique Sacerdos. Virgil. Aeneid. lib. 3.*

finde *Ieboida*, the Priest married *Iehoshabeath* the daughter of king *Iehoram*, 2 *Chron.* 22. 11. And *Aaron* of the Tribe of Levi tooke *Elisheba* the daughter of *Amminadab*, who was of the Tribe of *Juda*, *Exod.* 6. 23. *Num.* 1. 7. In which respect I suppose *Mary* and *Elizabeth* the wife of *Zachary* the Priest, are called Cousins, *Luk.* 1. 36. In the Law indeede these two Offices were distinct. Our Lord, saith the Apostle, sprang out of the Tribe of *Juda*, of which Tribe *Moses* spake nothing concerning Priesthood, *Heb.* 7. 14. And therefore when king *Uzziah* inchroached on the Priests Office, hee was smitten with a Leprosie, 2 *Chron.* 26. 18, 21. But amongst the Gentiles (^a amongst whom *Melchisedeck* is thought to have beene a Priest) it ^b was usuall for the same Person to have beene both King and Priest.

The words containe the Doctrine of Christs Priesthood. The *Quality* of it, *Eternall*. The *Order*, not of *Aaron*, but of *Melchisedeck*. The *foundation* of both, Gods immutable Decree and Counsell; he cannot repent of it, because hee hath confirmed it by an *Oath*. I shall handle the words in the Order as they lie.

The Lord hath sworne] Here two things are to bee enquired: First, how God is said to sweare? Secondly, why hee sweares in this particular case of Christs Priesthood? The former of these the Apostle resolves in one word, *ἑαυτοῦ ὀρκίζων*, *Heb.* 6. 17. Hee interposed in or by an Oath, namely himselfe, for that is to bee supplied out of the thirteenth verse, where it is said that *hee sware by himselfe*. So elsewhere it is said that *he sware by the excellency of Iacob*, that is, by himselfe, *Amos* 8. 7. 6. 8. *By my selfe have I sworne*, saith the Lord, that in blessing I will blesse thee, *Gen.* 22. 16. The meaning is, that God should deny himselfe, (which he cannot doe, 2 *Tim.* 2. 13.) and should cease to bee God, if the Word which hee hath sworne should not come to passe. So that usuall forme, *as I live*, is to be understood, let me not be esteemed a living God,

God, if my word come not to passe; so elsewhere the Lord interposeth his Holinesse, *I have sworne by my Holinesse that I will not lie unto David*, Psal. 89. 35. As impossible for him to breake his Word as to be unholy.

For the second question, why God swears in this particular? I answer: First, and principally, to shew τῆς βεβήκει ἀπὸ ἀμεταβάτου, The immutable and irreversibile certainty of what hee speakes, Heb. 6. 17. *I have sworne by my selfe*, the word is gone out of my mouth, and it shall not returne, &c. Esai. 45. 23. Thus wee finde God confirming the unmoveablenesse of his Covenant by an Oath, Esai. 54. 9, 10. Psal. 89, 34, 35. When the Lord doth *onely* say a thing (though his Word bee as certaine in it selfe as his Oath, for it is as impossible for him to lie as to forswear himselfe) yet there is an implicite kind of reservation for the altering, revoking or reversing that Word by some subsequent declaration. As in the Covenant and Priest-hood of *Aaron* though God made it for a perpetuall Ordinance, yet there was after a change of it, for the weaknesse and unprofitablenesse thereof. So when the Lord sent *Jonah* to preach destruction unto *Ninive* within forty dayes, though the Denuntiation came not to passe, yet was it not any false message, because it was made reversib'le upon an *implicite condition*, which condition the Lord is pleased sometimes in mercy to conceale, that men may be the sooner frightened out of their security, upon the apprehension of so approaching a danger. *At what time, saith the Lord, I shall speake concerning a Nation, and concerning a Kingdome, to plucke up, and to pull downe, and to destroy: If that Nation against whom I have pronounced turne from their evill, I will repent of the evill that I thought to doe unto them*, Ier. 18. 7, 8. But when the Lord swears any absolute Act, or promise of his owne (for the Revocation whereof there can no other ground *de novo* arise, than was extant at the time of making it, and yet was no barre nor hinderance

τὸν ὅρκον ὃ πολλὰ
χρὲς καὶ πλὴν ἀμετα-
βάτου ὡς ἐν ἑαυτῷ
πραγματίζομαι· διὰ
τὴν ἐκείνου ἐνταύθα
αἰετῶς, ὡς μοῖστος κέρ-
ει καὶ ὁ μεταμα-
λῆσιν· ὅτι ἀ-
πρεπτοῖς καὶ ἀκρί-
τοις ἐγγύμνηται πλὴν
τῆς ἐπαγγελίας καὶ
ἐν τῇ ἀλάσει ἐ-
καίνοιν. Basil.
Mag. in Psal. 14.
Tom. 1.

VERSE 4.

Quod Deus tantopere commendat, quod etiam humano more sub dejectione restatur, summa utique gravitate & aggredi & custodire debemus, ut in offervatione Divina gratie permanentes, in fructu quoque ejus & emolumento proinde perseverare possimus. Terul. de poenitent. c. 4.

rance unto it, namely the sinne of man) hee then by that oath seales and assures the immutability thereof, to those that rely upon it.

Secondly, it is to commend the excellency and preeminency of that above other things, which hath this great Seale of Heaven, the Oath of God to confirme and establish it. *Inasmuch*, saith the Apostle, *as not without an Oath he was made Priest, by so much was he made a surety of a better Testament*; Heb. 6. 20, 22. and this is a consequent of the former; for by how much the more abiding, by so much the more glorious is the Ministry of the Gospell. *If that which is done away were glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious*, 2 Cor. 3. 11. The more solemne and sacred the institution was, the more excellent is the Priesthood. Now this Oath was that Seale of God, by which he designed and set apart his Sonne for that great Office, in a more solemne manner of ordination than was to others usuall. *Him hath God the Father sealed*; Iohn 6. 27. It was but *Hee hath said*, unto others, ye are Gods, but it is, *He hath sanctified*, to his Sonne, Iohn 10. 34, 36.

Thirdly, It is to commend Gods great compassion and good will, for the establishing of the hearts of men in comfort and assurance. He therefore confirmed his promise by an Oath, *That by two immutable things wherein it is impossible for God to lie, we might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold on the hope which is set before us*. Heb. 6. 17, 18. an oath even amongst men is the end of all controversie, the determination and composing of all differences; how much more when hee sets his Seale upon his mercy and covenant should the hearts of men bee secure, and lay fast hold thereon without doubt or scruple? Therefore wee finde the Saints in the Scripture make mention of the Oath of God, for establishing their hearts against feares or dangers. *Thou wilt performe the truth to Iacob, and the mercy to Abraham.* which

which thou hast sworne to our fathers from the dayes of old. *Micah. 7. 20. Thy bow was made quite naked, according to the oathes of the Tribes, even thy Word. Hab. 3. 9.* that is, Thou didst make it appeare to thine enemies that thou didst fight for thy People, and remember thy Word or Covenant of mercy which thou didst swear unto *Abraham* the Father of the faithfull, and so oftentimes new ratifie unto his seede, the Tribes which proceeded from him. And this is the ground of all the Churches comfort and stability: for alas, wee every day deserve to have God abrogate his Covenant of mercy with us, but hee is mindefull of the Oath which hee hath sworne. *Deut. 7. 7, 8. 9. 5.* There was wickednesse enough in the world to have drawne downe another flood after that of *Noah*, the same reason that caused it, did remaine after it was removed. *Genes. 6. 12, 13. 8. 21.* But Gods Oath bound him to his mercy, *Eesai. 54. 9.* The meaning then of this first Clause is this. The Lord to shew the immutability of his Counsell, the unchangeablenesse of Christs Priesthood, the excellency of it above the Priesthood of *Aaron*, the strong consolation which the Saints may there-hence receive, hath sealed it by an Oath: so that he is a Priest by a decree which cannot be revoked.

It notes unto us the *Solemne call of Christ* unto the office of Priesthood, as before of *King*, verse 1. He did not usurpe this honour to himselfe as *Nadab* and *Abihu* did, when of their owne heads they offered strange fire unto the Lord, nor incroach upon it as *Uzziab*; but hee was *ordained and begotten, and called of God* thereunto, after the order of *Melchisedeck*, *Heb. 5. 5. 10. He was sanctified and sent, and had a commandement, and a worke set him to doe, Iohn 10. 18. 36. 37.* In which respect hee was called a *Servant*, or a chosen Officer formed for a speciall imployment, *Eesai. 42. 1. 49. 5. 53. 11. Phil. 2. 7.* Here then is the consent of the whole Trinity unto CHRISTs Priesthood. First, the *Fathers consent* in his Act of ordination:

VERSE 4.

Quid est Dei veri veracisque Juratio, nisi promissi confirmatio, & infidelium quedam increpatio? Aug. de Civit. dei lib. 16. cap. 32.

VERSE 4.

* Esai. 53. 8. 10.
11, 12.
Psal. 2. 7, 8.
Phil. 2. 7, 9.
Iohn 17. 2, 4, 5.
Heb. 2. 8, 9.
Heb. 11. 2.

dination: for him hath God the Father sealed, *Ioh. 6. 27. Thou art my Sonne, this day have I begotten thee, Heb. 5. 5. 6.* Secondly, The Sonnes by voluntary susception and vadimony for mankind: for hee was the *Surety of the Covenant, Heb. 8. 22.* The Apostle joyneth these two together, *Heb. 10. 9, 10. Loe, I come to doe thy Will O God;* there was Gods Will and Christs submission thereunto, in which regard he is said *to sanctifie himselfe, Ioh. 17. 19.* There was a Covenant betweene God and Christ; Christ was to undertake an Office of service and obedience for men, to offer himselfe a sacrifice for sinne, to bee made of a woman under the Law, &c. * And for this God was to prolong his dayes, to give him a Seed, and a Generation which could not bee numbred, a Kingdome which cannot bee bounded, a Portion with the great, and a Spoyle with the strong; a Name above every name, to set a Joy and a Glory before him, after hee should have finished his worke, &c. Thirdly, here is the *Consent of the Holy Ghost* which did hereunto anoint him; which came along with him, which formed him in the wombe of the Virgin, and descended upon him in his solemne susception of this Office in *Iohns Baptisme*, by which Spirit he was consecrated, warranted and enabled unto this great function, *Esai. 61. 1. 42. 1. Math. 3. 16, 17. Heb. 1. 9.*

If then God call Christ unto his Priesthood by a *solemne Oath*, and make him surety of a better Covenant, wee ought to take the more speciall notice thereof: for when God sweares he must be heard. The more excellent any thing is, the more earnest heed should be given unto it: for how shall we escape, saith the Apostle, if we neglect *τοιοῦτης σωτηρίας*, so great Salvation, so sure a Covenant, *Heb. 2. 1, 3.*

This is the onely rocke on which we may cast anchor in any trouble, doubt, or feare of Spirit. It is not our owne will or strength that holds us up from ruine, but

onely

onely Gods Oath, by which Christ is made a Priest, *Able to save to the uttermost all that come unto God by him.* Saint Paul and his company were in a great tempest, *all hope* that they should be saved was taken away, *Act. 27. 20.* yet hee exhorts them to bee of good cheere, because there should not bee the losse of any mans life amongst them; and the ground hereof was *Gods Promise*, which he beleevd, *verse 24, 25.* The case is the same with us, we are compassed about with infirmities; with enemies too hard, and with sinnes too heavy for us; with feares and doubtings, that we shall lose all againe; how can we in such tempests of Spirit bee cheered, but onely by casting anchor upon Gods covenant which is established by an Oath? by learning to hope above hope, *Rom. 4. 18.* to be strong in him when we are weake in our selves? to be faithfull in him when wee are fearefull in our selves? to bee stedfast in him when we stagger in our selves? in the midst of Satans buffets and our owne corruptions to finde *a sufficiency in his Grace*, able to answer and to ward off all? *2 Cor. 12. 10.* To catch hold of his Covenant, and to flie to the hope that is set before us, as to the onely refuge and sanctuary of a pursued soule, when wee are not able to stand by our selves? *Esai. 56. 6. Heb. 6. 18.* It is a very hard thing when a man hath a distinct view of his filthinesse and guilt, by reason of sinne, not to give over himselfe and his salvation as desperate things. It is nothing but ignorance and insensibility which makes men *presume* of the pardon of sinne. In this case then wee must consider *Gods Oath* and Covenant with his People. First, *not to reject them* for their sinnes. *Israel hath not beene forsaken, nor Judah of his God, though their land was filled with sinne against the Holy one of Israel, Ier. 51. 5. My People are bent unto backsliding, &c. and yet I will not execute the fiercenesse of mine anger, I will not returne to destroy Ephraim, For I am God, and not Man, &c. Hos. 11. 7, 9.*

VERSE 4.

Secondly, *not alwaies to suffer them* to lie under sinne, but in due time *to heale their back-slidings*, *Hos. 14.4.* he will not onely remove our transgressions from himselfe, but he will *remove them from us too*, and that so farre, as that it shall be as possible for the East and West to meet together, as for a man and his sin, *Psal. 103.12.* Though we have made him to serve with our sinnes, and wearied him with our iniquities, yet *Hee will not remember against us our sinnes past*, *Esa. 43.25.* neither will hee see against us the sinnes which remaine, *Num. 23.11.* Those he will forgive, and these hee will subdue, and all this because of his *Truth unto Iacob* and his *mercy unto Abraham*, which he sware unto our fathers from the dayes of old, *Micah. 7.18, 19, 20.* Hee hath given us ground for both our feete to stand upon, and hold-fast for both our hands to cleave unto: A *Promise*, and an *Oath*, that by two immutable things, wee might have strong consolation, *Heb. 6.18.* So the Apostle saith, that all the promises of God in Christ are *Yea* and *Amen*: *Yea*, to note their *Truth*; and *Amen*, to note their *Certainty and stability*, being confirmed by the *Oath of Christ*. For so that word may be conceived either * as an *Oath*, or at least * as a *very strong and confident affirmation* which is equipollent unto an oath, *2 Cor. 1. 20.* except haply wee will understand *we* and *Apulo* to bee the same thing expressed in severall tongues; as *Abba Pater* in other places, thereby noting not onely the *stability* but the *universality* of Gods Promises.

Many things there are in this call of Christ unto his Office to confirme this consolation, and upon which the troubled soule may cast Anchor.

First, from the Father he hath receiv'd a *command* and call unto this service, and so as a *Servant* he hath *fidelity*; for God chooseth none but faithfull servants. Hee was an *Apostle* and *high Priest* sent to preach the Will, and to pacifie the wrath of God, and he was *faithfull to him*

that

* Quodammodo si dici fas est, juratio ejus est, Amen, Amen, dico vobis, Aug. Tract. 41. in Jo- han.

* Confirmationis verbum. Ambros. in Psal. 40. αὐτὸ πνεῦμα ἔχει κατὰ μὲν ὁρκῶν ἔχει κατὰ ὁρκῶν ὅτι οὐκ ἔστιν, ἀλλὰ θρησκεία κατὰ τὴν ἀκρίβειαν. Basil. Mag. in Psal. 14. vid. Nicol. Ful- leri. Miscellan. lib. 1. cap. 2.

that appointed him, as Moses was, *Heb. 3. 11. 2.* And if he be faithfull we may trust him, for he will doe the worke which is given him to doe. *Faithfull is he that calleth you who also will doe it, 1 Thes. 5. 24.*

Secondly, from himselfe there is a *voluntary submission*, whereby hee gives himselfe for his Church, and layes downe his owne life, *Eph. 5. 25. Tit. 2. 14. Ioh. 10. 11.* for being of himselfe equall with the Father, he could not be by him commanded, ordained, or over-ruled to any service, without a voluntary concurring to the same decree; emptying himselfe; and taking on him the forme of a servant, making himselfe lesse than his Father, and in some sort for a while lower than the Angels, that so hee might be commanded. So that besides his fidelity to rest on as a servant, here is his especiall mercy as a concurring agent in the decree, whereby he was ordained unto this Office: He is not onely a *Faithfull*, but a *mercifull high Priest*, to make reconciliation for the sins of men, *Heb. 2. 17.* But a man may both by his *Fidelity* as a servant, and by his *Mercy*, as having the same tender compassion with him that sent him, be willing to helpe another out of misery, and yet may not be able to effect his owne desires for want of *Power*. And therefore,

Thirdly, by the *Unction* of the holy Spirit, who proceedeth from the Father and himselfe; hee is said to be *sanctified by the Father, Ioh. 10. 36.* and to *sanctifie himselfe, Ioh. 17. 19.* To have received *Power* and *Authority* from his Father, *Matth. 28. 18. Ioh. 5. 27. Ioh. 17. 2.* and to have *Power* likewise within himselfe, *Ioh. 10. 18.* That Spirit, which for the discharge of this Office hee brought with him in fulnesse, and unto all purposes of that Service into the world, is a *Spirit of Power*, *2 Tim. 1. 7.* whereby he is enabled *perfectly to save all commers, Heb. 7. 25.* so that unto his *Fidelity* and *Mercy*, here is added *Ability* likewise.

Fourthly, as he received an Office and a Service, so he

*Iohn 14. 28.
August. de Tri-
nit. lib. 1. cap. 7.
& 9.*

VERSE 4.

received a *Promise* from his Father likewise which did much encourage him in this service. And this promise is *twofold*. First, the *promise of a great seede* which by the execution of his Office he should gather unto himselfe, and of a great conquest over all his enemies. God conferred this honour upon him to be the King of a mighty People, whom he should save and sanctifie to himselfe: *They were given unto him, Psal. 2. 8. Iohn 17. 6.* so that unto his *Fidelity, Mercy and Power*; here is further added a *Propriety* to the thing which hee saves: and who would not use all fidelity in his owne businesse, all mercy towards his owne seede, all the power he hath to deliver his owne *House* from the fire? and Christ was faithfull, *as a Sonne over his owne House, whose House are wee: Heb. 3. 6.* Secondly, there was the *promise of a great Glory and Crowne* which the nature he had assumed should in his Person receive after the fulfilling of his Service. After he had beene a little while lower than the Angels, hee was to be *crowned with Glory and Honour, Heb. 2. 7.* and therefore wee may bee sure that hee hath fulfilled all righteousness, and done for his Church all which hee was to doe upon the Earth; *Because he is gone, and we see him no more.* For his sufferings were to goe before, and his Glory to follow: *1 Peter 1. 11.* This is the Apostles argument why wee are not in our sinnes, but delivered from them, because CHRIST is risen, *1 Cor. 15. 17. Who is hee that condemneth, it is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen againe, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us? Rom. 8. 34.* And it is his argument againe, why wee ought to hold fast our profession, and to come boldly to the Throne of Grace for helpe in time of neede, because wee have a great high Priest that is passed into the Heavens, *Heb. 4. 14, 15, 16.*

Fifthly, as hee had a *Promise* from the Father to encourage him, so hee had a *Nature from us* to incline him
unto

unto the execution of his Office. He was made of a woman, made like unto us in all things, sinne onely excepted, *tempted* and *afflicted* as we are: and so there are two things which the heart of a beleever may rest upon in him in any discomforts. First, *his Sympathie*, for besides his *Essentiall mercy* as he is God, there was in him a *mercy which hee learned* by being like unto us. *In all things it behoved him to bee made like unto his brethren, that hee might be a mercifull and a faithfull high Priest, Heb. 2. 17.* Such was his compassion towards the hunger of the multitude, *Matth. 15. 32.* because hee himselfe knew what hunger was, *Matth. 4. 2.* and such was his compassion towards the sorrowes of *Mary* and *Martha*, *Iohn 11. 33, 35.* because he himselfe was acquainted with griefe, *Esai. 53. 3.* and such was his compassion towards *Peter* in that state of desertion wherein he lay, *Luk. 22. 61* because hee himselfe knew what it was to bee forsaken, *Matth. 27. 46.* And this is the Apostles assurance that wee shall obtaine Mercy and Grace to helpe in time of neede; *because he had a feeling of our infirmities, and was tempted, as we are, Heb. 4. 15, 16.* Secondly, *His consanguinity*, He is not ashamed to call us brethren: He is our *God*, our *Kinsman*, and therefore our *Redeemer: Heb. 11. Ruth. 3. 9. 4. 4.*

And will not repent.] Many things God hath said, which hee hath revoked, as the destruction of *Ninive*; the death of *Ezekiah*, and the like; which implying a tacite condition (fit in the particular cases to be conceal'd) upon the varieties of that, God might bee said either to persevere, or to repent; *Ier. 18. 7, 8. 26. 13, 19.* God is ever most unchangeable in all his wayes, counsels and purposes, they stand for ever. Nothing can fall out to make God more wise, more mercifull, more provident, more powerfull than hee was before, and therefore nothing can make him truly to change his Will, or to repent of his former actions or resolutions. There is with

VERSE 4.

^a *Humane capacitati aptiora quam Divine sublimitati, &c. Vid. Aug. Tom. 4. ad Simplicia. lib. 2. qu. 2. vid. de Civi. Dei, lib. 14. cap. 11. lib. 15. cap. 25. Tertul. Con. Marc. l. 2. cap. 16.*
^b *Ubi legitur quod poeniteat eum, mutatio rerum significatur, immutabili manente præsentiâ divinâ. Aug. de Civi. Dei, lib. 17. cap. 7. & lib. 22. cap. 1, 2. Just. Martyr. Quest. & Resp. ad Orthodox. qu. 36.*

him no variablenesse nor shadow of changing: Hee is not a Man that hee should repent. I the Lord change not James 1. 17. 1 Sam. 15. 29. Mal. 3. 6. Onely in mercy unto ^a our weakenesse God condescends unto the manner of *humane expressions*, retaining still the stedfastnesse of his owne working, which receiveth no variation nor difference from the contingencies of second causes. Hee speaketh according to our capacity, but hee worketh according to his owne Counsell, so that God is *then said to repent*, when that which hee once willed to bee, hee after by the counsell of the same will, causeth not to be; therein *not changing his owne Counsell*, but *onely willing the change of the things*, that the same thing for this period of time shall be, and then shall cease. As when a rope is fixed to either side of a River, by the same without any manner change or alteration in it, I draw the Boate wherein I am, backward or forward: so the same Will and Counsell of God stands constant and unmooved in the severall mutations of those things which are wrought or removed by it.

Now then, when not onely the Counsell of God is immutable in it selfe, but also hee hath ordained some Law, Covenant, or Office, which hee will have for ever to endure, without either naturall expiration, or externall abolishment, then is God said *not to repent*. To apply this to the present businesse; the Apostle speaking of a new Covenant which is established upon this new Priesthood of Christ (for the Priesthoods and the Lawes goe both together, the one being changed, there is made of necessity a change of the other; Heb. 7. 12.) maketh the introducing of this new Covenant, which is founded upon the Oath of God, to make the preceding covenant old and transitory; *In that hee saith, A new Covenant, he hath made the first old: Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away, Heb. 8. 13.* And hee saith peremptorily that it was therefore disannul'd, because

cause of the *weakenesse and unprofitablenesse* thereof: *Heb. 7. 18.* and this he affirmeth even of the morall Law; that Law, the righteousnesse whereof was to be fulfilled in us by the Spirit of Christ, (namely in sincerity and in love, which is the bond of perfection, and the fulfilling of the Law) *Rom. 8. 3, 4.* For the full understanding then and applying of the words to the *Priesthood of Christ*, and the *Law of Grace*, or the second covenant thereupon grounded, it will be needfull to resolve these two questions. First, whether God hath repented him of the Law, which was the rule and measure of the Covenant of workes? Secondly, upon what reasons or grounds the immutability of the second Covenant or Law of Grace standeth?

For the first of these, the Psalmist telleth us, that the *Commandements of God are sure, and that they stand fast for ever and ever, Psal. 111. 7, 8.* and wee may note that the same forme of speech which the Lord useth to shew the stability of the new Covenant; *The Mountaines shall depart, and the Hills bee removed, but my kindenesse shall not depart from thee, neither shall the Covenant of my peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee, Esai. 54. 10.* the same kinde of forme doth our Saviour use to expresse the stability of the Law; *It is easier for Heaven and Earth to passe, than for one tittle of the Law to faile; Luk. 16. 17.* Now the Law hath a two-fold Obligation; the one principall which is to *Obedience*, whereunto is annexed a promise of righteousnesse or justification: the other *secondary and conditionall*, which is unto *malediction*, upon supposall of disobedience. For, *curst is every one which continueth not in all things which are written in the Booke of the Law to doe them, Gal. 3. 10.* Now if no tittle of the Law must faile, then neither of these two must faile, but bee both fulfilled, and then it should seeme that the first Covenant is not remooved, notwithstanding the weakenesse thereof.

For

VERSE 4.

Vid. Grotii defens. fidei cathol. de satisfactione Christi, cap. 3.

For resolving hereof, wee must note that in point of validity or invalidity, there can but five things be said of the *Law*: for first, either it must be *obeyed*, and that it is not, for *all have sinned and come short of the Glory of God*, *Rom. 3.23*. Or secondly, it must be *executed* upon men, and the curse or penalty thereof inflicted; and that it is not neither, for *there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ*, *Rom. 8.1*. Or thirdly, it must be *abrogated*, or extinguished; and that it is not neither, for Heaven and Earth must sooner passe away. If there were no Law, there would be no sinne, for sinne is the transgression of the Law; and if there were no Law, there would be no judgement; for the world must be judged by the Law. Or fourthly, it must be *moderated* and favourably interpreted by rules of equity, to abate the rigor and severity thereof; and that cannot be neither, for it is inflexible, no jot nor tittle of it must be abated. Or lastly, the Law it selfe remaining, the Obligation thereof notwithstanding, must towards such or such persons be so farre forth *dispensed* withall, as that a *surety* shall be admitted (upon a concurrence of all their wills who are therein interested; God willing to allow, Christ willing to performe, and Man willing to enjoy:) both to doe all the duties, and to suffer all the curses of the Law, in the behalfe of that Person, who in rigour should himselfe have done and suffered all. So then neither the Law nor any jot or tittle thereof is abrogated, in regard of the *Obligations* therein contained, but they are all reconciled in Christ with the second Covenant. Yet notwithstanding, *to the purpose of a Covenant* or rule of righteousness betweene us and God, so he hath repented of it, and removed that office or relation from it, that righteousness should come to us thereby, by reason of the weaknesse and unprofitablenesse which is in it to that purpose by the sinne of Man: yet thus much the Law hath to doe with justification, that the fulfilling of the whole law is thereunto
ever

ever some way or other presupposed. Onely in the first covenant, wee were to doe in our *owne persons*; in the second, Christ is appointed and allowed to doe it for us. Hee fulfilled all the Obligations of the Law; the *duties* thereof by *active obedience* in his life, and the *curses* thereof by *passive obedience* in his death. Now then we by faith becomming one with Christ, the grace of God doth number us up in the same masse and summe with him, and so imputeth and accounteth that ours which was done by him. There is no righteousness but doth originally referre and beare proportion to the Law of God, and yet wee are not justified by the Law, but by Grace; because it is the favour of God, contrary to the rigour and exaction of the Law, which alloweth the righteousness of the Law *by one fulfilled*, to bee unto another *accounted*. A man is denominared righteous, as a wall may bee esteemed red or greene. Now that comes to passe two manner of wayes, either by the colour inhering and belonging unto the wall it selfe, or by the same colour in some diaphanous transparent body; as glasse, which by the beame of the Sunne shining on the wall, doth externally affect the same as if it were its owne, and covers that true inherent colour which it hath of it selfe. In like manner by the strict covenant of the Law wee ought to be righteous from a righteousness inherent in, and performed by our selves; but in the new covenant of grace we are righteous by the righteousness of Christ which shineth upon us, and presenteth us in his colour unto the sight of his Father. Here in both covenants the righteousness from whence the denomination groweth is the same (namely the satisfying of the demands of the whole Law) but the manner of our right and propriety thereunto is much varied. In the one we have right unto it *by Law*, because wee have done it our selves: In the other we have right unto it onely by *Grace and favour*; because another mans doing of it is bestowed upon us, and

VERSE 4.

and accounted ours. And this is that gracious Covenant of which the Lord here saith, *I have sworn, and will not repent.*

For resolving of the second question, upon what reasons the immutability of the covenant of Grace standeth, wee must note that as things are of severall sorts, so accordingly they may bee mutable or immutable severall wayes. Some things are *absolutely immutable* out of the nature of the thing it selfe; and that is, when the abrogation, or alteration of the thing would unavoydably inferre some prodigious consequences and notorious pravity with it, as certaine dishonour to God, and confusion upon other things. As if wee should conceive a man free from worshipping, reverencing, acknowledging, loving or trusting in God; herein the creature would be unsubordinated to the Creator, which would inferre desperate pravity and disorder, and God should bee robb'd of his essentiall honor which he can no more part from, than cease to bee God. But now it is repugnant to the nature of an entire *covenant*, to bee in this manner immutable. For in a covenant there is a mutuall stipulation and consent betweene God and Man; and after performance of Mans duty, God maketh promise of bestowing a reward. Now there can bee no binding necessity in God to conferre, nor absolute power in Man to challenge any good from God, who doth freely and by no necessity, good unto his Creatures. Secondly, some things are meereley *juris positivi*, not of any intrinsicall necessity, resulting out of the condition of their nature; such as are free either to be or not to bee of themselves, or when they are free to continue or to cease; not in themselves determined unto any condition of being unvariably belonging unto their nature. And such are *all covenants*. For God might have dealt with Men, as with lapsed Angels, never have entred a-new into covenant with them: hee might have reserved unto himselfe

a Power

a power of revocation and calling in his patent, and shutting up his Office of mercy againe. How then comes it that this Covenant is *immutable*, and Christs Priesthood of everlasting and unchangeable vigour to all ages and generations of men? That there shall never bee erected in the Church any other forme of Gods worship, or any other instruments of Mans salvation, than those which wee now enjoy? The Apostle groundeth it upon *two reasons*, *Heb. 6. 17, 18.* The *Promise* and the *Oath* of God. First, The *Promise* putteth a right in the creature which hee had not before, and that Promise determineth the Will of God to the being; and leaveth it not indifferent to the being or not being of the Covenant. For it is the foundation of a just claime which we by faith may make upon the Fidelity, Justice and Power of God, to make it good. *Hee is faithfull and just to forgive us our finnes, 1 Iohn 1. 9.* The *Righteous God shall give unto mee a Crowne of Righteousnesse: 2 Tim. 4. 8.* Righteousnesse and Justice as well as Mercy is the ground of forgiveness of sinne and salvation, not in relation or respect to *Merit* in us, but to *Promise* in God. Onely Mercy it was which moved him to Promise, and having promised onely Truth and Fidelity and Righteousnesse, bindeth him to performe. As impossible it is for God to breake any promise, and to lie unto *David*, as it is to be an unholy God, or to deny himselfe; *Psal. 89. 35. 2 Tim. 2. 13. 1 Thes. 5. 24.* Secondly, the *Oath* of God, for that pawnes his owne Being, Life, Power, Truth, Holinesse, to make good that which he hath so ratified; and upon these two doth the immutability of the second Covenant, and of Christs Priesthood depend.

Here then we see upon what ground all our comfort and assurance subsisteth; not upon any strength, power, liberty, or inherent grace already received, which wee of our selves are every day apt to waste and be cheated of by Satan and the World, but upon Gods unchangeable

VERSE 4.

able mercy and covenant. This was all *Dauids* salvation and desire, all that his heart rested upon, that though his house were not so with God, that is, did faile much of that beauty and purity which therein God required, and therefore did deserve to be cast off, yet God had made with him an *everlasting Covenant ordered in all things and sure*, 2 *Sam.* 23. 5. When the conscience is afflicted with the sense of sinne, with the feare of its owne slipperinesse and unstedfastnesse in Gods Covenant, this is all it hath to support it, *That God is one*, *Galat.* 3. 19. That Christ is *the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever*, *Heb.* 13. 8. that he is where he ever was, *ready to meet those that returne*, *Esa.* 64. 5. *Luke.* 15. 20. If I should doe to men, as I have done to God, they would despise, and forsake me, and revenge themselves on me, I should never receive grace nor favour againe. But *God is not as man*, *Hos.* 11. 9. the whole cause of his compassion is in and from himselfe, and therefore hee doth not take the advantage of our failings and exasperations, to alter the course of his dealing towards us, *Psal.* 103. 8-14. Though we faile every day, yet *his compassions faile not*, and therefore from his immutable mercy it is that wee are not consumed, *Lam.* 3. 22. *Mal.* 3. 6. His blessing of an adopted people is an irreverfible thing, because hee is God and not man, and therefore cannot repent, nor call in the promise which hee hath made, for which purpose hee *doth not behold iniquity in Iacob, nor perversenesse in Israel*, *Numb.* 23. 19-20-21. If the Sunne should bee alwayes immoveably fixed in one place, as it was a little while in *Ioshua's* time at the destruction of the Kings, *Iosh.* 10. 12-13. though I might shut out the light of the Sunne from me, yet as soone as I remove the curtain, the Sunne is still where it was, ready to bee found, and to shine upon me. The case were lamentable with us, if so often as man provokes Gods Justice, he should presently revoke his mercy; If the issue of our salvation should depend

depend upon the frailty and mutability of our owne nature, and our life should be in our owne keeping. If the pure Angels of Heaven fell from their created condition, to bee most blacke and hideous adversaries of the God that made them; if *Adam* stood not firme with all that stocke of strength and integrity of will which hee had in Paradise: how can I who have so many lusts within, so many enemies without, such armies of feares and temptations round about mee, bee able to resist, and stand? Grace inherent is as mutable in mee, as it was in *Adam*; Satan as malicious and impetuous against me, as against *Adam*: Propensions to sinne and falling away, strong in me, which were none in *Adam*; snares as many; weaknesses more; enemies as many; temptations more: from the grace which is deposited in mine owne keeping, I cannot but depart dayly, if the Lord should leave me in the hand of mine owne Counsell. Even as water, though it could be made as hot as fire, yet being left unto it selfe, will quickly reduce and worke it selfe to its owne originall coldnesse againe. Wee have grace abiding in our hearts, as we have light in our houses, alwaies by emanation, effusion and supportance from the Sun of righteousness which shines upon us. Therefore this is all the comfort which a man hath remaining, that though I am wanting to my selfe, and doe often turne from God, yet he is not wanting to mee, nor returnes from me, *for the gifts and calling of God are without repentance, Rom. 11. 29.* The heart of the best man is like the wheelles in *Ezekiels* vision, *Ezekiel 1. 16.* As mutable, and moveable severall wayes as wheelles, as perplexed, hindered, and distracted in it selfe, as crosse wheelles in one another, grace swaying one way, and flesh another; who can expect stability in such a thing? Surely of it selfe it hath none, but the constancy and uniformity of motion in the wheelles was this, that they were joyned to the living creatures, who in their motion returned not when they went

VERSE 4.

went, *verse 17. 21.* such is the stability of the faithfull in the Covenant, they have it not from themselves, for they are all like wheelles, but from him unto whom by the same Spirit of Life they are united, who cannot repent, nor returne from the Covenant of mercy which he hath made.

Thou art a Priest for ever after the Order of Melchisedeck] Wee now come to speake of the Priesthood of Christ it selfe, which is thus sealed and made immutable by the Oath of God. *Every high Priest*, saith the Apostle, *is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes, Heb. 5. 1.* These sacrifices are of two sorts, some *Eucharisticall*, as testifications of homage, subjection, duty and service, as the dedication of the first fruits, the offerings of *Abel*, the meate and drinke offerings; &c. Some *Illicitall* or *expiatory*, for the washing away of sinnes, for making compensation to the Justice of God, which had beene in sinne violated, and to propitiate him againe. So that in this regard a Priest was to bee a *middle Person*, by God appointed to stand, and to Minister betweene him and men in their behalfe, to bee impartiall and faithfull towards the Justice and Truth of God, and not to bee over-ruled by his love to men to injure him; and to bee compassionate and mercifull towards the errors of men, and not to be over-ruled by his zeale to Gods Justice, to give over the care or service of them. And such an High Priest was Christ, zealous of his Fathers Righteousnesse and Glory, for he was *set forth to declare the Righteousnesse of God, Rom. 3. 25.* and he did glorifie him on earth by finishing the things which hee had given him to doe, *Ioh. 17. 4.* Compassionate towards the errours and miseries of his Church, for he was appointed to expiate, and to remove them out of the way, *Col. 2. 14.*

Touching this Priesthood, wee will thus proceede: First, to enquire into the *Necessity* wee have of such a Priest,

The Priesthood of Christ.

403

VERSE 4.

Priest. Secondly, what kinde of *Qualifications* are requisite in him, who must be unto us such a Priest. Thirdly, wherein the *Acts* or *Offices* of such a Priesthood doe principally consist. Fourthly, what is the *Vertue*, fruits, ends, events of such a Priesthood. Fifthly, what are the *Duties* which the execution of that Office doth enforce upon us, or what uses wee should make of it. In these five particulars, I conceive, will the substance of most things which pertain unto the Priesthood of Christ be absolved.

For the first of these wee must premise this generall rule, there can bee no necessity of a Priest (in that sense which is most proper and here intended) but betweene a *guilty creature*, and a *righteous God*, for if man were innocent in his relations towards God, hee would stand in no neede of an *Expiation*, and if God were unrighteous in the passages of mans sinne, there would not bee due unto him any just debt of *satisfaction*. This being premised I shall through many steppes and gradations bring you to this necessity of Christs Priesthood which wee inquire into.

First, every creature is unavoidably subject to the Creator, for he made all things for himselfe, and all is to returne that Glory to him for which he made them, *Pro. 16.4. Rom. 9. 21.* And this subjection of the creature to the Creator, doth suppose a debt of service to the Will of the Creator. Impossible it is, and utterly repugnant to the quality of a creature not to bee subject to some Law, and indebted in some obedience or other to him that made it. *Omne esse is propter operari*, it is a certaine rule in creatures, that God giveth every creature a Being to this end, that it might put forth that being in some such operations as hee hath fitted it for, and prescribed it to observe. The most excellent of all creatures, that excell in strength, are *Ministers to doe his pleasure and to heare his voyce*, *Psal. 103. 20, 21.* and all the rest have their se-

D d

verall

VERSE 4.

verall lawes, and rules of working by his wisedome set them, in the which they wait upon him, and according unto which they moove like *Ezekiels* wheelles, by the conduct of an invisible Spirit, and by the command of a voyce that is above them, as if they understood the Law of their Creator, and knew the precepts which they doe obey, *Ezek. 1.25, 26. Psal. 104. 19.* No creature is for its selfe onely, or its owne end, for that which hath not its being of its selfe, cannot bee an end unto it selfe, in as much as the end of every thing which is made, is antecedent to the being of it, in the minde and intention of him that made it. The end of things is, as a marke, fixed and unmoveable in the purpose of the supreme cause, the creatures as the arrow, ordered by a most wise, and efficacious providence, some through naturall and necessary, others voluntary and contingent motions unto one and the same generall end, the glory and service of the Creator.

Secondly, no creature is in its being, or in any those operations and services which to God it owes, intrinsically, and of it selfe, immutable. It is Gods owne peculiar honour to bee without variablenesse or shaddow of changing, *Iam. 1. 17. Mal. 3. 6.* There was a time when the Sunne stood still, and moved backward, and was filled with darkenesse, as with an internall cloud; when the Lions have forgotten to devoure, and the fire to consume, and the Whales to concoct. God can as he will alter the courses of nature, let goe the reines, and dispenge with the rules which himselfe had secretly imposed upon the creatures to observe, which shewes that they are not in themselves immutable. That constancie which in their motions they observe, is from the regular government of that most wise providence which carries them to their end *without any turning, Ezek. 1. 17.* but when his Glory requires, and his Will commands it, the mountaines tremble, the sea cleaves asunder, the rivers runne

The Priesthood of Christ.

405

VERSE 4.

runne backe, the earth opens, the Lawes of nature stand still for a while without any execution, as if they were suspended or repeal'd by him that made them: and therefore in that place things are said to *move by a voyce* which is above them, namely, by the command of the supreme cause, *Ezek. 1. 24, 25.*

Tirdly, man being in his nature, and formall constitution a *reasonable creature*, was appointed by God to serve him after a *reasonable manner*, out of judgement, discretion, and election to make choyce of his way above all others, as being most excellent, and beautifull in it selfe, and most convenient and advantageous unto man; therefore our service is called a *reasonable service*, *Rom. 12. 1.* and *David* is said to have *chosen the way of truth*, and the precepts of the Lord, *Psal. 119. 30.* and *Moses* to have *chosen the afflictions* of Gods people, and the reproches of Christ, before the pleasures of sinne, or the treasures of Egypt, *Heb. 11. 25, 26.* And hence it is that Holinesse in the phrased of Scripture is called *Judgement*, he shall *convince the world of judgement*, *Iohn 16. 11.* and *he shall bring forth judgement unto victory*, *Matth. 12. 30.* Noting that the Spirit of holinesse ruleth and worketh in the children of obedience by a way of *reason* and *conviction*, therefore hee is called a *Spirit of Judgement*, *Esai. 4. 4.* And for this cause God did not set any over-ruling law or determinating vertue over the operations of man, as of other creatures, that so hee might truly worke out of the conduct of judgement, and election of will.

Fourthly, there is no deviation from a reasonable service, or true active obedience, (properly so-called) for the obedience of brutes and inanimate creatures (is rather passive than active (which hath not some intrinsecall pravity in it, and by consequence some fundamentall demerit, or obligation unto punishment: for Guilt is the proper passion of sinne, resultant out of it, and therefore inseparable from it. It cannot bee that a creature

VERSE 4.

should of it selfe, and out of the corruption of its owne reason and judgement, choose to relinquish the service of him to whom it is naturally and unavoydably subject, and by that meanes becomes altogether unprofitable, abominable, and unfit for the Masters use, and for those Holy ends to which it was originally ordered, but it must withall incurre the displeasure, and thereupon provoke the revenge of that righteous Creator, who out of great reasons had put it under such a service.

Fifthly, By all this which hath hitherto beene spoken it appeares that God is not unjust, but most Holy and Righteous: First, in making a Law for man to observe, when hee forbade the eating of the fruite of the tree of knowledge of good and evill, to shew that man had nothing by personall, immediate, and underived right, but all by donation and indulgence. Any Law God might justly make, the obedience whereof hee gave the creature an originall power to performe, by reason of the naturall and necessary subjection of the creature unto him. Secondly, in annexing a curse and penalty to the violation of that Law, which for the declaration of his glorious Justice hee might most righteously doe, because of the inevitable demerit, or liableneffe unto censure from the disobedience of that Law resulting. Thirdly, in making man in such a mutable condition, as in the which hee might stand or fall by his owne election, because hee would bee obeyed by judgement and free choice, *not by fatall necessity, or absolute determination.

Sixthly, here then comes in the *fall of man*, being a wilfull or chosen transgression of a Law, under the precepts whereof hee was most justly created, and unto the malediction whereof he was as necessarily and righteously subject if he transgressed; for as by being Gods creature, he was subject to his will, so by being his prisoner, he was as justly subject unto his wrath, and that so much the more, by how much the precept was more just, the obedience

* Basil. tom. 1.
Homil. Quod
Deus non est Au-
tor mali. Justin.
Mart. Apolog. 1.
τὸ αὐτὸ ἐστὶν —
ἐτὸ ἀναγκαστικόν
Θεοῦ φίλον.
Vid. Tertul. ad-
vers. Marc. l. 3.
c. 6, 7-9.
Prov. 1. 29.
Eccles. 7. 29.
Esai. 66. 3, 4.

The Priesthood of Christ.

407

VERSE 4.

obedience more easie, the transgression more unreasonable, and the punishment more certaine.

Now by this fall of man there came great mischief into the world, and intolerable injury was done by the Creature to him that made him. First, his dominion and authority in his Holy command was violated. Secondly, his Justice, Truth and Power in his most Righteous threatnings were despised. Thirdly, his most Pure and Perfect Image, wherein man was created in righteousness and true holiness, was utterly defaced. Fourthly, his Glory, which by an active service the creature should have brought unto him, was lost and despoiled. So that now things will not returne to their primitive order and perfection againe, till these two things be first effected: First, a *Satisfaction* of Gods Justice: And secondly, a *Reparation* of mans nature; which two must needs be effected by such a middle and common person, as hath both zeale towards God, that he may be satisfied, and compassion toward man, that hee may be repaired; such a person, as having mans guilt and punishment on him translated, may satisfy the Justice of God, and as having a fulnesse of Gods Spirit and Holiness in him, may sanctifie and repaire the nature of man. And this person is the Priest here spoken of by *David*.

Here the learned frame a kinde of conflict in Gods Holy Attributes, and by a liberty which the Holy Ghost from the language of holy Scripture alloweth them, they speake of God after the manner of men, as if he were reduced unto some straits and difficulties by the crosse demands of his severall attributes. Justice called upon him for the condemnation of a sinfull, and therefore worthily accursed creature, which demand was seconded by his Truth, to make good that threatning, *In the day that thou eatest thereof, thou shalt die the death*. Mercy on the other side pleaded for favour and compassion towards man, wofully seduced and overthrowne by Satan; and

VERSE 4.

Peace for reconcilement and pacification betweene an offended Judge, and an undone creature. Hereupon the infinite Wisedome and Counsell of the blessed Trinity found out a way, which the Angels of Heaven gaze on with admiration and astonishment, how to reconcile these different pleas of his Attributes together. A Priest then is resolved upon, one of the same blessed Trinity, who by his Fathers ordination, his owne voluntary susception, and the Holy Spirits sanctification, should bee fitted for the businesse. He was to be both a *Surety*, and a *Head* over sinfull men, *to suffer* their punishments, and *to sanctifie* their natures, in the relation of a surety to pay mans debt unto God; and in the relation of an Head to restore Gods Image unto man: and thus in him *Mercy and Truth have met together, Righteousnesse and Peace have kissed each other, Psal. 85. 10.*

So then the necessity which Man fallen hath of this Priest here spoken of, is grounded upon the sweet Harmony, and mutuall kisses of Gods Mercy, Truth, Righteousnesse and Peace; which will more distinctly appeare by considering three things: First, God did purpose not utterly to destroy his creature, and that principally for these two reasons, as wee may observe out of the Scriptures: First, his owne *free and everlasting Love*, and that infinite delight which he hath in Mercy, which disposeth him abundantly to pardon, and to exercise loving kindnesse in the earth, *Mic. 7. 18. Exod. 34. 6, 7. Psalm. 103. 8. Esai. 55. 7. Ier. 9. 24.* Secondly, his delight to be actively glorified by his creatures voluntary service and subjection: *Herein is my Father glorified, that you beare much fruit, Iohn 15. 8. I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that he turne from his way and live, Ezekiel, 33. 11.* Hee delighteth most in bloody conquests, when by his patience, goodnesse, and forbearance hee subdueth the hearts, affections, and consciences of men unto himselfe, so leading them unto repentance and bringing

The Priesthood of Christ.

409

VERSE 4.

bringing downe their thoughts unto the Obedience of Christ: hee loveth to see things in their primitive rectitude and beauty, and therefore esteemeth himselfe more glorified in the *services*, than in the *sufferings* of men. Hee loveth to have a Church and Generation of men, which shall serve him in the midst of all his enemies. *The Lord loveth the gates of Sion, more than all the dwellings of Iacob, Psalme 87. 2.* namely, because hee was there more solemnly worshipped and served. And therefore he resolved not to destroy all men, lest there should bee no Religion upon the Earth. When the Angels fell, they fell not all, many were still left to glorifie him actively in their service of him, but when *Adam* fell, all mankinde fell in him, so that there was no tree of this Paradise left to bring forth any fruit unto God (and this is most certaine, God had rather have his trees for fruit, than for fuell,) and for this reason he was pleased to restore Mankinde againe. These are the causes why the Lord would not utterly destroy Man, but these alone shew not the necessity of a Priest to come betweene God and Man.

Secondly, God did purpose not to suffer sinne to passe utterly unrevenged, and that for these reasons: First, because of his great *Hatred* thereof. Hee is of *purser eyes than to behold evil, he cannot looke on iniquity, Hab. 1. 13.* it provoketh a nauseousnesse and abhorrency in him, *Psal. 5. 6. Zech. 8. 17. Revel. 3. 16. Amos 5. 21, 22. Esai. 1. 13, 14.* Secondly, because of his *Truth*, and the Law which hee had established against sinne, which hee will in no wise abolish, *one jot or tittle shall in no wise passe from the Law till all bee fulfilled, Matth. 5. 18.* For it is altogether undecent, especially to the Wisedome and Righteousnesse of God, that that which provoketh the execution, should procure the abrogation of his Law, that that should supplant and undermine the Law, for the alone preventing whereof, the Law, was before established.

*ὅτι μὴ διαφθαρήν
τὸ ἀγαθὸν καὶ τὸ
καλόν. Elian. de
Zaleu. Vi. Grot.
de satisfactione
christi, cap. 5.*

VERSE 4.

blished. Thirdly, because of his *terror* and fearefull Majesty, for God will have men alwayes to tremble before him, and by his terror to bee perswaded from sinning, 2 *Cor.* 5.10, 11. God will for this cause have men alwayes to feare before him, because hee reserveeth to himselfe entire the punishment of sin; *Feare him who is able to destroy both body and soule in hell, I say unto you feare him*; saith our Saviour, *Matth.* 10.28. *Luk.* 12.4. for it is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the living God, and therefore wee ought to serve him *with reverence and godly feare, because hee is a consuming fire,* *Heb.* 10.30. 12.28, 29.

Thirdly, adde unto all this the everlasting *Impotency* which is in man either to satisfie God, or to repaire himselfe. Gods Justice is *Infinite* which is wronged, and his Glory infinite, of which man had attempted to spoile and rob him, and man is both *finite* in himselfe and very *impotent* by reason of sin (for to be a sinner, and without strength are termes equivalent in the Apostle, *Rom.* 5.6-8.) Now then betweene *finite* and *infinite* there can be no proportion, and therefore from the one to the other there can be no satisfaction. Man is utterly unable to doe any of Gods Will, because he is altogether carnall, *Rom.* 8.7. 1 *Cor.* 2. 14. and he is utterly unable either to suffer or to breake thorow the wrath of God, because he hath not strength enough to endure it, nor obedience to submit unto it. Now then joine all these things together, and wee shall see the absolute necessity wee had of a Priest. God *will not execute the severity of his Law*, for thereby the creature should everlastingly lose the fruition of him, and hee should likewise lose the service and voluntary subjection of his creature. And yet *he will not abolish his Law* neither, lest thereby his Justice should bee the more securely abused, his hatred against sinne the lesse declared, his Truth in all his threatenings questioned, and his dreadfull Majesty by men neglected, as the wooden king

The Priesthood of Christ.

411

VERSE 4.

king by the frogs in the fable, hee will not punish those persons whom hee loves, because he is pittifull to them: he will not passe over the sinnes which he hates, because he is jealous towards himselfe. Man and sinne are as inseparably joyned together since the fall, as fire and heat; yet God will have mercy on the man, and hee will take vengeance on the sinne. Some course then or other must there bee found out to translate this mans sinnes on anothers person who may be able to beare them, and to interest this mans person in anothers righteousness, which may bee able to cover him. Some way must bee found out, that things may be all one in regard of man, as if the Law had beene utterly abrogated, and that they may bee all one in regard of God too, as if the creature had beene utterly condemned. And all this is done in our High Priest. On Him was executed the curse of the Law, by him was fulfilled the righteousness of the Law, for him was remitted the sinne of Man, and through him were all things made new againe. The world was in Christ as in its surety, making satisfaction to the Justice of God; and God was in Christ as in his Ambassadour, reconciling the world unto himselfe againe. By all which we see the necessity which man lapsed had of a Priest to restore him.

Hence then we may learne, first, how much we ought to hate sinne, which armes the Law, Justice and Power of God against us. As hatefull as it is unto God, so hatefull it is in it selfe, for hee Judgeth uprightly, hee seeth things just as they are, without passion, prejudice, or partiality: and as hatefull as it is in it selfe, so hatefull should it bee unto us, as the onely ground of our misery, of the creatures vanity, and of Gods dishonour. Wee see it is so hatefull unto God, that hee will most certainly bee avenged of it. If he spare me, yet he will not spare my sin, though his owne beloved Son must bee punished for it. O then why should that be light to mee, which was as
heavie

VERSE 4.

heavie as a millstone to the soule of Christ? Why should that bee my pleasure, which was his Passion? Why should that be in a Throne with me, which was upon a Crosse with him? Why should I allow that to be really in me, which the Lord so severely punished, when the guilt thereof was but imputed to his Sonne? Many sins there are which others in their practice, as well as Papists in their doctrine and profession esteeme for light and veniall finnes. And veniall indeed they are, *per exorato-rem Patris Christum*, as *Tertullian* states the question, by Christ who is a prevailing Advocate with the Father. But however let not us dare esteeme that a light thing for which Christ died. And woe had it beene for men, if Christ had not in his Body on the tree carried as well the guilt of our idle words, our vaine thoughts, our loose and impertinent actions, as of our oaths, execrations and blasphemies. If great finnes were as the speare and nailes, certainly small finnes were the thornes which pierced his head. And therefore we should learne with *David* to hate euery evill way, because God hates it, and suffers it not to passe unpunished, to revenge the quarrell of Christ against those lusts of ours which nailed him to his crosse, and to crucifie them for him againe, for, for that end was Christ crucified, that our old man might bee crucified with him, that the body of sinne might bee destroyed, that hence-forth wee should not seive sinne, *Rom. 6.6.*

Againe, wee see by this necessity of a Priest, how deeply we stand engaged to our mercifull God, who hath vouchsafed to helpe us in our greatest necessitie. How wee ought to love him, who hath first of all loved us. How wee ought in our bodies and in our spirits to glorifie him, who hath so dearely bought us. How we should like voluntaries fight for him who overcame for us. How thankfull we should be to him, who was so compassionate unto us. How wee should admire and
adore

The Priesthood of Christ.

413

VERSE 4.

adore the unsearchable riches of his wisdom and goodness, who when wee were desperately and incurably gone, had found out a way of escape and deliverance for us. God stood not in need of us or any service of ours, he could have glorified himselfe in our just destruction. Who then can enough expresse either the mercy of God, or the duty of man, when hee considers that God should call together all the depths of his owne wisdom and counsell, to save a company of desperate fugitives, who had joyned in combinations with his greatest enemies to resist and dishonour him? It would have posed all the wisdom of the world, (though misery be commonly very witty to shape and fashion to it selfe images of deliverance) to have found out a way to Heaven betweene the wrath of God, and the sinne of man. It would have posed all the Heavenly intelligences, and the united consultations of the blessed Angels, to have reconciled Gods mercy in the salvation of man, and his Justice in the condemnation of sinne, to have powred out hell upon the sinne, and yet to have bestowed Heaven upon the sinner. If God should have instructed us thus farre, you are miserable creatures; but I am a mercifull God; the demands of my Justice I must not deny, neither will I deny the entreaties of my mercy: finde me out a Sacrifice answerable to my Justice; and it shall be accepted for you all: O where could man have found out a creature of capacity enough to hold, or of strength enough to beare the sinnes of the World, or the wrath of God? Where could he have found out in Heaven or Earth, amongst men or Angels a Priest that durst accompany such a Sacrifice into the presence of so consuming a fire? Or where could he have found out an Altar whereon to offer, and whereby to sanctifie so great a Sacrifice? No, no, the misery of man was too deepe, and inextricable for all the created counsell in the world to invent a deliverance. Now then if God himselfe did study to save
me,

VERSE 4.

me, how great reason is there that I should study to serve him? How ought all my wisdom, and counsell, and thoughts, and desires bee directed to this one resolution, to live acceptably and thankfully unto him, who when hee might have produced Glory to himselfe out of my confusion, chose rather to humble, and as it were for a while to unglorifie himselfe for my salvation? Certainly that man did never rightly understand the horreur of sinne, the infinite hatred of God against it, the heavinesse of his wrath, the malediction of the Law, the mystery and vast dimensions of Gods love in Christ, the preciousnesse of his Sacrifice, the end, purpose, or merit of his Death, any of those unsearchable riches of God manifested in the flesh, who will not crucifie a vanity, a lust, a pleasure, an earthly member unto him againe; who findes more content and satisfaction in his owne wayes of sinne and death, more wisdom in the temptations and deceits of Satan and his owne fleshly minde, than in those deepe mysteries of grace, and contrivances of mercy, which the Angels desire to prie into.

Therefore in the last place wee should labour to feele this necessity we have of such a Priest. This is the onely reason why so few make use of so pretious a fountaine, because they trust in their owne muddy and broken cisternes at home, and are never sensibly and thoroughly touched with the sense of their owne wants; for it is not the saying and confessing, *ore tenus*, that I have nothing, nor the knowing in speculation only that I have nothing, but the feeling and smarting by reason of my want, which will drive mee to seeke for reliefe abroad. If a man did seriously consider and lay together such thoughts as these; I am very busie for the affaires and passages of this present life, which will quickly vanish and passe away like a Weavers shuttle, or a tale that is told. I have another and an abiding life to live after this is over. All that I toyle for here is but for the backe, the belly, the bagge, and

The Priesthood of Christ.

415

VERSE 4.

and the posterity. And am I not neerer to my selfe, than I am to my money? Am I not neerer to my soule, than I am to my carcasse, or to my seed? Must I not have a being in that, when neither I nor my posterity have either backe to be cloathed, or belly to be fed, or name to bee supported? O why am I not as sadly imployed, why spend I not some at least as serious and inquisitive thoughts about this, as about the other? Doe I not know that I must one day stand before him who is a consuming fire, that I must one day bee weighed in the ballance, and woe be unto mee if I am found too light? Appeare before him I dare not of my selfe alone, without a *Priest* to mediate for mee, to cover and protect mee from his fury, and to reconcile mee unto him againe. My *person* wants a *Priest*, it is clogg'd with infinite *Guilt*, which without him cannot bee covered. My *nature* wants a *Priest*, it is overspred with a deepe and universall *corruption*, which without him cannot be cured. My *sinnes* want a *Priest*, they are in number and in quality above measure sinnefull, which without him cannot bee pardoned. My *services* want a *Priest*, they are blemished and poysoned with many failings and corruptions, without him they cannot bee accepted: I say, if men did seriously lay together such thoughts as these, it could not be that rationally and sad men, men of deepe thoughts in other matters, who love to bould out things to the bran, and to bee very solicitous for evidence and certainty in them, should suffer such a businesse as this, their interest in that *Priest* who must alone clothe their persons with his righteousness, and cleanse their nature with his Spirit, and wash away their sinnes with his blood, and sanctifie their prayers and almes, and all religious devotions with his incense and intercession, or else all of them must passe thorow the triall of such a fire as will consume them all, to be slubber'd over with loose and slender thoughts, and to bee rested in, and resolved upon rather

VERSE 4.

rather by the lying presumptions of a deceitfull heart, than by the evidences and testimony of Gods Holy Spirit. Consider what I say, and the Lord give you understanding in all things.

The second thing proposed to bee considered in the *Priesthood* of Christ, was the *qualification* of that person who was to be a fit High-Priest for us. *Legall sacrifices* would not serve the turne to purge away sin, because of their baseness. They were not expiations of sin, *Heb. 9. 9. 12.* but were onely *remembrances* and commemorations of sinne, *Heb. 10. 3.* necessary it was that heavenly things themselves should be purified with better sacrifices, *Heb. 9. 23.* for they of themselves without that *typicall relation* which they had unto Christ, *Gal. 3. 23.* and that *Instrumentall vertue* which in that relation they had from him, *Heb. 9. 13.* were utterly *weake and unprofitable*, *Heb. 7. 18.* as the shadow hath neither being in it selfe, nor can give refreshment unto another, but dependently on the body to which it belongeth. And this appeareth, first, by their *reiteration*, where the conscience is once purg'd, and there is remission of sin, there is no more offering, *Heb. 10. 2. 18.* for the repeating of the sacrifice shews that the person for whose sake it is repeated, is *in statu quo prius*, in the same condition now as hee was in at the time of the former oblation. Secondly, by their *Variety*, there were both *Gifts and sacrifices* for sins, *Heb. 5. 1. 8. 3.* buls, and goats, and calves, and lambes, *Heb. 9. 9. 12. 13.* and that shewes that no one thing was fit to typifie the full expiation wrought by Christ, whereas he offered but *One Sacrifice*, and by that perfected for ever them that are sanctified, *Heb. 10. 12. 14.* And if *legall sacrifices* would not serve the turne, then neither would *legall Priests* be fit for so great a worke; for all the good which the Priest doth is in the vertue of the sacrifice which he brings: and this likewise the Apostle proves by many arguments: First, because of their *sinfulness*, for they themselves wanted an expiation,

The Priesthood of Christ.

417

VERSE 4.

expiation, and therefore could not be mediators for the finnes of others, *Heb. 5.3.7.27.* Secondly, because of the *carnalnesse of their institution.* They were made after the Law of a *carnall commandement*, that is, of a temporary, perishable, and meerely externall ordinance, *Heb. 7.16.* which prescribed onely the examples and shaddowes of Heavenly things. Thirdly, because of their *mortality*, they were not suffered to continue by reason of death, whereas our Priest must *live* to make intercession. Fourthly, because of their *Ministry*, and the revolution of their services, which never came to a period or perfection in which the Priest might give over, and *Sit downe.* They *Stood dayly Ministering*, and oftentimes offering (their service did daily returne upon them again) whereas Christ, after he had offered *One sacrifice* for sin for ever, *sate downe* on the right hand of God, *Heb. 10.11, 12.*

To shew you then the qualifications of this Priest. A Priest in generall is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, to offer sacrifice for the obtaining of righteousness and remission of finnes.

First then, Christ being a Priest, must of necessity be a *Mediator* and a *Surety* betweene parties, that he might have one unto whom, and others for whom and in whose behalfe to offer a sacrifice. Every Priest must be a *mediator* to stand betweene God and the people, and to intercept and beare the iniquity even of their holy things. And unto this mediation there must concur the consent of the parties between whom it is negotiated; for a mediator is not a mediator of one. Now God giveth his consent by laying on him our iniquities, and making his soule an offering for sin, and thereby declaring himselfe to be *One with us.* And man giveth his consent, when by faith he receiveth Christ, and so becommeth not onely the friend, but the Son of God, *Ioh. 1.12.*

Secondly, but every mediator is not presently a Priest, for there is a *mediation* onely by way of *intreaty*, prayer, and

Exod. 18.38.

Esa. 53.6.10.
Gal. 3.20.

VERSE 4.

and request, wherein men doe obtaine but not deserve or purchase remission for others; such mediators were *Ioab*, and the Widdow of *Tekoah* in the behalfe of *Absalom*, 2 *Sam.* 14. and there are mediators by way of satisfaction as *Sureties* are between the creditor, and the debtor; and such a Mediator was Christ, not onely a Mediator, but also a *Surety* of a better covenant, *Heb.* 8.6. *Heb.* 7. 22. he was not to procure remission of our sinnes by way of favour and request; but hee was set forth to declare the Righteousnesse of God, *Rom.* 3. 25. and such a Mediator betweene God and us must needs bee a Priest too; for the debt which we owed unto God was blood. Without shedding of blood there is no remission, *Heb.* 9.22.

Thirdly, being such a Priest he must have a Sacrifice answerable to the debt which was ow'd to his Father. The debt wee owed was the forfeiture and Subjection of our Soules and Bodies to the wrath of God, and the curse of the Law. God is able to destroy both Soule and Body in Hell, *Matth.* 10. 28. It is not to be understood onely of his Absolute power but of that power which as our Iudge he hath over us *per modum Iustitie*, as wee are his Prisoners, and so obnoxious to the Curses of his Law. Therefore our Priest also was to have a Soule and a Body, to pay as a surety for our Soules and Bodies. Thou shalt make his Soule an offering for sinne, *Eesai.* 53. 10. My soule is exceeding sorrowfull even unto Death, *Matth.* 26. 38. And againe, A Body hast thou prepared me; we are sanctified through the Offering of the Body of Iesus Christ once for all, *Heb.* 10. 5. 10. His owne selfe bare our sinnes in his owne Body on the Tree, 1 *Pet.* 2. 24. So hee was to bee Man that hee might have a fit and answerable Sacrifice to offer, *σῶμα καὶ προπαρασκευασμένον*, Thou hast fitted or prepared a Body for mee, that my Sacrifice might bee proportionable to that in the place whereof it stood. And thereby as hee is fit for passion, so also for Compassion, hee was to bee our Kinsman, and of our blood, that he might bee a

mercifull

mercifull and faithfull high Priest, *Heb. 2. 11. 14. 17. Dent. 18. 15.* And fit for derivation of his Righteousnesse, and transfusion of his Spirit upon us; for *hee that Sanctifieth and they that are Sanctified are both of one.* And as it must be thus fitted to the sinner that it may bee a proper and suteable Sacrifice for his sinne: So must it be perfect likewise. First, *Without blemish or sinne.* Such an High Priest became us who is *Holy, Harmlesse, undefiled, separate from sinners, Heb. 7. 26.* That so he might offer himselfe without spot unto God, and have no need of a Sacrifice for himselfe, *Heb. 9. 14. 1 Pet. 1. 19.* Secondly, without any manner of Defect, which should stand in need of supplement and contribution from some thing else, that of it selfe alone it might bee sufficient, and available to bring perfection and salvation unto men, and to leave no more conscience of sinne behinde it, *Heb. 7. 19. 10. 14.*

Fourthly, as there was to bee such a Sacrifice, perfect in it selfe, and fit for the use and occasion for which it was appointed, so there must bee an *Altar* upon which to offer it unto the Father; for it is *the Altar which Sanctifieth the offering*; that is, which in regard of God giveth it acceptance, and which in regard of Man giveth it vertue, merit and value answerable to his occasions. This Sacrifice was to be sufficient for the satisfaction of God, and for the justification and reparation of Man, and both these by meanes of the *Altar* on which it was offered, which was the *Divine Nature.* Through the *Eternall Spirit* hee offered himselfe without spot unto God, and so by his blood purgeth our consciences from dead workes, *Heb. 9. 14.* For Christ as God sanctified himselfe as man, that so we through the vertue and merit of his Sacrifice might bee sanctified likewise, *Iohn 17. 19.* Hee was to be God as well as man, *Medium participationis*; before he could bee *Medium reconciliationis*; that so he might be himselfe supported to undergoe and breake through the

VERSE 4.

weight of sinne and the Law, and having so done might have compasse enough in his Sacrifice to satisfie the Justice of God, and to swallow up the sinnes of the world.

Fifthly, in as much as the *Vertue of the Deity* was to bee attributed truly to the *Sacrifice* (else it could have no value nor vertue in it) and that Sacrifice was to be his *Own Life, Soule and Body*, who is the Priest to offer it, because hee was not barely a *Priest* but a *Surety*, and so his person stood in stead of ours, to pay our debt, which was a debt of bloud, and therefore hee was to offer himselfe, *Heb. 9. 26. 1 Pet. 2. 24.* And in as much as his person must needs bee equivalent in dignity and representation to the persons of all those for whom hee mediated, and who were for his sake onely delivered from suffering: for these causes necessary it was that God and man should make but *one Christ*, in the unity of the same *infinite person*, whose natures they both were, that which suffered, and that which sanctified. The humane nature was not to bee left to subsist in and for it selfe, but was to have dependence, and supportance in the person of the Sonne, and a kinde of *Inexistence* in him, as the graft of an apple may have in the stocke of a plumb. From whence ariseth; first, the *Communication of properties* betweene the natures; when by reason of the unity of the person, wee attribute that to one nature which is common to the other, not by *confusion*, or *transfusion*, but by *Communion* in *one end* and in *one person*; as when the Scriptures attribute *Humane properties* to the *Divine Nature*. The *Lord of Life* was slaine, *Act. 3. 15.* God purchased the Church with his owne blond, *Act. 20. 28.* They crucified the *Lord of Glory*, *1 Cor. 2. 8.* O *Divine* to the *Humane nature*. As the *Sonne of Man* came downe from heaven, *Ioh. 3. 13.* and the *Sonne of Man* shall ascend where hee was before, *Ioh. 6. 62.* Or when both natures worke with their severall concurrence unto the same worke, as to walke on the waters, to rise out of the grave,

The Priesthood of Christ.

421

VERSE 4.

grave, &c. By which *Communication of properties* vertue is derived from the Altar to the Sacrifice in as much as it was the Lord of Glory which was crucified. So that his passions were in regard of the person which bare them, *Θειοανθρωπος*, both *Humane* and *Divine*, because the person was *Θεὸς ἄνθρωπος*, *God* and *Man*. Secondly, from the unity of the person supporting the Humane Nature with the Divine, ariseth the *Appliablenesse of one sacrifice unto all men*. Because the Person of the Sonne is infinitely more than equivalent to the persons of all men, as one Diamond to many thousand pebbles; and because the obedience of this sacrifice was the obedience of God, and therefore cannot but have more vertue and well-pleasingnesse in it, than there can bee demerit or malignity in the sinne of man.

Now this Person in whose unity the two Natures are conjoynd, is the second person in the Holy Trinity. He was the person against whom the first sinne was principally committed, for it was an affectation of wisdom and to bee like unto God; (as the falling-sinne now is the sinne against the third person) and therefore the mercy is the more glorious that hee did undertake the expiation. By him the world was made, *Col. 1. 16, 17. Ioh. 1. 3.* and therefore being spoiled hee was pleased to new make it againe, and to bring many Sonnes unto glory, *Heb. 2. 10.* Hee was the expresse image of his Father, *Heb. 1. 3. Col. 1. 15.* And therefore by him are wee renewed after Gods image againe, *Col. 3. 10.* He was the Sonne of God by Nature, and therefore the mercy was againe the more glorified in his making us Sonnes by Adoption, and so joynt heires with himselfe who was the heire of all things.

So then such an high Priest it became us to have, as should bee first an equall *middle person* betweene God and Man. In regard of God towards man an officer appointed to declare his Righteousnesse, and in regard of

VERSE 4.

man towards God a suretie ready to purchase their pardon and deliverance. Secondly, such an one as should bee *one with us* in the fellowship of *our nature*, passions, infirmities and temptations, that so hee might the more readily suffer for us, who in so many things suffered with us; and *one with God the Father* in his *Divine Nature*, that so by the vertue of his sufferings and resurrection he might be able both to satisfie his Justice, to iustifie our persons, to sanctifie our nature, to perfume and purifie our services, to raise up our dead bodies, and to present us to his Father a glorious Church without spot or wrinkle. And both these in the *Vnity of one Person*, that so by that meanes the Divine Nature might communicate vertue, merit, and acceptablenesse to the sufferings of the humane; and that the dignity of that person might countervaille the persons of all other men. And this person that person of the three, by whom the Glory of the mercy should bee the more wonderfully magnified. In one word *two things* are requisite to our *High Priest*. A *Grace of Vnion* to make the Person God and man in one Christ: and a *Grace of Vnction*, to fit him with such fulnesse of the Spirit, as may enable him to the performance of so great a worke, *Esai. II. 2*,

By all which wee should learne: First, to adore this great mystery of God manifested in the flesh, and justified in the Spirit, the Unsearchablenesse of that Love, which appointed God to bee Man, the Creator of the World to bee despised as a worme, for the salvation of such rebels, as might justly have beene left under chains of darknesse, and reserved to the same inevitable destruction with the Devils which fell before them. Secondly, to have alwayes before our eyes the great hatefulnesse of sinne, which no sacrifice could have expiated but the blood of God himselfe; and the great severity and inexorablenesse of Gods Justice against it, which no satisfaction could pacifie, no obedience compensate, but the suffe-

The Priesthood of Christ.

423

VERSE 4.

suffering and exinanition of himselfe. O what a condition shall that man bee in, who must stand or rather everlastingly sinke and be crushed unto the weight of that wrath against sinne, which amazed and made heavie unto death the soule of Christ himselfe? which made him who had the strength of the *Deity* to support him, the fulnesse of the *Spirit* to Sanctifie, and prepare him, the message of an *Angel* to comfort him, the relation of a *beloved Sonne* to refresh him, the voyce of his *Father* from heaven testifying unto him that hee was heard in what hee feared, the assurance of an *ensuing glory* and victory to encourage him (none of which shall be allowed the wicked in hell, who shall not onely bee the vessels of his vengeance, but which will bee as grievous as that, the everlasting objects of his hatred and detestation) which made I say even the Sonne of God himselfe, notwithstanding all these abatements, to pray with strong Cries, and bloody drops, and woefull conflicts of soule against the Cup of his Fathers wrath, and to shrink and decline that very worke for which onely hee came into the world? Thirdly, to praise God for that *great honour* which hee hath conferred upon our nature in the flesh of his Sonne, which in him is anointed with more grace and glory, and filled with more vast and unmatchable perfections than all the Angels in heaven are together capable of. For though for a little while hee was made lower than the Angels for the purpose of his suffering, yet hee is now sat downe on the right hand of the Majesty on high, Angels, and Authorities, and Powers being made subject unto him, *Heb. 2. 6-9. 1 Pet. 3. 22. Heb. 1. 4-13.* And for the *infinite mercy* which he hath shewed to our soules, bodies, and persons in the sacrifice of his Sonne; in our reconciliation and favour with him, in the justification of our persons from the guilt of sinne, in the sanctification of our nature from the corruption of sinne, in the inheritance reserved in heaven for us, in the

VERSE 4.

Communion and fellowship wee have with Christ in his merits, power, Priviledges, and heavenly likenesse. Now, saith the Apostle, *wee are Sonnes*, and it doth not yet appeare what wee shall bee: but we know that when hee shall appeare, we shall belike him; for we shall see him, as he is, 1 Ioh. 3. 2.

From these things which have beene spoken of the *Personall Qualifications* of our High Priest, it will bee easie to finde out the *third particular* inquired into, touching the *Acts or Offices of Christs Priesthood*; or rather touching the parts of the same Action, for it is all but one. *Two Acts* there are wherein the execution of this office doth consist. The first, an *Act of Oblation* of himselfe once for all, as an adequate sacrifice, and full compensation for the sinnes of the whole world, Heb. 9. 14. 26. Our *Debt* unto God was *Twofold*. As we were his *Creatures*, so wee owed unto him a *Debt of Active Obedience* in doing the Duties of the whole Law, and as wee are his *prisoners*, so wee owed unto him a *Debt of passive obedience* in suffering willingly and throughly the Curses of the Law. And under this Law Christ was made, to redeeme us by his fulfilling all that righteousness who were under the precepts and penalties of the Law our selves. Therefore the Apostle saith, hee *was sinne for us*; that is, a *Sacrifice for sinne*, to meete and intercept that wrath which was breaking out upon us, 2 Cor. 5. 21. Herein was the great mercy of God seen to us that hee would not punish *Sinners*, though hee would not spare *sinne*. If hee should have resolved to have judged *Sinners*, we must have perished in our owne persons, but being pleased to deale with *sinne* onely in *abstracto*, and to spare the sinner, hee was contented to accept of a *Sacrifice*, which (under the Relation and Title of a Sacrifice) stood in his sight like the *body of sinne alone by it selfe*; in which respect hee is likewise said to be made a *Curse for us*, Gal. 3. 13. Now that which together

Aug. Enchirid.
cap. 41. & Da-
nai Comment. de
Mendacio, cap.
15. & Epist. 120.
Greg. Nazian.
Orat. 2. de filio.
Chrysost. in
2 Cor. 5.

The Priesthood of Christ.

425

VERSE 4

ther with these things giveth the complete and ultimate formality of a Sacrifice unto the death of Christ, was his owne *willingnesse thereunto in that he offered himselfe. And therefore hee is called the *Lambe of God*, that taketh away the finnes of the world, because hee was dumbe and opened not his mouth, but was obedient unto death, even the death of the Crosse, *Phil. 2. 8.* Christs death in regard of God the Father was a necessary death; for hee had before determined that it should bee done, *Act. 4. 28.* Thus it is written, and thus it behov'd Christ to suffer, *Luk. 24. 46.* The Sonne of Man must be lifted up, *Ioh. 3. 14.* And therefore hee is said to bee a *Lambe slaine from the beginning of the world*, in regard of Gods Decree and preordination. But this gave it not the formality of a Sacrifice; for God the Father was not the Priest, and it is the Action of the Priest which giueth the being of a Sacrifice to that which is offered. Againe, Christs death in regard of men was violent. They slew him with wicked hands, and killed the Prince of life, *Act. 2. 23. 3. 15.* And in this sense it was no Sacrifice neither, for they were not Priests but butchers of Christ. Thirdly, his death in regard of himselfe was *voluntary. *I lay downe my life, no man taketh it from me, but I lay it downe of my selfe. I have power to lay it downe, and I have power to take it againe, Ioh. 10. 17, 18.* And this oblation, and willing obedience, or rendring himselfe to God is that which gives being to a Sacrifice. Hee was delivered by God, *Act. 2. 23.* Hee was delivered by Judas and the Jewes, *Matth. 27. 2. Act. 3. 13.* and hee was yeelded and given up by himselfe, *Gal. 3. 20. Ephes. 5. 25.* In regard of God it was Justice and Mercy, *Ioh. 3. 16, 17. Rom. 3. 25.* In regard of man it was murder, and cruelty, *Act. 7. 52.* In regard of Christ it was obedience and humilitie, *Phil. 2. 8.* And that voluntary act of his was that which made it a Sacrifice. Hee gave himselfe for us, an offering and a Sacrifice to God for a sweete smelling savour, *Ephes. 5. 2.*

* Hostia si ad aras reluctata fuisset, invito Deo offerri putabant. Macrobi. Saturn. l. 3. c. 5. Imò non nisi volentem et velut anuentem mactabant. Plutarch. Sympos. lib. 8. cap. 8.

παρὰ τὴν ἀρετὴν ἡγοῦντο τὸ μὴ σφάττειν ἀπὸ τῆς ἰσότητος καὶ ἀμεταμέτρητο, καὶ οὐκ.

* Quia voluit, quando voluit, quomodo voluit. Aug. de trin. l. 4. cap. 13. Passiones animi & corporis dispensationis voluntate sive ulla necessitate suscepit. lib. 83. Quest. cap. 80. Spiritum cum verbo sponte dimisit preventivo carnis officio. Tert. Apol. cap. 21.

* De Traditione Christi facta à Patre & à Filio, à Juda & Judæis, vide (ex Augustino) Lombard. 3. Sent. Dist. 20. C. D.

VERSE 4.

* Non conditio-
nis necessitate
sed miserationis
voluntate. Aug.
in Psal. 78. vid.
Parker. de Des-
censu. lib. 3.
Num. 116.

* See Hooker
lib. 5. Num. 48.
Field of the
Church. lib. 5.
cap. 18.
Between these
diverse desires,
no Repugnan-
cie but a Subor-
dination. *Filius
Dei qui dixit &
facta sunt, Man-
davit & creata
sunt, omnia: se-
cundum hoc
quod Filius ha-
minis temperat
sententiam, &c.
Hieron. Ep. 70.
2. lib. 2. advers.
Pelagium.*

* His death did not grow out of the condition of his nature, neither was it inflicted on him by reason of an *ex-
cess of strength* in those that executed it; for he was the Lord of glory) but onely out of *mercy* towards men, out of *obedience* towards God, and out of *power* in himselfe. *Ergo omnis Christi infirmitas fuit ex potestate.* By his pow-
er hee assumed those infirmities which the oeconomie and dispensation of his Priesthood on the earth required; and by the same power hee laid them aside againe, when that service was ended. And this I say was that which made it a Sacrifice. As Martyrdome; when men lay downe their lives for the profession of the truth, and the service of the Church, is called a *Sacrifice*, *Phil. 2. 17.*

If it bee here objected that Christs death was against his *owne will*, for hee exceedingly *feared* it, *Heb. 5. 7.* and prayed earnestly against it, as a thing contrary to his will, *Mat. 26. 39.* To this I answer, that all this doth not hinder but commend his willingnes and obedience. Consider him in *private* as a *Man*, of the same naturall affections, desires, and abhorrencies with other men, and consider the cup as it was *calix amaritudinis*, a very bitter cup; and so he most justly feared and declined it, as knowing that it would be a most wofull and a heavie combate which hee was entring upon: but consider him in his *publike Relation*, as a *Mediator*, a *surety*, a mercifull and faithfull high Priest: and the cup as it was *calix salutis*, a cup of salvation, and so he most willingly and obediently submitted unto it. And this willingnes *ratione officii* was much the greater, because *ratione natura*, his will could not but shrinke from it. It is easie to be willing in such a service as is sutable to our naturall condition and affections, but when nature shall necessarily shrink, sweat, startle, and stand amazed at a service, then not to repent, nor decline, nor sling off the burden, but with submission of heart to lie downe under it, this is of all other the * greatest obedience. It was the *voyce of nature*, and the presentation of the

The Priesthood of Christ.

427

VERSE 4.

the just, and implanted desires of the flesh, to say *Transcend* let it passe from me. It was the *retractation of mercy* and duty to say, *Glorifie thy selfe*. Whatever my nature desires, whatever my will declines, whatever becomes of me, yet still *glorifie thy selfe* and *save thy Church*. If it cannot otherwise be, thā by my drinking this bitter cup, *thy wil be done*.

The second Act in the worke of Christs Priesthood is the act of *Application*, or *virtuall continuation* of this Sacrifice to the end of the world; and that is in the *Intercession of Christ*; unto which there is preredicated a power and prevalency over all his enemies, to breake through the guilt of sinne, the Curse of the Law, and the chaines of death; with which it was impossible that he should bee held. The vision which *Moses* had of the *burning bush*, was an excellent resemblance of the *Sacrifice* of Christ. The bush noted the Sacrifice; the fire, the suffering; the continuance and prevailing of the bush against the fire, the victory of Christ and breaking through all those sufferings, which would utterly have devoured any other man. And this power of Christ was shewed in his *Resurrection*, wherein hee was declared to bee the *Sonne of God with power*, *Rom. 1. 4.* and in his *ascention* when hee led all his *Enemies captive*, *Eph. 4. 8.* and in his *sitting at the right hand of God*, farre above all principallities and powers, *Eph. 1. 19, 20.* All which did make way to the presenting of his Sacrifice before the mercy-seate, which is the consummation thereof, and without which hee had not beene a Priest. *Wee have such an high Priest*, saith the Apostle, *as is set downe on the right hand of the Majesty in the heavens*, for if he were on earth he should not bee a Priest, seeing that there are Priests which offer gifts according to the Law, *Heb. 8. 1. 4.* It was the same continued action, whereby the Priest did offer without the Holy place, and did then once every yeare bring the blood into the holiest of all, *Heb. 13. 11.* For the reason why it was shed was to present it to the mercy-seate, and to

VERSE 4.

to shew it unto the Lord there. So Christs act or office was not ended, nor fit to denominate him a complete Priest, till he did enter with blood, and present his offering in the holiest of all not made with hands, *Heb. 9. 24.* And therefore he had not been a Priest if he should have continued on the earth, for there was another Priesthood there, which was not to give place but upon the accomplishment of his; for the whole figure was to passe away when the whole truth was come. Now Christs Oblation was the *verbum Dei*, the truth prefigur'd in the Priests sacrificing of the beast, & his entrance into heaven was the truth prefigured in the Priests carrying of the blood into the holiest of all. And therefore both these were to be accomplished, before the Leviticall Priesthood did give place.

Here then it will bee needfull for the more full unfolding of the *Priesthood of Christ* to open the Doctrine of his *Intercession* at the right hand of his Father. The Apostle calleth it the *Appearing of Christ for us*, *Heb. 9. 24.* which is *verbum forense*, an expression borrowed from the custome of humane courts; for as in them when the plaintiffe or defendant is called, their *Attornie* appeareth in their name and behalfe; so when we are summoned by the justice of God to defend our selves against those exceptions and complaints, which it preferreth against us, wee have an *Advocate with the Father*, even *Jesus Christ the righteous*, who standeth out, and appeareth for us, *1 Ioh. 2. 2.* As the high Priest went into the sanctuary with the names of the twelve Tribes upon his breast: so Christ entred into the holiest of all with our persons, and in our behalfe, in which respect the Apostle saith that he was *Apprehended of Christ*, *Phil. 3. 12.* and that we doe sit together in heavenly places with him, *Eph. 2. 6.* *Merit*, and *Efficacie* are the two things which set forth the vertue of Christs Sacrifice by which hee hath reconciled us to his Father. The *Merit* of Christ being a *Redundans merit*, and having in it a plentiful redemption,

tion, and a sufficient salvation, hath in it two things: First, there is ἀπολύτρωσις, an expiation, or *satisfaction* by way of *price*. Secondly, there is κληρονομία, an *Inheritance* by way of *purchase*, and *acquisition*, Ephes. 1. 14. Hee was made of a Woman, *made under the Law*, for two ends, ἵνα ἡμεῖς ἀγορίδω, and ἵνα ἀπολάβωμεν κληρονομίαν, that hee might *redeeme* us from the curse under which wee lay, and that hee might purchase for us *the inheritance* which we had forfeited before; (for so by *adoption* in that place I understand in a complexed and generall sense every good thing which belongs unto us in the right of our sonneship with Christ, and that is the *Inheritance of glory*, Rom. 8. 17. 23.) Now all this is effected by the obedience of *Christ's death*; for in that was the act of *impetration* or procurement, consisting in the treaty betweene God and Christ. But there is yet further required an *execution*, a reall effectualnesse, and *actuell application* of these to us. As it must be in regard of God a *satisfaction* and a *purchase*, so it must be likewise in regard of us an *actuell redemption* and *inheritance*. And this is done by the *intercession* of Christ, which is the *commemoration*, or rather *continuation* of his *Sacrifice*. He offered it but *Once*, and yet he is a *Priest for ever*, because the *Sacrifice* once offered doth for ever remaine before the mercy-seate. Thus as in many of the Legall oblations there was first *maclatio*, and then *Offensio*: First, the beast was slaine on the Altar, and then the blood was together with incense brought before the mercy-seate, Levit. 16. 11-15. So Christ was first *slaine*, and then by his owne blood hee entred into the holy place, Heb. 9. 12. 10. 12. That was done on the earth without the gate, this in heaven, Heb. 13. 11, 12. That the *Sacrifice* or obtaining of redemption, this the *Application*, or conferring of redemption. The *Sacrifice* consisted in the *Death of Christ* alone, the *application* thereof is grounded upon *Christ's death* as its *merit*, but effected by the *Life of Christ* as its immediate cause. His death did obtaine, his

VERSE 4.

his life did conferre redemption upon us. And therefore in the Scriptures our justification and salvation are attributed to the *Life of Christ*. Hee was delivered for our offences, and *Rose againe for our justification*, *Rom. 4. 25.* *If Christ be not raised your faith is vaine*, you are yet in your finnes, *1 Cor. 15. 17.* Hee shall convince the world of righteousness, *because I goe to my Father*, *Joh. 16. 10.* *Because I live you shall live also*, *Joh. 14. 19.* If wee bee dead with Christ, wee beleeve that wee shall also *live with him*, *Rom. 6. 8.* Being made perfect, or consecrated for ever, he became the Author of eternall salvation unto all them that obey him, *Heb. 5. 8. 7. 28.* Hee is *able perfectly to save*, *because hee ever liveth*, *Heb. 7. 25.* Wee were reconciled in his death; but had he there rested, we could never have beene acquitted nor entred in, for hee was to be our forerunner. And therefore the Apostle addeth a *μᾶλλον*, a *much more* to the Life of Christ, *Much more being reconciled shall we be saved by his life*, *Rom. 5. 10.* Not in point of merit, but onely of efficacy for us; as in buying Land, the laying downe of the price giveth a man a *meritorious interest*, but the delivering of the deeds, the resigning of the property, the yeelding up of the possession giveth a man an *actuell interest* in that which hee hath purchased: so the death of Christ *deserveth*, but the intercession and life of Christ *applieth* salvation unto us. It was not barely Christs dying, but his *Dying victoriously*, so that it was impossible for death to hold him, *Act. 2. 24.* which was the ground of our salvation. Hee could not justifie us, till he was declared to bee justified himselfe; therefore the Apostle saith, that he was *Justified by the Spirit*, *1 Tim. 3. 16.* Namely by that Spirit, which quickned him, *Rom. 1. 4. 8. 11. 1 Pet. 3. 18.* When Christ offered himselfe a Sacrifice for sinne, hee was *numbered amongst transgressors*, *Mark. 15. 28.* Hee bare our finnes along with him on the tree, and so died under the *wrongs of men*, and under the *wrath of God*, in both

The Priesthood of Christ.

431

VERSE 4.

both respects as a *guilty person*; but when he was quickened by the Spirit of holiness, he then threw off the finnes of the world from his shoulder, and made it appeare that hee was a righteous person, and that his righteousness was the righteousness of the world. So then our faith and hope was begun in Christs death, but was finished in his life, he was the *Author* of it, by *enduring the crosse*, and he was the *finisher* of it, by *sitting downe on the right hand of the throne of God*, Heb. 12. 2. The Apostle summes up all together. *It is God that justifieth, who is hee that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen againe, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us*, Rom. 8. 33, 34.

Now then to shew more distinctly the nature and excellencie of Christs *Intercession*: It consisteth in these particulars: First, his *appearance*, or the *presenting of his person in our nature and in his owne*, as a *publike person*, a *mediator*, a *sponsor* and a *pledge* for us. as *Iuda* was both a mediator to request, and a surety to engage himselfe to beare the blame for ever with his Father for his brother *Benjamin*, Gen. 43. 8, 9. And *Paul* for *Onesimus*, a *Mediator*, I beseech thee for my Sonne *Onesimus*, Phil. v. 9, 10. And a *sponsor*, If hee hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account, I will repay it, v. 18, 19. So Christ is both a Mediator and surety for us, Heb. 7. 22. 8. 6.

Secondly, the presenting of his *merits* as a *publike satisfaction* for the debt of sinne, and as a *publike price* for the purchase of Glory for the Justice of God was not to be intreated or pacified without a satisfaction; and therefore where Christ is called an *Advocate*, hee is called a *Propitiation* too, 1 *Ioh.* 2. 2. Because he doth not intercede for us, but in the right and vertue of the price which he payed. For the Lord spared not his Sonne, but delivered him up for us all, Rom. 8. 32. Hee dealt in the full rigour of his Justice with him.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, in the name of his person, and for the vigour and vertue of his merits, there is a presenting of his *Desires*, his *will*, his request, and interpellation for us, and so applying both unto us. *Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given mee, be with me where I am, &c.* *Ioh. 17. 24.*

Fourthly, to all this doth answer the *consent of the Father*, in whose bosome hee is, *who beareth him alwayes, Ioh. 11. 42.* And in *whom he is well pleased, Matth. 17. 5.* Who called him to this office of being as it were Master of Requests in the behalfe of his Chnrch, and promised to heare him in his petitions, *Aske of me, and I will give thee, &c. Psal. 2. 8.* Thus as once when *Æschylus*, the Tragedian was accused in *Arcopago* for impiety, his brother *Amyntas* stood out as his Advocate, using no other plea but this, hee opened his garments and shewed them *cubitus sine manu*, how hee had lost his hand in the service of the state, and so vindicated his brother: or as *Zalencus*, when hee put out one of his owne eyes for his Sonne who had been deprehended in adultery, delivered him from halfe the punishment which himselfe had decreed against that sinne: or, to come neerer, as when the hand steales, if the backe bee scourged, the tongue may, in matters that are not capitall, intercede for a dismissal: so Christ when hee suffered for us (which hee might more justly doe than any one man can for another, because hee was by divine pre-ordination, and command, and by his owne power, more Lord of his owne life, than any other man is of his, *Iohn 10. 18. 1 Cor. 6. 19.*) may justly in the vertue of those his sufferings intercede in our behalfe for all that, which those his sufferings did deserve, either for the expiation of sinne, or for the purchase of salvation. In which sense the Apostle saith, that the blood of Christ is *a speaking or interceding Blood, Heb. 12. 24.*

By all which wee may observe the impiety of the Popish

Ellian. var.
Hist. lib. 5. c. 19.
A. 17. h. 13.
c. 24.
ἐστὶν ἀμάρτανος ὁ
ἀνθρώπος ὃς ἀμαρ-
τανία διαχέει,
καὶ τυτθῆσιν ἐστὶ καὶ
παισίν καὶ ζώοις ὁ
τυτθῆρας αὐτοῦ.--
Justin. Martyr.
Quæst. & Re-
spons. ad Oribor.

The Priesthood of Christ.

433

VERSE 4.

pish Doctrine, which distinguisheth between Mediators of *Redemption*, and Mediators of *Intercession*, affirming that though the Saints are not redeemers of the world, yet they are (as the Courtiers of heaven) Mediators of *Intercession* for us, and so may bee sought unto by us. To which I answer, that wee must distinguish of interceding, or praying for another. There is one *private*, and another *publike*, (which some learned men haue observed in Christs owne Prayers:) or praying out of *Charity*, and out of *Justice* or *Office*: or thirdly, praying out of *Humility*, with feare and trembling, or out of *Authority*, which is not properly Prayer, (for *Prayer* in its strictest sense is a proposing of requests for things unmerited, which wee expect *ex vi promissi* out of Gods gracious promise, and not *ex vi pretii*, out of any price or purchase;) but the *presenting of the will and good pleasure of Christ to his Father*, that hee may thereunto put his seale and consent; the desiring of a thing so, as that hee hath withall a right joyntly of bestowing it, who doth desire it. That the Saints in heaven, and the blessed Angels doe pray for the State of the Church militant, as well as rejoyce at their conversion, in as much as charity remaineth after this life, seemeth to bee granted by *Cyprian*, and *Hieron*, neither know I any danger in so affirming if rightly understood. But if so, they doe it onely *ex charitate ut fratres*, not *ex officio ut mediatores*. Out of a *habit of charity* to the generall condition of the Church (for it reacheth not to particular men) not out of an *office of mediation*, as if they were set up for publike persons, appointed not onely to pray for the Church in generall, but to present the prayers of particular men to God in their behalfe. To bee such a *mediator* belongs onely to Christ, because *True intercession* (as it is a publike, and authoritative act) is founded upon the satisfactory merits of the person interceding. Hee cannot bee a right Advocate, who is not a propitiation too. And therefore the
Papists.

Cameron. de Eccl. pag. 122.

Cyprian. Epist. 1. Hieron. lib. adversus Vigilantium.

VERSE 4.

*Oramus Sanctos
ut intercedant
pro nobis; id est,
ut merita eorum
nobis suffragen-
tur. P. Lumb.
l. 4. distinct. 45.*

See Dr. Fishers
Answer to the
Iesuits cha-
lenge, Chap. of
Prayer to
Saints, Pag 411.
and the quota-
tions out of
Hales, and Biel
there.

Papists are faine to venture so farre as to affirme that the intercession of the Saints with God for us is grounded upon the vertue of their owne merits. Wee pray the Saints to intercede for us, that is, that wee may enjoy the suffrage of their merits. But this is a very wicked Doctrine. First, because it shareth the Glory of Christ, and communicateth it to others. Secondly, because it communicateth Gods worship to others. Thirdly, because under pretence of modesty and humility, it bringeth in a cursed boldnesse to deny the faith, and driveth children from their Father unto servants, expressly therein gaine-saying the Apostle, who biddeth us *make our requests knowne to God, Phil. 4.6.* And assureth us that by Christ wee have *boldnesse so to doe, Heb. 13.19.* and *free access* allowed us by the Spirit, *Eph. 2.18.* whereas one chiefe reason of turning to the Saints and Angels is because sinfull men must not *dare* to present themselves or their services unto God in their owne persons, but by the helpe of those Saints that are in more favour with God, and with whom they may bee bolder.

Now from this Doctrine of Christs *intercession* many and great are the benefits which come unto the Church of God. As first, our *fellowship* with the Father and his Sonne; I pray for these, that as thou Father art in mee and I in thee, *they also may be one in us, Ioh. 17.21.* Secondly, the gift of the *Holy Ghost*, I will pray the Father, and hee *shall give you another comforter*, that hee may abide with you forever, even the Spirit of truth, *Ioh. 14.16, 17.* all the comforts, and workings of the Spirit in our hearts, which we enjoy are fruites of the *intercession* of Christ. Thirdly, *protection* against all our spirituall enemies. *Who is hee that condemneth?* it is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen againe, who is even at the right hand of God, *who also maketh intercession for us, Rom. 8.34.* I pray that thou *wouldst keepe them from the evil,* *Ioh. 17.15.* But are not the faithfull subject to evils, cor-
ruptions,

ruptions, and temptations still? how then is that part of the intercession of Christ made good unto us? for understanding hereof wee must know that the intercession of Christ is availeable to a faithfull man presently; but yet in a manner sureable and convenient to the present estate and condition of the Church, so that there may bee left roome for another life, and therefore wee must not conceive all presently done. As the Sunne shineth on the Moone by leasurely degrees, till shee come to her full light; or as if the King grant a pardon to bee drawne; though the grant bee of the whole thing at once, yet it cannot be written and sealed but word after word, and line after line, and action after action: so the grant of our holinesse is made unto Christ at first, but in the execution thereof, there is line upon line, precept upon precept, here a little, and there a little; such an order by Christ observed in the distribution of his Spirit & Grace, as is most sureable to a life of faith, and to the hope wee have of a better Kingdome. I have prayed for thee that thy faith faile not, saith Christ unto *Peter*, yet we see it did shake and totter, *non rogavit ut ne deficeret, sed ut ne prorsus deficeret*, the Prayer was not that there might be no failing at all, but that it might not utterly, and totally faile.

Fourthly, the assurance of our sitting in heavenly places. His sitting in heavenly places hath raised us up together and made us sit with him, *Eph. 2.6*. First, because he sitteth there in our flesh. Secondly, because hee sitteth there in our behalfe. Thirdly, because hee sitteth there as our Center, *Col. 3.1, 2*. And so is neere unto us, *natura, officio, & spiritu*, by the unitie of the same nature with us; by the quality of his office or Sponsorship for us; and by the Communion and fellowship of his Spirit.

Fifthly, Strength against our sinnes: for from his Priesthood in heaven, which is his Intercession; the Apostle inferres the writing of the Law in our hearts, *Heb. 8.4, 6, 9, 10*.

VERSE 4.

Sixthly, the *sanctification of our services*: of which the Leviticall Priests were a type, who were to *bear the iniquitie of the holy things of the children of Israel*, that they might be accepted, *Exod. 28. 38.* He is the Angell of the Covenant, who hath a golden Censer, to offer up the prayers of the Saints, *Revel. 8. 3.* There is a threefold evill in man; First, an *Evill of state* or condition under the *guilt of sinne*. Secondly, an *Evill of nature*, under the *corruption of sinne*, and under the indisposition and ineptitude of all our faculties unto good. Thirdly, an *Evill* in all our *services*, by the *adherencie of sin*, for that which toucheth an uncleane thing, is made uncleane, and the best wine mixed with water, will lose much of its strength and native spirits. Now Christ by his *righteousnesse* and *merits* *justifieth* our persons from the guilt of sinne; and by his *Grace* and *Spirit* doth in measure *purifie our faculties*, and cure them of that corruption of sin which cleaves unto them. And lastly, by his *incense* and *intercession* doth cleanse our *services* from the noysomenesse and adherencie of sinne, so that in them the Lord smelleth a sweet savour; and so the Apostle calleth the contributions of the Saints towards his necessities, *an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, and well pleasing unto God, Phil. 4. 18. Gen. 8. 21.* And this is a benefit which runneth through the whole life of a Christian; all the ordinarie workes of our calling (being parts of our service unto God, for in them we worke as servants to the same Master) are unto us sanctified, and to the Father made acceptable by the intercession of his Sonne, *who hath made us Priests, to offer all our sacrifices with acceptance upon this Altar, Revel. 1. 6. 1 Pet. 2. 5. Esai. 65. 7.*

Seventhly, the *Inward interpellation* of the soule it selfe for it selfe, which is, as it were, the eccho of Christs intercession in our hearts: *The Spirit maketh intercession for us with groanes which cannot be uttered, Rom. 8. 26.*

The

The Priesthood of Christ.

437

VERSE 4.

The same Spirit groaneth *in us*, and more fully and distinctly by Christ prayeth *for us*. *These things I speake in the world*, saith our Saviour, *that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves*, Ioh. 17. 13. that is, as I conceive, I have made this prayer in the world, and left a record and patterne of it in the Church, that they feeling the same heavenly desires kindled in their owne hearts, may bee comforted in the workings of that Spirit of prayer in them, which testifieth to their soules the qualitie of that intercession which I shall make for them in heaven.

Eighthly, *Patience* and unweariednesse in Gods service: *Let us runne with patience the race that is set before us*, looking unto Jesus the Authour and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before him, endured the Crosse, despising the shame, and is set downe at the right hand of the Throne of God, Heb. 12. 1, 2, 3.

Lastly, *Confidence* in our approches to the Throne of Grace: *Seeing then that we have a great high Priest that is passed into the heavens, Iesus the Sonne of God, let us hold fast our profession, and come boldly unto the Throne of Grace*, Heb. 4. 14, 16. And againe, This man after hee had offered one Sacrifice for sinnes for ever, *sate downe on the right hand of God*, from henceforth expecting till his enemies bee made his foot-stoole: from whence the Apostle inferreth, *Having therefore boldnesse to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Iesus; and having an high Priest over the house of God, Let us draw neere with a true heart, in full assurance of faith*, &c. Heb. 10. 12, 23.

And all these things are certaine to us in the vertue of this *Intercession* of Christ: First, because the Father *heareth him, and answereth him*, Ioh. 11. 42. 12. 28. and appointed him to this office, Heb. 5. 4, 5. Secondly, because the Father *loveth us*; I say not unto you that I will pray the Father for you, for the Father himselfe loveth you, because you have loved me, &c. Ioh. 16. 26, 27. Thirdly, because

VERSE 4.

as Christ hath a *Prayer* to intercede for us, so hath hee also a *Power* to conferre that upon us for which he intercedeth. *I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, Ioh. 14. 16. If I goe not away, the Comforter will not come unto you, but if I depart, I will send him unto you, Ioh. 16. 7.* That which Christ by his prayer obtained for us, by his power hee conferreth upon us; and therefore in the *Psalme* he is said to *Receive gifts for men*, noting the fruit of his intercession, *Psalm. 68. 18.* and in the *Apostle*, to *give gifts unto men*, noting the power and fulnesse of his person, *Ephes. 4. 8.* Having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, hee hath *shed forth* this which you now see and heare, *Act. 2. 33.* Thus great, and thus certain are the benefits which come unto the Church from the *Intercession of Christ*.

The fourth thing inquired into about the Priesthood of Christ, was, what is the *Vertue* and fruits thereof, and they may be all comprized in two generall words: there is *Solutio debiti*, the payment of our debt, and *Redundantia meriti*, an overplus, and redundancie of merit. *Satisfaction*, whereby we are redeemed from under the Law; and an *Acquisition*, or purchase of an Inheritance and priviledges for us. The obedience of Christ hath a double relation in it, there is, first, *Ratio legalis iustitie*, the relation of a legall righteousness; as it beares exact and compleat conformitie to the Law, will, and decree of his Father. Secondly, there is *Ratio superlegalis meriti*, the relation of a merit over and beyond the Law, for though it were *nostrum debitum*, that which wee did necessarily owe, yet it was *sum indebitum*; that which of himselfe he was not bound unto, but by voluntary susception, and covenant with his Father, for it was the blood and obedience of God himselfe.

Here then first is to be considered his *payment* of that debt which he did owe unto God, in which respect hee is said to *Beare our finnes*. To beare sinne, is to have the burden

The Priesthood of Christ.

439

VERSE. 4.

burden of the guilt of sinne and malediction of the Law to lie upon a man; so it is said, he that troubleth you, *shall beare his judgement*, Gal. 5. 10. The sonne shall *not beare the iniquity of the father*, neither shall the father *beare the iniquity* of the sonne; the wickednesse of the wicked shall *be upon him*, Ezek. 18. 20. So wrath is said to *Abide on a man*, Ioh. 3. 36. and sin is said to *be retained*, or held in its place, Ioh. 20. 23. So Christ is said to *beare our sinnes* in his body on the tree, 1 Pet. 2. 24. Esai. 53. 4, 6. and by so bearing them, hee tooke them off from us, cancell'd the obligations of the Law against us, and did all whatsoever was requisite to satisfie an offended Justice, for hee *fulfilled the Law*, which was our *debt of service*. It becommeth us to *fulfill all righteousnesse*, Matth. 3. 15. and he *endured the Crosse*, and curse, the bloody agony, and ignominie of that death which was the *debt of suffering*, Heb. 12. 3. and the covenant betweene him and his Father was, that all that, should bee done by him as *our Head and surety*, and so hee was to taste death *for every man*, Heb. 2. 9. Rom. 5. 8. * So there is a *Computation* allowed, that hee should bee in our stead, as it were, *Antiplex*, his soule a sacrifice, and his life a price, and his death a conquest of ours; and therefore is called *'Antiplex'*, *cap. railon*, 1 Tim. 2. 6. *A price or ransom* for all those in whose place he was made sin, and a curse, 2 Cor. 5. 21. Gal. 3. 13. Though hee had not any *Demerit* or proper guilt of sinne upon him, which is a *Deserving* of punishment (for that ever growes out of sinne either *personally inherent*, or at least *naturally imputed*, by reason that hee to whom it is accounted, was seminally and naturally contained in the loines of him from whom it is on him derived) yet he had the guilt of sinne so far as it notes an *obligation* and subjection unto *punishment*, as he was our *surety*; and so *in sensu forensi*, in the sight of Gods court of Justice, one with us, who had deserved punishment, imputed unto him.

* Notant qui de legum relaxatione scripserunt, eas esse optimas relaxationes, quibus annexa est commutatio sive compensatio, Grot. de satisfact. Christi, cap. 5.

VERSE 4.

The fruit which redounds to us hereby, is the expiation or remission of our sinnes by the imputing of his righteousness unto us. *This is my blood of the new Testament which is shed for many for the remission of sinnes, Mat. 26. 28.* In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sinnes, according to the riches of his glory, *Ephes. 1. 7. Heb. 8. 12.* And this must needs be a wonderful mercy, to have so many thousand talents forgiven us, such an infinite weight taken off from our consciences, the penalty and curse of so many sinnes remooved from us. Our naturall condition is to be an heire of everlasting vengeance, the object of Gods hatred and fiery indignation, exiles from the presence of his glory, vessels fit and full of misery, written within and without with curses, to be miserable, to be all over miserable, to bee without strength in our selves, to be without pity from other, to be without hope from God, to be without end of cursednesse; this is the condition of a sinner, and from all this doth the mercy of God deliver us.

The manner whereby the satisfaction of Christ becomes profitable unto us, unto the remission of sinne and righteousness, is by *Imputation, Rom. 4. 3. 5. 8. 5. 19.* No man is able to stand before Gods Justice, for hee is a consuming fire, *Heb. 12. 29.* No flesh can bee righteous if he enter into judgement. Hee is of purer eyes than to behold iniquity, *Hab. 1. 13.* for his eyes are not eyes of flesh, *Iob. 10. 4.* Now all the world is guilty before God, and commeth short of his glory, *as we have said*, it lieth in mischief, *1 Iob. 5. 19.* and therefore must be justified by a forren righteousness, and that equall to the justice offended, which is the righteousness of God unto us graciously imputed. We are justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ, *Rom. 3. 19, 24.*

To open this point of *Iustification by imputed righteousness*: We must note that two things are pre-required

to denominate a man a righteous man. First, there must be extant a *righteousnesse* which is apt and *able to justifie*. Secondly, there must be a right and *propriety* to it, whereby it commeth to passe that it doth *actually justifie*. We must then first inquire what the righteousness is whereby a man may be justified. *Righteousnesse* consisteth in a relation of *rectitude and conformity*. *God made man upright*, but they have sought out many inventions, and turned into many crooked diverticles of their owne, *Eccles. 7. 29. Deut. 32. 5.* A wicked man loveth *crooked waies*, to wander up and downe in his owne course, *Ier. 31. 22. Hos. 4. 16.* whereas a righteous man loveth *strait waies*, *Heb. 12. 13. Psal. 5. 8.* because righteousness consisteth in rectitude: and this presupposeth some *Rule*, unto which this conformity must referre. The *primitive* and originall prototype, or *Rule* of holinesse, is the righteousness of God himselfe, so farre-forth as his Image is communicable to the creature, or at least so farre forth as it was at the first implanted in man: *Be yee perfect, as your Father which is in Heaven is perfect, Matth. 5. 48.* It is not meant of his infinite perfection, (for it was the sinne of *Adam* to aime at being as God, in absolutenesse and independent excellency) but of that perfection of his, which is in the Word, set forth unto us for an Image and pattern whereunto to conforme our selves. Therefore the *secondary Rule* of righteousness, or rather the same rule unto us revealed, is the *Law of God* written in his Word, in the which Gods holinesse, so farre as it is our example, exhibiteth it selfe to the soule, as the Sun doth communicate its light thorow the beame which conveys it. Now in the *Law* there are two things; one principall, *Obedience*; the other secondary, *Malediction*; upon supposition of disobedience: *Cursed is everyone that continueth not in all things which are written in the Booke of the Law to doe them, Gal. 3. 10.* So then upon supposition of the sinne of man, two things are required

unto *Justification*, the expiation of sinne, by suffering the curse, and the fulfilling of righteousness *de novo*, againe. Man created might have beene justified by obedience onely, but man lapsed cannot otherwise appeare righteous in Gods sight, but by a double obedience; the one *passive*, for the *satisfaction* of his vindicative justice, as wee are his *prisoners*; the other *active*, in proportion to his remunerative justice, as we are his *creatures*.

But besides this that there must bee a righteousness extant, there is required in the person to bee justified or denominated thereby a *propriety* thereunto, that it may bee *His righteousness*, *Ier. 33. 16*. Now there may bee a two-fold propriety to righteousness, according to a two-fold manner of unity. (*Unitas enim praestantis est fundamentum proprietatis ad officium praestitum.*) First, there is a *personall* and *individuall* unity, whereby a man is *unus in se*, one in and by himselfe, and so hath propriety to a duty performed, because it is performed in his owne person, and by himselfe alone. Secondly, there is a *common* unity, whereby a man is *unus cum alio*, one with another, or whereby many are *unum in aliquo primo*, one in and with some other thing which is the fountaine and originall of them all. And this is the ground of *Righteousnesse imputed*; for in the Law a man is justified by performing intire obedience in his owne person, for the Law requireth righteousness to bee performed by a created and implanted strength, and doth not put, suppose, or indulge any common principle thereof out of a mans selfe: Therefore legall righteousness is most properly called *Our owne righteousness*, and is set in opposition to the righteousness of God, or that which is by grace imputed, *Rom. 10. 3. Phil. 3. 8. 9*. Wee see then that in this matter of imputation either of sinne or righteousness, for the clearing of God from any injustice or partiality in his proceedings, there must ever bee some *unity* or other betwene the parties, hee whose fact is imputed,

imputed, and the other to whom it is imputed. It would be prodigious and against reason to conceive that the fall of Angels should bee imputed unto men, because men had no unity in condition either of nature, or covenant with the Angels, as we have in both with *Adam*.

This *common unity* is two-fold, either *naturall*, as betweene us and *Adam*, in whom we were feminally contained, and originally represented; (for otherwise than in and with *Adam* there could at the beginning bee no covenant made with mankind, which should *ex aequo* reach unto all particular persons in all ages and places of the World :) Or *Voluntary*, as betweene a man and his *surety*, who, *in conspectu fori*, are but as *one person*. And this must bee *mutuall*, the one party undertaking to doe for the other, and the other yeelding and consenting thereunto; as betweene us and Christ, for Christ voluntarily undertooke for us, and wee by the Spirit of Christ are perswaded and made willing to consent, and by faith to cast our sins upon Christ, and to lay hold on him. And besides *the will of the parties* who are, the one by default, the other by compassion and suretiship engaged in the debt; there is required *the will and consent of the Iudge*, to whom the debt is due, and to whom it belongeth in the right of his jurisdiction, to appoint such a forme of proceeding for the recovery of his right, as may stand best with the honour of his Person, and the satisfaction of his Justice, who if hee would, might in rigour have refused any surety, and have exacted the whole debt of those very persons by whose onely default it grew. And thus it comes to passe that by grace wee have fellowship with the second *Adam*, as by nature with the first, 1 Cor. 15. 45, 48. So then betweene Christ and us there must bee an *unity*, or else there can bee no *imputation*. And therefore it is that we are said to bee *justified by faith*, and that *faith is imputed for righteousness*, Rom. 4. 5. not the *credere*, the act of beleeving, as

VERSE 4.

as if that were, *in se*, accounted righteousness, as it is a worke proceeding from us by grace; but because it is *vinculum* and *instrumentum unionis*, the bond of union betweene us and Christ, and by that meanes makes way to the imputation of Christs righteousness unto us. Therefore we are said to bee *buried*, and *crucified* in and with Christ, by the vertue of faith incorporating Christ and a Christian together, and communicating the fellowship of his sufferings and resurrection, *Rom. 6. 6. Gal. 6. 14. Ephes. 3. 17. Phil. 3. 10.* If I be lifted up, saith our Saviour, *I will draw all men after mee; crucem conscendit, & me illic adduxit*, when Christ hanged on the crosse, we in a sort were there too. As in *Adam* we were all in Paradise, by a naturall and seminall vertue; so in Christ by a spiritual vertue, wherby in due time faith was to be begotten in us, and so we to have an actuall being of grace from him, as after our reall existence we have an actuall being of nature from *Adam*. Thus we see that Christ did for vs fulfill all righteousness, by his passive meriting and making satisfaction unto the remission of sinnes. By his active, covering our inabilities, and doing that in perfection for us, which we could not doe for our selves. First, he suffered *our punishment*, he was *wounded for our transgression*, he was *bruised for our iniquities*, the chastisement of our peace was upon him, and with his stripes we are healed, *Esay 53. 5.*

Ezek. 18. 20.

If it be here objected, that an innocent person ought not to suffer for a nocent, for guilt is inseparable from sin: *The son shall not bear the iniquity of his father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son, the soule that sinneth, the same shall die.* For the cleering of this objection, we must note, that there is a two-fold manner of *guilt* (as I before touched) either such as growes out of *sinne inherent*, which is the *deserving of punishment*, as it is in us: or such as growes out of *sinne imputed*, and that not by reason of union naturall, as the guilt of *Adams sinne* is imputed

imputed unto us (which manner of imputation is likewise *fundamentum demeriti*, and causeth us to deserve punishment) but *voluntary* by way of *vadimony* and *suspension*. And so guilt is onely a free and willing obnoxiousness unto that punishment which another hath deserved. Amongst sinfull men it is true that the sonne shall not beare the punishment of the fathers sinne : first, because hee is altogether personally distinct. Secondly, because hee is not appointed so to doe, as Christ was, *Iohn* 10. 18. Thirdly, because hee is not able to beare them, so as to take them off from his father as Christ did ours : Hee was himselfe able to stand under our punishment without sinking, and was able by suffering them, to take them off from us, because his Person was answerable in dignity, and therefore (by the grace of God, and the act of his Divine jurisdiction in ordering the way to his owne satisfaction) equivalent in justice unto all ours. Fourthly, because hee hath already too many of his owne to beare. But yet, if the will of the sonne goe along with the father in sinning, it is not strange, nor unusuall for him to suffer for his fathers and his owne sin together, as for the *continuacion* of the same offence ; because, though hee doe not will the punishment, (as Christ did ours) yet imitating and continuing the sinne, there is *Voluntum in causa*, for the punishment too.

Now for an answer and resolution of the question, whether an innocent person may suffer for a nocent, wee must note first that God out of his Dominion over all things, may cast paines upon an innocent person, as it is manifest he did upon Christ : And what ground of complaint could any creature have against God, if he should have created it in fire, and made the place of its habitation the instrument of its paine ? Doe not we our selves without cruelty upon many occasions put creatures that have not offended us unto paine ?

Secondly, it is not universally against equity for one

Vid. Grot. de satisfactione Christi, cap. 4, 5.

VERSE 4.

Terul. contr.
Marcion lib. 3.
cap. 15.

Lumbard. lib. 2.
distinct. 33.

Aquin. 2. 2. e.
quest. 108. art. 4.
Coquens in Aug.
Civ. Dei. lib. 16.
cap. 1. num. 1.
Daneus in Aug.
Enchirid. c. 46.

to suffer the punishment of anothers sin : we see the infants of Sodome, Babylon, Egypt, of *Corah*, *Dathan* and *Abiram*, were involved in the punishment of those finnes of which themselves were not guilty. The Lord reserveth to himselfe the punishment of the fathers on the children, hee punished the finnes of three hundred and ninety yeeres all together, *Ex. k. 4. 2. 5.* *Cham* committed the sinne, and yet *Canaan* was cursed for it. *Gen. 9. 21, 25.* The sinne was *Gehezies* alone, and yet the leprosie cleaved not to him onely, but to his posterity. *2. King. 5. 27.* The sinne of crucifying Christ was the Jewes in that age alone, and yet wrath is come upon them to the uttermost even unto this day, *Matth. 27. 25. 1 Thes. 2. 16.* *Achan* trespassed alone, but he perished not alone, but his sonnes, and his daughters, and all that hee had with him. *Iosh. 7. 24. 1 King. 21. 21. Iudg. 9. 56. 1 King. 2. 33. Ierem. 22. 30.*

Thirdly, the equity hereof in the case of Christ doth herein plainly appeare: when all parties are glorified, and all parties are willing and well pleased, there is no injury done unto any : and in this, the case is so : First, *All parties are glorified*, the Father is glorified in the obedience of his Sonne. *I have both glorified my name, and I will glorifie it againe, Ioh. 12. 27, 28. I have glorified thee on earth, I have finished the worke which thou gavest me to doe, Ioh. 17. 4.* The Sonne is glorified, *Thou madest him a little lower than the Angels, and crownedst him with Glory and honour, Heb. 2. 7. Ioh. 17. 5.* and the sinner is glorified, *I will that where I am they may be also, that they may behold my Glory, &c. Iohn 17. 24.* Secondly, *All parties are willing*; first, the Father is willing, for by his *Ordination* hee appointed Christ to it, *Act. 4. 27, 28.* by his love and tender *Compassion* hee bestowed Christ upon us, *Iohn 3. 16.* by his Divine *Acceptation* hee rested well pleased in it, *Matthew 17. 5.* in one word by his wonderfull *Wisedome* he fitted it to the manifestation

The Priesthood of Christ.

447

VERSE 4.

nifestation of his glory and mercy, to the reconciliation of him and his creature, and to the exaltation of his Sonne. Secondly, the Sonne is willing, hee chearefully submitted unto it, *Heb. 10. 9.* and freely loved us, and gave himselfe unto us, *Gal. 2. 20.* Thirdly, the sinner is willing, and accepteth and relieth upon it, as wee have seene at large before in the third verse, so that there can be no injury done to any party, where all are *willing*, and where all are *glorified*.

Fourthly, that an innocent person may thus in *Iustice* and *equitie* suffer for a nocent, there is required (besides these acts of *ordination* in the supreme, of *submission* in the surety, and of *consent* in the delinquent) first, an intimate and neere *conjunction* in him that suffereth with those that should have suffered. Severall unions and conjunctions there are, as *Polirike* between the members and subjects in a state, and * thus in a commonwealth universally sinfull, a few righteous men may as parts of that sinfull society be justly subject to those temporary evils which the finnes of the society have contracted, and the people may justly suffer for the finnes of the Prince, *2 Sam. 24. 17.* and he for theirs, *1 Sam. 12. 25.* Secondly, *Naturall*, as betweene parents and children, so the Lord visited the finnes of *Dathan* upon his little ones, *Numb. 16. 27. 33.* Thirdly, *Mysticall*, as betweene man and wife, so the Lord punished the finnes of *Amaziah* the priest of Bethel by giving over his wife unto whoredome, *Amos 7. 17.* and we see in many cases the husband is liable to bee charged and censured for the exorbitancies of his wife. Fourthly, *Stipulatorie* and by *consent*, as in the case of *fidejussores* or *obsides*, who are punished for the finnes of others whom they represent, and in whose place they stand as a caution and muniment against injuries, which might be feared, as we see in the parable of the prisoner committed to the custodie of another person, *1 King. 20. 39, 42.* Fifthly, *Possessorie*

* *Navicula in qua erat Judas turbabatur, unde & Petrus, qui erat firmus merit is suis, turbabatur alienis.*
Ambros. in Luc. 5. ὅρῳ ἀπολλὼν ἀν- μῶν ἀπαδάλας Βασιλέων. Hesiod. Delirant reges, pleētuntur Achivi,

VERSE 4.

rie as betweene a man and his goods, and so we finde that a man was to offer no beast for a sinne-offering but that which was *his owne*, *Levit. 5. 6, 7.* Now in all these respects there was in some manner conjunction betweene us and Christ, He conversed amongst men, and was a member of that Tribe and society amongst whom he lived, and therefore was together with them under that Romane yoke which was then upon the people, and in that relation paid tribute unto *Cesar*: hee had the nature and seed of man and so was subject to all humane and naturall infirmities without sinne: Hee was mystically married unto his Church, and therefore was answerable for the debts and misdemeanours of the Church. Hee entred into covenant, and became suretie for man, and therefore was liable to mans engagements. Lastly, he became the possession, in some sort, of his Church; whence it is that we are said to receive him, and to have him, *1 Ioh. 5. 12.* not by way of *Dominion* (for so we are his, *1 Cor. 6. 19.*) but by way of *Communion and propriety*; and therefore though wee cannot offer him up unto God in sacrifice for our sinnes, yet we may in our faith and prayers shew him unto his Father, and hold him up as our owne armour and fence against the wrath of God, *Rom. 13. 14.*

Secondly, there is required in the innocent person suffering, that he have a *free and full dominion* over that from which he parteth, in his suffering for another. As in suretiship, a man hath free dominion over his money, and therefore in that respect hee may engage himselfe to pay another mans debt; but he hath not a free dominion over himselfe or his owne life, and therefore he may not part with a member of his owne in commutation for another, (as *Zalencus* did for his sonne) nor bee ἀντιποιῶν, to lay downe his owne life for the delivering of another from death, except in such cases as the Word of God limiteth or alloweth. But Christ was Lord of his owne life,

The Priesthood of Christ.

449

VERSE 4.

life, and had therefore power to lay it downe and to take it up. And this power hee had (though he were in all points subject to the Law as wee are) not solely by vertue of the hypostaticall union, which did not for the time exempt him from any of the obligations of the Law, but by vertue of a particular command, constitution, and designation to that service of laying downe his life, *This commandement have I received of my Father, Ioh. 10. 18.*

Lastly, it is required that this Power be ample enough to breake through the sufferings he undertaketh, and to re-assume his life, and former condition againe. *I have power to lay it downe, and I have power to take it up.* So then the summe of all is this; by the most just, wise, and mercifull will of God, by his owne most obedient and voluntary susception, Christ Jesus, being one with us in a manifold and most secret union, and having full power to lay downe, and to take up his life againe by speciall command and allowance of his Father given him, did most justly, without injury to himselfe, or dishonour to, or injustice in his Father, suffer the punishment of their sinnes, with whom he had so neere an union, and who could not themselves have suffred them with obedience in their owne persons, or with so much glory to Gods justice, mercie and wisdom.

If it be here againe objected, that sinne in the Scripture is said to be *pardoned*, which seemes contrary to this payment and satisfaction. To answer this, wee must note, first, that in the rigour of the Law, *Noxa sequitur caput*, the delinquent himselfe is in person to suffer the penaltie denounced, for the Law is, *In the day that Thou eatest thou shalt dye*; and the soule that sinneth *it shall dye*. Every man shall beare his *owne burthen*, Gal. 6. 5. So that the Law, as it stands in its owne rigour, doth not admit of any commutation, or substitution of one for another. Secondly, therefore, that another person suffering

VERSE 4.

ring may procure a discharge to the person guilty, and be valide to free him, the will, consent and mercy of him to whom the infliction of the punishment belongeth must concur, and his over-ruling power must dispence, though not with the substance of the Lawes demands, yet with the manner of execution, and with that rigour, which bindes wrath peremptorily upon the head onely of him that hath deserved it. So then we see both these things doe sweetly concur; first, a precedent satisfaction by paying the debt; and yet secondly, a true pardon and remission thereof to that partie which should have paid it, and out of mercy towards him, a dispensing with the rigour of that Law, which in strictnesse would not admit any other to pay it for him.

Thus wee see how Christ hath suffered our punishment. Secondly, hee *did all obedience*, and fulfilled all actions of righteousness for us; *for such an high Priest became us who is holy, harmelesse, undefiled, separate from sinners, Heb. 7. 26.* Hee came not into the world but for us, and therefore hee neither suffered, nor did any thing but for us. As the colour of the glasse is by the favour of the Sunne-beame shining through it made the colour of the wall, not inherent in it, but relucient upon it, by an extrinsecall affection: so the righteousness of Christ by the favour of God is so *imputed unto us*, as that wee are *quoad gratiosum Dei conspectum*, righteous too. In which sense I understand those words, *He hath not beheld iniquitie in Iacob, neither hath he seene perversenesse in Israel, Num. 23. 21.* Though it is indeed in him, yet the Lord looketh on him as cloathed with the righteousness of Christ, and so is said not to see it, as the eye seeth the colour of the glasse in the wall, and therefore cannot behold that other inherent colour of its owne, which yet it knoweth to be in it.

Now of this Doctrine of *Iustification by Christs righteousness imputed* wee may make a double use. First, it may

may teach us that great duty of *selfe-deniall*; wee see no righteousness will justifie us but Christs, and his will not consist but with the denial of our own. And surely whatever the professions of men in word may bee, there is not any one duty in all Christian Religion of more difficulty than this, to trust Christ onely with our salvation. To doe holy Duties of hearing, reading, praying, meditating, almes-giving, or any other actions of charity or devotion, and yet still to abhorre our selves and our works, to esteeme our selves after wee have done all, unprofitable servants, and worthy of many stripes: to doe good things, and not to rest in them; to owne the shame and dung of our solemne services: when wee have done all the good workes wee can, to say with *Nehemiah*, *Remember mee*, O my God, concerning this, *and spare mee according to the greatnesse of thy Mercy*, *Nebem. 13.22.* and with *David*, *To thee O Lord, belongeth mercy, for Thou renderest to every man according to his worke*, *Psal. 62. 12.* It is thy mercy to reward us according to the uprightness of our workes, who mightest in Judgement confound us for the imperfection of our workes. To give God the prayse of our working, and to take to our selves the shame of polluting his workes in us. There is no doctrine so diametrally contrary to the merits of Christ, and the redemption of the world thereby, as justification by workes. No Papist in the world is or can be more contentious for good workes than we both in our Doctrine and in our Prayers, and in our Exhortations to the people. We say no faith justifieth us before God but *a working faith*, no man is righteous in the sight of men, nor to bee esteemed, but by *workes of holinesse*; without holinesse no man shall see God, he that is Christs is zealous of good workes, purifieth himselfe even as he is pure, and walketh as hee did in this world. Here onely is the difference; we *doe them*, because they are our *Duty*, and testifications of our love and thankfulness to Christ, and

VERSE 4.

of the workings of his Spirit in our hearts; but wee *dare not trust in them*, as that by which wee hope to stand or fall before the tribunall of Gods Justice, because they are at best mingled with our corruptions, and therefore doe themselves stand in need of a high Priest to take off their iniquity. We know enough in Christ to depend on, we never can finde enough in our selves. And this confidence wee have, if God would ever have had us justified by workes, hee would have given us grace enough to fulfill the whole Law, and not have left a Prayer upon publike record for us every day to repeat, and to regulate all our owne Prayers by, *Forgive us our trespasses*. For how dares that man say, I shall bee justified by my workes, who must every day say, *Lord forgive mee my finnes, and be mercifull unto me a sinner*. Nay though we could fulfill the whole Law perfectly, yet from the guilt of finnes formerly contracted wee could no other way bee Justified, than by laying hold by faith on the satisfaction and sufferings of Christ.

Secondly, it may teach us *confidence* against all finnes, corruptions, and temptations. *Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is God that Justifieth, who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, &c.* Satan is the blackest enemy, and sinne is the worst thing hee can alleage against me, or my soule is or can be subject unto; for *Hell is not so evill as sinne*. In as much as Hell is of Gods making, but sinne onely of mine. Hell is made against me, but sinne is committed against God. Now I know Christ came to destroy the workes, and to answer the arguments and reasonings of the Devill, Thou canst not stand before God, saith Satan, for thou art a grievous sinner, and he is a devouring fire. But faith can answer, Christ is able both to cover and to cure my sin, to make it vanish as a miste, and to put it as farre out of mine owne sight, as the East is from the West. But thou hast nothing to doe with Christ, thy finnes are so many and
so

so foule; surely the blood of Christ is more acceptable to my soule and much more honourable and pretious in it selfe, when it covereth a multitude of finnes. *Paul* was a persecutor, a blasphemers, and injurious, the greatest of all sinners, and yet he obtained mercy, that hee might be for a patterne of all long-suffering to those that should after beleeve in Christ. If I had as much sinne upon my soule as thou hast, yet faith could unlade them all upon Christ, and Christ could swallow them all up in his mercy. But thou hast still nothing to doe with him, because thou continuest in thy sinne. But doth he not call mee, invite me, beseech me, command me to come unto him? If then I have a heart to answer his call, hee hath a hand to draw me to himselfe, though all the gates of Hell, and powers of darkenesse, or finnes of the World stood betweene. But thou obeyest not this call. True indeed and pittifull it is, that I am dull of hearing, and slow of following the voyce of Christ, I want much faith: but yet Lord thou dost not use to quench the smooking flaxe, or to breake the bruized reed; I beleeve, and thou art able to helpe mine unbeleeve. I am resolved to venture my soule upon thy mercy, to throw away all mine owne loading, and to cleave onely to this plancke of salvation. But faith purifieth the heart, whereas thou art uncleane still. True indeed, and miserable man I am therefore, that the motions of sinne doe worke in my members. But yet Lord I hate every false heart; I delight in thy Law with mine inner man, I doe that which I would not, but I consent to thy Law that it is good, I desire to know thy Will, to feare thy Name, and to follow thee whithersoever thou ledest me. But these are but empty velleities, the wishings and wouldings of an evill heart. Lord to me belongeth the shame of my failings, but to thee belongeth the glory of thy mercy and forgivenesse. Too true it is that I doe not all I should: but doe I allow my selfe in any thing that I should not? doe I make use of mine infir-

VERSE 4.

mities to justifie my selfe by them, or shelter my selfe under them, or dispense with my selfe in them? though I doe not the things I should, yet I love them, and delight in them, my heart, and Spirit, and all the desires of my soule are towards them; I hate, abhorre, and fight with my selfe for not doing them. I am ashamed of mine infirmities, as the blemishes of my profession, I am weary of them, and groane under them as the burdens of my soule: I have no lust, but I am willing to know it, and when I know, to crucifie it. I heare of no further measure of grace, but I admire it, and hunger after it, and presse on to it. I can take Christ and affliction, Christ and persecution together. I can take Christ without the World, I can take Christ without my selfe. I have no unjust gaine, but I am ready to restore it. No time have I lost by earthly businesse from Gods Service, but I am ready to redeeme it. I have followed no sinfull pleasure, but I am ready to abandon it, no evill company but I mightily abhorre it. I never sweare an oath, but I can remember it with a bleeding conscience; I never neglected a duty but I can recount it with revenge and indignation. I doe not in any man see the Image of Christ, but I love him the more dearely for it, and abhorre my selfe for being so much unlike it. I know Satan, I shall speed never the worse with God, because I have thee for mine enemy. I know I shall speed much the better, because I have my selfe for mine enemy. Certainly hee that can take Christ offer'd, that can in all points admit him, as well to purifie as to justifie, as well to rule as save, as well his Grace as his Mercy, neede not feare all the powers of darknesse, nor all the armies of the foulest sinnes which Satan can charge his conscience withall.

The second great vertue and fruit of the Priesthood of Christ was *ex redundantia meriti*, from the redundancie and over-flowing of his merit. First, hee doth *merit to have a Church*; for the very being of the Church is the effect

effect of that great price which he payed; therefore the Church is called a *purchased people*, 1 Pet. 2. 9. *Aske of mee, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance*, Psal. 2. 8. when hee made his soule an offering for sinne, hee did by that meanes see his seed, and divide a portion with the great, Esai. 53. 10, 11, 12. The delivering and selecting of the Saints out of this present evill world was the end of Christs Sacrifice, Gal. 1. 4. Secondly, hee did *Merit all such good things* for the Church, as the great love of himselfe and his Father towards the Church did resolve to conferre upon it. They may I conceive be reduced to two heads: First, *Immunity from evill*, whatsoever is left to bee removed after the payment of our debt, or taking off from us the guilt and obligation unto punishment. Such are the *Dominion of Sinne*. *Sinne shall not have dominion over you*, Rom 6. 14. The *Law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Iesus, hath made me free from the Law of Sinne and of Death*, Rom. 8. 2. *He that committeth sinne, is the servant of sinne; but if the Sonne shall make you free, you shall be free indeed*, Iohn 8. 34-36. *Hee that is borne of God doth not commit sinne*, 1 Iohn 3. 9. That is, he is not an artificer of sinne, one that maketh it his trade and profession, and therefore bringeth it to any perfection. He hath received a *Spirit of Judgement*, that chaineth up his lusts, and a *Spirit of burning*, which worketh out his drosse, Esai. 4. 4. Mal. 3. 2. 3. Matth. 3. 2. Such is, The *Vanity of our minde*, whereby wee are naturally unable to thinke, or to cherish a good thought, 2 Cor. 3. 5. Ephes. 4. 17. The *Ignorance and hardnesse of our hearts*, unable to perceive, or delight in any Spirituall thing, Eph. 4. 18. Iob. 1. 5. Luk. 14. 25. 45. The *Spirit of disobedience* and habituall strangenesse and averfenesse from God, Eph. 4. 18. Iob. 20. 14. Such are also all those *slavish, affrightfull, and contumacious effects in the Law* in terrifying the conscience, irritating concupiscence, and compelling the froward heart to an unwilling and

VERSE 4.

unwelcome conformity. The Law is now made our Counsellor, a delight to the inner man, that which was a Lion before, hath now foode and sweetnesse in it.

Secondly *Many Priviledges* and dignities in the vertue of that Principall and Generall one, which is our *Unity unto Christ*; from whence by the fellowship of his Holy and quickning Spirit, wee have an *Unction* which teacheth us his wayes, and his voyce, which *sanctifieth our nature*, by the participation of the Divine nature, that is, by the renewing of Gods most Holy and righteous Image in us. Which *sanctifieth our Persons*, that they may be spirituall Kings and Priests. *Kings*, to order our owne thoughts, affections, desires, studies towards him, to fight with principalities, powers, corruptions, and spirituall enemies. *Priests*, to offer up our bodies, soules, praiers, thanksgivings, almes, spirituall services upon that Altar, which is before his Mercy-seate, and to slay and mortifie our lusts and earthly members, which *sanctifieth all our actions*, that they may bee services to him and his Church, acceptable to him, and profitable to others. Secondly, from this unity with him growes *our adoption*, which is another fruit of his Sacrifice. Hee was made of a woman, made under the Law, that we might receive *The Adoption of Sonnes, Gal. 4. 5.* By which wee have free access to call upon God in the vertue of his Sacrifice, sure supplies in all our wants, because our Heavenly Father knoweth all our needs, a most certaine inheritance, and salvation in hope; for wee are already *saved by hope, Rom. 8. 24.* and Christ is to us the *Hope of Glory, Col. 1. 27.* Lastly, there is from hence *our exaltation*, in our finall victory and resurrection, by the fellowship and vertue of his victory over death, as the first fruits of ours, *1 Cor. 15. 20. 49. Phil. 3. 21.* And in our complete salvation, being carried in our soules and bodies to bee presented to himselfe without spot and blamelesse, *Eph. 5. 26, 27.* and to be brought unto God, *1 Pet. 3. 18.* Now

to take all in one view, what a summe of mercy is here together. Remission of all finnes, discharge of all debts, deliverance from all curses; joy, peace, triumph, security, exaltation above all evils, enemies, or feares; a peculiar, purchased, royall seed, the gift of God the Father to his Sonne) deliverance from the dominion and service of all sinne, vanity, ignorance, hardnesse, disobedience, bondage, coaction, terror; sanctification of our persons, natures, lives, actions; adoption, hope, victory, resurrection, salvation, glory. O what a price was that which procured it? O what manner of persons ought wee to bee for whom it was procured?

The fifth thing to be spoken of about the Priesthood of Christ I shall dispatch in one word, which is the *Duty* wee owe upon all this. First, then we should not receive so great a grace in vaine, but by faith lay hold upon it, and make use of it. *Let us feare, saith the Apostle, lest a promise being left us, of entring into his rest, any of you should seeme to come short of it; for unto us was the Gospell preached as well as unto them: but the Word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it, Heb. 4. 1, 2.* God in Christ is but reconcilable unto us, *One with us in his good will*, and in his proclamation of peace. When two parties are at variance, there is no actuall peace without the mutuall consent of both againe; till wee by faith give our consent, and actually turne unto God, and seeke his favor, and lay hold on the mercy which is set before us; though God be one, in that he sendeth a Mediator, and maketh tender of reconciliation with us, yet this Grace of his is to us in vaine, because we continue his enemies still. The Sun is set in the Heavens for a publike light, yet it benefiteth none but those who open their eyes, to admit and make use of its light. A court of Justice or equity is a publike sanctuary, yet it actually relieveth none but those that seeke unto it. Christ is a publike and universall Salvation, set up for all

VERSE 4.

commers, and applicable to all particulars, *Ioh. 3.16.* He is not willing that any should perish, but *that all should come to repentance, 2 Pet. 3.9.* Hee tasted death for every man, *Heb. 2.9.* But all this is not beneficiall unto life, but onely to those that receive him. Onely those that receive him are by these mercies of his made the Sons of God, *Iohn 1. 12.* without faith they abide his enemies still. God in Christ publisheth himselfe a God of Peace and Unity towards us, *Gal. 3.20.* And setteth forth Christ as an All-sufficient treasure of mercy to all that in the sense of their owne misery will fly unto him, *Revel. 22.17.* But till men beleeve, and are thus willing to yeeld their owne consents, and to meete his reconciliation towards them, with theirs towards him, his wrath abideth upon them still; for by beleeving onely he will have his Sons death *Actually effectual;* though it were *sufficient* before. O therefore let us not venture to beare the wrath of God, the curse of sin, the weight of the Law, upon our owne shoulders, when wee have so present a remedy, and so willing a friend at hand to ease us.

Secondly wee should labour to feele the vertue of the Priesthood and Sacrifice of Christs working in us, purging our consciences from dead workes, renewing our nature, cleansing us from the power and pollution of sinne; for when by the hand of faith, and the sweet operation of the Spirit we are therewithall sprinkled, we shall then make it all our study to hate, and to forbear sinne, which squeezed out so pretious blood, and wrung such bitter cries from so mercifull a high Priest; to live no longer to our selves, that is, *secundum hominem*, as men, *1 Cor. 3.3. Hos. 6.7.* After our owne lusts and wayes: but (as men that are not their owne, but his that bought them) to live in his Service, and to his Glory, *1 Cor. 6.19, 20. 2 Cor. 5.14. 1 Pet. 4. 2.* All that we can doe is too little to answer so great Love. Love to empty himselfe, to humble himselfe, to bee God in the flesh, to bee God

on

on a Crosse, to take off from us the hatred, fury and vengeance of his Father, to restore us to our primitive purity and condition againe. Why should it be esteem'd a needlesse thing to be most rigorously conscionable, and exactly circumspect, in such a service as unto which wee are engaged with so infinite, and unsearchable bounty? He payed our debt to the uttermost farthing, drunke every drop of our bitter Cup, and saved us *ἡς πρὸς πάντας, thoroughly*: why should not wee labour to performe his Service, and to fulfill every one of his most sweet Commandsto the uttermost too?

Thirdly, we should learne to walke before him with all reverence and feare, as men that have received a Kingdome which cannot bee moved, *Heb. 12. 28.* And with frequent consideration of the high Priest of our profession, that we may not in presumption of his mercy; harden our hearts, or depart from God, *Heb. 3. 1. 8.* But in due remembrance of the end of his Sacrifice, which was to purchase to himselve a peculiar people, be zealous of all good workes, *Tit. 2. 14.*

Fourthly, we should learne confidence and boldnesse towards him, who is a Great, a Faithfull, and a Mercifull high Priest; this use the Apostle makes of it. *Seeing we have a great high Priest-let us hold fast our profession-and come with boldnesse unto the Throne of Grace, Heb. 4. 14, 15, 16.* And againe, *Having therefore boldnesse to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Iesus-and having an high Priest over the House of God, let us draw neere with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, &c. Heb. 10. 19. 22.*

Fifthly, wee learne perseverance and stedfastnesse in our profession, because he is able to carry us through and save us to the uttermost. This is that which indeed makes us partakers of Christ. *We are made partakers of him, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast to the end, Heb. 3. 14.* The considering of him, of his perseverance in finishing his owne worke, and our faith, and his power and

VERSE 4.

and ability to save us to the uttermost, will keepe us from fainting in our service and the profession we have taken, *Heb. 12. 2, 3. 10. 23.*

Sixthly, we have hereby accessse to present our praiers, and all our Spirituall Sacrifices upon this Altar, sprinkled with the blood of that great Sacrifice, and liberty to come unto God by him who liveth to make intercession for us, *Heb. 7. 25. In him wee have accessse with confidence by faith, Eph. 3. 12.* Therefore the Lord is said to have his eyes open to our praiers, *to hearken unto them, 1 King. 8. 52.* Because he first looketh upon our persons in Christ, before he receiveth or admitteth any of our services.

Lastly, wee ought frequently to celebrate the memorie, and to commemorate the Benefits of this Sacrifice wherein God hath beene so much glorified, and wee so wonderfully saved. Therefore the Lord hath of purpose instituted a sacred ordinance in his Church, in the roome of the Paschall Lambe, that as that was a prefiguration of Christs death expected, so this should to all ages of the Church bee a resemblance and commemoration of the same exhibited. *So often as yee eate this Bread, and drinke this Cup, yee shew forth the Lords Death till hee come, 1 Cor. 11. 26.* For in the ordinances he is Crucified before our eyes, *Gal. 3. 1.* Therefore the Apostle more than once inferres from the consideration of this Sacrifice and Office of Christ, our duty of not forsaking the assemblies of the Saints, and of exhorting and provoking one another, *Heb. 3. 13. 10. 24, 25.*

Now I proceed to the last thing mentioned in the words concerning the Priesthood of Christ, and that is about the *Order of it. Thou art a Priest [for ever after the Order of Melchisedeck.] Secundum verbum, or secundum morem & rationem:* the Apostle readeth it *27. 17.* according to the *Order of Melchisedecks* Priesthood. Of this *Melchisedeck* wee finde mention made but in two places onely of the whole Old Testament, and in both
very

The Priesthood of Christ.

461

VERSE 4.

very briefly; the first in the History of *Abraham* returning from the slaughter of the kings; when *Melchisedeck* being the Priest of the most high God, brought forth Bread and Wine, and blessed him, *Gen. 14. 18, 19, 20.* and the other in this place. And for this cause the things concerning him and his Order are *δυσπρόσβητος, hard to bee understood. Heb. 5. 11.* It was so then, and it would be still, if *S. Paul* had not cleared the difficulties, and shewed wherein the Type and the Antitype did fully answer; which he hath largely done in *Heb. 7.*

For understanding and clearing the particulars which are herein considerable, here are some questions which offer themselves, First who *Melchisedeck* was? Secondly, what is meant by *τῆς*, his Order? Thirdly, why Christ was to bee a Priest after his Order, and not after *Aarons*? Fourthly, why he brought forth Bread and Wine? Fifthly, what kinde of blessing it was with which he blessed *Abraham*? Sixthly, in what manner he received Tithes? Lastly, in what sense he was without Father, and without Mother, without beginnings of dayes, or end of life?

First, for *Melchisedeck*, who he was, much hath been said by many men, and with much confidence. ^a Some Heretickes of old affirmed that hee was the *Holy Ghost*. ^b Others, that he was an *Angell*. ^c Others that hee was *Sem* the Sonne of *Noah*. ^d Others that he was a *Canaanite*, extraordinarily raised up by God to bee a Priest of the Gentiles. ^e Others that he was *Christ himselfe*, manifest by a speciall dispensation and priviledge unto *Abraham* in the flesh, who is said to have seene his day, and rejoyced, *Ioh. 8. 56.* Difference also there is about *Salem*, the place of which he was King. Some take it for *Jerusalem*, as ^{*} *Josephus*, and most of the Ancients. Others for a City in the halfe tribe of *Manasse*, within the River Jordan, where *Hierom* reports that some ruines of the Palace of *Melchisedeck* were in his dayes conceived to remaine. Tedious I might bee in insisting on this point who

Vid. Cameron. Quæst. in Hebr.

^a *Apud Hieron. Epist. Tom. 3.*

Epist. 136. & Epiphani. lib. 2. Hæres. 55.

^b *Origen. apud Hieronym.*

^c *Hæbræi apud Epiphani. & Hieron.*

^d *Tertul. contr. Judæos. Justin. Epiphani. Pæneus in Gen.*

^e *Quidam apud Epiphani. & nuper Petrus Cuningus. de Repub. Hebræor. cap. 3. vid. Coque in Aug. de Civ. Dei. 16. cap. 22.*

^{*} *Antiq. Jud. lib. 1. cap. 11.*

VERSE 4.

who *Melchisedeck* was. But when I find the holy Ghost purposely concealing his Name, Genealogie, beginning, ending, and descent, and that to speciall purpose; I cannot but wonder that men should toile themselves in the darke to finde out that of which they have not the least ground of solid conjecture, and the inevidence whereof is expressly recorded, to make *Melchisedeck* thereby the fitter Type of Christs everlasting Priesthood.

Secondly, what is meant by *τῆς*. It is as much as the state, condition, or prescribed Rule of *Melchisedeck*; and that was *ἡ δύναμις ζωῆς ἀνατρεῖται*, *After the power of an endlesse life, Heb. 7. 16.* Not by a corporall unction, legall ceremony, or the intervening act of a humane ordination: but by a Heavenly institution, and immediat unction of the Spirit of life, by that extraordinary manner whereby he was to be both King and Priest unto God, as *Melchisedeck* was. In one word, herein standeth the dignity of the Order of Christs Priesthood; That it was a Heavenly, a Powerfull, an Endlesse, a Royall, a Righteous, and a Peaceable Priesthood.

Thirdly, Why was hee not a Priest after the order of *Aaron*? The Apostle giveth us an answer, *Because the Law made nothing perfect*, but was *weake and unprofitable*, and therefore was to be abolished, and to give place to another Priesthood. Men were not to rest in it, but by it to be led to him who was to abolish it, *Heb. 7. 11. 12.* as the Morning-starre leadeth to the Sunne, and at the rising thereof vanisheth. The Ministry and Promises of Christ were *better* than those of the Law; and therefore his Priesthood, which was the office of dispensing them, was to be *more excellent* likewise, *Heb. 8. 6.* For when the Law and Covenant were to be abolished, the Priesthood in which they were established, was to die likewise.

Fourthly, Why *Melchisedeck* brought forth Bread and Wine? The Papists, that they may have something to build the idolatry of their masse upon, make *Melchisedek*

The Priesthood of Christ.

463

VERSE 4.

to *Sacrifice bread and wine*, as a Type of the Eucharist. I will not fall into so tedious a controversie, as no way tending to edification, and infinite litigations there have beene betweene the parts already about it. In one word; Wee grant that the Ancients doe frequently make it a *Type of the Eucharist* but only by way of *allusion*, not of *literall prediſtion*, or *ſtrict prefiguration*; as that, out of Egypt have I called my Sonne, and in *Rama* was there a voyce heard, which were literally and historically true in another ſenſe, are yet by way of alluſion applied by the Evangelist unto the History of Chriſt, *Math. 2. 15, 18* But we may note; firſt, it is not *Sacrificavit*, but *Proſulit*, he brought it forth, he did not offer it up. Secondly, he brought it forth to *Abraham* as a *Prince* to entertaine him after his conqueſt, as *Joſephus*, and from him *Cajetan* underſtand it; not as a *Prieſt* to God. Thirdly, hee, if Hee did offer, hee offered Bread and Wine truly, theſe men, onely the lying ſhapes thereof, and not Bread and Wine it ſelfe which they ſay are tranſubſtantiated into another thing. Fourthly, the *Prieſthood of Melchizedeck* as Type, and of Chriſt as the ſubſtance, was *ἀναιρέτως*, a *Prieſthood* which could not paſſe unto any other either as *Successor* or *Vicar* to one or the other, and it was only by *Divine* and immediate *Unction*; but the *Papiſts* make themſelves *Prieſts* by humane and eccleſiaſticall ordination to offer that which they ſay *Melchizedeck* offered; and by that meanes moſt insolently make themſelves either *Successors*, or *Vicars*, or *Sharers* and copartners and workers together with him and his Antitype, Chriſt Jeſus, in the offices of ſuch a *Prieſthood* as was totally uncommunicable, and intransient, *Heb. 7. 24.* and ſo moſt ſacrilegioſly rob him of that honour which he hath aſſumed to himſelfe as his peculiar Office.

Fifthly, what kinde of bleſſing it was wherewith *Melchizedeck* bleſſed *Abraham*? To this I anſwer, that there is a *twofold Benediſtion*. The one *Charitativa*, out of

Glaſſ. Philolog.
Sacra. pag. 423.

Loco ſuprà citato.

VERSE 4.

Quod debebat
Abraham Deo,
solvit in manum
Melchisedec.
Decimarum er-
go solutione, se
minorem pro-
fessus est, Calv.
in Heb. 7. 5. 8. 9.

διὰ τὸ μὴ μνημο-
νεῖσθαι τὰς γε-
γεννητάς αὐτοῦ.
Chrysost.

of love, and so any man may blesse another by way of euprecation or well wishing: *The blessing of the Lord be upon you, we blesse you in the name of the Lord, Psal. 129. 8.* the other *Autoritativa*, as a King, a Priest, an extraordinary superior and publike person, by a way of office, and to the purpose of effecting, and reall conveying the blessing it selfe desired: *without all contradiction*, saith the Apostle, *the lesse is blessed of the greater, Heb. 7. 7.* and such was this of *Melchisedeck*. *Benedictio ob signans*, a seale, assurance, and effectuall confirmation of the promise before made, *Gen. 12. 2, 3.*

Sixthly, in what manner he received Tithes? I answer with *Calvin*, that he had *Jus decimarum*, and received them as testifications of homage, duty and obedience from *Abraham*; for the Apostle useth it as argument to prove his greatnesse above *Abraham*, which could be no argument in the case of pure gift. Since gifts, *quanti* gifts, though they prove not a generall inferioritie in him that receives them, yet they prove that in that case there is something which may bee imputed, and which deserves acknowledgement. But in this particular all the acknowledgements are from *Abraham* to *Melchisedeck*. Besides nothing was here by *Abraham* or *Melchisedeck* done after an arbitrary manner, but *Extraordinario spiritus afflatu & ex officio*, on both sides as learned *Cameron* hath observed.

Lastly, in what sense hee was ἀπατὴρ and ἀγενεαλόγος, &c. without Father, Mother, or Genealogie? I answer with *Chrysostome*, that it is not meant literally and strictly; but onely the Scripture takes notice of him as an extraordinary man, without signifying his liue, beginning, end, or race, (as *Tiberius* said of *Rufus*, that he was *Homo ex se natus*) that so hee might bee the fitter to typifie Christs Person and excellency in whom those things were really true, which are onely *quoad nos*, spoken of the Type, of whose beginning, end, or Parentage, wee
neither

The Priesthood of Christ.

465

VERSE 4.

neither have, nor can have any knowledge. These things thus premised, it will bee easie for you to preoccupate those observations which grow betweene the Type and the Antitype, which therefore I will but cursorily propose.

Note, first, that Christs Priesthood is such as did induce a Kingdome with it, for *Melchisedeck* was King of *Salem*, and Priest of the most high God.] This, Saint Hierom, and from him Ambrose, report to have beene meant by the order of *Melchisedeck*, namely, *Regale Sacerdotium*, that Christ was to be a Royall Priest. By way of merit purchasing a Kingdome of his Father, and by way of conquest recovering it to himselfe out of the hands of his enemies. This mystery was obscurely intimated, in the marriages allowed betweene the Regall and Sacerdottall Tribes of *Juda* and *Levi*, which confusion was in the other Tribes interdicted, as I have before observed.

See pag. 383.

Note, secondly, that Christ by offering up himselfe a Sacrifice unto God, is become unto his people. a King of Righteousnesse, or the Lord our righteousnesse: in which sense he is called *The Prince of life*, *Act. 3. 15.* that is, he hath all Power given him as a Prince, to quicken, and to Justifie whom hee will, *Iohn 5. 20, 21.* And this comes from his Sacrifice and perfect obedience to us imputed, and by us with faith applied and apprehended. For having fulfilled the righteousnesse of the Law, and Justified himselfe by rising from the Dead, hee became, being thus made perfect, the Author of righteousnesse and salvation to us, *Heb. 5. 9.* We had in us a whole kingdome of sin, and therefore requisite there was in him that should Justifie us a kingdome of Grace, and righteousnesse, That as sinne raigned unto death, even so might Grace through righteousnesse raigne unto eternall life by Jesus Christ our Lord, *Rom. 5. 21.* and therefore wee are said to be Justified by the righteousnesse of God, *Rom. 3. 21, 22.* that is, such a righteousnesse as is ours by gift and grace, not by nature.

VERSE 4.

nature, Rom. 10. 3. and such a righteousness as God himselfe did performe, though in the humane nature, in our behalfe, Act. 20. 28. Phil. 2. 6, 7, 8.

And this is the ground of all our comfort, the best direction in all our miseries and extremities whither to flie. A King is the greatest officer amongst men, and his honour and state is for the supply, defence, and honour of his people. He is *Custos Tabularum*, the Father and the Keeper of the Lawes. If I want any of that Justice and Equity, of which his sacred Bosome is the publike treasure, I may freely beg it of him, because he is an Officer to dispence righteousness unto his Subjects; so also is Christ unto his Church. I finde my selfe in a miserable condition, condemned by the conscience of sinne, by the testimony of the Word, by the accusations of Satan, full of discomforts; God is a God of Justice, and all fire, my selfe a creature of sinne, and all stubble; Satan the accuser of the brethren, who labours to blow up the wrath of God against me. In this case what shall I doe? Surely *God hath set his King on Sion*; and hee is a King that hath life and righteousness to give to mee; that hath grace enough to queach all sin, and the envenomed darts of Satan, in whom there is erected a court of Peace and Mercy, whereunto to appeale from the severity of God, from the importunity of the Devill, and from the accusations and testimonies of our owne hearts. And indeed he had need be a King of righteousness that shall Justifie men, for our Justification is in the remission of our sins; and to pardon sinnes, and dispense with Lawes is a regall dignity; and God taketh it as his owne high and peculiar prerogative, *I, even I am hee who blotteth out thine iniquity for mine owne sake, and will not remember thy sinnes, Esai. 43. 25.* No man, or Angell, or created power, no merit, no obedience, no rivers of oyle, nor mountaines of cattell, no prayers, teares, or torments, can wipe out the staines, or remouve the guilt of any sinne,

The Priesthood of Christ.

467

VERSE 4.

sinne, *I onely, even I* and none can else doe it. None but a Divine and Royall Power can subdue sinne, *Micah 7.18.*

And this is a ground of a second comfort, that being a King of righteousness he is rich in it, and hath treasures to bestow; that as we have a kingdome, a treasure, and abundance of sinne; so we have a King that hath alwayes a residue of spirit and grace, that hath a most redundant righteousness *from faith to faith, Rom. 1.17.* A mans faith can never over-grow the righteousness of our King. If we had all the faith that ever was in the world put into one man, all that could not over-claspe the righteousness of Christ, or be too bigge for it. As if a man had a thousand eyes, and they should one after another looke on the Sunne, yet still the light would be revealed from eye to eye; or as if a man should goe up by tenne thousand steps to the top of the highest mountaine, yet he could never over-looke all the earth, or fix his eye beyond all visible objects, but should still have more earth and heaven discovered unto him from step to step: so there is an immensity in the righteousness and mercy of God, which cannot be exhausted by any sinnes, or overlooked, and comprehended by any faith of men. As God doth more and more reveale himselfe, and the righteousness of Christ unto the soule, so man maketh further progresses *from faith to faith.* And therefore wee should learne everlasting thankfulness unto this our King, that is pleased to bee unto us a *Melchisedeck*, a *Priest* to satisfie his Fathers justice, and a *Prince* to bestow his owne.

Note thirdly, *Melchisedeck* was *King of Salem*, that is, of Peace. Here are two things to be noted, the *Place*, a City of the Canaanites, and the *signification* thereof, which is *Peace*: First then we must observe, that *Christ* is a *King of Canaanites*, of Gentiles, of those that lived in abominable lusts: *Such were some of you, but you are*
H h washed,

VERSE 4.

*washed, but you are sanctified, but you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, 1 Cor. 6. 11. Bee a man never so sinfull or uncleane, hee hath not enough to pose or non-plus the mercy and righteousnesse of Christ; hee can bring reconciliation and peace amongst Jebusites themselves. Though our father were an Amorite, our mother an Hittite, though wee were Gentiles, estranged from God in our thoughts, lives, hopes, ends: though we had justified Sodome and Samaria by our abominations, yet he can make us nigh by his blood, he can make our crimson sinnes as white as snow, he can for all that establish an everlasting covenant unto us, Ephes. 2. 11-14. Esai. 1. 18. Ezek. 16. 60-63. I was a blasphemmer, a persecutor, very injurious to the Spirit of Grace in his Saints, I wasted, I worried, I haled into prison, I breathed out threatnings, I was mad, and made havocke of the Church, I was within one step of the unpardonable sinne, nothing but ignorance betweene that and my soule; *Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first JESUS CHRIST might shew forth all long-suffering, for a patterne to them who should hereafter beleve on him to life everlasting,* saith Saint Paul, 1 Tim. 1. 13-16.*

Let us make Saint Pauls use of it: First, *To love and to beleve in Christ*, to accept as a most faithfull and worthy saying, that Christ came to save sinners; indefinitely, without restriction, without limitation; and me, though the chiefest of all others. Though I had more sinnes than earth or hell can lay upon me, yet if I feele them as heaive weights, and if I am willing to forsake them all, let me not dishonour the power and unsearchable riches of Christs blood, even for such a sinner there is mercy. Secondly, *To breake forth into Saint Pauls acknowledgement, Now unto the King eternall, immortall, invisable, and onely wise God*, to him that is a King of righteousnesse, and therefore hath abundance for me, that is eternall, and yet was borne in time for me; immortall, yet died

The Priesthood of Christ.

469

VERSE 4.

died for me; inuisible, yet was manifested in the flesh for me, the onely wise God, and who made use of that wisdom, to reconcile himselfe to mee, and by the foolishnesse of preaching doth save the world; *bee honour and glory for ever and ever, Amen.*

Secondly, from the signification of the word, we may note, *Where Christ is a King of righteousness, hee is a King of Peace too.* So the Prophet calleth him, *the Prince of Peace, Esai. 6.9.* a Creator and dispencer of Peace. It is his owne by proprietie and purchase, and he leaves it unto us: *Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you, not as the world giveth, give I unto you, Ioh. 14.27.* The world is either *fallax* or *inops*, either it deceives, or it is deficient; but Peace is *mine*, and I can give it. Therefore as the Prophet *Ieremie* calleth him by the name of *Righteousnesse*, *Jer. 33.16.* So the Prophet *Micah* calleth him by the name of *Peace*, *This man shall be the peace, when the Assyrians shall come into our Land, Mic. 5.5.* To which Saint *Paul* alleaging, calleth him *ipsum ipsum*, *our peace, Ephes. 2.14.* By him we have peace with God, being reconciled, and *restituti in curia* againe, being justified by faith, *we have peace with God*, through our Lord Jesus Christ, *Rom. 5. 1.* so that the heart can challenge all the world to lay any thing to its charge. By him wee have *peace with our owne consciences*, for being sprinkled with his blood, they are cleansed from dead workes, and so we have the *witnesse in our selves*, as the Apostle speaketh, *Heb. 9. 14. I Ioh. 5. 10. Rom. 8. 16.* By him wee have *peace with men*. No more malice, envie, or hatred of one another, after once the kindnesse and love of God our Saviour towards man appeared, *Tit. 3.3,4.* All partition wals are broken downe, and they which were two before, are both made *one in him*, *Ephes. 2. 14.* and then there is towards the brethren a love of communion, towards the weake a love of pity, towards the poore a love of bounty, either *φιλανθρωπία* or *ἀγάπη*, *2 Pet. 1.7.* either

Hh 2

brotherly

VERSE 4.

brotherly love, or generall love, towards those without mercy, charity, compassion, forgiveness, towards all good workes. By him we have *peace with the creatures*, we use them with comfort, with liberty, with delight, with piety, with charity, with mercy, as glasses in the which wee see, and as steps by the which we draw neerer to God. No rust in our gold or silver, no moth, nor pride in our garment, no lewdnesse in our liberty, no hand against the wall, no flying Roll against the stone or beame of the house, no gravell in our bread, no gall in our drinke, no snare on our table, no feares in our bed, no destruction in our prosperity; in all estates we can rejoyce, we can doe and suffer all through Christ that strengtheneth us. We are *under the custody of peace*; it keepes our hearts and mindes from feares of enemies, and maketh us serve the Lord with confidence, boldnesse and security, *Phil. 4.7. The workes of righteousness are in peace, and the effect of righteousness is quietnesse and assurance for ever.*

Esa. 32.17.

Rom. 4.5.9.

Note fourthly, from both these, that is, from a peace grounded in righteousness, needs must *Blessednesse* result, for it is the blessednesse of a creature to be reunited, and one with his Maker, to have all controversie ended, all distances swallowed up, all partitions taken downe, and therefore the Apostle useth *Righteousnes* and *Blessednesse* as termes promiscuous. All men seek for blessednes, it is the summe and collection of all desires, a man loveth nothing but in order and subordination unto that. And by nature we are all children of wrath, and held under by the curse, so many sinnes as we have committed, so many deaths and curses have we heaped upon our soules, so many walls of separation have wee set up betweene us and God, who is the fountaine of blessednesse. Till all they be covered, removed, forgiven and forgotten, the creature cannot be blessed. *Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sinnes are covered, Rom. 4.7.* All the benedictions which wee have from the most high God
come

The Priesthood of Christ.

471

VERSE 4.

come unto us from the intercession and mediation of Christ. His Sacrifice and Prayers give us interest in the All-sufficiencie of him that is above all, and so are a security unto us against all adverse power or feare, for what or whom need that man feare, that is one with the most high God? *If God be for us, who can be against us? Rom. 8. 31.* When God blefseth, his blessing is ever with effect and successe, it cannot be reversed, it cannot be disappointed: *Hath he said, and shall he not doe it? or hath he spoken, and shall he not make it good? Behold, saith Balaam, I have received commandement to blesse, and hee hath blessed, and cannot reverse it, Num. 23. 19, 20.*

Note fifthly, from *Melchisedecks* meeting *Abraham* returning from the slaughter of the Kings, wee may observe the great forwardnesse that is in *Christ* to meete and to blesse his people, when they have beene in his service. *Thou meetest him that rejoyceth and worketh rightconnesse, Esai. 64. 5. I said I will confesse my sinnes, and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sinne, Psal. 32. 5.* No sooner did *David* resolve in his heart to returne to God, but presently the Lord prevented him with his mercy, and anticipated his servants confession with pardon and forgiveness; *Thou preventest him with the blessings of goodnesse, Psal. 21. 3.* As the father of the Prodigall, when he was yet a great way off, far from that perfection which might in strictnesse be required, yet because hee had set his face homeward, and was now resolved to sue for pardon and re-admittance; when he saw him, he had compassion, and ranne (the fathers mercy was swifter than the sonnes repentance) and fell on his necke and kissed him, *Luke 15. 20.* We doe not finde the Lord so hastie in his punishments, He is *slow to anger, and doth not stirre up all his wrath together.* He is patient and long-suffering, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance; hee comes, and hee comes againe, and the third yeere he forbears, before hee cuts

H h 3

downe

VERSE 4.

downe a barren tree : But when hee comes with a blessing, hee doth not delay, but prevents his people with goodnesse and mercy. O how forward ought we to be to serve him, who is so ready to meete us in his way, and to blesse us ?

Note sixthly, from the refection and preparations which *Melchisedeck* made for *Abraham* and for his men, we may observe, That *Christ as King and Priest is a comforter and refresher of his people in all their spirituall wearinesse*, and after all their services. This was the end of his Unction to heale, and to comfort his people. The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath *annointed mee to preach the Gospell to the poore, hee hath sent mee to heale the broken hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and a recovering of sight to the blinde, to set at liberty them that are bruized, and to preach the acceptable yeere of the Lord, Luk. 4. 18, 19.* To provide a feast of fatted things, of wines on the lees, of fat things full of marrow, of wines on the lees well refined, *Eesai. 25. 6.* To milke out unto his people *consolations and abundance of Glory, Eesai. 66. 11.* To speake words in season to those that are weary, and to make broken and dry bones to rejoyce and to flourish like an herb, *Eesai. 50. 4. Psal. 51. 8. Eesai. 66. 14.*

And this is a strong argument to hold up the patience, faith, and hope of men in his service, and in all spirituall assaults ; we have a *Melchisedeck* which after our combat is ended, and our uictory obtained will give us refreshments at the last, and will meet us with his mercies. If we faint not, but waite a while, we shall see the salvation of the Lord, that in the end hee is very pittifull and of tender mercy, *Exod. 14. 13. Iam. 5. 11.* He is neere at hand, his comming draweth nigh : *He is neere that Justifieth mee, who will contend with me ?* Let us stand together. Who is mine adversary ? let him come neere to me. The readinesse of the Lord to helpe is a ground of challenge

challenge and defiance to enemies, *Phil. 4. 5. James 5. 8. Esai. 50. 8, 9.* Job went forth mourning, and had a great warre to fight; but the Lord blessed his latter end more than his beginning, and after his battle was ended met him like *Melchisedeck* with redoubled mercies. *David, Hezekiah, Heman* the Ezrahite, and many of the Saints after their example, have had sore and dismall conflicts, but at length their comforts have beene proportionable to their wrestlings, they never wanted a *Melchisedeck* after their combats to refresh them. *Rejoyce not against mee, O mine enemy, when I fall I shall rise, when I sit in darkenesse the Lord shall be a light unto mee: I will beare the indignation of the Lord, because I have sinned against him untill hee plead my cause and execute Judgement for mee, he will bring mee forth to the light, and I shall behold his righteousness, Mic. 7. 8, 9.* He hath strength, courage, refection, spirit to put into those that fight his battels, though they bee but as *Abraham*, a family of three hundred men, against foure Kings, yet hee can cut *Rahab*, and wound the Dragon, and make a way in the Sea for the ransomed to passe over, and cause his Redeemed to returne with singing, and with joy and gladnesse upon their heads, *I, even I am hee that comforteth you, who art thou that shouldest bee affraid of a man that shall die, and of the sonne of man that shall bee as grasse? Esai. 51. 12.*

Note seventhly, from *Melchisedecks* receiving of tithes from *Abraham* (which the Apostle taketh speciall notice of foure or five times together in one Chapter, *Heb. 7. 2, 4, 6, 8, 9.*) we may observe, *That Christ is a receiver of homage and tribute from his people*; There was never any type of Christ, as a Priest, but he received tithes, and that not in the right of any thing in himselfe, but meerely in the vertue of his typicall office, so that originally they did manifestly pertaine to that principall Priest, whom these represented, whose personall * Priesthood is stand-

* Dicit Apostolus, Ad tempus decimas Levitis solutas fuisse, quia non semper viverent; Melchisedec vero quia immortalis sit, retinere usque in finem quod a Deo semel illi datum est. Calv. in Heb. 7. 8.

The Priesthood of Christ.

ding, unalterable, and eternall, and therefore the *rights* thereunto belonging are such too.

If it bee objected, why then did not Christ in his life receive Tithes? I answer, first, because though he were the substance, yet the standing typicall Priesthood was not abolished till after his ministry on earth was finished, for his Priesthood was not consummate till his sitting at the right hand of God: secondly, because he tooke upon him a voluntary poverty for especiall reasons belonging to the state of his humiliation, and to the dispensation of mans Redemption, *2 Corinth. 8. 9.* You will say, now Christs Priesthood is consummate, and he himselfe is in Heaven, whither no Tithes can bee sent; therefore none are due, because he hath no typicall Priests in earth to represent him. I answer, though hee bee in Heaven in his Body, yet he is on Earth in his Ministry, and in the dispensation of the vertue of his Sacrifice; and the Ministers of the Gospell are *in his stead*, *2 Cor. 5. 20.* and ought to be received *as Christ himselfe*, *Gal. 4. 14.* so then men are not by this excused from rendering Gods dues unto him; first because there is in respect of him, whose Sacrifice wee commemorate and shew forth to the people, due a *Testification of homage unto him*. Secondly, because in respect of us there is due a *Reward of our labour*, for the labourer is worthy of his hire. To lay all together in one view, in as much as all the Types of Christ, as Priests, have received *Tithes* as due, and in as much as that right was not grounded upon any thing in or from themselves, but upon their *Typicall office*, and so did originally pertaine to the *Principall Priest*, whom they typified; and in as much as his Person and Office is *Eternall*, and therefore such are all the *annexa*, and dues thereof; and in as much as hee hath no where dispenced with, or denied, or refused, or revoked this right which from him as the Principall all his types ever enjoyed: and lastly, in as much as hee hath left to the Ministers of

his

The Priesthood of Christ.

475

VERSE 4.

his Word, the dispensation of his Sacrifice, and made them his *Ambassadors*, and in *his stead*: to the Church, to set forth him crucified in his Ordinances: for my part I doe not see why unto them in the Name and right of their Master, those rights should not be due, which were manifestly in his Types, and of which himselfe hath no where in his Word declared any revocation.

But not to enter upon any disputes or unwelcome controversies, thus much I cannot by the way but observe, *that these who labour in the Word and Doctrine, and therein are Ambassadors for Christ*, and stand in his stead to reveale the mysteries, and dispence the treasures of his blood in the Church, *ought to have by way of homage to Christ, and by way of recompence and retribution to themselves a liberall maintenance*, befitting the honour and dignity of that Person whom they represent, and of that service wherein they minister. The Apostle saith, that they are worthy of *double honour*, and honour of *reverence*, and honour of *maintenance*, and doubtlesse the very Heathen shall rise up in judgement against many who professe the Truth in both these respects: for the Heathen themselves did shew so much honour to their devillish priests, that I remember one of the Roman Consuls seeing a Priest and some Vestall virgins going on foot, and heriding on his Chariot, descended, and would not goe into it againe, till those diabolicall Votaries were first placed. Nay their very Kings and Emperors in Greece, Egypt, Rome, &c. thought it one of their greatest honours to bee withall the Priests for the people. Amongst the Christians when the Synode of Nice was assembled by *Constantines* command, and some accusations, or (as the Historian calleth them) calumniationes were presented to the Emperour against some Bishops and Ministers, he looked not on the particulars, but sealed them up with his owne signet, and having first reconciled the parties, commanded the libels to bee burnt, adding

1 Tim. 5. 17, 18.

Lam. 4. 16.

Phil. 2. 29.

2 Cor. 1. 14.

Hos. 4. 4.

Liv.

Alex. ab Alex.

lib. 2. cap. 8.

Clem. Alex. stro

l. 7. Diodor. Si-

cul. lib. 2.

Theodoret. Hist.

l. 1. c. 11. Socrat.

lib. 1. cap. 8.

VERSE 4

Vita Episcoporum sibi, fama aliis necessaria.
Aug.

adding withall that if hee should himselfe see a Bishop in adultery, hee would cover his nakednesse, with his owne royall robe; because, saith he, the sinnes of such men ought not to be divulged, lest their example doe as much hurt to the soules of others, as their fact to their owne: for as a good life is necessary for themselves, so is their good fame necessary for others. The meaning of that noble Prince was not that such mens sinnes should goe unexamined or exempted from punishment, but to shew both in how high honour they who are worthy in that function ought to be had for their workes sake, *1 Thef. 5. 12, 13.* and how wary men should bee in giving liberty to their tongues or distemper'd passions to censure, misreport, or scandalize the persons and parts of such men, against whom *Timothy* was not to receive an accusation without two or three witnesses, *1 Tim. 5. 19.* And to give notice of those ill consequences which would ensue upon the publike observation of the sinnes of those men, who in their doctrine preach the Truth, and build up the Church. For doubtlesse of other men who preach lies in hypocrisie, there cannot too much of their secret villanies, and personall uncleannesse be detected, that so the lewdnesse of their lives may stop the progresse and growth of their evill doctrine.

But to returne to the point that I am upon, *liberall maintenance is due* to those that labour in the Word and Doctrine out of Justice, and not out of mercy, for their workes sake. I will not presse the examples of heathen themselves in this duty for the shame of Christians. We finde that the Priests of Egypt had portions out of the kings owne treasuries, and that their lands were still reserved unto them, *Gen. 47. 22.* And wee finde besides these lands, that they had the third part of all yeerely tribures and levies, as *Diodorus Siculus* tels us. But we will first looke upon the example of Gods owne Priests and Levites under the Law. Secondly, upon the pre-
cepts

Plin. li. 12. c. 14.
Alex. ab. Alex.
lib. 3. cap. 22.

Diodo. Sicul. l. 2.

cepts and commands of the Gospell. God is not lesse mindefull of Ministers under the Gospell, than of those under the Law. Now then, if you will not beleeeve that a liberall maintenance is now by God allotted unto us, looke what he did allot to them. First, looke upon the *proportion of their persons*, and then upon the *proportion of their maintenance*. For their persons it would not bee hard to proove that the Tribe of *Levi*, though the thirteenth part of the people in regard of their civill division, were not yet the fortieth part of the people. Looke into the numbring of them, and compare, *Numb. 1. 46.* with *Numb. 3. 39.* The other Tribes were numbred from twenty yeeres old and upward, all that were able to beare armes, which was to the age of fifty yeeres, as *Josephus* reports; for at that age they were supposed to bee unserviceable for warre; and yet thus their number amounted to sixe hundred and three thousand five hundred and fifty men able to goe to warre. The Levites on the other side were numbred from one moneth old and upward, and yet the whole summe amounted but to twenty two thousand. Now conjecture the number of those in the other Tribes who were under twenty yeeres of age, and who were too old for warlike service to be but halfe as many as the rest, yet the whole number of the Tribes reckoned from their infancie upward will amount at the least to nine hundred two thousand men. Of which number, the number of the Levites is just the one and fortieth part. After wee finde that they increased to a mighty number more, *1 Chron. 33. 3.* but the whole people increased accordingly, for the Tribe of Judah which was before but seventie foure thousand, was then five hundred thousand, and in *Jehoshaphats* time eleven hundred thousand at least, *2 Samuel 24. 2 Chron. 7.* well then, the Levites were but the fortieth part of the people (not so much) so that that Tribe was but almost a quarter as numerous as the rest. Now looke.

*Vid. Seldens
Review of his
History, cap. 2.*

VERSE 4.

looke in the next place to the *Proportion of their maintenance*. One would thinke that the fortieth part of the people could require but the fortieth part of the maintenance in proportion. But first they had the *Tenth of all the increase* of seed, and fruit, and great and small cattell, *Levit. 27. 30.* Secondly, they had *forty eight citties* with suburbs for gardens and for cattell, *Num. 35. 2.* Which Cities were next to the best, and in many Tribes the best of all; in *Juda, Hebron*, in *Benjamin, Gibeon*, both royall Cities. So that those Cities with about a mile suburbe to every one of them can come to little lesse than the wealth of one Tribe alone, in that little Countrey, which from Dan to Beersheba was but about a hundred and sixtie miles long. Thirdly, they had all the *first fruits* of cleane and uncleane beasts, *Num. 18. 13.* Of the fruits of the earth and the fleece of the sheep, *Dent. 18. 4. Nehem. 10. 35.* of men to bee redeemed. *Num. 18. 15.* Fourthly, the meate *Offerings*, the sinne offerings, the trespass offerings, the heave offerings, and the wave offerings, were all theirs, *Numb. 18. 9, 10, 11.* Fifthly, they had all *vowes, and voluntary oblations*, and consecrations, and every hallowed thing, *Numbers 18. 8, 9.* Sixthly, excepting the Holocaust they had either the shoulder, or the breast, or the skinne, or *something of every sacrifice* which was offered, *Numb. 18. 18. Lev. 7. Dent. 18. 3.* Seventhly, the males were to appeare three times a yeere before the Lord, and they were not to come *empty handed*, *Exod. 23. 15, 17.* Lastly, unto them did belong many *recompences of injury*, which was the restitution of the principall, and a fifth part, *Numb. 5. 7, 8.* Now put the Tithes, the Cities, and these other constant renewes together, and the Priests and Levites, who were but about a quarter as many as one Tribe, had yet about three times the renewes of one Tribe.

But to leave this argument. Let us consider what the Apostle saith; *let him that is taught in the word commu-*
nicate

nicate to him that teacheth, *ὁ κτίζων ἀγαθόν*, in all his good; as Beza well expounds it, Gal. 6. 6. The elders that labour in the Word and Doctrine are worthy of double honor, for the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the Ox that treadeth out the corne, and the Labourer is worthy of his reward, 1 Tim. 5. 17, 18. Who goeth a warfare at any time of his owne charges? Who planteth a Vineyard and eateth not of the fruit thereof? Or who feedeth a flock and eateth not of the milke of the flock. Say I these things as a man (that is, am I partiall? doe I speake meerely out of affection, and humane favour to mine owne cause, or calling? or saith not the Law the same also? For it is written in the Law of Moses, thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the Ox that treadeth out the corne. Doth God take care for Oxen? or saith he it altogether for our sakes? That is, doth God provide Lawes for rewarding and encouraging the labour of brute beasts, and doth hee leave the maintenance and honour of his owne immediate officers to the arbitrary and pinching allowances of covetous and cruell men? For our sakes no doubt this is written, That he that ploweth should plow in hope, and that hee that thresheth in hope should bee partaker of his hope. That is, that the encouragement of the Ministers in their service might depend upon such a hope as is grounded on Gods Law and provision, and that they might not bee left to the wills and allowances of those men against whose sinnes they were sent. And this the Apostle proveth by an argument drawne from a most unanswerable equity. If wee have sown unto you spirituall things, is it a great thing if wee shall reape your carnall things? If you doe rightly judge of those heavenly treasures which wee bring in abundance unto you, impossible it is that you should judge our paines and service towards your immortall and pretious soules sufficiently rewarded with a narrow and hungry proportion of earthly and perishable things. Doe yee not know that they which minister about holy things,

VERSE 4.

things, live of the things of the Temple? And they which waite at the Altar are partakers with the Altar (to note that they receive their maintenance from the hand of God himselfe, whose onely the things of the Altar are, and not from men :) *Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the Gospell should live by the Gospell, 1 Cor. 9. 7-13.* And what is it *To live?* First, They must *live as men*, they must have for necessity and for delight. Secondly, they must *live as beleevers*. He that provideth not *for his owne* is worse than an infidell, *1 Tim. 5. 8.* They must therefore have by the Gospell sufficient to lay up for those, whom the Law of common humanity, much more of faith, commands them to provide for. Thirdly, they must *live as Ministers*. They must have wherewith to maintaine the *Duties of their calling*, a good example of Piety, and Charity, and Hospitality, that they may confirme by practice, what in Doctrine they teach, *1 Tim. 3. 2.* And the *instruments of their calling*, which in a profession of so vast and unlimited a compasse of learning, (for there is no part of learning in the whole circle thereof which is not helpfull and may not contribute to the understanding of Holy Scriptures, and to some part or other of a Divines imployment;) cannot but be very chargeable. And alas, how many men preach the Gospell, and yet can scarce finde the first and meanest of all these supplies? This is the great ingratitude of the world, and withall the malice and policie of Satan, by the poverty and contempt of the Ministers, to bring the Gospell it selfe into contempt, and to deterre able men from adventuring on so unrewarded a calling, as *Calvin* justly complaines. All that can with colour or countenance bee pretended by those who are guilty of this neglect is *Poverty* and disability to maintaine the Gospell. And it were well if there were not places to be found wherein Dogs and Horses, Hawks and Hounds grow fat with Gods portion, and the mercenary Preacher,

cher, when he growes leane with want, is accused of too much study. But suppose that poverty be truly alleaged: Doe wee thinke poverty a just pretext for the neglect of a morall duty? may a man spend the Lords day on his shop-board because he is poore and wants meanes? And if I may not rob God of his *time* upon pretence of poverty, neither then is the same any argument to rob him of his portion. Be not deceived, *God is not mocked*, namely with pretence of poverty and necessity, as Calvin expounds that place, *Gal. 6.7.* S. Paul beares witness unto some men, that they did good *beyond their power*, that they were richly liberall though they were deeply poore, 2 Cor. 8.2,3. And yet those were but contributions out of mercy, whereas double honour is due to the Ministers of the Gospell by a Law of Justice. It is a wrong and foolish Apologie to pretend the punishment for the continuance of the fault. The poverty of many men is doubtesse a just recompence for their neglect of the honour of the Gospell. (For God hath ever severely punished the contempt and dishonour done to his messengers, 2 Chron. 16.10.12. 2 Chron. 24.21-25. 2 Chron. 26.19,20. 2 Chron. 36.16,17.) Whereason the other side, doe thou deale faithfully with God, fulfill to thy power his appointment and decree, that they which preach the Gospell may live by the Gospell, and then hearken unto God. *Honor the Lord with thy substance and the first fruits of all thine increase; so shall thy barnes be filled with plenty, and thy presses burst out with new Wine,* Prov. 3.9,10. Consider now from this day and upward from the day that the foundation of the Lords Temple was laid consider it. Is the seed yet in the barne? From this day I will blesse you, Hag. 2.18,19. *Ye are cursed with a curse for ye have robbed me, even this whole nation. Bring ye all the Tishes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove mee herewith saith the Lord of Hosts* (if you will not doe it out of duty, yet doe it out of experi-

VERSE 4.

Hic est astus Satanae alimentis fraudare pios Ministros et Ecclesiatibus destituatur, &c. Calvin. in Gal. 6.6. Satan hac arte tentat Doctrinā privare Ecclesiam, dum inopie & famis metu plurimos absteret ne id oneris suscipiant. Idem in 1 Tim. 5.17. vid. Muscul. in Gal. 6.6. & in 1 Tim. 3.2. Bishop Jewels Sermons on Hag. 1.2.3.4. pag. 181.182. on Psal. 69.9. pag. 191.194. Perkins in his Sermon of the Duties and Dignities of the Ministry. Hookers Eccel. policy, lib. 5. Num. 79. Hildersham on Job. 4. pag. 300. 301.319.323. Bolton in his Epistle dedicatory to his discourse of true happiness. Grig. Tholof. de Rep. pub. lib. 13.6.17.

VERSE 4.

Greg. Naz.
Orat. 36. de
Filio.

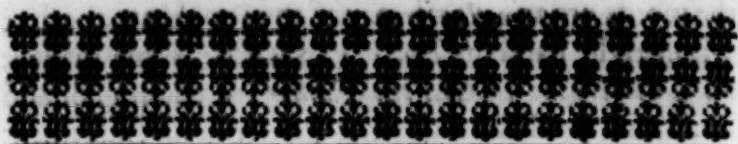
Heb. 13. 8.
Esa. 9. 6.
Revel. 14. 6.

1 Pet. 1. 19.

experiment) *If I will not open you the windowes of heaven, and powre you out a blessing that there shall not be roome enough to receive it, Mal. 3. 9-12.* There was never any man lost by paying God his Dues, there was never any man thrived by grudging, or pitting the Almighty. I will conclude this point with the Apostle. It is his *Doctrine*; faithfull Ministers are worthy of double honor. And it is his *Exhortation*; Render to all their Dues, Tribute to whom Tribute, Custome to whom Custome, Feare to whom Feare, *Honor to whom Honor, Rom. 13. 3.*

Note lastly, *The Priesthood of Christ is an everlasting Priesthood.* Hee also was without Father, and without Mother, without beginning of dayes, or end of life. As man without a Father, as God without a Mother, *The same yesterday and to day, and for ever.* His name was, *Everlasting Father.* His Gospell an *Everlasting Gospell,* He was a Lamb slaine from the beginning of the world. The vertue of his blood goes *backward* as high as *Adam.* He was foreordain'd before the foundation of the world, *2 Tim. 1. 9.* The redemption of those that transgressed under the *first Testament,* the remission of *sinnes that were past,* were procured by this Sacrifice, *Heb. 9. 15. Rom. 3. 25.* It goeth *doneward* to the end of the world, he must raigne till all be put under his feete, and he must raise up all by the power and vertue of his victory over death, *Ioh. 5. 26-29.* And lastly, it goeth *onward,* to all immortality; for though the *Acts* and administration of his Priest-hood shall cease when wee shall have delivered the Kingdome to his Father, and have brought the whole Church into Gods presence; yet the *vertue* and fruits of those Acts shall bee absolutely eternall, for so long as the Saints shall bee in heaven, so long they shall enjoy the benefit of that Sacrifice, which did purchase not a lease, or expiring terme, but *ζωὴν αἰώνιον αὐτοῦ*, an *endlesse life,* an everlasting glory, an inheritance, incorruptible and that faderth not away, reserved in the heaven for them.

VERSE



VERSE 5.

*The Lord at thy right hand,
shall strike through Kings in the
day of his wrath.*

VERSE 6.

*He shall judge amongst the Hea-
then, Hee shall fill the places with
dead Bodies : Hee shall wound the
heads over many Countries.*



IN the former part of the Psalm we have had the description of Christs offices of *King* and *Priest*, together with the effect thereof in gathering a *willing people* unto himselfe. Now here the Prophet sheweth *another effect* of the powerfull administration of these Offices, containing his *victories* over all his enemies, allegorically expressed in a *Hypotyposis*, or lively allusion unto the manner of humane victories; wherein first I shall in a few words labour to cleere the sense, and then the observations which are naturall will the more evidently arise.

The Lord at thy right hand] To lay aside their exposition who understand these words of God the Father;

VERS. 5, 6.

the words are an *Apostrophe* of the Prophet to those at whose right hand the Lord JESUS is. Some make it an *Apostrophe to God the Father*, a triumphall and thankfull prediction of that Power and Judgement which hee hath given to this his *Benjamin*, the Sonne at his right hand. Because that thereby the phrase retaineth the same signification and sense which it had in the first verse. As if *David* had said, O God, the Father of all Power and Majestie, worthy art thou of all praise, thanksgiving and honour, who hast given such Power to thy Sonne in the behalfe of thy Church, as to smite through Kings, and Judge Heathen, and pull downe the chiefe of his enemies, and to subdue all things to himselfe; and these read it thus, *O Lord, hee that is at thy right hand shall strike through Kings, &c.* Others make it to bee an *Apostrophe to the Church*, and so to bee a phrase not expressing Christs exaltation, as verse 1. But his care and protection over his Church, his readinesse, to assist and defend his owne People against all the injuries and assaults of adverse power. *Salomon* saith, *A wise mans heart is at his right hand, but a fooles heart is at his left, Eccles. 10. 2.* That is, his heart is ready and prepared to execute any wise counsels or godly resolutions; as the Prophet *David* saith, *My heart is prepared O God, my heart is prepared, I will sing and give thanks.* But a fooles heart when hee should doe any thing is like his left hand, to seeke of skill, unactive and unprepared; when hee walketh by the way *his heart faileth him, verse 3.* And this readinesse and present helpe of God to defend and guide his Church is expressed frequently by his being at the right hand thereof. *Because the Lord is at my right hand I shall not bee moved, Psal. 16. 8. Hee shall stand at the right hand of the poore to save him, Psalm. 109. 31. I the Lord thy God will hold thy right hand, saying unto thee, feare not I will helpe thee, Esai. 31. 13.* As if *David* had said, Bee not dismayed nor cast downe

The Victorie of Christ.

485

VERS. 5, 6.

downe O yee Subjects of this King, as if being exalted to Gods right hand, hee had given over the care and protection of his people; for as hee is at the right hand of his Father in Glory and Majesty; so is he at your right hand too, standing to execute judgement on your enemies, and to reveale the power of his Armetowards you in your protection.

Now the reasons of this phrase and expression as I conceive are these two. First, to note that Christs power, providence, and protection doe not exclude, but onely strengthen, assist, and prosper the ordinary and just endeavours of the Church for themselves. The Lord is *not at our left hand* to succour us in our idlenesse and negligence, but *at our working hand* to give successe to our honest endeavours. The *sword of the Lord* doth not fight without the *sword of Gedeon*, *Judg. 7. 18.* In the miracles of Christ when hee fed and feasted men, hee never created wine or bread of nothing, but blessed, and so changed or multiplied that which was by humane industry prepared before. Our Saviour had fish and bread of his owne, and yet hee would have his Disciples put in their net and catch, and bring of their owne, to note unto us, that Gods power and providence, must not exclude but encourage mans industrie, *John 21. 9, 10.* Hee protecteth us *in viis nostris, non in precipitiis*, in our waies, not in our precipices or presumptions, *Psal. 91. 11.* So long then as the Church is valiant and constant in withstanding the enemies of her peace and prosperitie, God is undoubtedly with her to blesse that courage, and to strengthen that right hand; so long as *Moses* held up his hand, God fought for Israel. There was *Joshuas* sword, and *Moses* his hand or prayer, and upon those Gods blessing, *Exod. 17. 12, 13.* And they were all to concur. If the sword should cease, the Prayer would doe no good; for God will not bee tempted: If the Prayer faint, the sword is in vaine, for God will not bee neglected.

VERS. 5, 6.

neglected. As in a curious Clocke stop any wheele and you hinder the whole motion. If God promise to bee present, *Joshua* must promise to bee couragious, *Josh.* 1. 5. 6. 9.

Secondly, to note unto us the care and militarie wisdom of Christ our Captaine to meeete with and to prevent our enemies, and to intercept their blowes against us; for we may observe in the Scripture that *Satan* pliieth the right hand of the Church, laboureth to weaken and assault us where there is most danger towards him. Let *Satan* stand at his right hand, *Psal.* 109. 6. That is, give him over to the rage of Satan, that he may be hurried to execute his will. Thus *Satan* stood at the right hand of *Joshua* the high Priest to resist him, *Zech.* 3. 1. Noting the assiduous and indefatigable endeavours of Satan to resist, disappoint, and overthrow the workes of the worthies in Gods Church (*I would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and againe, but Satan hindred us, 1 Thes.* 2. 18.) And to divert the strength of men upon his service. And therefore to rebuke him, and to shew to the Church that our strength is from him, and due unto him hee also stands there to outvie the temptations and impulsions of Satan.

These are the two expositions which are given of these words, *The Lord at thy right hand.* Now though of all places of Scripture there is indeed but one literall sense; yet when two are given, which both tend unto the same generall scope, and are futeable not only to the analogie of faith, but to the meaning mainly aimed at by the Holy Ghost in the place, and when there is no apparant evidence in the face of the Text, for preferring one before the other: I thinke it is not unfit to embrace both; and so something I shall touch upon both senses.

Shall strike through, or wound, or make gore bloody, Kings in the day of his wrath.] The word is, *He shall stricken through Kings.* It is a Prophecie of things future, spoken

The Victorie of Christ.

487

VERS. 5, 6.

as of things to bee done. To *strike thorow*, notes a complete victory and full confusion of the enemy, an incurable wound, that they may stagger, and fall, and rise up no more, and that affliction may not arise a second time, *Nabum. 1. 9. 1 Sam. 26. 8.* The onely difficulty is what is meant by *Kings*; for which wee must note that the Kingdome of Christ is spirituall, and his warre spirituall, and therefore his enemies for the most part spirituall. Therefore I take it wee are hereby to understand the most potent enemies of Christ; whether *spirituall*, wee wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, and powers, and spirituall wickednesse in high places, *Ephes. 6. 12. 2 Cor. 10. 4.* Or *Carnall*, as heathen and wicked men, *Psal. 2. 8, 9.* The fat and the strong enemies of the Church, *Ezek. 34. 16.* Our spirituall enemies in Scripture are called *Kings*. Satan the *Prince of this world*, the God of this world, the *Prince of the power of the aire. The King of the locusts, &c.* Sinne and originall concupiscence is a *King*. Let not sinne raigne in your mortall bodies. And the *Earthly enemies* of Christ are called *Kings*. The *ten Hornes*, that is, *ten Kings make warre with the Lambe. The Kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord and his Christ*; and *Death* which is the last enemy is a *King. The King of Terrors*, that raigneth over men. And over all these Kings doe the victories of Christ reach. Some by *Kings* understand the *Romane emperors* (who are called Kings, *1 Pet. 2. 13. 17.*) And their overthrow for persecuting the Church. But since all sorts of Christs enemies are called Kings in Scripture, and all of them doe push at his Kingdome in the Church, I see no ground why wee may not by Kings understand them all, with their subjects, armies, and associates. As in great victories the Lords and principall men are said to bee overcome, when the servants and souldiers are routed and slaine.

In the Day of his wrath.] That is, when time hath ri-

I i 3

pened

John 16. 11.
2 Cor. 4. 4.
Eph. 2. 2.
Revel. 9. 11.
Revel. 17. 12, 14.
Psal. 2. 9.
Act. 26. 27.
1 Cor. 2. 8.

VERS. 5, 6.

pened the insolency and malice of the enemy, when his fury is fully stirred up and provoked, when the just and full time of his Glory is come; That it may appeare that they are overcome not by time, or chance, or humane power, or secular concurrence, but onely by the power of his wrath hee will doe it. Christ is never destitute of power, but in wisdom hee hath ordered the times of his Church, when to have his Church suffer and beare witness to him, and when to triumph in his deliverances. So the meaning of this clause is this, when the day of recompence is come, when the finnes and provocations of his enemy is ripe, when the utmost period of his patience is expired, *in apostasia*, in the fixed and unmoveable day which hee hath set, be the probabilities never so poore, and preparations never so small, the expectations never so low, the meanes in humane view never so impossible, yet then by his wrath he will utterly and incurably wound his enemies both spirituall and temporall, that they shall not rise a second time.

He shall judge amongst the Heathen.] The word judgement noteth both *Governement* and *Punishment*. *The Lord shall judge his people, and repent himselfe for his servants, when he seeth that their power is gone, Deut. 32. 36.* There to judge, noteth governement. *The Lord standeth up to plead and to judge his people, Esai. 3. 13. That nation whom they serve will I judge, Genes. 15. 14.* There to judge noteth punishment. Here it is taken for executing condemnation upon the contumacious adversaries of the Gospell of Christ amongst the Gentiles, as in the great victory of *Gog and Magog*, *Ezek. 39.* Some by *Gentiles* understand *all Enemies* both Spirituall, and earthly.

He shall fill the places with dead Bodies.] That notes both the *swiftnesse* of the victory, and the *greatnesse* of the victory. That it shall bee so generall, and so speedie that the enemy shall have either none left, or they that are

Glossius in Isai.
63. 6.

The Victorie of Christ.

489

VERS. 5, 6.

are left shall not bee able, nor have leisure to bury their dead Bodies, *Ezek. 39. 11.*

He shall wound the head over divers Countries.] That is, either the principall of his enemies every where; or Satan who is the god of the World, that ruleth as Head over the children of disobedience in all places. Or Antichrist the Head of nations, the chiefe of Gods enemies, *Revel. 13. 7, 8. 14. 8. 17. 15. 18.*

The Lord at thy right hand.] According to the two-fold Apostrophe before mentioned, here are two observations which I will but touch. First, that God the Father is worthy to have all the Power, Majestie, and Judgement which hee hath given to his Sonne our Mediator, for our protection, salvation and defence, most thankfully and triumphantly acknowledged to him. We finde our Saviour himselfe praising God in this behalfe, that hee had delivered all things into his hand, even power to make Babes beleve on him, *Matth. 11. 25. 27.* And this Saint *Paul* is frequent in, namely in praising and glorifying God for Christ. O wretched man that I am who shall deliver me, &c. *I thanke God through Jesus Christ our Lord, Rom. 7. 25. 1 Tim. 16, 17.* All the promises of God are in him Yea, and in him Amen, *to the Glory of God by us, 2 Cor. 1. 19, 20.* Hee gave himselfe for our sinnes, that he might deliver us from this present evill world according to the Will of God and our Father *To whom bee Glory for ever and ever, Amen, Gal. 1. 4, 5.* Every tongue must confesse that Jesus Christ is Lord *to the Glory of God the Father, Phil. 2. 11.*

And reason there is that it should thus bee acknowledged to the Father, because hee hath all his Kingdome and power in the Church from the Father. *All power is given unto mee. Hee hath given him a name above every name;* and this the Sonne hath revealed to us, that so he might manifest the name, that is, get glory to his Father thereby, *Joh. 17. 6, 7.* For in Christ it was God that reconciled

*Hab. 3. 13.
Psal. 68. 21.*

VER 5, 6.

ciled the world to himselfe. Secondly, he hath it all given unto him in our nature, in our behalfe, and as our head, so that we in the gifts of God to him were onely respected, and therefore wee have reason to praise God for them. It was not indeed given to him strictly (for it was not to him *Beneficium* but *Onus*, an Office, but not a benefit) but to him for us, or to us in and by him. In all the victories, deliverances, refreshments, experiences of Gods Power and goodnesse we must ever remember to praise God in and through his Sonne, to acknowledge the power of his right hand, which is not now against his Church, but against the enemies of his Church. For therefore the deliverance of his Church is ascribed to Gods *Right hand*, because hee hath there one to plead, to intreat, to move his right hand in our behalfe. Therefore in all our distresses, in all conflicts and temptations, wee must by faith looke up *unto Gods right hand*, put him in remembrance of that faithfulnessse, righteousnessse, atonement, and intercession which is there made in our behalfe. There wee shall have matter enough to fill our mouthes and hearts with praises, and triumph, and reioicing in him. *It is Christ who is at the right hand of God; who shall separate us from the Love of Christ, Rom. 8. 34, 35.* Here are two arguments of the Churches safetie and triumph. The *Love* of Christ, and the *Honor* of Christ. He loveth all his to the end. But what good can love do with power? Therefore hee that loveth us is exalted by God, and hath all power given him for this purpose, that his Love may doe us good. In the conflicts of my corruptions (which are an adversarie too wise, too subtile, too numberlesse for mee to vanquish) I may yet when I am driven to *Pauls* extremitie, rest in his thanksgiving, and looking up to Jesus, who will be the finisher of every good worke which hee beginnes, and seeing him at Gods right hand, may triumph in the power and office which God hath given to his Sonne there, which

is,

is, to subdue our iniquities, and to sanctifie us by his Truth, and by that residue of Spirit which hee keepeth for the Church, *Joh. 17. 17, 19.* for that Prayer is a Modell, as it were, and counterpane of Christs Intercession: for saith hee, *I come to thee, and speake these things in the world, that they may have my joy fulfilled in them, verse 13.* that is, that they having a specimen and forme of that Intercession which with thee I shall make for them, left upon publike record for them to looke on, and there finding, that their sanctification is the businesse of my sitting at thy right hand, may in the middest of the discomforts and conflicts of their corruption have a full joy and triumph in the honour which thou hast given mee. I am beset with the temptations of mine enemies, and persecutions for the Name of Christ; In this case I may give God praise for the power which hee hath given to his Sonne, I may from mine enemies appeale unto Gods right hand, I may like *Stephen* when the stones and buffets are about my soule looke up by faith, and see there my Captaine standing up in my defence, *Act. 7. 55.* I may acknowledge unto God the power given unto his Sonne, that though nothing of all this fall upon me without his provision and permission, yet sure I am that hee hath power and mercy in his right hand, that though mine enemies were as strong as a combination and armie of kings, yet the Lord at his right hand hath from him in my behalfe received power enough to strike through kings when the day of his wrath is come.

Note, secondly, Christ is at the right hand of his people, present with them, and prepared to defend them from all their enemies, *present by his Spirit* to strengthen, comfort, and uphold them, enabling them to glory and rejoyce in all their sufferings, as knowing that they are but for a moment, and that which is needfull to purge their faile, and to make them beare their shame, *1 Peter, 1. 6, 7. Jam. 1. 2, 3. Esai. 27. 8, 9.* and to glorifie the
consec-

VERS. 5, 6.

consequent power of Christ, which shall bee revealed to their joy, 1 Pet. 4. 13. when hee will recompence double to us in mercy, and to our enemies in severitie, *Esa.* 54. 7, 8. 61. 7. present by his mighty power, and by his Angels, to rescue, deliver and protect them, to bee as a wall of fire, as a Shield, a Buckler, a Rocke, a Captaine to his people, *Zech.* 2. 5.

And this is the ground of all the Churches comfort that more is with them than against them: the enemies have combinations and confederacies of men, but the Church hath *Immanuel*, God with them, *Esa.* 8. 9, 10. none can pull Christ from the right hand of God, or from the right hand of his people: that is, none can take away either his power or his love from his people. The Church and Truth can never bee crush'd and overthrowne, no more than a rocke with the raging of the waves: they are *Heavenly things*, and therefore nothing of earth or hell can reach to corrupt them. It was but a vaine attempt of the Giants to build a Tower to Heaven: The world was made that there might be therein a Church to worship and contemplate that God which made it, therefore in the creation God never rested till hee came to a Church, to note that that was the end thereof; and therefore it is easier to pull downe the world, and to shake in peeces the frame of nature, than to ruine the Church. The Church hath Christ for her Husband, Hee to whom all knees must bend, He whom every tongue must confesse, He who will subdue all things to himselfe, so shee hath Love, Power and Jealousie, all three very strong things on her side. And therefore the onely way to bee safe, is to keepe Christ at our right hand, to hold fast his Truth, Worship, and Obedience; for so long as wee have *Immanuel*, all adverse power is but flesh, and all flesh is but grasse, withered in a moment when God will blow upon it.

Note thirdly, *Christ in his appointed time will utterly over-*

The Victorie of Christ.

493

VERS. 5, 6.

overthrow the greatest enemies of his Kingdome, and deliver his Church from under the sorest oppressions. There is not any one argument in the Holy Scriptures more frequently repeated, than this of Christs victories: prefigured they were in the deliverances of Israel out of Egypt, *1 Cor.* 10. 2, 4. In the deliverance of the Arke out of the waters, *1 Pet.* 3. 21, 22. in the deliverance of the Jewes from Babylon, *Revel.* 14. 8. *Eesai.* 11. 10-12. 15. To note that in the sorest extremities and greatest improbabilities God will shew himselfe jealous for his people. This victorie is expressed by *treading of a wine-presse*, *Eesai.* 63. 1, 6. when there are none to helpe, when the Church is brought to sorest extremities, though multitudes meete against her as many as the grapes in a vintage, they shall all bee but as Clusters of grapes, he shall squeeze out their blood like wine, and make his Church to thresh them, *Lamen.* 1. 15. *Revel.* 14. 20. *Joel.* 3. 12. *Mic.* 4. 13. By the dissipation of smoke out of a Chimnie, they shall be as the smoke out of the Chimnie, *Hos.* 13. 3. As *Athanasius* used to say to *Julian* the Apostate, that hee was but *Nubecula quæ citò transiret*, a little cloud, which would quickly be blowne away. Smoke when it breakes out of a Chimnie with a horrible blackenesse threatneth to blot out the Sunne, and to invade and choake up all the Ayre, but a little blast of winde scattereth it, and anon nothing thereof appeares. By fire consuming thornes and briars, *Eesai.* 10. 17. While they be folded together as thornes, and while they are drunken as drunkards, that is, while they have plotted their counsels, and confederacies so curiously that no man dares so much as touch them, and while they are drunken with the pride and confidence of their own strength, they shall then bee devoured as stubble that is fully dry, *Nabum* 1. 10. *Eesai.* 27. 4. 31. 9.

Therefore the Scripture calleth Christ a *Man of war*, *Exod.* 15. 3. Because hee is furnished with all Arts of victory,

VERS. 5, 6.

Storie, *Power invincible*, as a Lion amongst shepheards, so is hee amongst his enemies, *Eesai. 31. 4. wisdom unsearchable* which must stand, *verse 1, 2.* If hee purpose, none can disappoint him, *Eesai. 14. 27. Authority* by the least intimation to gather together all the forces of the world against the enemies of his Church. If he but hisse unto them, they presently come in troopes, *Eesai. 5. 26. 7. 18.* Hee can *command* helpe for his people, *Psal. 44. 4. Psalm. 71. 3. Jer. 47. 7.* and if that should faile, hee can create helpe for his people, as he did for Israel, when hee wrought miracles to deliver them, *Psal. 106. 22.*

Wee may more profitably consider the Truth and comfort of this point, by discovering it in the severall enemies of Christ and his People. First, the great enemy of the seed of the woman is the *Serpent*, that great red Dragon, whose names are all names of enmitie. The *Accuser*, the *Tempter*, the *Destroyer*, the *Devourer*, the *Envious man*, furnished with *much strength*, and mightie succour, Legions of principalities and powers attending on him; and with *much wisdom*, which the Scripture calleth *wisdom*, the wiles, and traines, and craftinesse of Satan. And his Arts of destroying men are two. To *tempt* and to *accuse*. His Temptations are two-fold: either unto *Sinne*, or unto *discomfort*: either to make us offend God, or to make us disquiet our selves: either to wound us or to vex us. And in all these his Arts Christ our Capitaine will tread him under our feete, and will give his Church the victorie at the last, either by *Arming us with sufficiencie of grace and faith in his victories*, putting us by his Spirit in mind of his Temptations, which taught him compassion towards us who are so much weaker; and encouraging our hearts to cry out unto him who is our mercifull and compassionate high Priest, like a ravished woman in our extremities, as *Paul* did, *2 Cor. 12. 8, 9.* stirring up our faith to lay hold on him when wee are in darkenesse; and the Spirit of Adoption to cry unto

unto him when we are in danger; and the Spirit of wisdom to solve the objections, to discern the devices of Satan, and to prepare and arme our hearts accordingly to wrestle with him. Or else *by rebuking of him*, pulling in his chaine, and chasing him away, and as, our second, undertaking the combate in person for us, when hee is ready to prevaile, *Zech. 3. 1, 2.* Thus hee overcommeth him as a *Tempter*, and ever giveth some either comfortable or profitable issue out of them.

He likewise overcommeth him as an *Accuser*. Satan accuseth the Saints either *by way of complaint* and narration of the things which they have done, *Revel. 12. 10.* which the Apostle calleth *ἐκλογισμὸς*, his laying of crimes to the charge of men, *Rom. 8. 33.* and thus Christ overcommeth him by his *Intercession*, and in the hearts of his Saints by making them judge and accuse themselves, that they may be able to cleere themselves too, *1 Cor. 11. 31. 2 Cor. 7. 11.* Or hee accuseth *by way of suspicion or pre-conjecture*, as hee did *Job*, *Job 1. 9, 10, 11.* and herein likewise Christ overcommeth him in his Servants, by permitting him to tempt and vex them, that they may come the purer out of the fire, and by putting a Holy suspicion and jealousie into them over their owne hearts, which may still bee a meanes to prevent them against evils that are likely to assault them, to teach them in every condition, as well possible as present, how to walke acceptably before God, *Phil. 4. 11, 13.*

Another great enemy of the Kingdome of Christ is, the *lust* of our owne evill nature. *The carnall mind is enmitie against God, for it is not subject to the Law of God, neither indeede can bee, Rom. 8. 7. Phil. 3. 8.* Enmitie in grieving, vexing, and quenching the Holy Spirit in us, and lusting enviously against his Grace, *Jam. 4. 4, 5.* And here also Christ overcommeth, by the prevailing power of his Spirit, giving us *more Grace*, demolishing the kingdome of sinne, and judging the prince of this world which

VERS. 5, 6.

which before did rule in the children of disobedience. And this he doth by the Judgement Sear, and Scepter of his Spirit in the heart : for the judgement of the Spirit is too hard for the principalitie of Satan, *Job. 16. 11.* The Spirit of Christ is a *victorious Spirit*. He bringeth forth his *Judgement unto victory*, *Matth. 12. 20.* *Eesai. 4. 4.* He worketh out by degrees the drosse and impuritie of our nature, and services. First, by faith fixing upon better promises and hopes than lust can make, *1 John 5 4.* *Heb. 11. 24, 26.* Secondly, by watchfulnesse, cying corruptions, and so stirring up those arguments and principles which are strongest against them, *Job 3 1. 1.* *Psal. 39. 1.* Thirdly, by leading us to more acquaintance with God in knowledge, love and communion, *Job. 22. 21.* *1 Job. 1. 3.* and so fetching more wisdom and strength from him: for this is the way that we get all our strength, even by learning of him, *Phil. 4. 12.* Fourthly, by inclining the heart to hate, and to complaine of corruptions, to bemoane it selfe, as *Paul* and *Ephraim* did, *Rom. 7. 23.* *Mark. 9. 24.* *Jer. 31. 18, 19.* Fifthly, by bringing the heart into the light, there to approve and judge its actions, *Job. 3. 20.* by setting it alwayes in Godseye, that it may not sinne against him, *Psal. 16. 8.* Sixthly, by convincing the heart of the beautie and excellencie of Grace, of the unlikenesse of sin to God, and so making the soule more full of desires for the one, and against the other, *Eesai. 26. 8.* *Ezek. 36. 3 1.* and thus kindling lust against lust, *Gal. 5. 17.* Seventhly, by being alwayes a present Monitour and Watchman in the soule, to supply it with spirituall weapons and reasonings against the temptations of lust, *Eesai. 30. 3 1.* *Job. 14. 26.* Lastly, in one word, by dayly supplies from the residue of Spirit which is in our head, whereby according to the proportion and exigence of the members, he floweth into them, *Mal. 2. 15.* *Phil. 1. 19.* This is that seed, that leaven, that vitall instinct, which is ever in the heart, setting it selfe against the

The Victorie of Christ.

497

VERS. 5, 6.

the workings and life of lust, and by little and little wa-
sting it away as fire doth water.

The grand instrument of Satan and lust (who are the
two leaders in this warre against Christ) is the *wicked
world*. The power, malice, wisdom, learning, or any
other either naturall or acquired abilities of evill men:
for even in an earthly respect by the word *kings*, wee are
not onely to understand those Monarchs, and Princes
of the earth who set themselves against Christ; but all
such as excell in any such worldly abilities as may further
that opposition. It notes the strength, policie, pride and
greatnesse of minde, or scorne of subjection, which is in
the heart against Christ. So that *king* heere stands in
opposition to *subject*, they who reject Christs yoke,
and breake his bonds asunder, and will not have him to
raigne over them, those are the *kings* in the Text. And
these also will hee smite through and confound by the
Power of his Word, and the strength of his Arme. The
Lord gave the Word, great was the company of those
that published it. *Kings of armies did fly apace, and shee
that tarried at home divided the spoile, Psal. 68. 11, 12.*
Tophet is ordained of old, for the king it is prepared, Esai.
30. 33. Come, and gather your selves together unto
the Supper of the great God. *That ye may eat the flesh
of kings, and the flesh of captaines, and the flesh of mightie
men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them,
and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and
great, &c. Revel. 19. 17, 18.* As for those mine enemies
*which would not that I should raigne over them, bring them
hither, and slay them before mee, Luke, 19. 27.* Bee wise
*now, ye Kings, be instructed, ye Judges of the earth. Serve
the Lord with feare, and rejoyce with trembling; kisse the
Sonne lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his
wrath is kindled but a little.* Thus the Lord overthrow-
eth his Churches enemies, and protecteth it against all
their greatest preparations, and most formidable power.

And

Psal. 2. 10, 11,
12.

VERS. 5, 6.

*Greg. Naz. Orat.
4. in Julian. 2.*

*Theodoret. Hist.
lib. 3. c. 20. Naz.
Orat. 4. Caesar
Comm. lib. 1.*

And this hee doth severall wayes; sometimes by diverting their forces from his Church into some other necessary channell, or ambitious designe of their owne. Thus *Rabshakab* and his hoast were called from Judah, *2 King. 19. 7, 8.* so the Lord promised his people that when they went up to appeare before him thrice a yeere hee would divert the desires of their enemies from their land, *Exod. 34. 24.* Thus *Julian* the Apostate, having but two main plots to honour (as he supposed) his government and his idols withall, the subduing of the Persian, and the rooting out of the Galileans, as he called them; was prevented from this by being first overthrowne in the other; for the prosperous successe of which expedition hee vowed unto his idoll-gods a sacrifice of all the Christians in the Empire, as *Gregorie Nazianzen* relateth. Sometimes by infatuating, and implanting a spirit of giddinesse and distraction in the enemies of his Church, making them destitute both of counsell and courage. When God would punish Babylon (which was a type of the enemies of Christs Kingdome) he made their hearts melt, that they should bee amazed at one another, and their faces should be like flames, *Esa. 13. 7, 8.* that is, not onely pale like a flame, but rather, as I conceive, full of varietie of fearefull impressions, and distracted passions: nothing so tremulous, so various, so easily bended every way with the smallest blast as a flame: so their feare should make their blood and spirits in their faces to tremble, quiver, and vary, to come and goe like a thinne flame in them; so God threatneth to mingle a perverse spirit, to make the spirit of Egypt faile in them, and their wisdom to perish, *Esa. 19. 1, 2, 3. 14, 17.* and thus likewise the Lord dealt with *Julian* in that Persian expedition, hee put a spirit of folly in him to burne his ships, and so to put a necessitie of courage in his people, as the old Gauls did against *Caesar*, and then to leave them all destitute of necessary reliefe. Sometimes

The Victorie of Christ.

499

VERS 5, 6.

times by ordering casualties and particular emergencies for the deliverance of his Church, a thing wonderfully scene in the Histories of *Joseph* and *Ester*. Thus as a man by a chaine made up of severall linkes, some of gold, others of siluer, other of brasse, iron, or tinne, may bee drawne out of a pit: so the Lord by the concurrence of severall un subordinate things, which have no manner of dependance, or naturall coincidency amongst themselves hath oftentimes wrought the deliverance of his Church, that it might appeare to be the worke of his owne hand. Sometimes by ordering and arming naturall causes to defend his Church, and to amaze the enemy. Thus the Starres in their courses are said to fight against *Sisera*, *Judg.* 5. 20. A mighty winde from Heaven beating on their faces discomfited them, as *Josephus* reports. So the Christian armies under *Theodosius* against *Eugenius* the Tyrant were defended by windes from Heaven, which snatcht away their weapons out of their hands. To make good that Promise, *No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper*. So the Lord slew the enemies of *Joshua* with haile, *Jos.* 11. 11. And thus the Moabites were overthrowne by occasion of the Sunne shining upon the water, *2 King.* 3. 22, 23. Sometimes by implanting phantasies and frightfull apprehensions into the mindes of the enemy, as into the Midianites, *Judg.* 7. 13, 14. The Assyrians, *2 King.* 7. 6. thus the Lord caused a voice to bee heard in the Temple before the destruction of Jerusalem, warning the faithfull to goe out of the Citie. Sometimes by stirring up and prospering weake and contemptible meanes to shew his Glory thereby. The Medes and Persians were an effeminate and luxurious people, *Cyrus* a meane Prince, for hee was not at this time the Emperour of the Medes & Persians, but onely sonne in law to *Darius* or *Cyaxares*, and yet these are made instruments to overthrow that most valiant people, the Babylonians, *Esai.* 45. 1. 13. 3. 17. As *Jeremy* was

K k

drawne

Joseph. Antiq.
Jud. lib. 5. c. 6.

Aug. de Civ.
Dei, lib. 5. cap. 26.

Euseb. lib. 3. c. 8.

Briffon. de Reg.
Pers. l. 2.

V E R S. 5, 6.

Jer. 38. 11.

Herodot. lib. 1.
 Xenophon. de ex-
 pedis. Cyri, lib. 7.

Euseb. de vita
 Constantini. lib. 1.
 cap. 50.
 Theodoret. lib. 3.
 cap. 20. vid. Ter-
 tul. contr. Sca-
 pulam, cap. 3. &
 Laurent. de la.
 Barr.
 Euseb. hist. lib. 8.
 cap. 26. & Zo-
 naras.

drawne out of the Dungeon by old rotten ragges, which were throwne aside as good for nothing; So the Lord can deliver his Church by such instruments as the enemies thereof before would have looked upon with scorn, as upon cast and despicable creatures; for God, as hee useth to infatuate those whom hee will destroy: so hee doth guide with a Spirit of wonderfull wisdom those whom hee raised to defend his Kingdome. The Babylonians were feasting, and counted their Citty impregnable, being fortified with wals and the great river, and God gave wisdom beyond the very conjectures of men, to attempt a businesse which might seeme unfeasable in nature, to drie up Euphrates, and divide it into severall small branches, and so hee made a way to bring his army into the Citty while they were feasting, the gates thereof being in great confidence and security left open, *Esaï. 44. 27, 28. 45. 1. Jer. 51. 36.* Sometimes by turning the hearts of others to compassionate the Church, to hate the enemies, and not to helpe them, but to rejoyce when hee is sinking, *Esaï. 14. 6. 10. 16. Nahum 3. 7.* Sometimes by the immediate stroke of God upon their bodies or consciences. Thus God gave the Church rest by smiting *Herod, Act. 12. 23, 24.* Thus *Maximinus* being smitten with an horrible and stinking disease in his bowels, confessed that it was Christ which overcame him; and *Julian* being smitten with an unknowne blow from Heaven, as is supposed, confessed that Christ was too hard for him; and another *Julian*, Uncle to the Apostate, for pissing on the Lords Table, had his bowels rotted, and his excrements issued out, *non per secessum, sed per vulnera*, as the same Historian reports. Sometimes by tiring them quite out, and making them for very vexation and successelesse give over their vaine attempts, or else disheartning them that they may not beginne them. So *Dioclesian* retired to a private life, because hee could not root out the Christians. And

Julian

The Victorie of Christ.

501

Julian was afraid to persecute the Christians, as his predecessors had done, lest they should thereby increase; he forbore it out of envie, and not out of mercy, as *Nazian.* observes. Sometimes by turning their owne devices upon their heads, ruining them with their owne counsels, and it may be dispatching them with their own hands. Thus the Lord set every mans sword against his fellow in the huge host of the Midianites, *Judg.* 7. 22. So *Pilate* and *Nero*, the one the murtherer of Christ, the other the dedicatour of all the consequent great persecutions, both died by their owne hands, as being most wicked and most cruell, and therefore fittest to revenge the cause of Christ and his people upon themselves. Thus God did not onely curse the counsell, but revenge the treason of *Achitophel* by an act of the most desperate folly and inhumanity which could be committed. Sometimes by hardning them unto a most desperate prosecution of their owne ruine, as in the case of *Pharaoh*, suffering them to lift at the stone so long, till it loosen, and fall upon them, *Zech.* 12. 3. *Matth.* 21. 44. Sometimes by ingratiating the Church with them to their owne destruction, as he did Israel with the Egyptians, *Exod.* 12. 35, 36. By these and a world the like meanes doth the Lord overthrow the enemies of his Kingdome.

Now all this is *In the day of his wrath*, or in his owne due time: where wee may note by the way, that Christ hath wrath in him aswell as mercy. Though hee be by wicked and secure men misconceived, as if he were onely compassionate: yet *le sa patientia fit furor*, hee will more sorely judge them hereafter, whom hee doth not perswade nor allure here. So mercifull he is, that he is called a *Lamb* for meeknesse, and yet so terrible, that he is called a *Lion* for fury. It is true, *fury is not in him*, namely, to those that apprehend his strength and make their peace with him, *Esaie* 27. 4, 6. But yet to those that will not kisse, that is, not love, worship, nor obey him, hee

VER 8. 5, 6.

Nazian. Orat. 3.
in Julian. 1.

Tertul. Apolog.
cap. 5.
Euseb. lib. 2. c. 7.

VERS. 5, 6.

can with a little wrath shew himselfe very terrible, *Psal. 2. 12.* He commeth first with Peace, *Luk. 10. 5.* but it is *Pax concessa*, not *pax emendicata*, a Peace mercifully offered, not a peace growing out of any necessity or exigencies on his part, and so wrought by way of composition for his owne advantages. The peace of a Conquerour, *Zech. 9. 10.* A peace which putteth conditions to those to whom it is granted, that they shall be tributaries and servants unto him, *Deut. 20. 10, 11, 12.* Therefore the Apostle saith, that he came to preach or to proclaime peace, *Ephes. 2. 17.* but if we reject it, hee then follows the directions of *Joshua*, *These mine enemies which would not have mee to raigne over them, bring them hither and slay them before me, Luke 19. 27.*

But the maine thing here to bee noted is, that Christ hath a *Day*, a *ορδομια*, a prefixed, and constituted time wherein hee will bee avenged on the greatest of his enemies. When he forbears, and suffers them to prevaile, yet still he holdeth the line in his owne hand, the hooke of his Decree is in their nostrils, and hee can take them short when he will. It is never want of power, wisdom, or love to his Church, that their quarrell is not presently revenged; but all these are fitted to his greater Glory. The Lord seemeth to neglect, to breake up the hedge, to sleepe while his Church is sinking (as CHRIST to his Disciples seemed carelesse, *Marke 4. 38, 39.*) so frequently in Scripture the Saints expostulate with God in an humble and mourning debate, *Why sleepest thou, O Lord? Arise, cast us not off for ever, Psalm. 44. 23.* *Jer. 14. 8, 9.* But God hath his quare against us too for this infirmity and haste of ours: *Why sayest thou O Jacob, and speakest: O Israel, my way is hid from the Lord, and my judgement is passed over from my God? That is, he hath not taken notice of my calamitie. Hast thou not knowne, hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the Lord, the Creator of the ends of the earth fainteth not,*
neither

The Victorie of Christ.

503

VERS. 5, 6.

neither is weary? There is no searching of his understanding, *Eesai. 40. 27, 28.* Hee is wonderfull in counsell and excellent in working; and therefore hee doth not slumber nor sleepe: but onely in wisdome ordereth times and seasons, that there may in the end bee the greater glory unto him, and, in the things done, the more beautie. Every thing, saith *Salomon*, is beautifull in its time; if you gather it before, it loseth both its beauty and vertue. It would bee a madnesse for a man to mow downe his corne when it is in the greene blade. Hee waiteth, saith the Apostle, for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience, *Jam. 5. 7.* Now the Prophet assureth us, that *Light*, that is, comfort, refreshment, peace, deliverance, is sowne for the righteous, *Psal. 97. 11.* It was sowne for the people of God when they were in captivitie, though to themselves they seemed as dead men in their graves, yet indeed they were dead but as seed in the furrowes, which revived againe, *Psal. 126. 5, 6.* and therefore the Lord likewise (like Saint *James* his husband-man) is said to wait, that hee may bee gracious to his people, *Eesai. 30. 18.* Though a man suffer never so much injury, and bee most violently kept out of his owne right, yet he must wait till time and mature proceedings have brought on his matters to a triall; therefore the Lord calleth it *The yeare of recompences for the controversies of Sion*, *Eesai. 34. 8.* It is not for private men to order the periods, or flints, or revolutions of times wherein busineses are to bee tried; but publike authority constitutes that, and every man must wait for the appointed time: so the Church must not set God the times when it would be heard or eased; but must trust his wisdome and power, *Jer. 49. 19.* for there is a set time wherein he will have mercy upon Sion, *Psal. 102. 13.*

Now this Time is ruled and bounded by these considerations: First, when the time of the enemy is growne ripe, and his heart proud and insolent against God and

VERS. 5, 6.

his people; when hee trampleth upon the poore, when he sacrificeth to his owne net, when he adareth his owne counsels, when he deifieth his owne condition, and thinketh that none can pull him downe; then is it a time for God to shew himselfe, and to stir up his glory. *It is time* (saith David) *for thee, O Lord, to worke, for they have made void thy Law, Psalm. 119. 126.* So outrageous they are, that their fury runneth over from thy servants to thine ordinances, to blot out the very records of heaven, the name and feare of God out of the earth. And this reason and period of time wee finde frequently in the Scriptures given: *In the fourth generation they shall come hither againe, for the iniquitie of the Amorites is not yet full, Gen. 15. 16.* It is not growne to that ripenesse and compasse, as I in my wise, secret, and patient providence will permit. *O thou that dwellest upon many waters, abundant in treasures* (saith the Lord to Babylon) *thine end is come, and the measure of thy covetousnesse, Jer. 51. 13.* when men have filled up the measure of their sinne, then is their end come; bee their wealth, or safety, or their naturall, or acquired munition never so great. *Put you in the sickle, saith the Prophet, for the harvest is ripe, come get you downe for the Presse is full, the Fats overflow, for the wickednesse is great, Joel 3. 13.* When wickednesse is so great, that it filleth all the vessels, then is the Lord ready to put in his sickle, and to cut it downe.

It is further demanded *when sinne is full*? To this I answer, that there are three things principally which set foorth the fulnesse of sinne, *Universality, Impudence and Obstinacy*: First, when a whole Land is filled with it, that there are none to intercede or to stand in the gappe, when from Streets to Palaces, from Houses to Courts, from Schooles to Churches, from every corner sinne breaketh forth, so that bloud toucheth bloud. *The Land is full of adulterers, saith the Prophet, because of swearers the Land mourneth-for both Priest and Prophet are prophane,*
yea

The Victorie of Christ.

505

VER 8. 5, 6.

yea in my house have I found their wickednesse, saith the Lord, Jer. 23. 10. 11. when in every place, and at every view there are new, and *more abominations, Ezek. 8. 17. Jer. 5. 1-6.* Secondly, when sinne is *impudent*, whorish and outrageous; when there is no feare, modesty or restraint, but it breaketh all bounds, and like a raging Sea overrunneth the banks. *They declare their sinne as Sodom,* saith the Prophet, *and hide it not: woe unto their soules, Esay 3. 9.* it is so full that it breakes out into their countenance, hypocrisie it selfe is too narrow to cover it. This is that which the Apostle calleth *An excesse of riot*, and the Prophet, *a rushing, like an horse into the battell.* Now when God thus gives a man over, sinne will not be long a filling up; when lusts breake forth, and throng together, when from concupiscence sinne goes on to conception and delight, to formation and contrivance, to birth and execution, to education, and custome, to maintenances and defence, to glory and boasting, to insensibility, hardnesse, and a reprobate sense, then there is such a fulnesse in sinne as is neere unto cursing, the very next step is hell. Lastly, when sinne holds out in *stubborne*nesse, and is incorrigible, when the remedie is refused, the pardon rejected, the peace not accepted; Then is sinne come to its fulnesse. The sinne of the Amorites was never quite full, but when they rejected that peace, mercy, and subjection to Gods people, which was offered them first. But when men sinne against those meanes of grace which are sent unto them, and *leave no remedy* to themselves; no marvell if the Lord give them over, and let in the enemy upon them, *2 Chron. 36. 16.* Therefore wee must take heed of finishing sinne, for it is *not sinne*, but the consummation and *finishing of sinne* which condemnes a man.

Now when thus the sinne of the enemy is growne so ripe, that it breaketh forth into pride and insultation against Gods people, then is the Lordstime to shew him-

K k 4

selfe:

Esai. 48. 4.
Jer. 3. 3.

*Delicti durior
fons est, ab ipso
& in ipso à li-
cto, impudenti-
am docta. Tertul.
de vel. virg. c. l.
Rom. 1. 24-26.
Esai. 69. 27.*

*Dum servitur
libidini, facta est
consuetudo, dum
consuetudini,
necessitas, Aug.
Confess. lib. 8. c. 5.
vid. Bernard. de
Gradibus super-
bia.*

VERS. 5, 6.

selfe: *I will restore health unto thee*, saith the Lord to his Church, *and I will heale thee of thy wounds, because they called thee an out-cast, saying, This is Sion whom no man seeketh after*, Jer. 30. 17. see Jer. 50. 11. Ezek. 25. 3. 28. 6--9. Obad. vers. 3, 4. when the high wayes were waste, and the way-faring man ceased, and the enemy regarded no man--*Now, saith the Lord, will I arise, now will I be exalted, &c.* Esai. 33. 8-11. when the enemies helpe forward the affliction of Gods people, and by their pride and insultation doe double the misery which is upon them, then will the Lord returne to them in mercies, and beefore displeased with his enemies, Zech. 1. 15, 16. Esai. 40. 2. 47. 5, 6.

Secondly, when Gods people are thoroughly humbled and purged, for God useth wicked men but as his staffe or weapon, as his fire or fan to correct and purge them, Esai. 10. 12. Hee intendeth not in his punishments such severity against them, as against their enemies: if the rod be for the childe, the fire is for the rod, Esai. 27. 7, 8, 9. When men are so smitten, that they can returne to him that smiteth them, and not revolt more and more; for God will not throw any more darts at those who are sunke and dead already, when they are stirred in their hearts joyntly to seeke the Lord, and to meet him in the way of his judgements, and to compassionate and favour the dust of Sion, then is the day of his wrath; for when Gods time to deliver a people is come, hee will more abundantly stirre up the hearts of his people to pray for it, Psal. 102. 16, 17. Dan. 9. 2, 3. whereas, when hee will destroy a people, hee will not suffer his Saints to pray, Jer. 14. 11.

Thirdly, when all humane hopes and expectations are gone, when a people is so pilled and broken, that they have no courage, meanes, succours or probabilities left, then is Gods time to deliver his Church, and to punish his enemies: *The Lord shall judge his people, and repent himselfe*

The Victorie of Christ.

507

himselfe for his Servants, when hee seeth that their power is gone, Deut. 32.36. Psal. 68.20. 109.31. In one word, when the preparations and premises as it were unto Gods glory are best ordered, and put together, then is the day of his wrath come.

The Church then need not to bee cast downe with the insultation of her enemies, since Christ is the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever; such as he was ever to his Church, such hee is still. If hee have delivered his Church from the pride of her enemies heretofore, his power, truth, watchfulnesse, compassion is the same still; and by faith in them wee may rebuke Satan, wee may chide away the weaknesse and feare of our owne hearts, wee may rejoyce against those that insult over us, when they rage most wee may hope their time is short, and that it is but the biting of a wounded beast. Therefore wee finde the Saints in Scripture arme themselves against present dangers, with the consideration of what God hath done for his Church in times past, *Psalms. 68. 7, 8. 74. 13-18. Esai. 51.9, 10, 11. Hab. 3.* And in the confidence of the same truth and power breake forth into a holy scorne of their enemies, *Mich. 7.8, 9, 10. Esai. 50. 8, 9.* In the forest extremities wee may fix our faith on God, and hee delighteth to bee depended upon alone, when all outward helpes and probabilities faile, see *Esai. 41. 17, 18. Hab. 3. 17, 18.* A million of men came against *Asa*, one of the hugest hoasts of men that were ever read of, yet by relying on God they were all delivered into his hand; and the reason is added, because God hath eyes, and strength, or as hee is described, *Revel. 5.6.* Seven hornes and seven eyes, much wisdom, and much power to shew himselfe valiant in the behalfe of those that walke uprightly, *2 Chron. 16.8, 9.*

Wee should learne likewise to rejoyce and triumph with all thankfulness of heart when Christ subdueth the enemies of his Kingdome, and giveth deliverance and refresh-

VERS. 5, 6.

*Deut. 20.3, 4.
Esai. 51.12, 13.
Deut. 31.6, 7, 8.*

Jer. 31.8.

VERS. 5, 6.

refreshment to his people. When hee maketh his hand knowne to his servants, and his fury to his enemies, then should all they that love Hierusalem rejoyce, *Esaï. 66. 10.* Thus the Church after they were delivered from the malice of *Haman* instituted dayes of joy and feasting, *Ester 9. 22.* It is a signe of an evill heart against the peace and prosperity of the Church of Christ, to envie, or slight, or thinke basely of the instruments and wayes whereby Christ delivereth it; as wee see in *Tobiah* and *Sanballat*, *Nehem. 4. 2, 3.*

Lastly, wee should learne wisdome to lay hold on the times and seasons of Gods peace, because hee hath a day of wrath too; to apprehend the offers and opportunities of grace. Christ had beene at the Churches dore, and had knocked for admittance; but neglecting that season, hee was gone, and much shee suffer'd before shee could finde him againe, *Cant. 5. 2-7.* When the Lord speaketh unto us in his ordinances, and by the secret motions and perswasions of his holy Spirit, wee should not deferre, nor put him off, as *Felix* did *Paul* to some other time, but pursue the occasion, and set our selves to doe every duty in Gods time. There is a time for every work, and it is beautifull only in its time; and therefore fit it is, that wee should observe wisely the signes and nature of the times, *Mat. 16. 2.* And accordingly proportion our devotions for the Church and our selves. It is the worst losse of time, to let slip the seasons of grace, and spirituall wisdome, till it may be, Gods time of mercy is passed over. If thou hadst knowne in this *thy day* the thing that concerne thy Peace. But now thy day is over, and my day of wrath is come, they are now hidden from thine eyes.

Hee shall judge amongst the Heathen.] By *heathen* we are to understand the same with *Enemies*, *vers. 1.* and *People*, *Esaï. 63. 6.* Meaning all the armies and swarmes of Christs enemies either spirituall or secular. The word
Gentiles

The Victorie of Christ.

509

Gentiles was a word of great contempt and detestation amongst Gods people, as the word *Jew* is now amongst us; a proverbiall word to cast reproach and shame upon men. Therefore the Apostle saith of the Ephesians, that in times passed *they had beene Gentiles in the flesh.* Eph. 2. 11. As if by being Christians they had ceased to bee Gentiles, or rather that word had ceased to bee a terme of reproach. So that *Gentile* was a word of scorne, as *Samaritan*, Job. 8. 48. or *Canaanite*, Ezek. 16. 3. or *Publican*, Matth. 18. 17. Luk. 18. 11. And therefore we finde those two still joyned together *Publicans and sinners*; and so the Apostle joyneth these two words *Gentiles and sinners*, Gal. 2. 15. So then the word *Heathen* is added by *David* to the enemies of Christ, to render them the more odious, and to expresse the more abject and hatefull condition; and therefore when God would cast notable reproach upon his people hee calleth them *Sodomites, and Gentiles*, Esai. 1. 10. Ezek. 2. 3. So then the meaning is, his most abject and hatefull enemies, that are unto him as Jewes and Samaritans, hee shall judge, that is, he shall condemne and punish them.

Whence we may note, That *Christs victorie over his enemies shall bee by way of pleading and disceptation*. His military is likewise a judiciary proceeding grounded upon righteous and established Lawes. Therefore the day of Gods wrath is called a time of vengeance, and recompence for the *Controversies of Sion*, Esai. 34. 8. To shew that the Lord doth not take vengeance but by way of debate. And therefore when hee punisheth, hee is said to plead with men. The Priest said not where is the Lord, and they that handle the Law knew mee not, &c. *Wherefore I will yet plead with you, saith the Lord, and with your Childrens Children will I plead*, Jer. 2. 8, 9. So to plead and to take vengeance goe together, Jer. 5. 1. 36. And the LORD is said to reprove with equitie; and to smite the earth with the rod of his mouth; that is,

VERS. 5, 6.

Cameron de
Ecclesia, pag. 33.
34. seems Chri-
stian Synag.
pag. 137.

VER. 5, 6.

is, to convince, and argue before hee doth punish, *Eesai. 11. 4.* as wee see in the case of *Sodom, Gen. 18. 21-33.* Herein the Lord sheweth that all our misery beginnes at our selves. That if wee perish, it is because we would not take his counsell, nor be guided by his will; That he did not sell us to any of his creditors, but that for our iniquities we *sold our selves, Esai. 50. 1.* In humane warres, though never so regularly and righteously ordered, yet many particular men may perish without any personall guilt of their owne, *Delirant Reges, plectuntur Achivi.* But in these warres of Christ, there shall not a man perish, till hee be first convinc'd by a judiciary proceeding, of his owne demerit. Every mouth must bee stopp'd, and all the world by the evidence and acknowledgement of their owne conscience become guilty before God, before his wrath shall felle upon them. The Lord sent *Noah* to preach, before hee sent a flood to destroy the old world. He argued with *Adam* before he thrust him out of *Paradise*. The voyce goeth ever before the rod, *Mic. 6. 9.* This course our Saviour observed towards him who had not the wedding garment. First, convinc'd him till hee was speechlesse, and then cast him into utter darkenesse, *Marth. 22. 12, 13.* And this course the Lord tooke with his people, when he punished them, *Eesai. 5. 3, 4. Amos 2. 11. 3. 7.* For hee will have the consciences of men to subscribe, and acknowledge the justnesse of his proceedings, and to condemne themselves by their owne witnesse; when hee entreth into judgement hee doth it by *line and plummet, Esai. 28. 17.* In proportion to the meanes of grace neglected, to the patience and forbearance abused, to the times of grace overslipped, to the purity of the Law violated and profaned. We must take heed therefore of continuing Gentiles, of being aliens from that commonwealth of *Israel*, and strangers from the covenant of promise, of living without God in the world. No man can with hope or comfort say, *Enter not*
into

The Victorie of Christ.

511

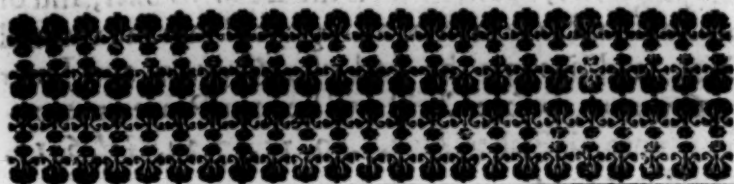
VERS. 5, 6.

into judgement, but hee who is the *Lords servant*, and of his household; we must be all ingrafted into the naturall Olive, and become the seed of *Abraham*, and *Jewes* by *Covenant*, before Christ will bee our Peace or reconcile us unto his Father, *Rom. 2. 29. 11. 17. 24. Gal. 6. 16. Ephes. 2. 11-14.*

Hee shall fill the places with dead Bodies.] This notes the greatnesse of the victory, that none should bee left to bury the dead. There shall be an universall destruction of wicked men together in the day of Gods wrath, they shall be bound up in bundles, and heaped for damnation, *Matth. 13. 30. Psal. 37. 38. Esai. 1. 28. 66. 17.* And it notes the shame and dishonour of the enemy, they shall lie like dung upon the face of the earth, and shall be beholden to their victors for a base and dishonorable buriall, as we see in the great battell with *Gog and Magog*, *Ezekiel, 39. 11-16.*

He shall wound the Head over many Countries.] Either literally, Antichrist, *Revel. 17. 2. 18.* Who taketh upon him to bee oecumenicall Bishop, and Monarch, and to dispose of Crownes, and dispense Kingdomes at his pleasure. Or spiritually, *Satan*, who is the *Prince of this world*, whose head Christ was to crush, and tread under our feet, *Gen. 3. 15. Rom. 16. 20.* Or figuratively, the Head, that is, the counsell and power of many Nations, which shall at last appeare to have beene but a vaine thing, *Psal. 2. 2. 1 Cor. 1. 19.* What sense soever we follow, the maine thing to be observ'd is that which we handled before; that Christ will in due time utterly destroy the greatest, the highest, the wisest, of his enemies. And therefore this may suffice upon this verse.

VERSE 7.



V E R S E 7.

*Hee shall drinke of the Brooke
in the way : therefore shall hee lift
up the Head.*



Some understand these words in the sense of the two former, for a figurative expression of the victories of Christ; and they in a two-fold manner. Some by *Brooke* understand the blood of the Adversarie with which the way should bee filled as with a streame; and by drinking hereof, the satiating, refreshing, and delighting himselfe in the confusion of his enemies; for the Lord is eased when his enemies are subdued, *Esaï. 1. 24.* Others, that hee should pursue his victorie with such heate and importunity, that hee should not allow himselfe any times of usuall repast, but should content himselfe with such obvious refreshment as should offer it selfe in the way : and should immediately lift up his head againe, to pursue the enemy at the heele; and in this sense, there is no more new matter here intimated than that which hath beene before handled.

Others understand the means whereby Christ should thus lift up his head and exalt himselfe above all the enemies

mies

mies of his Kingdome, namely by his *Passion* and *sufferings*; by death destroying death and him that had the power of death, which is the Divell. I will not undertake to define which sense is most agreeable to the place: it being so difficult. But upon occasion of this latter (which I thinke is more generally embraced) I shall speake something of the meanes and ground of Christs victories over his enemies, and of his government in his Church, namely his sufferings and resurrection.

Hee shall drinke of the Brooke in the way] By Brooke then or Torrent wee may understand the wrath of God, and the rage of men. The afflictions and sufferings which befell Christ. And this is a very frequent Metaphor in Holy Scriptures to understand afflictions by water, *Psal.* 18.4,5. 42.7. 69.1. 124.4,5. So the wrath of the Lord is called a streame, and a lake, *Esa.* 30.33. *Revel.* 19.20. In regard of the rage and irresistablenesse thereof, *Sternit agros, sternit sata lata, bonmq. labores*, and in regard of the turbidnesse and foulnesse thereof, for Gods wrath is full of dregs, *Esa.* 51.17. *Psal.* 75.8. It is said in the History of Christs passion, when he was going to wrestle with that woefull agony in the garden, that *hee passed over the Brooke Cedron.* *Iohn* 18.1. And wee may observe in the History of the Kings, that when the good Kings *Hezekiah*, and *Asa*, and *Josiah*, purged the Cittie and the Temple of idolatry, *they burnt the cursed things at the brooke Kidron, and cast them thereinto,* *2 Chro.* 15.16. *2 Chron.* 29.16. 30.14. *2 King.* 23.6. To note unto us that that brooke was the sinke, as it were, of the Temple, that into which all the *purgamenta*, and uncleanneses of Gods House, all the *cursed things* were to bee cast; with relation whereunto it is not improbable that the Prophet *David* by a Prophetickall spirit might notifie the sufferings of Christ, by drinking of that cursed brooke over which hee was to passe, to signifie that on him all the faithfull might lay and powre out their sins, who

VERSE 7

who is therefore said to be *made sinne, and a curse for us*, 2 Cor. 5. 21. Gal. 3. 13. As the people when they laid their hands on the head of the sacrifice, did thereby, as it were, unload all their sinnes upon it.

Now as waters signifie afflictions; so there are two words with relation thereunto, which signifie suffering of afflictions, and they are both applied unto Christ, *Matthew 20. 22.* Are yee able to *drinke* of the cuppe that I shall drinke of, or bee *baptized* with that Baptisme that I am baptized with? Hee that drinketh hath the water in him; hee that is dipped or plunged, hath the water about him: So it notes the universalitie of the wrath which Christ suffered, it was *within him*, *My soule is heavie unto death*; and it was all *about him*, betrayed by Judas, accused by Jewes, forsaken by Disciples, mocked by *Herod*, condemned by *Pilate*, buffeted by the servants, nailed by the souldiers, reviled by the theeves and standers by, and which was all in all, forsaken by his Father. So then by the drinking of the brooke is meant suffering of the curses, and it is frequently so used, Jer. 25. 27. 49. 12. Ezek. 23. 32. 34. Hab. 2. 16. Revel. 14. 9. 10.

By [*The way*] we must understand either the *Life of Christ* on earth, his passage betweene his assumed voluntary humility and his exaltation againe; or *The way betweene mankinde and Heaven*, which by that flood of wrath and torrent of curses, which were *in view*, Col. 2. 14. was made utterly unpassable, till Christ by his sufferings made a path thorow it, for the ransomed of the Lord to passe over.

Therefore shall he lift up the Head.] It noteth in the Scripture phrase *victory*, eluctation, and breaking thorow those evils which did urge and presse a man before, *Psal. 27. 6.* and also *boldnesse*, confidence, and securitie to the whole body, *Luke 21. 28.* And further, it is not, He shall be lifted up, but, Hee shall doe it himselfe. He hath the

*Qui se humili-
verat, ipse exal-
tabit. Hieron.*

and Resurrection of Christ.

515

VERSE 7.

the power of life, and the fountaine of life in himselfe, *Job. 3. 26. 10. 18.* So that following this sense of the words, the meaning is, Hee shall suffer, and remove all those curses which were in the way betweene mankinde and heaven, and then hee shall lift up his head in the Resurrection, and breake thorow all those sufferings into glory againe; which sense is most punctually and expressly unfolded in those parallel places, *Luk. 24. 26-46. Phil. 2. 8, 9. 1 Pet. 1. 11.*

Hee shall drinke of the brooke in the way] From hence we may note, First, that betweene mankinde and heaven there is a torrent of wrath and curses, which doth everlastingly separate between us and glory; *וישם יסוד יסוד* *והעולם*, a great and fixed gulfe, which all the world can neither wade thorow, nor remove. The Law at first was an easie and smooth way to righteousness, and from thence to salvation, but now every step thereof sinks as low as hell. It is written within and without with curses, which way soever a man stirres, hee findes nothing but death before him: one mans way by the civility of his education, the ingenuitie of his disposition, the engagement of other ends or relations, may seeme more smooth and plausible than others, but by nature they all runne into hell, as all rivers, though never so different in other circumstances, runne into the Sea. It is as impossible for a naturall man of himselfe to escape damnation, as it is to make himselfe no childe of the old *Adam*, or not to have beene begotten by fleshly parents. The *Gulfe* of sinne in our nature cannot be cleansed, and therefore the *Guilt* thereof cannot be removed. The *Image* we have lost is by us *unrepairable*; the *Law* we have violated, *inexorable*; the *Justice* we have injured, *unsatisfiable*; the *concupiscence* of our nature *insatiable*, sinne an aversion from an *infinite* good, and a conversion to the creature infinitely; and therefore the *Guilt* thereof infinite and *unremovable* too.

L 1

We

VERSE 7.

We should learne often to meditate on this point, to
 finde our selves reduced unto these straits and impossibi-
 lities, that we cannot see which way to turne, or to helpe
 our selves, for that is the onely way to draw us unto
 Christ. Every man naturally loves to be in the first place
 beholden to himselfe; in any extremitie, if his owne
 wits, purses, projects, or endeavours will helpe him out,
 hee lookes no further; but when all his owne succours
 have forsaken him, then hee seekes abroad. It is much
 more true in the matter of salvation; no man ever did
 begin at Christ, but went unto him upon meere necessi-
 tie, when he had experience of the emptinesse of all his
 other succours and dependancies, we all by nature are
 offended at him, and will not have him to reigne over us,
 till thereunto we be forced by the evidence of that infi-
 nite and unpreventable misery, under which without
 him we must sinke for ever. This is of all other the most
 urging argument unto men at first to consider, that there
 is a torrent of curses, a sea of death, a raigne of condem-
 nation, a hell of sinne within, and a hell of torments
 without betweene them and their salvation; and there
 is no drop of that sea, no scruple of that curse, no tittle
 of that Law, which must not all bee either fulfilled or
 endured. Suppose that God should summon thy guilty
 soule to a sudden apparance before his tribunall of Ju-
 stice; and should there begin to deale with thee even at
 thy mothers wombe: Alas, thou wouldest bee utterly
 gone there; even there a seed of evill doers, the spawne
 of viperous and serpentine parents, a cursed childe, a
 childe of wrath, and exact image of the old *Adam*, and
 of the bloud of Satan. But then here is after this pro-
 duced a catalogue, and history of finnes of forty, fif-
 tie, or threescore yeeres long. And in them every inor-
 dinate motion of the will, every sudden stirring, and se-
 cret working of inward lust, every idle word, every vn-
 cleane aspect, every impertinencie and irregularitie of
 life,

and Resurrection of Christ.

517

VERSE 7.

life, scored up against thy poore soule, and each of them to be produced at the last, and either answered or revenged. O where shall the uugodly and sinners appeare if they have not right in Christ? And how should men labour to bee secured in that right? Who would suffer so many millions of obligations and indictments to lie betweene him and God, uncanceled, and not labour to have them taken out of the way? Now the onely way to be brought hereunto is, to deny our selves and all wee doe; to doe no good thing for this end that we may rest in it, or rely upon it when we have done, but after all to judge our selves unprofitable servants: when wee have prayed, to see Hell betweene Heaven and our prayers; when we have preached, to see Hell betweene Heaven and our sermons; when we have done any worke of devotion, to see Hell betweene Heaven and all our services, if God should marke what is amisse in them and should enter into judgement with us: In one word, to see Hell betweene Heaven and any thing in the world else, save onely betweene Christ and Heaven. Till in this manner men be qualified for mercy, they will have no heart to desire it, and God hath no purpose to conferre it. Christ must be esteemed worthy of all acceptation, before God bestowes him: and the way so to esteeme of him is, to feele our selves the greatest of all sinners. And when the soule is thus once humbled with the taste and remembrance of that worme-wood and gall which is in sinne, there is then an immediate passage unto hope and mercy, *Lamen.* 31.9-22. and that hope is this,

That Christ hath drunken up and dried that torrent of curses which was betweene us and Heaven, and hath made a passage through them all by himselfe unto his Fathers Kingdome. Hee was made sinne and a curse for us, that so hee might swallow up sinne and death, and might bee the destruction of Hell, Hos. 13. 14. I will here but touch upon two things, First, What Christ suffered.

VERSE 7.

red. Secondly, *why he suffered*: for understanding of the first we must note, first, that Christs *Humane* nature was by the *hypostaticall Union* exalted unto many dignities, which to all the Creatures in the world besides are utterly incommunicable; as the communication of properties, the adoration of angels, the primogeniture of the Creatures, the cooperation with the Deity in many mightie workes, the satisfaction of an infinite Justice by a finite passion, &c. Exalted likewise it was by his *spirituall union* above all his fellowes, with that unmeasurable fullnesse of grace, as wonderfully surpasseth the united and cumulated perfections of all the Angels in heaven. Secondly, wee must note likewise, that all these things Christ received for the worke of mans Redemption, and therefore he had them in such a manner as was most fiteable and convenient for the execution of that worke. Now Christ was to fulfill that worke by a way of suffering and obedience, by death to destroy him that had the power of death, as *David* by *Goliaths* sword slew him that was master of the sword. As there fell a mighty tempestuous winde upon the Red Sea, whereby the passage was opened for Israel to goe out of Egypt into Canaan; so Christ was to bee torne and divided by his suffering, that so there might be a passage for us to God, through that Sea of wrath which was betweene our Egypt and our Canaan, our sinne and our Salvation. Here then are two generall Rules to bee observed concerning the sufferings of Christ. First, that the Oeconomie or dispensation of his Mediatorship is the measure of all that hee suffered. So much as that required, hee did suffer, and more he did not: for though he suffered as man, yet he suffered not because he was a man, but because he was a Mediator. Secondly, in as much as a Mediatour betweene God and sinners was to bee holy and separate from sinners (for if hee should have bene a sinner, he had bene one of the parties, and not a Mediator) therefore none.

none of those sufferings which are repugnant to his Holinesse, and, by consequence, unserviceable to the administration of his Office, could belong unto him. Such things then as did no way prejudice the plenitude of his Grace, the union of his natures, the qualitie of his mediation, such things as were suteable to his Person, and requisite for our pardon, such as were possible for him, and such as were necessarie for us, those things he suffered as the punishments of our finnes.

Now punishments are of severall sorts; some are sins, some onely from finnes. Some things in severall respects are both finnes and punishments. * In relation to the Law, as Deviations, so they are sinne: in relation to the order and disposition of Gods providence, so they are punishments. As hardnesse of heart, and a reprobate sense. Other punishments are *from sinne*, and in this regard sinne is two waies considerable, either as *inherent*, or as *imputed*: from sinne as *inherent*, or from the consciousnessse of sinne in a mans selfe, doth arise remorse, or torment and the worne of conscience. Againe, sin as *imputed* may be considered two wayes: either it is *imputed* upon a ground *in nature*, because the persons to whom it is imputed are *naturally one* with him that originally committed it, and so it doth *seminally* descend, and is derived upon them. Thus *Adams* sinne of eating the forbidden fruit is imputed unto us, and the punishment thereof on us derived, namely the privation of Gods Image, and the corruption of our nature. Or else it is *imputed* upon a ground of *voluntarie contract*, vadi-
monie, or suscepcion, so that the guilt thereupon grow-
ing is not a *derived*, but an *assumed guilt*, which did
not bring with it any *desert*, or worthinesse to suffer,
but onely an obligation and obnoxiousnesse thereunto.
As if a sober and honest person be suretie for a prodigall
and luxurious man, who spending his estate upon courses
of intemperance and excesse, hath disabled himselfe to

* Deus natura-
rum bonarum
Creator optimus,
malarum volun-
tatum justissi-
mus ordinator.
Aug. de Civit.
Dei, lib. 11. c. 17.
l. 14. c. 26. & 10.
7. cont. Julian.
Pelag. 1. 5. cap. 3.
De Grat. & Lib.
Arbitr. c. 23. de
Prædest. storum.
cap. 10.

VERSE 7.

* τὸ ἑμὸν ἀνθρώ-
που ἐστὶν τῷ ποί-
νῃ, ὡς κεφαλὴ τῷ
παρθε σώματι. *
ἵνα μὴ οὐκ ἀν-
θρώπου τῷ ἑμὸν
ἐστὶν τῷ ποί-
νῃ. τὸ κατ'
ἐμὸν καὶ ὁ Χρῖ-
στος. Greg.
Nazian. Orat. 36.

* Infirmities
quedam vitiosae,
quedam miserae.
Aug.

pay any of his debts; the one doth for his vicious disabi-
lities deserve imprisonment, unto which the other is as
liable as he, though without any such personall desert.
Now then the punishments which Christ suffered are
onely such as agree unto sinne thus imputed, * as all our
sinnes were unto Christ. Again in punishments wee are
to distinguish between *punishments inflicted* from with-
out, and *punishments ingenerated*, and immediately re-
sulting from the condition of the person that suffereth. Or
betweene the *Passions* and *Actions* of the men that are
punished. Punishments inflicted are those paines and
dolorous impressions which God either by his owne
immediate hand, or by the Ministry of such instruments
as he is pleased to use, doth lay upon the soule or body
of a man. Punishments ingenerated are those which
grow out of the *weaknesse* and *wickednesse* of the person
lying under the fore and inuincible pressure of those paines
which are thus inflicted. As blasphemie, despaire, and
the worme of conscience. In one word, some evils of
punishment are * *vicious* either *formally* in themselves
or *fundamentally*, and by way of connotation in regard
of the originals thereof in the person suffering them.
Others are onely *dolorous* and *miserable*, which presse
nature, but doe no way defile it, nor referre to any either
pollution or impotencie in the person suffering them, and
of this sort onely were the punishments of Christ.

Now these punishments which Christ thus suffered
are either *inchoate* or *consummate*; *inchoate*, as all those
penall defects of our nature which neither were sinnes,
nor grounded upon the inherence of sinnes (for hee
tooke not our personall, but onely our naturall de-
fects.) And these were either corporeall, as hunger,
thirst, wearinesse, and the like; or Spirituall, as feare,
griefe, sorrow, temptations, &c. *Consummate*, were
those which hee suffered at last. And these likewise
were either corporeall, as shame, mockings, buffets,
trials,

trials, scourgings, condemnation, and ignominious and a cursed death. Or spirituall, and those were principally two. First, a punishment of *Dereliction*. *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken mee?* *Matth. 27. 46.* There was some kinde of separation betweene God and Christ during the time of his sufferings for sinne in that cursed manner. For understanding whereof we must note that he had a *fourfold Union* unto God? First, *In his humane nature*, which was so fast united in his Person to the divine, that death it selfe did not separate it either from the Person or from the Deitie. It was the Lord that lay in the grave. Secondly, *In Love*, and so there was never any separation neither, but when hee hanged on the Crosse, hee was still the beloved Sonne of his Father, in whom he was well pleased. Thirdly, *In the Communion of his Spirit and Holinesse*; and in that regard likewise there was no disunion, for he was offered up as a Lambe without spot or blemish. Lastly, *In the fruition of the light of his countenance*, and of his glory and favor, and in this respect there was for the time of his sufferings a *dereliction*, *subtractione visionis, non dissolutione unionis*, by the withdrawing of his countenance, not by the dissolving of his union. He looked upon Christ as a God armed against the sinnes of the World which were then upon him. Secondly, There was a *punishment of malediction*. He did undergoe the curse of the Law, hee did grapple with the wrath of God, and with the powers of darknesse, hee felt the scourges due unto our sinnes in his humane nature, which squeezed and wrung from him those strong cries, those deepe and woefull complaints, that bloody and bitter sweate, which drew compassion from the very rockes. And surely it is no derogation to the dignitie of Christs person, but on the other side a great magnifying of the Justice of God against sinne, of the power of Christ against the Law, and of the mercy of them both towards sinners, to affirme that the suffer-

VERSE 7.

rings of Christ, what-ever they were *in specie* in the kinde of them, were yet *in pondere*, in their weight and pressure, equally grievous with those which we should have suffered; for being in all things save sinne like unto us, and most of all in his liablenesse to the curse of the Law (so farre as it did not necessarily denote either sinne inherent, or weaknesse to breake through in the person suffering) why he should not be obnoxious to as great extremities of paine, I see no reason; for no degree of meere anguish and dolor can be unbefitting the Person of him who was to bee knowne by that Title, *A man of sorrowes*. And surely farre more indignity it was to him to suffer a violent death of body from the hands of base men, than to suffer with patience, obedience and victorie farre sorer stripes from the hand of God his Father, who was pleased upon him to lay the iniquitie of us all.

For the second thing proposed, *Why Christ suffered* these things; The Scripture giveth principally these *five reasons*: First to execute the decrees of his Father, *Act. 4. 27, 28*. Secondly, to fulfill the propheties, prefigurations, and predictions of Holy Scriptures, *Luk. 24. 46*. Thirdly, to magnifie his mercy, and free love to sinners, and most impotent enemies, *Rom. 5. 8*. Fourthly, to declare the righteousnesse and truth of God against sinne, who would not bee reconciled with sinners but upon a legall expiation, *Rom. 3. 25*. For although wee may not limit the unsearchable wisedome and wayes of God, as if hee could no other way have saved man; yet wee are bound to adore this meanes, as being by him selected out of that infinite treasure of his owne counsell, as most *convenient* to set forth his wonderfull hate of sinne, his inexorable Justice and severitie against it, his unsearchable riches of love and mercy towards sinners, and in all things to make way to the manifestation of his Glory. Lastly, To shew forth his owne power which had strength to stand under all this punishment of sinne, and

at

*Aug. de Trin.
lib. 13. cap. 10.
& de Agone
Christiano, To. 3.
cap. 11.*

at last to shake it off and to declare himselfe to bee the Sonne of God by the resurrection from the dead, *Rom. 1.4.* For though Christ did exceedingly feare, and for that seeme to decline and pray against these his passions: yet none of that was out of jealousie, or suspicion that hee should not breake through them. But hee feared them as being paines *unavoidable*, which hee was most certainly to suffer; and as paines very *heavie* and grievous, which hee should not overcome without much bitternesse, and very wofull conflict. Now for a word of the last Clause.

Therefore shall hee lift up the Head.] Wee may hence observe, that *Christ hath conquered all his sufferings by his owne Power.* As in his passion when he suffered hee *Bowed downe his head* before-hand, and gave up the Ghost with a loud voyce, to note that his sufferings were voluntary, *Joh. 19.30.* So in his resurrection hee is said to *lift up his head himselfe*, to note that hee had *life in himselfe*, that he was the *Prince of Life*, that it was impossible for him to be held under by death (as wee were by the Law, *Rom. 7.6.*) And that his exaltation was *voluntarie* likewise and from his owne Power, for hee was not to have any assistant in the worke of our redemption, but to doe all alone, *John 2.19.5.26.10.17. Act. 3. 15.*

If it be objected that Christ was raised from the dead *by the Glory of his Father*, and that he raised him up, *Rom. 6. 4. Act. 13. 33.* To this I answer that this was not by way of supplement and succour to make up any defect of Power in Christ; but onely *by way of consent* to Christs owne Power and Action, that so men might joyntly honour the Sonne and the Father, *Joh. 5.19-26.* Or by the *Glorie of the Father* wee may understand that Glorious power which the Father gave unto his Sonne in the flesh, to have life in himselfe, *Joh. 5. 26.* annexing thereunto a command to exercise the same Power,
John

VERSE 7.

John 10. 18. Or he is said to bee raised by himselfe and his Father both, because that Holy Spirit which immediately quickned him (*Rom. 1. 4. 1. Tim. 3. 16, 1 Pet. 3. 18.*) was both his and his Fathers. It was not any personall thing wherein the Sonne differ'd from the Father which raised Jesus from the dead, but that Spirit which was common to them both.

To conclude then with the consideration of those great benefits, and that excellent use which this resurrection of Christ doth serve for unto us. First, it assureth us of the *accomplishment of his workes of mediation on earth*, and that hee is now in the execution of those other Offices which remaine to bee fulfilled by him in Heaven for the application of his Sacrifice unto us; for having in the resurrection justified himselfe he thereby rose for our justification likewise, *Rom. 4. 25.* For if the debt had not beene taken quite off by the suretie, it would have lien upon the principall still. And therefore the Apostle proveth the resurrection by this that Gods mercies are *sure*, *Act. 13. 34.* Whereas if Christ were not risen from the dead wee should bee yet in our sinnes, and so by consequence, the mercies of *David* should have failed us, *1 Cor. 15. 17, 18.* And for this reason it is (as I conceive) that the Lord sent an Angell to remoove the stone from the mouth of the Sepulcher; not to supply any want of power in him, who could himselfe have roled away the stone with one of his fingers; but as a Judge when the Law is satisfied sendeth an officer to open the prison-doores to him who hath made that satisfaction; so the Father to testifie that his Justice was fully satisfied with the price which his Sonne had paid, sent an Officer of Heaven to open the doores of the Grave, and as it were to hold away the hangings while his Lord came forth of his bed-chamber.

Secondly, it assureth us of our *resurrection*; for as the head must rise before the members, so the members are
sure

sure to follow the Heade The wicked shall rise by his *Judiciary power*, but not by the vertue and fellowship of his *Resurrection*; as the faithfull, who are therefore called *Children of the Resurrection*, *Luk. 20. 36. 1 Cor. 15. 20-23.* Thirdly, it doth by a secret and spirituall vertue renew and *sanctifie our Nature*, *Rom. 6. 4.* For the acts of Christs mediation in his sufferings and victories are spirituallly appliable and effectually in us unto answerable effects. His death to the mortification of sinne, *Heb. 9. 14. 1 John 1. 7.* And his Resurrection, to the quickning of us in holinesse, *Eph. 2. 5. Col. 2. 12.* Fourthly, it comforteth us in all other calamities of life which may befall us; he that raised up himselfe from the dead, hath compassion and power to deliver us from all evill and to keepe us from falling. This is the summe of *Jobs* argument, God will raise mee up at the last day, therefore undoubtedly hee is able if it stand with my good and his owne glory) to lift me up from this dunghill againe, *Job. 19. 27.* And this is Gods argument to comfort his people in patient waiting upon him in their afflictions, because their dead bodies shall live, and they that dwell in the dust shall awake and sing, *Esa. 26. 19.* Lastly, it serveth to draw our thoughts and affections from earth unto Heaven; Because things of a nature should move unto one another. Now saith the Apostle, *Our conversation is in Heaven, from whence wee looke for a Saviour, even the Lord Jesus Christ; who shall change our vile Bodie, and make it like unto his glorious Bodie, according to the working whereby hee is able to subdue all things unto himselfe.* To him with the Father and the Holy Ghost, three Persons, and one God, bee all honor, glory, Majesty and thanksgiving for ever, Amen.

F I N I S.

242

100



*A Table of such places of Scripture
as are by the way briefly opened or
paraphrased in this Exposition,
and the former three
Treatises.*

T noteth the Treatise, and P the Psalme.

G <i>Gen.</i> 3.15.	T.439.	<i>Psal.</i> 119.18,19.	T.435.
<i>Gen.</i> 6.5,6.	T.274.	<i>Psa.</i> 119.64-125.	P.308
<i>Gen.</i> 8.21.	T.274.	<i>Psal.</i> 126.1.	P.209.
<i>Exod.</i> 15.3.	P.493.	<i>Psal.</i> 132.8.	P.163.
<i>Numb.</i> 14.17.	T.274.	<i>Psal.</i> 144.11.	P.23.
<i>Numb.</i> 20.12.	P.190.	<i>Eccles.</i> 1.15.	T.68.
<i>Numb.</i> 23.21.	P.450.	<i>Eccles.</i> 5.10-17.	T.72.
<i>Deut.</i> 4.19.	T.284.	<i>Eccles.</i> 6.1-3.7-10.	T.73.
<i>Deut.</i> 6.5.	T.202.	<i>Eccles.</i> 7.29.	P.354.
<i>2 Sam.</i> 3.25.	P.400.	<i>Eccles.</i> 10.2.	P.484.
<i>1 King.</i> 21.20.	T.278.	<i>Eesai.</i> 13.7,8.	P.498.
	279.	<i>Eesai.</i> 28.16.	T.484.
<i>2 Chron.</i> 6.41.	P.163.	<i>Eesai.</i> 33.22.	P.94.
<i>Job.</i> 21.16.	T.51.	<i>Eesai.</i> 53.10.	P.31.
<i>Psal.</i> 2.9.10.	P.12.13.	<i>Eesai.</i> 57.20.	P.138.
<i>Psal.</i> 37.16.	T.77.369.	<i>Jer.</i> 1.11,12.	T.49.
<i>Psal.</i> 37.25.	T.26.	<i>Jer.</i> 2.13.	T.16.
<i>Psal.</i> 62.10.	T.98.	<i>Jer.</i> 3.19.	P.233.
<i>Psal.</i> 78.37.	T.110.	<i>Jer.</i> 8.8.	P.215.
<i>Psal.</i> 87.4.	P.372.	<i>Lam.</i> 3.39,40.	T.176.
<i>Psal.</i> 89.27.	P.17.	<i>Ezek.</i> 3.3.	P.162.
<i>Psal.</i> 89.35.	P.80.	<i>Ezek.</i> 18.20.	P.444.445.
<i>Psal.</i> 109.6.	P.486.	<i>Ezek.</i> 33.31,32.	P.68.
		<i>Hof.</i>	

A Table.

<i>Hof.</i> 5. 11.	P. 59.	<i>John</i> 3. 18.	T. 131.
<i>Hof.</i> 5. 12.	T. 42.	<i>John</i> 4. 22.	P. 136.
<i>Hof.</i> 7. 14.	T. 311.	<i>John</i> 6. 44.	P. 12.
<i>Hof.</i> 7. 16.	T. 302.	<i>John</i> 7. 38.	P. 40. 178.
<i>Hof.</i> 8. 7.	T. 302.	<i>John</i> 7. 39.	P. 37.
<i>Hof.</i> 8. 14.	T. 426.	<i>John</i> 8. 56.	T. 57.
<i>Hof.</i> 9. 8.	P. 251.	<i>John</i> 10. 4.	P. 257.
<i>Hof.</i> 9. 11.	T. 43.	<i>John</i> 11. 48. 50.	T. 219.
<i>Hof.</i> 10. 11.	T. 422.	<i>John</i> 13. 27.	T. 267.
<i>Joel</i> 3. 17.	T. 50.	<i>John</i> 14. 20. 23.	T. 487.
<i>Amos</i> 8. 2.	T. 49.	<i>John</i> 15. 15.	T. 464.
<i>Mic.</i> 7. 19. 20.	P. 122.	<i>John</i> 16. 7.	P. 236.
<i>Nahum.</i> 1. 10.	P. 493.	<i>John</i> 16. 10.	P. 30.
<i>Habak.</i> 3. 9.	P. 387.	<i>John</i> 16. 21.	P. 50.
<i>Zeph.</i> 1. 8.	P. 149.	<i>John</i> 17. 4.	T. 420.
<i>Hag.</i> 2. 7.	T. 389.	<i>John</i> 17. 13. P. 437. 491.	
<i>Hag.</i> 2. 14.	T. 307.	<i>John</i> 17. 15. P. 434. 435.	
<i>Zech.</i> 5. 6. 11.	T. 49.	<i>Act.</i> 9. 7.	P. 381.
<i>Mal.</i> 4. 2.	P. 51.	<i>Act.</i> 28. 28.	P. 136.
<i>Matth.</i> 4. 4.	P. 6.	<i>Rom.</i> 5. 10.	P. 430.
<i>Matth.</i> 6. 24.	P. 21.	<i>Rom.</i> 5. 13.	T. 370.
<i>Matth.</i> 9. 15. 17.	P. 43.	<i>Ro.</i> 5. 14. T. 136, 137. 370.	
<i>Matth.</i> 11. 11.	P. 178.	<i>Rom.</i> 6. 3.	T. 144.
<i>Matth.</i> 13. 22.	T. 59.	<i>Rom.</i> 6. 11. T. 144. 275.	
<i>Matth.</i> 15. 28.	T. 489.	<i>Rom.</i> 7. 8.	T. 131.
<i>Matth.</i> 23. 29.	P. 56.	<i>Rom.</i> 7. 12.	T. 133.
<i>Matth.</i> 26. 5.	P. 316.	<i>Rom.</i> 7. 14. 15.	T. 278.
<i>Matth.</i> 26. 39.	P. 426.	<i>Rom.</i> 8. 29. 30.	T. 447.
<i>Mark.</i> 10. 21.	T. 413.	<i>Rom.</i> 8. 32.	T. 485.
<i>Luk.</i> 1. 36.	P. 384.	<i>Rom.</i> 13. 9.	T. 414.
<i>Luk.</i> 2. 40. 52.	T. 423.	<i>Rom.</i> 13. 10.	P. 328.
<i>Luk.</i> 22. 32.	T. 351.	<i>I Cor.</i> 2. 14.	T. 118.
<i>Luk.</i> 24. 46.	P. 30.	<i>I Cor.</i> 3. 21. 22.	T. 27.
<i>John</i> 1. 16.	T. 400.	<i>I Cor.</i> 7. 29.	T. 54.
<i>John</i> 1. 17.	P. 183.	<i>I Cor.</i> 8. 2.	P. 322.
<i>John</i> 1. 18.	P. 169.	<i>I Cor.</i> 11. 1. T. 411. 413.	
		<i>I Cor.</i>	

A Table.

I Cor. 12.3.	P.170.	Col. 3.3.	T.432.
I Cor. 13.13.	T.494.	I Tim. 1.13.	T.295.
I Cor. 14.24,25.	T.162.	I Tim. 1.15.	P.6.
I Cor. 15.24,28.	P.78.	I Tim. 3.16.	P.273-430.
I Cor. 15.56.	T.130.	I Tim. 4.4.	T.24.
2 Cor. 1.18.	P.322.	I Tim. 4.8.	T.492.
2 Cor. 1.20.	T.345-350.	I Tim. 6.18.	T.489.
	P.390.	Heb. 1.9.	T.422.
2 Cor. 2.16.	T.390.	Heb. 2.3.	P.136.
2 Cor. 3.6,7,8.	P.191.	Heb. 6.17.	P.384-385.
2 Cor. 3.12.	P.202.	Heb. 7.19.	P.19.
2 Cor. 3.18.	T.416.	Heb. 8.4.	P.427.
	P.180,191.	Heb. 9.24.	P.428.
2 Cor. 4.12.	P.206.	Heb. 10,11,12.	P.23.
2 Cor. 4.6.	P.136,181.	Heb. 11.1.	T.57.
2 Cor. 5.14.	T.488.	Heb. 11.40.	P.19.
2 Cor. 5.21.	P.424.	Heb. 12.2,3.	T.356.
2 Cor. 8.9.	T.413.	Jam. 1.8.	P.317.
Gal. 3.10.	T.226.	Jam. 1.14,15.	T.155-286.
Gal. 3.19.	T.137.		
Gal. 4.5.	P.429.	Jam. 1.19-21.	P.174.
Gal. 5.6.	T.485-486.	Jam. 2.10,11.	P.356.
Gal. 5.15-22.	T.374-383.	Jam. 4.5,6.	P.184.
Gal. 6.16.	P.216.	I Pet. 1.16.	T.413.
Ephes. 2.6.	P.435.	I Pet. 2.6.	T.484.
Ephes. 3.9,10.	P.167.	I Pet. 2.24.	P.438-439.
Ephes. 4.17,18.	T.182.	2 Pet. 1.3.	T.485.
Ephes. 4.26.	T.174.	2 Pet. 1.4.	T.344.
Ephes. 4.30.	T.434.	2 Pet. 1.9.	T.56.
Ephes. 6.24.	P.74.	2 Pet. 3.16.	T.126.
Phil. 2.8,9.	P.29.	I Job. 3.2.	T.433.
Phil. 3.8.	T.474.	I Job. 3.3.	T.341.
Col. 1.18.	P.18.	I Job. 3.9.	T.288-52.
Col. 1.24.	T.421.	I Job. 4.20.	P.73.
Col. 2.15.	P.118.	I Job. 5.8.	T.280.

FINIS.

The life of Christ was so sweet to come, say on
God's love - 11. 11. 11. The Exec. of Faith

God's Love - 11.5.46 The Exec. of F.W.O.

188.473

[The page contains extremely faint, illegible markings that appear to be bleed-through from the reverse side.]

